

# THE GREAT RULER

BOOK 04

*Heavenly Silkworm Potato*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# *The Great Ruler*

(大主宰)

*by*

## *Heavenly Silkworm Potato*

## *Tian Can Tu Dou*

(天蚕土豆)

# *Synopsis*

The Great Thousand World. It is a place where numerous planes intersect, a place where many clans live and a place where a group of lords assemble. The Heavenly Sovereigns appear one by one from the Lower Planes and they will all display a legend that others would desire as they pursue the road of being a ruler in this boundless world.

In the Endless Fire Territory that the Flame Emperor controls, thousands of fire blazes through the heavens.

Inside the Martial Realm, the power of the Martial Ancestor frightens the heaven and the earth.

At the West Heaven Temple, the might of the Emperor of a Hundred Battles is absolute.

In the Northern Desolate Hill, a place filled with thousands of graves, the Immortal Owner rules the world.

A boy from the Northern Spiritual Realm comes out, riding on a Nine Netherworld Bird, as he charges into the brilliant and diverse world. Just who can rule over their destiny of their path on becoming a Great Ruler? In the Great Thousand World, many strive to become a Great Ruler.

# Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Thyaeria @ WuxiaWorld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 301 – Dark Society

In the next day, due to the addition of the Wang brothers mixed into their small group, their collection had increased by a minute portion. Although they could be considered as collaborating, it was natural that the Wang brothered did not have the notion of immediately treating Mu Chen as their boss. It was only a collaboration due to mutual benefit.

Mu Chen was extremely clear about this, and that was why he did not have the extravagant thought about making the trio listen to and obey his orders. As long as they could contribute during their times of need, this collaboration could continue to persist.

Similarly, the trio was also very clear about this collaboration. Therefore, they had provided some information of gathering points along the way, while providing a helping hand in encircling and destroying them, and gained some Spiritual Lights in the process. Overall, it could be considered that everyone got what they wanted to everyone's delight and satisfaction.

Naturally, it was obvious that the trio did not report all of the information that they possessed. Occasionally, they would leave to group and head out on their own for periods of time. When they returned, they would be in a sorrowful state, but excitement would always be present in their eyes. Obviously, they had left to devour some points by themselves.

With regards to their actions, Mu Chen could only twitch his mouth, as there was nothing he could say. Their collaboration was only for the gathering point that was graded as Extremely Dangerous. Before that happened, as long as they did not hinder him, nothing could be said about their independent actions.

After all, he could not force the trio to be magnanimous and provide all the information they had obtained. If that was the case, the trio might even consider leaving the Spiritual Light World

than fulfilling his wish.

Under this form of collaboration where everyone did not interfere with each other and got what they wished for, two somewhat peaceful and harmonious days passed by. The trio gradually put their grudge about being defeated by Mu Chen down. When they were together, it was even possible to have conversations going, although their relationship wasn't that intimate. However, this was naturally much better than before.

Two days had passed.

Mu Chen and the rest continued on the path towards the extremely dangerous region marked on the map. After two days, the Spiritual Light World became all the more lively. Along the way, Mu Chen and the rest would frequently meet with various large crowds of students who had formed groups to search for gathering points.

At this moment, the hunt could be said to have truly entered its exciting phase.

As everyone gradually travelled to the depths of the Spiritual Light World, various kinds of conflicts were starting to erupt. Various dark horses that had hibernated for a very long time had also started to display their astonishing strength in succession. Within this Spiritual Light World, they had suddenly magnified their previously obscure reputation to everyone.

Within the Spiritual Light World, the standard strength of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had rapidly risen higher. Before entering, one with the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase was able to enter the top 20 in the Heavenly Rankings. However, even if one had the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage, it was hard to say if one might even be able to enter the top 20 at this very moment.

Even Mu Chen felt some what speechless at this development. This hunt was undoubtedly the most lively activity of the year

within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Just solely on the number of dark horses that surfaced, it was more than enough to churn up huge waves within the academy.

Furthermore, it was obvious that this was just the beginning. As time continued to pass by, there would be more and more hibernating dark horses revealing themselves. As for those previously influential figures, there would be quite a few amongst them who would feel uneasy due to the surge created by those dark horses. This would depend on whether their arrogance and hot temperedness would still be present after becoming influential figures.

At a gathering point that was not considered excessively large. Mu Chen stood on the peak of a mountain. In the valley below, there was a large amount of Spiritual Lights rippling and fluctuating. However, there wasn't much vigorous spiritual fluctuations radiating from them. This place was weaker than the gathering point they had first come across.

"Those three bastards."

Helplessly twitching his mouth, Mu Chen cursed out.

This gathering point was provided by the trio. However, it was indeed hard for this gathering point grade to enter Mu Chen's eye. Therefore, he was simply too lazy to take action, and had allowed An Ran and the girls to hunt them.

Standing behind Mu Chen, Luo Li gave a faint smile and consoled him. "Although there's little meat here, all in all, it's still considered as some Spiritual Lights. At least it provides a better result than us recklessly searching."

"How much information did the trio obtain before entering the Spiritual Light World? They didn't even give me some tidbits for our collaboration, and instead provided these small gathering points to con me." replied Mu Chen as he clenched his teeth. Those three bastards would head out every time to eat their fill by

themselves. Upon coming back, they would still incessantly yell and shout, as if he was forcing them to hand over their Spiritual Lights.

Although Mu Chen knew that the trio did not have any obligation to hand over all their information to him, he would feel slightly unhappy and unfair every time he saw those three fellows glowing with radiance and satisfaction when they returned.

However, regardless of whether it was fair or not, Mu Chen did not hate the trio in his heart. Although they had some grudges between them, following the interaction with them over these past two days, it had completely dissipated. After all, if they had not provided any information over the past two days, Mu Chen and the rest would not be able to obtain these gains.

Whoosh!

Whizzing sounds rang across the valley, before a few figures shot across. An Ran and the girls descended on the mountain peak with happiness brimming on their beautiful faces. Mu Chen had a high criteria and did not hold any interest in this gathering point grade. However, for them, it was already very satisfying.

The Wang brothers had closely followed behind them. While following behind them, the trio had appeared extremely polite. Facing their solicitous behaviour, the girls replied with faint smiles. Although their relationship had gotten slightly better over the past two days, it was clear that they were still closer to Mu Chen.

“A total of 600 Spiritual Lights.” reported An Ran after sending a smile towards Mu Chen.

“You all should store them first.” replied Mu Chen while nodding his head. Spiritual Pawn grade Spiritual Lights didn't enter his eyes anymore. Furthermore, An Ran and the girls had spent quite the effort to collect all of them. Being a gentleman, he did not have the nerve to use such a shortcut to gain benefits.

“Brother Mu sure is magnanimous.” said Wang Tong instantly upon seeing Mu Chen’s reply.

Mu Chen shot a glance at him and said, “I’ll trouble you to find us a gathering point that gives more Spiritual Lights. Then, you’ll be more magnanimous than me.”

Upon hearing that, Wang Tong gave a sheepish laugh while feeling slightly embarrassed. In the past two days, they had been hoarding slightly too much food.

“Is there any fresh news?” Not caring much about it, Mu Chen turned around and asked him.

Wang Tong promptly nodded his head and smiled while replying, “We’ve previously met with a group and heard a few stories. They had said that there are many dark horses that are starting to erupt. A few of the influential figures in top ten of the Heavenly Rankings had started to fall from their ranks.”

“Oh?”

Mu Chen faintly narrowed his eyes. The influential figures in the top ten had been overtaken by some dark horses in such a short frame of time? Who were the dark horses? Are they that dark?

“Yesterday, the 9th place, Jiang Tai, was challenged by someone. After an intense battle, this influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had suffered a complete defeat.” replied Wang Tong with some graveness in his gaze.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. Looks like these few dark horses have finally started to reveal their hidden strength.

“In addition, half a day ago, the 7th place, Gu Yuan, was challenged by someone. After an intense ten bouts, he suffered a crushing defeat.” added Wang Tong with a more serious tone.

“Ten bouts…” muttered Mu Chen as his mouth twitched. He was faintly moved. These few dark horses were too formidable. He was unsure if a person at the extreme front like Su Xuan would meet

the challenges sent by the dark horses. However Mu Chen wasn't especially worried about her. While entering the Spiritual Light World, he had sense that Su Xuan's strength had a dramatic increase. Furthermore she doesn't incite a strong combative response, thinking about this, there should not be that many people specifically finding trouble with her.

As for Su Xuan, Mu Chen still had a favorable impression about her, thus he had naturally not wished for her to meet any trouble.

"The person that had challenged Jiang Tai is called Mu Fengyang. He's also a senior of the Northern Heavens Spirit Academy, but isn't consider famous. During the year when he had entered the academy, he was once beaten and humiliated by a student, and was beaten soundly after he tried to resist. From then on, there was no other news about him. After such a long time, he had spent all of his time on bitter training. It can be considered that he had finally erupted today." continued Wang Tong.

"The person that challenged Gu Yuan is called Zhao Qingshan. In actual fact, he can't be considered as an obscure and unknown person. He had always been holding onto the 51st place in the Heavenly Rankings. He had never stepped across that boundary; however, it is obvious that his strength is frightening. One would wonder exactly what step he had finally reached in this hunt."

With a tremor in his voice, Wang Tong said, "In addition, they are all members of the 'Dark Society'."

"Dark Society?" asked Mu Chen while gawking. Wrinkling his brows, it was obvious that he had never heard of this kind of influence within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Their full name is the Society of the Dark Horses. If we're going to truly talk about them, they might be the longest surviving student influences that exists within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It is because they had always existed, and had never disappeared before."

Wang Tong faintly curled his mouth and continued, “There will always be freshmen that would enter the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At the same time, there would be quite a few existing talents. Due to various reasons, they would enter the Dark Society. As this cycle continues, the Dark Society would never disappear. Every year, during the hunt, an absolutely large majority of the dark horses that appear would be from the ‘Dark Society’.”

Mu Chen was slightly shock. He never thought that the so-called “Dark Society” would actually be able to possess such tyrannical hidden strength. If one wanted to truly judge it, perhaps only Shen Cangshen’s “Judgment Brotherhood” or Li Xuantong’s “Xuan Clan” would be able to compare with it.

“You three should also be considered as dark horses. Is it possible that you three are members of the “Dark Society”?” asked Mu Chen as he looked towards the trio.

Hearing his question, Wang Tong shook his head and replied, “They had once extended their invitation to us brothers; however, we rejected them. Although we had, indeed, suffered a defeat by Li Xuan Tong’s hands, we did not have any grudges against him. We only wanted to put our best effort into training. Of course, being able to defeat him would, naturally, be the best. However, if we can’t accomplish that, there’s no need to warp and twist ourselves.”

Hearing his reply, Mu Chen felt slightly shocked and had a feeling of a whole new level of respect for them. He never imagined that the trio would have such a level of comprehension. However, what he said was also correct. That Dark Society seemed to always gather students that were humiliated and had talent to join their ranks. Although this might be a motivational factor to training, it would, indeed, be easy to warp and twist someone.

“The goal of the challenges sent out by the Dark Society are to defeat all the influential figures in the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy. Therefore, you have to be slightly careful. Although you're a freshman, your fame and reputation in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has been increasing extremely rapidly, thus you've no choice but to guard against them." continued Wang Tong.

Hearing that, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. He did not wish to incite trouble. However, if those so-called 'dark horses' assumed that they could establish themselves by stepping on his head, Mu Chen did not mind letting them know that there was one that was darker than them!

# Chapter 302 – Campgrounds

Mu Chen stood on the mountain peak and looked at the valley below, where the Spiritual Lights had thinned out. After being harvested by An Ran and the girls, there wasn't any need to continue staying at that place. Waving his hands, he said towards the trio, "Let's go. How far are we from the gathering point on the map?"

"According to our speed, we'll reach it by tomorrow."

Thinking awhile, Wang Tong continued speaking, "However, as I've said earlier, it's not only us who knows about this. Everyone who got their hands on such information would try their best to keep this a secret. So, we would definitely not be only ones that are eyeing that newly born Spirit King."

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head in approval. A big cake like this would definitely be targeted by many people; however, he did not wish for them to have such ambitions.

"According to our route, we should be able to reach a hunting campgrounds by the afternoon. There should be quite a few students stopping at that place, and there would be an abundant flow of information. We could try asking around for some information about exactly what formidable groups are present in that area. If their routes are similar to ours, we should be able to guess who our next opponents will be." The trio's familiarity with the Spiritual Light World was obviously much higher than Mu Chen's. These few arrangements were extremely appropriate.

Therefore, Mu Chen did not oppose them and nodded his head. If they were able to get their hands on all of this information, they would, indeed, be quite helpful to them.

"Let's go."

Mu Chen did not continue procrastinating. Taking the initiative,

he shot forward. Transforming into a ray of light, he swept towards the northwest direction. At his back, Luo Li, Wang Tong and the rest proceeded to closely follow him.

During the following journey, the group did not stop again, as all of them travelled at full speed. Once it was sunset, they finally saw a few gigantic camping groups on the vast, flat plains.

The area of the campgrounds wasn't small; however, they looked somewhat simple from afar, and the atmosphere within was rather fiery and lively. From a distance, there would constantly be whizzing noises ringing out, as figure after figure would sweep across before finally landing within the campgrounds.

This place could already be considered as the start of the Northern Spirit World depths. After two days into the hunt, there were more and more students entering here. Therefore, these hunting campgrounds had no lack of people and a lively atmosphere.

"There are a few hunting campgrounds within the depths of the Northern Spirit World. These places are, after all, more safe than the other places, as one wouldn't be met with wandering Spirit Pawns. When resting, one could completely feel relieved." said Wang Tong while sending a smile towards Mu Chen as they neared the gigantic campgrounds.

"In addition to allowing one to rest and organize, the hunting campgrounds still have other purposes. For example, if some of the groups did not have sufficient strength, or they wanted to recruit new members to increase their group, they could find them within the hunting campgrounds. Naturally, this is on the pretense that there is mutual agreement."

"Other than that, there are some deals and trades that could be completed here. For example, using Spiritual Value Points to change for Spiritual Lights."

"Using Spiritual Value Points to change for Spiritual Lights? Is

that possible?” asked Mu Chen, somewhat astonished, after gawking.

“Ha ha, Spiritual Value Points are very important to us. This kind of exchange can be considered mutually beneficial. That's why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not prohibit this.” replied Wang Tong with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded his head; however, he did not have much interest in these kinds of trades. He had an abundance of Spiritual Lights in his hands and did not need to trade with people. At the same time, there was no need for him to sell of the Spiritual Lights he had. The more Spiritual Lights he had, the greater the results of the Spiritual Light Empowerment. Mu Chen was still counting on the benefits of the Spiritual Light Empowerment to help him break into the Heavenly Completion Stage. Thus, naturally, he would not sell any of the Spiritual Lights in his possession.

“Leave the matter of collecting information to us brothers. Brother Mu and the rest can just wait for our good news.” Looking at the gigantic campgrounds filled with exuberant vitality, Wang Tong took charge and said to the rest.

“Thanks for the trouble.” said Mu Chen with a smile. With the trio in the group, it had saved him quite a bit of trouble.

“Ha ha, this is nothing. Perhaps we might have to rely on brother Mu in the future.” replied Wang Tong with a mischievous smile. The tone of his speech did not have the arrogance that he had during the last confrontation. Obviously, after crossing hands with Mu Chen, he had suppressed his arrogance and haughtiness.

Hearing his reply, Mu Chen smiled and shook his head. Although the three brothers were somewhat arrogant, and loved to sneakily hoard food, their characters were considered not bad. In the short span of two days, Mu Chen’s thoughts about them had been changed by quite a bit.

The group moved closer to the gigantic campgrounds, before

descending down. As they entered the grounds, sounds of clamoring and racketing that soared throughout the skies came to meet them, causing them to feel as if their ears were buzzing and ringing.

Mu Chen and the rest looked towards the bustling and lively crowd within the campgrounds and exclaimed in astonishment. Perhaps, there was already close to ten thousand students that had gathered on these campgrounds.

Entering the grounds as a group, they swept their surroundings with faint curiosity, before proceeding towards its depths. Along the way, they could see quite a few erected crystal signboards. There were even people who were putting energy into shouting out advertisements.

“We have currently 12 people in our squad and are looking for 8 members! Strength must be Heavenly Transformation Late Stage and above!”

“I’m ranked 98th on the Heavenly Ranking and I’m looking for a strong group to hunt the Spiritual Spawns!”

“Buying Spiritual Lights for 50 Spiritual Value Points per strand! Anyone interested should quickly contact me!”

As they walked along, Mu Chen looked at the myriad of advertisements all around him. Unable to bear it any longer, he started to smile. Only in a place like this would he be able to see such a marvelous scene.

It was a walk in the park for the Wang brothers. They would start a discussion with people from time to time, while secretly handing them some Spiritual Lights, and gathered various kinds of information.

The trio handled the matter nimbly, saving Mu Chen quite a bit of effort. Being free as a result, Mu Chen started to stroll leisurely across the campgrounds, feeling carefree and relaxed.

Luo Li followed beside him. Wearing a black dress, the soft clothing accentuated her slender and exquisitely beautiful body, emphasising her alluring curves. Her long hair, which was akin to silver, was hanging down from her head, look as bright and resplendent as the Milky Way. She had, undoubtedly, become a sight to see for all the eyes within the campgrounds, as quite a few people had astonishment within their eyes after seeing her. However, they had quickly recognised her; after all, Luo Li's ranking within the Heavenly Ranking was higher than Mu Chen's. Ranked fifteen, she could be considered as being rather ahead of the rest.

After recognising Luo Li, they had, naturally, recognised Mu Chen. There wasn't any student within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that did not know about this pair of absolutely astonishing young lovers. Other than Mu Chen, there might not be a second male student who was able to safely and quietly walk beside Luo Li.

Sensing the fiery and blazing gazes coming from the surroundings, a grin appeared on Mu Chen's face. Extending his hands, he grabbed onto Luo Li's small and jade-like hand. He wanted to make all of them jealous, they should go and continue being bachelors.

Luo Li could feel the thoughts of Mu Chen. Unable to help it, she unhappily shot a look at Mu Chen. However, contrary to her thoughts, her coquettish and absolutely beautiful appearance made quite a few people's gazes turn blazing hot.

Mu Chen smiled mischievously, before drawing Luo Li in and quickly walked for quite a while. Raising his head to look ahead, there were quite a few people forming a crowd in front of them. A platform stood there, where a youth was raising an object high up in the air, while shouting towards the crowd.

"Everyone, the thing in my hands isn't any ordinary item. It's said that it's known as the 'Forging God Stone'. This stone can be

called a miracle stone, as it possesses a miraculous power, which is that it could forge and temper a Spiritual Artifact. Regardless of what kind of Spiritual Artifact yours is, as long as you use it to temper by absorbing the stone's godly power, your Spiritual Artifact will definitely rise to the next level!"

The item lifted high by the youth was a pitch-black stone. On the surface, it looked bumpy and full of holes and was totally unassuming. Furthermore, it did not have any appearance of being mysterious and strange. Although there was quite a number of people crowding around him, a majority of them were staring at him with look as if he was stupid. He actually dared to use a broken stone that he had picked up from god-knows-where and treated it as a treasure. Did he think that everyone here was stupid?

"If I used a High Grade Spiritual Artifact and used the item in your hand to temper it, would it turn into an Absolute Grade Spiritual Artifact?" asked someone with a mocking tone, resulting in some people breaking out into laughter. By itself, a High Grade Spiritual Artifact was worth a million Spiritual Value Points within the Spiritual Value Hall. If it was a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact, its value would reach a terrifying amount of tens of millions. If the item in that fellow's hand was that miraculous, why would he be willing to sell it away?

On the stone platform, the youth gave a guilty smile and replied, "Of course there is a failure rate. If it fails, there's a possibility that the Spiritual Artifact will be slightly damaged."

"%$&@!"

Countless people in the crowd cursed a single word. A failure rate and slightly damaged? It's obvious that this fellow's words couldn't be trusted.

Even Mu Chen could not bear it and gave a laugh. With a single look he could tell that the so-called "Divine Forging Stone" did not have a trace of fluctuations emitting from it. More or less, this

fellow was trying to trick people.

Shaking his head, he planned to draw Luo Li to leave. However, after a tug, he did not receive an appropriate response from her. Feeling slightly surprised, he turned his head and looked at her. What he saw was Luo Li's glass-like eyes staring closely at the black stone within the youth's hand.

"What's the matter?" asked Mu Chen in a low voice. He felt slightly surprised, as this was the first time he had seen Luo Li react like that to an item. "I need that stone. It can help me resolved a layer of the seal on the Luo Shen Sword." Moving closer to Mu Chen, Luo Li replied to him in a voice that only the two of them could hear.

"Luo Shen Sword?" muttered Mu Chen with slight shock. He proceeded to turn his gaze towards the black-coloured longsword that was always held by Luo Li, no matter where she went. Ever since the first time he had seen Luo Li, he had always saw her with that sword. Although there were a few times that Luo Li had truly drawn that mysterious sword, Mu Chen had never dared to doubt its might. This was due to the fact that there were some situations where even he would feel his life being threatened by the sensation he got from that mysterious sword.

"Yup, this is the most valuable Divine Artifact of our Luo God Clan." replied Luo Li softly. "Grandfather had given it to me; however, due to my strength, I'm unable to control it. Therefore, grandfather had set up three seals. In the past few years I've still been unable to open a single seal. If I could obtain that rock, perhaps I'll be able to achieve that goal."

"A Divine Artifact?!" muttered Mu Chen in total shock. These simple two words represented power that could shatter the heavens and crush the earth. Mu Chen believed that even a Sovereign level expert would turn completely greedy upon hearing those two words. Who would have thought that the longsword that was carried by Luo Li was actually a genuine Divine Artifact?

Giving a faint smile, Luo Li extended her hand and passed the black longsword covered in mysterious runes over to Mu Chen. This divine object that would cause a Sovereign level expert to turn completely greedy was passed over to Mu Chen by her without any vigilance. Obviously, Mu Chen's place within her heart was higher than this so-called 'Divine Artifact'.

With slight curiosity, Mu Chen received it. In the instant the longsword touched his hand, he felt a stabbing pain coming from his palm. Although the sword had yet to be drawn, the sword qi that radiated out from it was capable of making Mu Chen instantly feel as if his entire arm had turned cold and numb. Furthermore, he could faintly feel the meridians within his body starting to ache.

This sword was too overbearing.

Mu Chen did not hold on to it for too long and quickly returned it to Luo Li. In the next moment, he looked towards the stone platform with his eyes slightly narrowed. Since this stone had such an important use for Luo Li, no matter what, he had to get it into his hands!

# Chapter 303 – Divine Forging Stone

On the stone platform, the youth was still hurling saliva around as he presented the “Divine Forging Stone” within his hand. However, this item was comparatively too poor when compared to everything else that he had auctioned. Therefore, there were a lot of people who held suspicions in their hearts, and there was not a single person that showed much interest in it.

“What exactly is this item going for?”

While the youth was feeling somewhat crestfallen, someone finally casually asked. This caused a tremor within his mind as he replied, “It's priced at 5,000 strands of Spiritual Pawn Spiritual Lights or 20 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights.”

Instantly, the surroundings turned quieter as the majority of the people present spat out and choked. Looking at the youth as if he was stupid, they thought, ‘Had this fellow gone crazy after thinking about the Spiritual Lights?’

Seeing the majority of the people looking at him with gazes of contempt, the youth’s face instantly turned slightly red. Feeling indignant, he said, “If no one’s buying it, then let's forget about it.”

It’s obvious that he didn’t have the material for being a salesperson, as he wasn’t able to garner any interest for the objects he was auctioning out. Furiously snorting, he started to turn around and walk away. He thought, ‘These people truly didn’t have an eye for treasure. There will come a time where they will feel regret.’

“Wait.”

Just as he was able to turn and leave, a voice finally rang out. Pausing his steps, he turned around with some suspicion, only to see a handsome and outstanding youth smiling towards him from

under the stone platform. Standing behind the youth was a beautiful girl that would make people feel absolutely astonished.

“I’ll buy that stone,” said Mu Chen while smiling towards the youth.

His total harvest for the past two days was 25 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights. This had Luo Li’s portion already added to it. However, since Luo Li needed that unknown stone, he would, naturally, not be stingy about it.

Whoosh!

The moment Mu Chen said those words, the various sounds of an uproar rang across the entire area. Gaze after gaze of astonishments converged on him. Spending 20 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights to buy some unknown stone. What was this fellow thinking?

“You want to buy it?” asked the youth after quite some time, while looking doubtfully at Mu Chen. 20 strands of Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights was absolutely not something that anyone could easily take out.

“Are you still selling it?” Sensing the gazes coming from the surroundings, Mu Chen faintly wrinkled his forehead and asked.

“I’m selling!” replied the youth hurriedly with a conditioned reflex. It was already so hard just to find an interested buyer. If he was to let Mu Chen go, it might be possible that he truly wouldn’t think about ever selling it again.

Just as the youth shouted, he immediately tossed the black stone towards Mu Chen. From the looks of it, it seemed that he was afraid that Mu Chen might feel regret.

Giving a smile, Mu Chen extended his hands to catch it.

Whoosh!

Just as Mu Chen was able to catch the black stone, a gale

suddenly rushed and erupted out, shooting directly towards Mu Chen’s palm.

Feeling the incoming gale, a chilling glint flashed past Mu Chen’s eyes. With a back-handed slap, pitch black Spiritual Energy burning with black flames erupted out, slapping towards the incoming gale.

Ding!

A metallic sound rang out as a dagger was sent flying by his slap. Finally, with a buzz, it smashed into a gigantic boulder, which was crushed and thoroughly shattered. At the same time, it was smashed into dust by the slap.

Due to this sudden change of events, everyone present was in shock. Hurriedly, they turned their sights towards the origin of the dagger, only to see a group of people rushing up from there. It was a group of youths wearing black robes, while the lead youth was playing with a dagger in his palm. Sparkling with a cold glint, the dagger nimbly spun around within his hand.

“What does the Dark Society's Xu Bin want?” Astonished voices rang out as people recognised the youth with a single look. It seemed that this youth had quite a reputation in this area.

“Ha ha, good skill.” Clapping his hands, the youth dressed in black by the name of Xu Bin grinned as he stared at Mu Chen.

Chilling intent appeared in Mu Chen’s eyes as he stared at the fellow, while an unhappy expression surfaced on his face. Facing this kind of person, who had attacked him for some unfathomable reason, Mu Chen did not have any good impression of him.

“This brother, we’ve taken fancy of this stone. Please make things easy and give it to us.”

That Xu Qin did not care about Mu Chen’s darkened face. With a faint smile, he said, “Naturally, since you all have bidded first, we’ll give you suitable compensation. Is that alright?”

Although he had said ‘compensation,’ there wasn’t a slightest amount of pity for Mu Chen in his gaze, as if what he had done was to give in to the poor.

“Alright, compensate me a thousand Spirit Knight grade Spiritual Lights.” replied Mu Chen indifferently.

Hearing his reply, everyone in the surroundings instantly grinned. A thousand Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights. Even if the Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights possessed by everyone within this camping grounds were to be added together, would it even be that many as that?

Xu Qin’s face twitched before replying, “Ha ha, please stop joking, little brother. I’m Xu Qin, a member of the Dark Society. Please make things easy, brother. We’ve been paying attention to this item for quite a long time already.”

Mu Chen did not continue to care about him. Looking towards the auctioning youth, he extended his hand, signalling that he wanted to receive the black stone again.

“Ha ha, since this brother isn’t willing to give it to us, the only thing we can do is to compete in the normal way. The auctioned price is 20 Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights, right? I’ll offer 22 strands.” upon seeing the current situation, Xu Qin started to smile again and spoke out.

Hearing that, the mind of the youth auctioning the black stone shook. Feeling the difficulty, due to being pressed between two sides, why not give it to the person that bids the highest? This way, he wouldn’t be considered as offending either one of them.

“This brother…” looking slightly guilty, he spoke while looking at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen faintly frowned. He never imagined that this kind of change would occur when he wanted to buy the stone. These few fellows truly made people feel loathsome.

“25 strands.” said Mu Chen indifferent.

The moment his words appeared, it attracted quite a few whispers from the surroundings. After all, it wasn’t easy to obtain Spiritual Lights at a Spirit Knight’s level. 25 strands, that means that one had to kill 25 Spirit Knight at the Heavenly Transformation Stage. That wasn’t an easy task to accomplish.

With Mu Chen being able to bring out 25 Spirit Knight’s Spiritual Lights in one setting, it was obvious that he was not someone that was easy to deal with.

“30 strands.” A trace of darkness finally flashed past Xu Qin’s eyes as he spoke his bid. 30 Spirit Knight’s Spiritual Lights. This could be considered over half of what they had obtained over the past two days.

“Forget about it, I don’t want it.” said Luo Li while gently tugging at Mu Chen’s sleeve. She knew about their bottom line. 25 Spirit Knight’s Spiritual Lights was already their limit.

A sliver of fury flashed past Mu Chen’s eyes. Within his heart, he did not have the slight traces of a favorable impression for the Dark Society.

“Xu Qin, after so long, you still have the temper that makes people loathe you.” While a dangerous glint flashed past Mu Chen’s eyes, a mocking voice rang from behind him. He turned around, only to see Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest appearing, unknowingly behind him. As for the one who said those words, it was Wang Tong.

“Wang Tong?”

Looking at the Wang brothers, Xu Qin started to frown. It was obvious that he knew them. Proceeding to twitch his mouth, he replied, “What? You wish to insert your foot into the bid?”

“However, don’t blame me for not reminding you. It is not I who has his eyes on this ‘Divine Forging Stone’. It’s big brother Mu

Fengyang. If you feel that you have the adequate guts, you can give it a try." Sending a meaningful glance at Mu Chen and Wang Tong, Xu Qin continued to speak with a mocking tone.

"Mu Fengyang? That dark horse that defeated the ninth-placed Jiang Tai?" hearing the name, the faces of the trio slightly changed.

"Hehe, although we don't have any interest in sticking our necks into this, we have a debt to Mu Chen from some time ago." replied the trio. They seemed to have some previous grievances with this Xu Qin. However they also dreaded that Mu Fengyang and did not dare to overly provoke him. With a move of his eyes and a clench of his hand, a crystal ball that seemed to be ignited with a blazing fire appeared in Wang Tong's hand. An astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuation started to radiate from within it, looking rather substantial.

The interior of this crystal ball was obviously filled with Spiritual Lights. Furthermore, it was all at the Spirit Knight's level!

"There's a total of 30 Spirit Knight Spiritual Lights within it. I'll lend it to you, for now. Remember that this is a loan and you'll to return them to us!" said Wang Tong in a low voice, feeling somewhat painful. This was the complete harvest of the brothers.

Being together with Mu Chen for the past two days, they had, naturally, known that due to them hoarding all of the food, Mu Chen and the girls harvest wasn't especially large. If they had wanted to participate in the bidding, it was obvious that they would not be able to compete with the other party.

"Thanks, it can be consider that I owe you guys a favor."

Mu Chen gawked slightly before smiling. In his heart, his favorable impression towards the trio had grown greater to some level. Patting the shoulder of Wang Tong, he said those words.

"That Mu Fengyang might be be here, as well. Be careful."

Sweeping every direction with his gaze, Wang Tong replied with dread brimming in his eyes.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. He already did not have a single shred of favorable impression towards this Dark Society. Today, he wanted to see exactly who would dare to prevent them from getting his hands on this “Divine Forging Stone”.

“35 strands.” Tossing and catching the blazing crystal ball in his hand, Mu Chen said towards Xu Qin with a single trace of warmth in his gaze.

“You!”

Xu Qin finally turned furious. He never thought that after saying Mu Fengyang’s name, Mu Chen and his group would actually dare to continue to interfere with his bid. 35 strands of Spiritual Lights. This had, similarly, exceeded their limit.

Although the “Divine Forging Stone” was indeed somewhat miraculous, it did not have that high of a value.

See that Xu Qin was no longer contesting, with a flick of his fingers Mu Chen sent 35 Spirit Knight’s Spiritual Lights towards the auctioning youth. The latter hurriedly received it. Carefully shooting a glance at both parties, he threw the black stone over to Mu Chen.

Both parties weren’t people he could provoke. Taking the Spiritual Lights, he quickly ran away in fear of being engulfed in their fury.

Receiving the black “Divine Forging Stone”, he turned around and handed it to Luo Li. The girl gave a shallow smile. That touchingly beautiful appearance made quite a few people stare fixedly at her.

“Mu Chen, are you truly going to make things difficult for us?” Looking at the object landing in Luo Li’s hands, Xu Qin instantaneously threatened Mu Chen with fury.

“I dared to smash the headquarters of the Demon’s Gate in the face of He Yao. Therefore, you better shut your mouth for this kind of threat.”

Staring emotionlessly at Xu Qin, Mu Chen said in a cold and severe voice, “Do not provoke me, or there will be consequences you are unable to pay.”

Xu Qin gritted and clenched his teeth. The Dark Society’s gazes turned sinister, as vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted from their bodies.

Seeing this change, Wang Tong and the rest stood beside Mu Chen. Circulating their Spiritual Energies, they focused their gazes on Xu Qin and his group.

Due to both parties, the atmosphere instantly turned into a state of mutual hostility.

Seeing the change, the surrounding crowd hurriedly retreated in fear of being implicated.

However, just as the hostile atmosphere was about to ignite, a gentle clapping sound suddenly rang out. At the same time, a soft laughing voice followed and rang out.

“Ha ha, you’re truly, with a doubt, the most outstanding person within this batch of freshmen. However, I would like to know about what price would Xu Qin be unable to pay, and what price I, Mu Fengyang, can’t pay?”

# Chapter 304 – Mu Fengyang

When the soft laughing voice rang out in the region that was in a state of mutual hostility, the taut atmosphere instantly turned stiff. Exultation instantly erupted from the eyes of Xu Bin and the rest of the group, before sending provocative looks towards the Wang brothers, whose expressions had some change.

Mu Chen slowly raised his head. His sight leaped across the crowd of people toward a place not far from here. At the high ground, there stood a stone pavilion; within which stood a slender and tall youth dressed in black. With calm eyes, he stared towards Mu Chen.

Even though he was still some distance away, everyone could feel the strong Spiritual Energy radiating from his body. Pressure formed from the condensation of his Spiritual Energy as it started to spread out.

That degree, he had already truly reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase!

“It’s Mu Fengyang!” shouted someone with eyes brimming with dread. The Mu Fengyang of the past might not be very famous. However, after he had defeated the 9th place on the Heavenly Rankings, Jiang Tai, his reputation had been rising rapidly in a straight line. Everyone knew that this dark horse would rise towards the heavens in this hunt.

Mu Chen continued raising his head, his black pupils locked onto the high-spirited youth in black within the stone pavilion. The latter’s imposing aura was, indeed, not weak. No wonder he could defeat Jiang Tai.

The expressions on the Wang brothers’ faces turned grave. The three brothers had the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase. However, if they were to truly take action, it would still be hard to contend against that Mu Fengyang. In addition,

there was still Xu Qin and that group, who were glaring at them covetously, like watching prey.

“Ha ha. I’ve long heard about your name, Mu Chen. You’re the most outstanding person within the freshmen. I’ve even heard about the grudge and grievances between Li Xuantong and He Yao. Our Dark Society really approves of you. If you would join us, I think that they would not dare to do anything to you in the future.” unexpectedly, Mu Fengyang did not immediately take action. Instead, he stared at Mu Chen and offered him an invitation.

His voice was filled with an extremely thick intent of recruiting Mu Chen.

“Your association is too big and noble. I’m afraid that I won’t get accustomed to it.” replied Mu Chen with a smile. He did not have much of a favorable impression of the association of dark horses. Although they had believed in concealing their strengths to bide time before shocking people in one go, Mu Chen had always felt that this was a little distorted. Due to some humiliation, they had firmly suppressed their emotions. Even though being able to bear it patiently was good, there were times that one cannot be to excessive.

From the temper that these few people had displayed, it might be difficult for them to maintain that painstaking training state of mind after shocking people in one day. These kinds of people were destined to be unable to become genuine experts.

Therefore, they were also destined to never truly exceed Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

“You really don’t know how to appreciate kindness!” seeing that Mu Chen had unexpectedly rejected Mu Fengyang’s invitation, Xu Bin and the group instantly flared up in a fury. From what they could see, although Mu Chen had some fame within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was clear that he still could not be

considered as an influential figure. The current Mu Fengyang had his name rocking the entire hunting grounds.

Towards them, Mu Chen was too lazy to bother. Staring at Mu Fengyang, the latter was indeed not a weak fighter. If they were to start fighting, he had to put in quite a bit of work.

Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. That Bai Xuan was also at this stage. However at that time, Mu Chen had to draw support from the demonic strength left in him by the “Big Scared Demonic Pillar” before being able to kill Bai Xuan. However the current him, whose strength had increased by a huge factor, obviously, did not need to rely on that method.

“Haha. That seems somewhat regretful.”

Mu Fengyang treated Mu Chen’s rejection with a calm and ordinary expression, with only his eyes gradually turning sharp and incisive. Staring at Mu Chen, he slowly said, “However, that ‘Divine Forging Stone’ has quite a bit of use for me, is there any possibility of forsaking it?”

“Senior Mu is currently an influential figure amongst the top 10 in the Heavenly Rankings. How could such a low-graded item enter your eyes?” replied Mu Chen cynically.

“What if I say that I truly want it?” said Mu Fengyang slowly.

A surge of Spiritual Energy erupted from his body akin to a tidal wave. It seemed to stir the skies and the weather, bring about an astonishing feeling of oppression.

The vast and expansive campgrounds seemed to have quietened down by quite a bit at this instant. Innumerable gazes turned and faced the origin of this commotion. The might and threat brought by a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert had made the atmosphere of this campgrounds much more stifling.

Contrary to everyone, Mu Chen seemed to not discover that sort of pressure. Only frowning slightly, he shot a look towards Mu

Fengyang before turning around. “If you fancy it, I have to trouble to find a second one.”

His voice was clear and indifferent; however, there wasn’t much attempt to cover the impolite tone within those words. With regards of the people of the Dark Society, he could be considered as having completely lost all interest in them.

Seeing that Mu Chen had turned around to leave, Luo Li immediately followed. Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest looked at each other in the eyes before hurriedly following him.

Seeing the figure of Mu Chen turning around and leaving, a cold and fierce smile suddenly appeared on the corner of Mu Fengyang’s mouth. In the depths of his eyes, a cold glint followed his boundless Spiritual Energy as it suddenly erupted.

Bang!

With his Spiritual Energy surging, Mu Fengyang’s figure dashed forward explosively, akin to lightning. Standing high in the sky, without any hesitation, he sent out a palm slap. Spiritual Energy surged below the palm, akin to a raging tide, before transforming into a gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print. Without any mercy, it furiously patted down at the back figures of Mu Chen and the group.

Just as Mu Fengyang launched his attack, Mu Chen’s footsteps suddenly stopped. Clenching his hand tightly, he formed a fist. Black-flaming Spiritual Energy started burning around it that was akin to smoke as it rolled and rushed towards the clouds.

Roar!

A stretch of starry sky seemingly appeared behind Mu Chen. A white tiger stood on the stars, facing the heavens and gave a loud roar. As its hind legs stepped out of the stars, it carried a murderous aura that blotted the skies. Transforming into a white streak of light, it smashed head-on against the gigantic Spiritual

Energy palm print in an extremely stiff and hard stance.

Bang!

Wild and violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled throughout the skies, creating hurricanes as it travelled through this stretch of space. Even the clouds were ripped and torn apart.

The Spiritual Energy impact lasted for quite a while before slowly subsiding. The skies started to clear before the two fierce and violent attacks slowly disappeared.

Seeing this play out before their eyes, quite a few people felt slightly shocked in their hearts as their gazes turned somewhat strange as they stared at Mu Chen. Mu Fengyang possessed the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. That palm he sent out was able to instantly defeat a Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase expert. However, Mu Chen was able to counter this without a slightest trace of being in a disadvantage. His move had obviously become much stronger since the Pact of Three Moves he had with Li Xuantong.

Up in the air, when Mu Fengyang saw that his attack was blocked head-on by Mu Chen, his eyes faintly narrowed. The latter's Spiritual Energy fluctuation was only at the level of a Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. He hadn't even completely stepped into the Heavenly Transformation Stage. However, Mu Chen was still able to receive his attack.

"You are undoubtedly the number one person among the freshmen." said Mu Fengyang with a faint smile.

"Mu Fengyang, if you want to shock the world with a single feat, go find those that are placed in the front on the Heavenly Rankings. There's no need to find a freshman like me. If, by any chance, you suffer a defeat here, it would not be easy to re-accumulate that fame and reputation, and the only thing you would do is to become my stepping stone." said Mu Chen with a frown as he looked towards Mu Fengyang.

“Dissolence!” Xu Qin and his group instantly shouted furiously. This freshman was too arrogant.

Contrary to them, Mu Fengyang only gave a gentle smile. A cold glint flowed within his eyes; however, he did not let it show. Gently smiling, he replied, “Looks like you truly have confidence in yourself.”

“You better stop wanting this Divine Forging Stone. If you truly can’t resist the urge, feel free to find and attack me. Regardless of what move you use, I’ll just receive it.” said Mu Chen with a laugh as his black pupils shot a deep look at Mu Fengyang. Without any pause, he waved his hand and Luo Li and the rest gradually disappeared into the distance.

This time, Mu Fengyang did not launch an attack. However, some darkness faintly appeared on his face. In the next moment, he descended from mid-air.

“Brother Mu, are you going to let that brat off just like that?” Xu Qin and his group had already crowded over before asking this question, somewhat unwillingly. Never had they imagined that even the personal appearance of Mu Fengyang was unable to restrain and prevent Mu Chen from leaving.

Mu Fengyang shot a glance at them and replied, “That Mu Chen isn’t easy to deal with. Although his strength is at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Even I would have to spent quite a bit of effort to deal with him. We can reach that region tomorrow, so there’s no need to consume our energy now.”

“That brat is too rampant. He didn’t even give any face to you, Brother Mu.” said Xu Qing hatefully. Being treated like that by a freshman, their hearts were filled with unjust. They thought about their freshmen time, when they were always cowering. Where would there be such impoliteness towards their seniors? However, this fellow was that rampant and yet he was still able to mix that well with others.

“Relax. The things that I, Mu Fengyang, had taken fancy of would not be given to people in vain.”

Mu Fengyang gave a faint smile, before looking at the direction that Mu Chen and his group had left in with a slightly cold gaze. “The direction that they are headed to is, more or less, toward that region. Therefore, we should be able to see them again. At that time, we’ll wait and meet up with Qingshan. After converging with him, would that brat still have any chance to hop and jump?”

“Brother Zhao is also coming.” said Xu Qin and the rest hurriedly with great joy.

Mu Fengyang nodded his head and replied, “ Although that Spirit King is newly born, it’s still not something that we can deal with. With him, we should have some level of assurance.”

“Ha ha, if our Dark Society is able to kill that Spirit King, we’ll become the only power that is able to hunt and kill a Spirit King in these last few years. In the future, our fame in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would be sufficient to press the Judgment Brotherhood, as well as the Xuan Clan!”

The faces of Xu Qin and the rest were brimming with excitement. Looking at the direction where Mu Chen and his group had left in, he said, “At that time, that brat will definitely feel regret for refusing to enter our Dark Society!”

Mu Fengyang laughed as he also looked towards the same direction with slightly narrowed eyes.

Mu Chen, I hope that you possess strength that is compatible with your arrogance. If not, I’ll completely step on and destroy that arrogance of yours!

Mu Chen and his group did not stop at the campgrounds. Heading out of the campgrounds, they continued on their way, once again.

During the journey, Mu Chen threw the crystal ball, which had

five less Spirit Knight's Spiritual Lights back to Wang Tong. Smiling at him, Mu Chen said, "I've borrowed your Spiritual Lights. Afterwards, when I've killed enough, I'll return them to you three."

"There's no hurry. With you, we're not scared of you reneging." replied Wang Tong with a smile. The gaze that he sent towards Mu Chen was filled with some astonishment, as well as a sliver of respect. The unfrightened and fearless attitude that Mu Chen had used to face Mu Fengyang had made them feel slight respect for him. After all, the trio rather dreaded that Mu Fengyang, and did not dare to casually offend him.

"You three have to lead us to more reliable gathering points on the way." said Mu Chen in a jokingly scolding manner.

The trio gave off an awkward laugh, before nodding their heads. Looks like they have to hoard less of the food in the future.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Li behind him once again. The girl was playing with the black stone, while her exquisite little face faintly revealed some joy.

"Is that Divine Forging Stone that formidable?" asked Mu Chen with some doubt. He had heard of a Divine Forging Stone before. Even though it could be considered an uncommon object, it was not of that level of rarity.

"An ordinary Divine Forging Stone, naturally, does not have much use." replied Luo Li with a brilliant smile. Raising the black stone, she continued, "However this isn't an ordinary one."

"Oh?"

Mu Chen felt some amazement. Could this Divine Forging Stone be extraordinary?

Luo Li grasped the black-coloured Luo Shen Sword in her jade-like hand. Tossing the Divine Forging Stone in the air, a sword glow whistled before chopping down on the surface of the black

stone without the slightest hesitation.

Chi!

After the sword glow had passed through, the incomparably hard black stone was, unexpectedly, slightly split open. Following the crack on the black stone, Mu Chen could instantly see a bit of sparkle and luster gently radiating out from within.

This Divine Forging Stone was indeed extraordinary!

# Chapter 305 – Arrival

The black stone started to split apart, inch by inch, as the sword glow flashed past. Under its black colour, a sparkling glow started to radiate out, becoming extremely dazzling.

This mysterious change had attracted the vision of Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest. They looked in amazement at the scene before them. Not a single one of them had any idea that there would actually be another world within this seemingly unremarkable “Divine Forging Stone”.

Luo Li extended her small hand and and gently peeled away those broken stone shards. As the stone shards fell off, a crystal, with the approximate size of a thumb, revealed itself to Mu Chen and the rest.

There wasn’t anything special looking at this sparkling crystal. It looked like a well cut diamond. However, there seemed to be fluid revolving within it, making it look extremely mysterious.

Although this crystal was extremely tiny, Mu Chen and the rest could feel the enormous energies contained within it.

“What is that?” asked Wang Tong and the rest dumbfoundedly.

“This is a Forging God Crystal.” replied Luo Li with a faint smile. “A necessary material that is required when forging Divine Weapons. They are extremely rare. It can be assumed that you can’t even buy it from the Spiritual Values Hall in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

The expressions of Mu Chen and the rest simultaneously changed. A necessary material for forging Divine Weapons? Divine Weapons…this was something that even Sovereigns would be greedy about. They have never seen one before, and they don’t even know if the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has any of them.

“However, this Divine Forging Stone is too small and is far from enough for forging Divine Weapons. If not, its value would be extremely frightening.” said Luo Li in a soft voice.

Mu Chen nodded his head. A material that could aid in the forging of Divine Weapons. With regards to many experts, it would be a fatal attraction if they ever caught wind of it.

“This time, we’ve picked up a bargain.” said Mu Chen with a smile. If not for Luo Li, even he would have missed out on this “Forging God Crystal”. Relying on his strength, it was simply impossible for him to discover the crystal hidden deep within the stone. Naturally, other than Luo Li, there should be no one else within the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had the ability to detect it.

Luo Li gave a soft laugh before storing that Divine Forging Stone away. She needed to find time to undo the first seal on the Luo Shen Sword. That way, she would possess an extremely frightening trump card.

“Let’s go. We’ve to seize the moment to find more gathering points. The current us are penniless, and we also have a debt to pay.” said Mu Chen with a grin.

Feeling somewhat guilty, Luo Li looked at Mu Chen. She naturally knew that Mu Chen had took out all of his spiritual lights to buy the Divine Forging Stone. Their two full days worth of harvests was basically spent on it.

“If you show me this expression again, don’t blame me for punishing you.” said Mu Chen with a frown. He did not like seeing Luo Li being so calculative with him.

Luo Li responded with a sweet smile. That perfect smile caused even An Ran and the girls to feel a little dazzled.

“Wang Tong. I’ll have to trouble you three about the matter of finding gathering points. We’ll split them evenly.” said Mu Chen

while looking at him. Their information was extremely abundant. If they were able to provide some of them, their harvests would be extremely large.

“This region should have a Dangerous grade gathering point. I don’t know if there will be any Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase there. However, there should be quite a few Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase. It might be a little troublesome to eat it.” muttered Wang Tong after hesitating.

“Dangerous Grade...” murmured Mu Chen has his eyes faintly narrowed. Before he could reply, a faint laugh rang out from Luo Li as she said, “Then, let’s go there.”

Mu Chen shot a slightly curious look at Luo Li, before proceeding to laugh, unable to control it. “Why? Our Goddess Luo can no longer bear it and wants to take action?”

Since entering the hunting grounds, Luo Li had always been following quietly behind Mu Chen and seemed to be rather content in doing so. So much so that the circumstances that required her to take action were extremely little. However, from what Mu Chen could see, she seemed to want to take the initiative.

“You’ve owed a debt due to me. Naturally, I cannot be lazy.” replied Luo Li with a charming smile, her clear glassy pupils were gently staring at Mu Chen.

“Okay, let’s head straight there!” exclaimed Mu Chen with a loud laugh. Ever since they had entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Luo Li had rarely revealed her true power. However, he knew that if she was to truly take action, even he might not be able to defeat her.

Seeing this, Wang Tong looked at Luo Li with slight amazement. They did not understand much about Luo Li’s true strength. However, from Mu Chen’s words, it seemed that she was extremely formidable...

Some doubt flashed past their eyes; however, they didn't say anything in the end and immediately proceeded to lead the way. For such matters, Mu Chen would not be joking about it...

This doubt of theirs finally turned completely into smoke and disappeared into thin air hours later. At that time, the gazes they sent towards Luo Li were overwhelmed with shock and respect.

It was a gigantic valley. At this time, Luo Li's black sword slowly entered its sheath, causing the world-shaking sword qi to completely vanish. In front of her was a deep fissure that extended a thousand feet. The fissure was as glossy as a mirror, and it extended to a mountain peak, before splitting it into two.

This was all caused by a single slash from Luo Li.

There were even five Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase that were cut apart by that slash.

They seemed to put up not a single trace of resistance before being sliced apart by that black comet-like sword aura.

That single slash was so swift and fierce that it was simply impossible to defend against it.

While Luo Li was sheathing her sword, at another direction, a white tiger was roaring towards the heavens. A black pagoda was suppressing something that caused the earth to quake and mountains to shake. The four Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase were directly shaken and exploded.

From there stood an outstandingly handsome youth slowly descending to the ground.

"A terrifying pair of lovers..."

Wang Tong and the rest looked dumbfoundedly at the accomplishment of the two. They couldn't help letting out a long sigh. Nine Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage

Middle Phase were completely suppressed by these two.

If these two were to direct their attacks towards the trio, they might be ousted to a sorrowful state and have to scuttle away.

At this time, they realised how stupid they were, as they had actually tried to snatch Luo Li away some time ago... If Luo Li had taken action then...looking at the gigantic fissure on the ground, a cold shiver instantly travelled up their spines.

“It’s a pity that we didn’t meet any Spiritual Knight at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phases.” said Luo Li with some regret as she shook her head. This gathering point, in reality, could be considered as having a pretty good lineup. However, it was a pity that the Spiritual Knights were clearly unable to defend against the attacks that were simultaneously launched by her and Mu Chen.

“Not bad. Adding all of them together, this gathering point had almost ten Spiritual Knights at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Middle Phase. This lineup could be considered as a Dangerous grade gathering point. This time, Wang Tong gave us a reasonable one.” said Mu Chen with slight satisfaction. Compared to the small gathering points that the trio had brought them to previous, where he was too lazy to even move, the current one could already be considered as a very big harvest.

The trio laughed guiltily before hurriedly saying, “Rest assured, when we reach that region tomorrow, you guys will understand why it's called an Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point. If everything goes smoothly, our harvest will cause everyone’s eyes to turn red!”

Mu Chen turned his vision towards the northwest direction with some anticipation within his eyes. Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point...From there, would there be the existence of a Spiritual King?

A Spiritual King at the Heavenly Completion Stage.

He really wished to experience exactly how formidable it was.

A blaze seemed to have ignited within Mu Chen's eyes, filled with fighting intent, as well as curiosity.

Next day

In the early morning, Mu Chen and the group stopped for a rest before rushing at their utmost speed towards the northwest direction. At their current speed, they would get close to the Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point they had been searching for since two days ago.

As Mu Chen and the group rushed towards the region, they were able to discover that there were some Spiritual Energy fluctuations faintly spreading out from the far distance.

They looked at each other in the eyes as they thought that it was not only them who were rushing to that region. However, they did not know exactly how many strong groups were locked onto that place.

Looks like this region would be extremely lively.

Mu Chen and the rest started to increase their speed. After approximately an hour, their speed started to slowly decrease as a crater appeared on the flat plains they were travelling on. That was a crater formed by an abyss whose bottom could not be seen. Beyond that crater, lied a radiant world.

The radiance over there seemingly overshadowed the colours of the sky and earth. That was the radiance formed from the convergence of light. Looking from afar, it looked like a sea of spiritual lights, and one simply couldn't see its end.

Mu Chen and the rest were floating in the sky as they stared dumbfoundedly at the sea of spiritual lights with an ending that could not be seen. Faintly, they could feel the countless Spiritual Pawns pacing back and forth.

That entire place seemed to be a country of Spiritual Pawns!

Mu Chen stared at the depths of the abyss. Although his line-of sight-wasn't able to reach the end of it, he could faintly detect some fluctuations that made even his heart slightly palpitate.

Looks like this region wasn't simple. No wonder it was able to be graded as an Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point.

"Such a terrifying gathering point..." Wang Tong and the rest were shocked to the point that words could not form in their mouths. However, they subsequently became feverish. If they were able to collect all of the Spiritual Lights here, how great would the effect from the Spiritual Light Empowerment be?

Perhaps they might even be able to rush into the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen gradually recovered his clarity. His line-of-sight turned towards another direction, where there were some rushing whizzing sounds resounding from there. From a distance, he was able to make out a few figures standing in midair.

More and more people were coming to this place, and a great majority of them were not easy to deal with. After all, people who don't have any skills would not dare to come to a place like this Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point.

Mu Chen and Luo Li shot a glance at each other. Seems like it would not be an easy matter to hunt the Spiritual King. This place truly become lively.

# Chapter 306 – Gather

At the furthest end of the Spiritual Light army, whose borders can't be seen, stood Mu Chen and his party in midair. They gazed into the bright and resplendent army; however, they did not directly rush into it.

The number of Spiritual Pawns had reached a terrifying amount. If they were to charge in by themselves, they might be instantly submerged within the sea of Spiritual Pawns. Under that frightening amount, even a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase expert would end up in a sorrowful state.

Furthermore, other than the innumerable Spiritual Pawns, there were obviously quite a few Spiritual Knights hidden within them. All of the gathering points they had seen on the way combined were in fact still slightly less than the number present here.

The Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point truly deserved its reputation.

Wang Tong and the rest looked in shock at the scene before them. No wonder why there were so few people who dared to show fancy for such a grade of a gathering point in the past few years. Even without the Spiritual King, just based on this lineup was enough to make people halt in their tracks.

"When do we take action?"asked Wang Tong as he looked towards Mu Chen. He was somewhat eager to give it a try, as what's present before his eyes was a genuine treasure trove. As long as they were able to get a portion of it, their hunt this time could be considered as have a full harvest. This harvest would be enough to allow for them to obtain a Spiritual Light Empowerment of the highest level.

"Wait." replied Mu Chen with a gentle smile. "We're too weak. If we rashly burst in, we simply might not be able to even meet the Spiritual King before we consume all of the Spiritual Energy

within ourselves.

Hearing that, Wang Tong and the rest nodded their heads. Indeed, they had previously underestimated this grade of a gathering point. Only after seeing it with their own eyes did they realise that charging into a place like this without any accompaniment would only lead to their deaths.

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at his surroundings. At a distance, an innumerable amount of figures ceaselessly whizzed over, before forming a crowd floating in the sky. All of their eyes were feverishly looking at the Spiritual Light army in front of them.

Within a short half an hour, the surrounding skies were brimming with figures looking around in curiosity. There were at least a thousand of them. This scale can be considered as quite a bit.

“Shhhhuu!”

Just as Mu Chen was observing the surrounding situation, a rushing whoosh suddenly rang out from the distance. He looked over, only to see a large number of figures swifting dashing over, before finally floating in the air.

“It’s Mu Fengyang and his party.” After seeing those figures, the faces of Wang Tong and the rest slightly changed. That’s due to the person in front of the group, which was the person that they had some conflict with yesterday, Mu Fengyang.

When Mu Chen and the group pointed out Mu Fengyang and his party, they clearly discovered that Mu Fengyang had narrowed his eyes and sent a faint smile towards Mu Chen. He seemed he wasn’t surprised about their appearance here.

Standing behind Mu Fengyang, Xu Qin and the group stared at Mu Chen, and the group had faces brimming with ill intent, with their eyes filled with provocation.

“Hmph, what’s there to be rampant about...?” muttered Wang Tong, feeling somewhat unhappy. Suddenly, his expression changed as he saw a green streak of light sweeping towards here from a great distance, before finally descending in front of Xu Qin and his party.

As the green light scattered, it reveal a figure wearing a green robe. Although his face was ordinary, his pair of eyes were extremely bright, making people not dare to cross eyes with him. When he appeared, everyone felt a somewhat oppressive Spiritual Energy fluctuation radiating from him. This caused quite a few people from the surroundings to look over, before their expressions slightly changed.

Mu Chen’s eyes had also faintly narrowed at this instant. He had felt danger coming from the guy dressed in green.

“That’s Zhao Qingshan...” whispered Wang Tong and the rest in a low dreadful voice.

“The Zhao Qingshan that had defeated the seventh place on the Heavenly Rankings, Gu Yuan in ten moves?” asked Mu Chen as his eyes flashed. No wonder he had possessed such an imposing aura.

Seeing the appearance of Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang was instantly surprised before laughing loudly and saying, “You’ve arrived at last.”

Zhao Qingshan gave a faint smile and replied, “I’ve met with a little trouble en route.”

As he replied, he looked over towards the Spiritual Light army in the distance. A strange expression flashed within his eyes as he said, “Is that the Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point? Indeed, its extraordinary.”

After saying that, he continued to survey his surroundings. Although there were quite a few people around, a large majority of them were glanced over by him. When his vision swept to where

Mu Chen and Luo Li stood, his gaze finally rested on them.

“That’s Mu Chen. I’ve invited him to join our Dark Society yesterday; however, he rejected my invitation.” said Mu Fengyang indifferently.

“Brother Zhao, this brat is too untactful. He had not even paid attention to brother Mu’s personal invitation. From the looks of it, it seems that he really looks down on our Dark Society.” said Xu Qin, adding fuel to the fire.

“People with ability will naturally be arrogant.” said Zhao Qingshan as his eyes faintly narrowed. No one could tell if he was happy or angry. Shortly after, he shifted his gaze towards Mu Fengyang, he enquired, “Did you cross hands with him?”

Mu Fengyang faintly nodded his head and replied, “He’s able to contend against a single move by me with his Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage strength. Although it’s due to him having learnt a Deity Tier Spiritual Art, he still can be considered as formidable.”

Zhao Qingshan smiled and said, “If you have the chance, you should use your full strength to test his abilities.”

Mu Fengyang nodded his head again. Just as he was about to speak, his expression suddenly changed. Looking at another direction, he pointed at a group of figures sweeping towards this region before standing in midair.

At the front of this group of people stood a male with his hands crossed behind his back. His facial expression was indifferent; however, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body made even Mu Fengyang and his party narrow their eyes.

“That’s Xu Huang...”

Zhao Qingshan gave a slight smile, while his eyes seemingly became even more bright, as his vision was locked onto that figure. The current him was already consider to be at the 7th Rank on the

Heavenly Rankings. If he could defeat Xu Huang, his name would truly shake the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and he would be comparable to those peak influential figures, like Li Xuantong and He Yao.

“This fellow had also come.” said Mu Chen with slight astonishment as he looked at Xu Huang. He never thought that Xu Huang would be attracted to this place. Looks like this place was getting more and more lively.

Xu Huang was a true and genuine influential figure within the Northern Spiritual Heavens Academy. His appearance naturally attracted numerous gazes. Some of the people’s gazes were slightly weird as they continuously revolved past Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. The favourite thing the people of the Dark Society wanted to do was to find influential figures that ranked in the front of the Heavenly Rankings like Xu Huang and utilize their fame to show a brilliant feat that would stun the world, allowing them to mount the heavens in a single step.

Currently, it's said that Zhao Qingshan had already defeated the 7th Rank on the Heavenly Ranking, Gu Yuan. The 5th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Xu Huang, would obviously be his next target.

If these two men were to fight, who would emerge victorious?

Facing the numerous stares coming from the surroundings, Xu Huang’s face remained indifferent, with his gaze giving a faint sweep before retracting.

Xu Qingqing had also followed by his side. Her beautiful eyes gave the surroundings a sweep before spotting Mu Chen not far in the distance, which made her bite her lip. However, she knew that the current Mu Chen was no longer simple; therefore, she did not dare to be as rampant as before.

Not long after Xu Huang had arrived, a few of those outstanding students, whose reputation were not weak in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, appeared in succession. Although

their reputation could not compare to that of Xu Huang, they were not considered weak.

As the people that congregated here grew larger and larger, the lineup of students here clearly became increasingly tyrannical.

Although this number was still unable to compete with the Spiritual Light army, they had possessed intellect, while those Spiritual Knights were devoid of it, and could only rely on instinct to launch their attacks.

“When preparing to attack later, make sure to take more care. An Ran, if we head in too deep, you girls should retreat first.” said Mu Chen as he looked at the surroundings. Countless people were eager to give it a go, and from the looks of it, they were starting to prepare to invade the Spiritual Light army.

“Okay.” replied the girls as they nodded their heads. Within this group, their strength was obviously the weakest. Heading in too deep was indeed very dangerous. After all, within this Extremely Dangerous grade gathering point, the number of Heavenly Transformation Stage Spiritual Knights should not be little.

Just as Mu Chen had finished his orders, the atmosphere of this region had completely turned fiery and erupted. There were people who were unable to resist any longer as they shouted in loud voices, “Take action! Snatch those Spiritual Lights, and our Spiritual Light Empowerment this time will be perfect!”

“Charge!”

The eyes of quite a few people turned fiery at this moment, before figure after figure explosively dashed forward, shooting towards that vast and expansive Spiritual Light army in an earth-shaking manner.

They might not possess the qualifications of taking fancy in that Spiritual King; however, the Spiritual Lights present here were dozens of times more than other places. As long as they were able

to obtain a portion of them, it was a sufficient reward for them.

“Let’s take action, too. Remember, our goal is that Spiritual King. Let’s kill as many as we can along the way.” Zhao Qingshan looked at the movements of the people in the region. His originally bright eyes had a bit of flames burning within them. However, his gaze was focused on the depths of the Spiritual Light army. Ordinary Spiritual Lights did not enter his eye, the Spiritual Light at a Spiritual King level being his only goal. If he could get his hands on it and experience the Spiritual Light Empowerment again, he might have the qualifications to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage. At that time, he would even be happy and not dread it if he were to face against Shen Cangsheng.

Chi!

The moment his words appeared, his figure had already shot forward. Bringing along his party, Mu Fengyang immediately followed behind him.

“Let’s go.”

Xu Qing looked indifferently at the back of Zhao Qingshan and his group, before casually saying two words before shooting off.

Earth-shattering whizzing sounds rang out through the entire sky as figure after figure shot towards the vast and expansive Spiritual Light army akin to locusts.

This scene was rather spectacular.

“We should also make a move.”

Only after seeing everyone starting to move did Mu Chen nod his head. At this kind of place, it's best to let other people be the vanguard.

With a shift of his body, he shot forward, instantly shooting past the deep fissure.In the far distance. The bright and resplendent Spiritual Light army sparkled with a glow that blotted the skies. Mu Chen’s gaze focused on the depths of the army.

The Spiritual King should be at there.

Mu Chen's eyes faintly flashed as he approached the Spiritual Light that blotted the skies. Looking at the never-ending Spiritual Knights, Mu Chen waved his hand. Taking the lead, he rushed into the Spiritual Light army.

Following the advancement of everyone, the Spiritual Light army that was originally devoid of life force, but brimming with boundless Spiritual Energy, quietly became restless at this moment.

# Chapter 307 – Spiritual King

Bang!

Within the boundless Spiritual Light akin to an ocean, a Spiritual power streak burning with black flames swept across. Any Spiritual Pawn that came in contact with it would disintegrate seemingly in an instant, before transforming into strands of Spiritual Light, which would float up.

Shhhuuu!

An Ran and the rest immediately took action, immediately storing those Spiritual Lights.

Just when they had stored those Spiritual Lights, the earth-shattering amount of Spiritual Pawns flooded from the surroundings like a tidal wave, almost wanting to completely submerge them.

The Wang brothers had also simultaneously launched their attacks at this instant. Swift and fierce light blades swept across, creating a huge fissure within the incoming Spiritual Pawn tide, which their small group passed through without delay.

“The number of Spiritual Pawns here is too terrifying!”

When Wang Tong and the rest had just passed through the fissure, and subsequently looked at the seemingly endless waves of Spiritual Pawns, their faces could not help turning serious and grave. The number of Spiritual Pawns at this gathering point might be in the millions.

It was fortunate that these Spiritual Pawns did not have any trace of intelligence. If not, as long as one of them attacked once, even a Heavenly Completion Stage person would be smashed and turned into pulp.

Mu Chen had also nodded his head. The few of them had took turns to attack and created a fissure in the Spiritual Pawn tide to

reduce the consumption of Spiritual Energy. If one were to do this alone, once one had crashed their way through the outer boundary, one might have already exhausted one's Spiritual Energy.

While he was cleaning up the Spiritual Pawns that were endlessly flooding over, he had also raised his head to look at the distance. At those places, there were several extremely wild and violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out. Obviously, those places were also locked in intense battles.

The number of these fights was not small; however, it was fortunate that these fights had shared the pressure. If not, it would be many times harder for Mu Chen and his group to reach the depths.

"The Dark Society members are very quick!" Wang Tong suddenly shouted. Not far from them was a group of people who were seemingly using an unreachable speed to rush forward, crush every single Spiritual Pawn that came their way. The leaders of that group were Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. Their lineup could be considered the strongest, with their numbers also being the most.

On the right side, falling behind the Dark Society by a sliver, was the group brought over by Xu Huang. Further into the distance were some groups who were pretty strong that were rapidly slashing apart the Spiritual Pawn flood, pushing towards the depths.

"There's no need to be anxious. Even if you reach the depths earlier, do you truly think that the Spiritual King is that easy to deal with?" Mu Chen had still maintained his calm. Other than reaching the depths a step earlier by rushing in, there was no other use. However, was there any need to be a step earlier? He did not believe that Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang and his gang would be able to deal with the Spiritual King.

“Maintain our speed. Use your Spiritual Energy sparingly, as this has just started.” Mu Chen reminded the rest. Up till now, only the most ordinary of Spiritual Pawns had appeared, with even the Spiritual Knights having not appeared yet.

Wang Tong and the rest nodded their heads before focusing all of their attention to the unending stream of Spiritual Pawns that were flooding over.

As they were dashing forward with rapt attention, their speed had increased by quite a bit. After a short dozen minutes, they had gradually passed through the outermost region of the gathering point.

However, as they passed through the outermost region, they finally started to gradually feel some pressure. Although the Spiritual Pawns here did not have any intelligence, their numbers were overly terrifying. Sweeping over with their surging Spiritual Energies, their attacks were not any weaker than the all-out attack of a Heavenly Transformation Stage expert. Wanting to resist that kind of attack wasn’t as easy as one thought.

However, it was good that Mu Chen and his group made some mental preparations and took turns, allowing them to continue their resistance.

As time past, they got increasingly deeper into the gathering point.

Bang!

Mu Chen sent a fist rumbling out. Wild and violet Spiritual Energy streamed out akin to a rocket plume, directly shattering a dozen Spiritual Pawns that were dashing over into smithereens. A strand of Spiritual Light akin to a blaze shot out, before being caught by him.

However, after killing those Spiritual Pawns, Mu Chen slightly wrinkled his brows. Now, they could already be considered as

having entered the middle region of the gathering point. However, what made him feel somewhat flabbergasted was that, on the way here, he had actually not seen a single Spiritual Knight, with everything being ordinary Spiritual Pawns.

Even the Ordinary grade gathering point they had visited before had Spiritual Knights in them. However, after reaching such a depth, why was there not even a trace of them?

Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the depths that were brimming with Spiritual Light. The Spiritual Lights there were overly bright and resplendent, with even the the skies being masked by it. He was also unable to clearly look at that place; however, he could faintly sense that something wasn't right.

Mu Chen shook his head and suppressed the feeling in his heart. Since he had reached this place, no matter what, he had to personally see the Spiritual King.

"Speed up!"

He roared in a low voice. He took the initiative he shoot forward, with Luo Li, Wang Tong and the rest immediately following behind him. They also started to utilize their Spiritual Energies, traveling forward at full speed.

However, as they continued further in, the suspicion in Mu Chen's eyes turned increasingly thick. Until now, he had not seen a single Spiritual Knight.

Those Spiritual Knights seemed to have vanished into thin air.

"Mu Chen, the situation doesn't feel right." Even Wang Tong had sensed this situation. His face was turning slightly ugly, as he said in a low voice.

"Where did all the Spiritual Knights go?"

Mu Chen raised his head and looked at the groups that were in the far distance. They had seemingly increased their speed as they rushed towards the depths. They also seemed to have discovered

the situation, and, therefore, had wanted to hurry to the depths to search for exactly what had happened here.

“Let’s go to the depths to take a look.” Mu Chen softly muttered. With a wave of his hand, the group immediately increased their speed. Using all their strength, they smashed through the Spiritual Pawn flood that blocked their path.

Using their full strength, after approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen and his group had already passed through the seemingly endless Spiritual Pawn flood. As they did so, the pressure coming from all directions instantly disappeared.

The Spiritual Pawn flood had completely disappeared.

Mu Chen and his group stared with slight amazement at the absolutely empty depths. Hundreds of metres behind them was the Spiritual Pawn flood that they had just passed through. However, after passing through, the Spiritual Pawns had stopped their pursuit, pacing to and fro, not daring to come any closer.

Mu Chen faintly wrinkled his brows and stopped caring about those ordinary Spiritual Pawns. He swept his gaze around, only to see the extreme vastness in the depths. However, it was deserted, without a single trace of life.

Within the deepest part of the depths were the bright and resplendent Spiritual Lights that blotted the skies. Faintly, there was an extremely strong Spiritual Energy pressure that radiated from the skies, blotting out the entire depths.

Perhaps, due to that pressure, the Spiritual Pawns did not dare to come closer.

As for the person that possessed that kind of astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure, there was obviously no other existence, other than the Spiritual King.

Mu Chen’s vision turned around and looked at the vast and spacious region, as dozens of groups rushed in here. They had also

scanned their surroundings with slight suspicion. Finally, their gazes congregated on the deepest part of the depths, where the spiritual power pressure was radiating from.

The Spiritual King was there!

The eyes of quite a few people started to turn fiery as they proceeded to simultaneously dash forward.

Mu Chen waved his hand and followed after them. At the same time, he had increased his cautiousness. This region was graded as Extremely Dangerous. If he was not vigilant, being empty-handed would be a small thing. He was afraid of being seriously injured and thrown directly out of the Spiritual Light World.

Dozens of groups rapidly shot towards the spacious region. After quite a while, their figures started to stop one by one, before looked at the place in front of them with some astonishment.

Within the extreme depths, the bright and resplendent Spiritual Lights endlessly radiated out. Within the place where the Spiritual Light was most eye-piercing stood an approximately 300 metre tall gigantic figure. The figure was covered entirely in gems, as if a thick layer of crystal armor had enveloped it. It quietly stood there, as if it was the emperor of this entire region, looking like an anomaly.

“That’s the Spiritual King?”

Mu Chen and the group looked gravely at the gigantic figure. The terrifying Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the latter made everyone present feel fear and trepidation.

That degree was absolutely not something that a Heavenly Transformation Stage could compare with!

Obviously, within this region, other than the Spiritual King, which existence was able to possess such powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations?

“I’m finally seeing a Spiritual King. That’s what they look like.”

Wang Tong and the rest muttered to themselves before bitterly laughing and said, “However, doesn’t it seem to be too strong?”

The Spiritual Energy fluctuations that radiated from it made them feel their bodies grow slightly heavier. This made them understand the huge difference between themselves and the Spiritual King.

This was the strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage?

Amongst them, there was almost no one who could be the opponent of this Spiritual King in a duel.

The dozen groups stood at a far distance, their eyes staring feverishly at the Spiritual King towering over this region. However, no one dared to rashly take the initiative and attack it, as they could sense how frightening this Spiritual King was.

“Everyone.”

The quiet atmosphere continued awhile. Zhao Qingshan turned his bright eyes towards the crowd. Cupping his fists, he said, “I think that everyone has discovered the formidability of this Spiritual King. I propose that we join hands and kill it. If not, we might return empty-handed today.”

Some people muttered to themselves and nodded their heads. Indeed, if they didn’t join hands, they would definitely be unable to deal with this Spiritual King. Their lineup here was not weak. If they were to join hands, there were some odds of success for them to deal with this recently born Spiritual King.

“How do we split the Spiritual Light of the Spiritual King?” some people shouted out. There’s only one strand of Spiritual Light from the Spiritual King; however, there were quite a few people present.

“It's somewhat too early to talk about that. We should discuss on how to allocate after dealing with the Spiritual King.”

Zhao Qingshan gave a faint smile before turning to Xu Huang, and asked, “What do you think, brother Xu?”

Xu Huang faintly narrowed his eyes as he shot a look at the Spiritual King towering over this region. Faintly nodding his head, he replied indifferently. “Let’s join hands.”

Xu Huang was, after all, an influential figure within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Upon seeing him giving the nod of approval, everyone followed suit and nodded their heads. In a short moment, the morale started to rise. Thinking about it, with so many people joining hands, even the Spiritual King would find it difficult to resist them, right? After all, regardless of that, the Spiritual King had only strength and was devoid of intelligence.

Mu Chen looked at everyone’s rising morale. His forehead faintly wrinkled before sweeping the vast region with his gaze. Why was he unable to see even a single Spiritual Knight? Where exactly had all those Spiritual Knights run to?

# Chapter 308 – Encircling the Spiritual King

Due to Zhao Qingshan and Xu Huang saying they would join hands, the dozen groups quickly agreed on a common consensus, with each and every person nodding their heads in agreement to join hands.

Seeing this happen, Zhao Qingshan immediately gave a faint smile, before turning his vision toward Mu Chen and his group, who had yet to make a single sound. Smiling, he asked, “Mu Chen, how do you feel about this?”

Mu Chen smiled and replied indifferently, “It’s enough if all the seniors have agreed on it. I’m just a freshman, and I’m not strong. It will be alright if I put in effort with everyone.”

A few people shot a weird glance at Mu Chen. Although the current him had indeed the status of a freshman, his reputation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was something that even some outstanding seniors could not compare to. Naturally, matching with his reputation and his fame was a strength of the same degree. Regardless of the three bouts with Li Xuantong or rumors about destroying the general headquarters of the Demon’s Gate in front of He Yao, both were sufficient to prove the strength that he possessed.

“Haha, junior brother Mu Chen sure is modest.” said Zhao Qingshan beamingly, as he continued, “Although it’s said that this Spiritual King is a newborn; no matter what, it’s still an existence at the Heavenly Completion Stage. Therefore, we need people who possess the strength that reaches or is comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage to be able to stall him head-on. I believe that junior brother Mu Chen is able to attack it with us.”

Mu Chen’s eyebrows faintly twitched. This Zhao Qingshan is actually holding him with such high regards? From the looks of it, he wished to probe exactly how high his capabilities were.

“Hmph, although that fellow has some ability, wanting to compete with a Heavenly Completion Stage isn’t that easy!” standing behind Xu Huang, Xu Qingqing snorted in a low voice. She recognized that Mu Chen was somewhat formidable; however, she did not believe that he possessed the strength that was comparable to people of Xu Huang’s level.

That day, outside the Demon’s Gate, only by relying on his prior preparation of many Spiritual Arrays and the various grudges and grievances with He Yao, he was able to get the upper hand.

Xu Huang’s expression did not change as he said indifferently, “Don’t underestimate him. This Mu Chen is getting harder and harder to see through. If he truly was to take action, even I don’t have absolute faith in defeating him.”

Xu Qingqing curled her lips, obviously not believing those words.

Mu Chen sent a smile towards Zhao Qingshan and did not continue speaking, only nodded his head to express his approval. There were quite a few people that had converged over here, and were obviously slightly vigilant against him too. If they were to show their strength while he hid at the back, he would obviously meet with the expulsion by everyone.

“An Ran, you girls take action and attack. Wang Tong and you two follow me and attack.” said Mu Chen is a soft voice.

An Ran and the two girls obediently nodded their heads. With their Heavenly Fusion strength, they really were unable to intervene here.

“What about me?” inquired Luo Li.

Mu Chen faintly shook his head and replied, “All along, I’ve felt that this place is slightly strange. Since they did not take the initiative to say your name, you should preserve your strength as much as possible so that you can use it when an unforeseen event appears.”

Luo Li nodded her small head.

“Everyone, prepare to take action. Let us test exactly how formidable this Spiritual King is together. If we are able to kill it, we’ll be the first students that are able to kill a Spiritual King in so many years!” seeing everyone appearing to be eager to give it a try, a fire was lit within Zhao Qingshan’s eyes as he roared in a deep voice.

“Yes, let’s attack together!” replied everyone simultaneously with soaring fighting intent. In the next instant, over a hundred figures explosively shot forward as vigorous amounts of Spiritual Energy rushed towards the heavens.

This few people’s strength appeared to be at the Heavenly Transformation stage. With such a lineup, they could be considered as extremely tyrannical.

As their Spiritual Energies rushed towards the heavens, the 300 metre tall giant-like gem-encrusted Spiritual King that was towering over the vast depths suddenly opened its eyes. There wasn’t any emotional fluctuation within those eyes, only an eye-piercing Spiritual Light. It's cold and empty gaze swept across, locking onto those numerous insignificant figures in the distance, which was akin to looking at ants.

Roar!

When it had discovered those intruding ants, it faced the heavens and roared loudly without any sense of courtesy. The roar was akin to a thunderous boom, rumbling as it resounded. Spiritual Energy fluctuations that could be seen with the naked-eye engulfed the skies as the earth seemed to simultaneously start vibrating.

Sensing this terrifying Spiritual Energy shockwave, regardless of Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest, all of their expressions slightly changed, as the expression within their eyes turned extremely grave. Regardless of how much of a numerically advantage they were in or that the Spiritual King was newly-born,

it truly possessed the strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage.

“Attack!”

However, those present here were, after all, rather outstanding students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although they were shocked by the imposing aura radiating from the Spiritual King, they still did not retreat. With a fierce roar, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan, Mu Fengyang and the rest of the Heavenly Transformation Late Stage students explosively shot forward. Completely circulating their boundless Spiritual Energies, they transformed into numerous streaks of light, rushing towards the giant-like Spiritual King in the distance at lightning speed.

Mu Chen had also followed closely behind, with the three Wang brothers also following closely with grave expressions on their faces. The massive crescent moon blades had already appeared in a flash within their hands.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang’s speed were the fastest. Within a few breaths, they had appeared before the gigantic Spiritual King. Without any hesitation, the three of them explosively roared, releasing powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations in an explosive manner.

“Desolate God’s Blade!”

“Hurricane Sword Art!”

“Rushing Thunder Palm!”

Facing an existence that’s at a level like the Spiritual King, Xu Huang and the other two were not stupid enough to show any mercy. Therefore, the first attack they sent out was a powerful one.

A three hundred metre-long giant blade was formed, and furiously chopped down.

The sword’s glow, akin to a hurricane, screamed out, piercing straight at the Spiritual King’s throat with incomparable swiftness

and ferocity.

A gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print violently pressed on the Spiritual King's chest, carrying with it the power of crazy lightning.

Xu Huang and the other two were at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, they were obviously the elites amongst them. When they launched their attacks with full power, the prestige and power of those attacks caused fear and apprehension amongst the people that were watching from behind.

Facing the tyrannical attacks, there was not a single fluctuation present in the indifferent eyes of the Spiritual King that sparkled with an eye-piercing glow. Facing the full-powered attacks from three great Heavenly Transformation Stages, it only took a step forward. Leaning its body forward, it suddenly opened its mouth and roared explosively!

Roar!

The roar was akin to thunder as sound waves, visible to the naked eye, brought along earth-shattering Spiritual Energy storms that wreaked havoc along its path. The space was shaken till distortions started forming.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Regardless of the blade's glow, sword glints or the palm print, upon contact with the spiritual energy storm and the sound waves, they instantly shattered and exploded.

Xu Huang and the other two made a stifled snort as their bodies faintly trembled. The graveness within their eyes promptly grew deeper. The combined attacks of the three of them were unexpectedly broken by a single roar from the Spiritual King. The strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage was terrifying to that degree?

Shhhuuu!

However, just as the attacks of Xu Huang and the other two were destroyed, a hundred figures rose up from behind them. Ferocious Spiritual Energy attacks akin to a storm fell in torrents, smashing against the Spiritual King's body.

Ding! Ding!

The Spiritual Energy attacks exploded on the Spiritual King's body. However, not a single tremor ran throughout its body. The crystal armor sparkled, completely absorbing all of those attacks.

Bang!

The numerous Spiritual Energy attacks were annihilated. A glow flashed past the Spiritual King's eyes as it sent a palm rumbling out. Instantly shattering space, it furiously patted down on the bodies of numerous figures who were unable to evade in time with lightning speed.

Bang!

Those figures shot out, landing at a faraway place. Turning deathly pale, they spurted a mouthful of fresh blood, their auras turning weak and faint. Ray after ray of light descended from the skies, enveloping them. As the rays of light disappeared, their figures had also vanished.

These people had been sent directly out of the Spiritual Light World due to serious injuries.

The scene that played before them caused quite a few people to feel goosebumps rise on their skin. Just a single palm was enough to make those unlucky fellows lose the qualifications to continue staying in the Spiritual Light World. This Spiritual King's attack, isn't it too frightening?

Mu Chen's eyes turned grave as he looked at the scene before him. Was this the exact strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage? As it was born not too long ago, the Spiritual King had not

completely stabilized its power in the Heavenly Competition Stage. However, its strength was already at such a terrifying level.

“Dammit! This fellow’s defensive strength is too strong! We simply can’t hurt it!” exclaimed the three Wang brothers as their faces turned slightly pale. Their swift and fierce blade glints that they had utilized all of their strength to unleash on the Spiritual King’s body only left white scars. There was not even the slightest trace of them causing any effective damage to it.

Mu Chen stared closely at the gigantic body of the Spiritual King. At this time, everyone had already gone all-out and executed their attacks. Streaks of Spiritual Energy bombarded the Spiritual King’s body in endless streams.

However, facing their attacks, the Spiritual King never even flinched a bit. Yet, every time it launched it’s attack, a gigantic palm print would shatter space apart, causing serious injuries to numerous figures as it patted down. Shrieking and screaming, they would be sent out of the Spiritual Light World.

Within a few short minutes, they had lost tens of people. This made everyone feel slight fear and trepidation and became all the more careful, fearing that they would be slapped out of the Spiritual Light World. If that happened, they would have to say a premature goodbye to this hunt.

Mu Chen floated in the sky, having yet to launch any attacks as he continued to stare at the Spiritual King. Following his observation, he discovered that every time an attack was about to land on the back of its head, it would raise and block it with his hand. As for the attacks that landed on its body, it seemed to not give a single hint of care.

Mu Chen eyes faintly narrowed as his vision shifted towards the head of the Spiritual King. Its head was also sparkling with eye-piercing light, and those hollow and indifferent eyes had not a trace of emotion within them, making people’s hair stand.

As his vision moved higher, Mu Chen saw that the brightness at a position on his forehead that was clearly more eye-piercing by a bit. Faintly, there seemed to be a special fluctuation radiating out from there.

Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. Waving his sleeve, a streak of Spiritual Energy burning with black flames explosively shot out, directly striking the eye piercing glow on the Spiritual King's forehead.

Bang!

However, just as Mu Chen's streak of Spiritual Energy closed in, a glow flashed past the Spiritual King's eyes. A palm slapped out, smashing the streak of Spiritual Energy into bits.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled.

Bang!

The gigantic Spiritual King suddenly lowered its head and locked onto Mu Chen floating in the air. Clenching its large hand, a fist akin to a small mountain pounded towards Mu Chen, carrying along its frightening power.

The air was shattered by this fist, as the earth below it started to cave in.

"Careful!" Seeing this, the beautiful faces of An Ran and the girls standing not far instantly changed and hurriedly screamed out. Luo Li's pupils turned stiff as her jade-like hand gripped her sword sheath tightly.

Roar!

Mu Chen looked towards the incoming fist that had the pressure akin to a mountain. A glow surfaced in front of his body, while a sound akin to a dragon's roar resounded out. Within the glow, a dragon's shade surfaced, having the appearance akin to flying into the skies.

The dragon shade unfurled as Mu Chen's figure mysteriously vanished from his original position. The incomparably violent fist had completely struck air.

Discovering the same thing, the gazes of Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest faintly sparkled, before their eyes turned stiff. A shade surfaced on the gigantic arm of the Spiritual King, before shooting up the arm with an extremely astonishing speed.

"Such a fast speed!"

Their hearts faintly trembled. Mu Chen's speed was fast to the point that they could only see a blurry shade of him.

Chi!

While their hearts were in shock, Mu Chen's figure had already appeared on the gigantic forehead of the Spiritual King in lightning speed. A fist rumbled out from him as a white tiger formed behind him. While roaring, it carried a murderous aura as it rumbled towards the Spiritual King's forehead.

Bang!

The fist rumbled out solidly, as violent and explosive Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupted out of the Spiritual King's forehead. The gigantic figure that had not moved a single inch unexpectedly started to tremble at this instant, before its large feet retreated a number of steps. The entire earth quaked and the mountains shook as it trampled backwards.

Upon seeing Mu Chen's fist smashing back the Spiritual King, the pupils of Zhao Qingshan, and Xu Huang fiercely narrowed. A few people even sucked in a breath of cold air. The Spiritual King that they were unable to stir even after joining hands was actually forced to retreat by Mu Chen's fist?

This fellow, he was that tyrannical?

One gaze after another stared at the lanky figure in the air, eyes sparkling indefinitely.

# Chapter 309 – Underground

Floating in midair, Mu Chen discovered those gazes aiming towards him, sparkling with suspicion. Unable to help it, he faintly curled his lips and said, “The weakness of this Spiritual King is clearly on its forehead. Your messy attacks, even if you attack it for a day, might not even be able to cause damage to it.”

Only upon hearing this did everyone gawk, before hurriedly turning their vision towards the Spiritual King. At this time, the eye-piercing glow on the latter’s forehead was somewhat restrained. Faintly, one could seemingly see that on the position of its forehead was a gemstone that seemed to be the approximate size of a human head. That gemstone was sparkling with an eye-piercing glow, while frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations continuously radiated from within it.

Everyone stared at the eye-piercing gemstone before realising in a flash. So that was the weak spot of the Spiritual King. This was why Mu Chen’s strike was able to force it back.

From Zhao Qingshan’s and Mu Fengyang’s faces, one could clearly notice that they had taken a slight breath of relief. If Mu Chen truly possessed the strength to force the Spiritual King back head-on, exactly how frightening was the strength he possessed?

If Mu Chen truly possessed such strength, who was able to snatch the Spiritual King Spiritual Light from him?

Roar!

While they were in the process of realisation, the gigantic body of the Spiritual King started to erupt in a bright and resplendent glow once again. The attack it had received to the gemstone on its forehead had seeming enraged it. While it roared, a gigantic streak of Spiritual Energy descended from the skies, akin to a light beam, violently rumbling towards Mu Chen.

Chi!

Having made ample preparation, Mu Chen immediately exhibited the [Soaring Dragon Technique]. As the dragon shade rolled and unfurled, his figure had already appeared a thousand metres behind the Spiritual King, evading the light beam.

Rumble!

The light beam descended on the ground, smashing the earth apart, creating a gigantic pit. Faintly, there seemed to be some sparkling light.

Mu Chen shot a look at the gigantic pit, while slightly gawking. However, before he could process it clearly, a gigantic shadow had already enveloped him. The Spiritual King's gigantic hand and already ferociously patted over.

Space exploded as Mu Chen hurriedly exhibited the [Dragon Soaring Art], evading the gigantic palm the moment it made contact with him.

Mu Chen showed himself again, a grave expression all over his face, as his heartbeat sped up by a bit. The attack if this Spiritual King was too terrifying. He should definitely not let it near him. If not, the injury he would receive would not be light.

"Attack the gemstone on its forehead together!"

Fortunately, the other people had sobered up at this moment. With explosive roars, they shot and flashed over. Swift and fierce attacks started to rumble and shoot towards the gemstone on the Spiritual King's forehead that was sparkling with eye-piercing brilliance one after another.

Facing the group of attacks heading towards its weak point, the Spiritual King did not directly receive the attacks this time. Raising its gigantic hands, it completely blocked the incoming attacks.

However, the combined attacks of everyone had some crafty ones mixed in. Even though the Spiritual King had tried to block, there

were still numerous attacks that violently smashed against the gemstone. The gigantic body of the Spiritual King was, once again, forced back.

However, as its body retreated, it, once again, resisted the many incoming attacks and stood back at its original position.

Bang!

Enormous Spiritual Energies gushed out from its palm in the form of light beams, smashing a few unfortunate fellows till they vomited blood and were shot away. Their auras were instantly depressing, before a ray of light descended from the sky, sending them away.

Facing this kind of loss, everyone only shot a glance before violently attacking with rapt attention again. Blade lights and sword glints blotted the skies, screaming as they violently chopped and hacked at the eye-piercing gemstone on the Spiritual King's forehead.

This Spiritual King had indeed only been born not that long ago. Although it still possessed quite terrifying strength, it appeared rather sluggish, as if it had not yet reached the degree of fullness and smoothness.

Due to this, Zhao Qingshan and the rest dared to focus their attention to its forehead. If the Spiritual King had passed through this newly-born phase, its strength would violently increase. At that time, even they might not be able to escape through the gap of its teeth.

Everyone continued in their assault. At the same time, their losses had also continued. The original number of hundreds had now been left with only half of that. The rest had already been sent out of the Spiritual Light World with a pat from the Spiritual King.

This level of loss could be called disastrous.

However, although their losses were disastrous, the Spiritual

King was forced to consume quite a bit of its energy. Its attacks were already not as wild and violent as the initial ones, with it only focusing tenaciously to defend the gemstone on its forehead.

“Haha, everyone increase your power! This Spiritual King is indeed a newborn! Its strength isn’t as powerful as we’ve imagined! As long as we can evade its attacks, it’s all good!” Floating in midair, Mu Fengyang looked towards that Spiritual King, whose attacks were gradually weakening, before shouting out with a big chuckle.

Upon hearing this, a shock went through everyone’s mind as they sped up their assault.

Mu Chen had also sent a streak of Spiritual Energy rumbling out. However, his eyes were continuously sparkling. This Spiritual King’s strength was, indeed, not as strong as he had expected. Was it truly due to it being just born?

Mu Chen’s vision swept past the place where the Spiritual King stood as his brows faintly wrinkled. There was a huge pit on the ground that was caused by its step. However, regardless of how everyone attacked, the Spiritual King did not even leave that boundary.

“Exactly what’s up?” murmured Mu Chen as he stared at the patch of ground, frowning faintly.

Bang!

While Mu Chen was muttering to himself, the Spiritual King extended his gigantic hand. Ten thousand rays of light erupted out, violently smashing straight at Mu Fengyang, who was trying to boost everyone’s morale.

Seeing that the Spiritual King had locked onto him, the face of Mu Fengyang faintly changed. Just as he had evaded the rays of light, his eyes caught a glimpse of Mu Chen, who was not far behind him. At this moment, a faint flash sparkled within his eyes.

Chi!

His body suddenly flew sideways, appeared coincidentally in front of Mu Chen. At the same time, the Spiritual King's gigantic hand had already ferociously covered over them, enveloping the two of them.

Under the envelope of its shadow, Mu Chen sobered up from his slightly absentminded state. After seeing what's in front of him, his expression immediately changed.

"HeHe."

A smile with ill intent surfaced from the corner of Mu Fengyang's mouth. Spiritual Light erupted from his body, as a thick suit of deep yellow Spiritual armor appeared on his body, tightly enveloping him within it.

This Spiritual armor was obviously a pretty good defensive Spiritual Artifact.

"Bye-bye." A cold laugh rang out as the Spiritual Armor enveloped Mu Fengyang's body within it.

Mu Chen's eyes turned frosty as he thought, 'This fellow is actually trying to lure trouble to me.' He wanted to take advantage of the Spiritual King's strength to shove Mu Chen out of the Spiritual Light World. However, this Mu Fengyang was too naive. Did he think that by doing this, he would be able to bind Mu Chen's hands such that he would be unable to do anything about the incoming attack?

A black light gushed forth in front of Mu Chen's body as a black pagoda surfaced, before enveloping Mu Chen within it.

The Nine-layered Pagoda possessed extremely strong defensive capabilities, and was considered the strongest defense Mu Chen had. If its defensive capabilities were genuinely discussed, even Mu Fengyang's Spiritual Armor would be inferior to it.

Bang!

As the Nine-layered Pagoda enveloped Mu Chen within it, the Spiritual King's gigantic palm had violently patted down. A metallic sound rang out, as the two of them were immediately patted into the ground, violently piercing through the earth. A deep and gigantic pit was formed from their impact.

Spurt!

In a sorrowful state, Mu Fengyang crawled out from the gigantic pit. Spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood, he lowered his head to look at the Spiritual armor on his body. There were some cracks on its surface. This filled his heart with pain. Turning his head, he proceeded to look at the deep pit not far from him. Dust and smoke had filled the air there. Under that sudden attack, it looked like that fellow had definitely suffered serious injuries.

"Let's see how you're gonna snatch the Spiritual Lights from us." sneered Mu Fengyang coldly. Suppressing the injuries within his body, he rushed towards the horizon once again.

The attack from the Spiritual King towards the two of them was seen by everyone. When Xu Huang and the rest saw only Mu Fengyang flying towards them, they felt slightly shocked. Looks like Mu Chen had suffered injuries that were not light this time.

The actions that Mu Fengyang made were ambiguous, and no one had imagined that he would actually lure trouble towards Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen!" the facial expression of the three Wang brothers changed. They proceeded to shoot a suspicious look at the innocent-looking Mu Fengyang. However, since they did not have any evidence, it would not be good to speak up now.

Everyone shook their heads in regret. However, the present situation did not allow for them to be distracted. Therefore, they had quickly refocused their minds on launching their assault on the gradually weakening Spiritual King.

“ Mu Chen’s been hit!” From a distance away, upon seeing this play out in front of their eyes, the beautiful faces of An Ran and the girls instantly changed.

Luo Li’s brows faintly bunched up. Her pupils shot a cold look at the floating Mu Fengyang; however, she did not overly panic. Saying in a soft voice, “ Relax, that Mu Fengyang had only received light injuries. Mu Chen isn’t that frail.”

Seeing that Luo Li had not a single trace of panic, An Ran and the girls were able to quickly calm down, before faintly nodding their heads.

As the crowd of people in the air continued to encircle and launch their assault on the Spiritual King, no one had yet discovered Mu Chen’s figure appearing beside the black pagoda within the deep, dust-filled pit. He looked up towards the intense battle, before looking at the stretch of earth with sparkling eyes. Sending his fist rumbling out, he created another deep pit and jumped within it. Next, he proceeded to continue his onslaught towards the ground.

Very quickly, a deep hole was dug up by him. Mu Chen’s figure vanished into the hole. As he vanished, the black pagoda started to revolve, covering the hole up. This way, even if the dust that filled the air had dissipated, no would would be able to discover Mu Chen’s disappearance. They would only assume that he had hid within the black pagoda to recuperate.

Bang! Bang!

Underground, Mu Chen’s body was covered with rippling black flames akin to armor as he continued to dig deeper into the ground. The thick earth and rocks were roasted and burnt away by the black flames.

From the start, he had already discovered that something was slightly not right about this gathering point. Those Spiritual Knights would not vanish for no apparent reason. Furthermore, that Spiritual King wasn’t as strong as he had expected.

Regardless of how they attack, that Spiritual King would not leave a hundred feet from it's location.

From the looks of it, it seemed that it was guarding over something.

Since there was nothing above the ground for it to defend, Mu Chen had decided to search below the ground.

With a low roar, Mu Chen revolved his Spiritual Energy, increasing the speed at which he penetrated the earth. After approximately a minute or so, something flashed past his mind. The ground below his hand, unexpectedly, disappeared as his figure dropped down.

Mu Chen hurriedly stabilised his figure. Spiritual Energy enveloped his body as he peered vigilantly at this subterranean space. As his vision looked over, the expression on his face started to freeze little by little.

“This is...”

Mu Chen took a deep breath of this subterranean air that was filled with the smell of the earth as thick shock and astonishment erupted forth from his heart.

# Chapter 310 – Seizing of the Spirit Crystal

What appeared before Mu Chen's eyes was an extremely vast and spacious underground world. Within this underground world was innumerable clumps of light floating around. These clumps of light were extremely eye-piercing, while astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from them.

"These are all Spiritual Lights?"

Mu Chen looked at those thousands upon thousands of light clumps with shock in his eyes. From the Spiritual Energy contained within those light clumps, he could tell that those were Spiritual Lights of at least Spiritual General grade. As of now, this number of Spiritual Lights were actually converged at this place.

This scene was indeed extremely spectacular.

Mu Chen's vision followed the bright and resplendent Spiritual Lights. Within the most central area of this under ground world, he saw the most eye-piercing light clump. It was gorgeous and magnificent, with a faintly discernable crystal that was approximately 3.3 metres tall floating within it.

This crystal was limpid and sparkling, and there seemed to be a thick fluid flowing within it. A bright and dim light glow, looking akin to a beating heart, seemingly possessed a mysterious life energy.

Following the brilliant sparkle of that crystal, countless strands of Spiritual Lights, with Spiritual Energy streaks of light, were pouring out before pouring into that 3.3 metre tall crystal like an endless stream. This caused it to grow all the more brighter.

Indescribable Spiritual Energy fluctuations were undulated, akin to waves, causing even Mu Chen's heart to hurriedly throb and pulse.

"No wonder, the Spiritual Knights in this Extremely Dangerous

region had all turned into these Spiritual Lights."

Mu Chen finally understood in a flash as to why he wasn't able to spot a single Spiritual Knight since he entered this gathering point. They had all been turned into Spiritual Lights. These Spiritual Lights were obviously providing Spiritual Energy for that crystal.

"Could it be that this place was created by the Spiritual King?" thought Mu Chen while feeling some shock. From the look of the situation underground, it clearly wasn't man-made. That meant that it was created by the Spiritual King. He would have never thought that an existence without intelligence would actually be able to understand how to construct an underground world.

This might be due to their abilities; however, this was sufficient to explain the mystery contained within this stretch of the world.

'No wonder why this Spiritual King's strength isn't particularly strong.' thought Mu Chen as he looked with fiery eyes at the bright and resplendent crystal. 'The Spiritual Energy within is surging to an astonishing degree.'

According to Mu Chen's estimates, the scene before him might be for the sake of helping the Spiritual King cross over from its newly born and weak condition. Only when the Spiritual King absorbed this crystal that had absorbed the Spiritual Energy from so many Spiritual Knights would the big fellow out there truly become a Spiritual King.

A faint sparkle flashed within Mu Chen's eyes, before he explosively shot out. Within a number of breaths, he had crossed over the numerous Spiritual Energies and got close to the bright and resplendent crystal. When nearing the crystal, he could see the crystal the movement of the thick spiritual liquid within. It seemed to form an illusionary shade that was faintly discernable, which looked incomparably mysterious.

Mu Chen did not immediately take action against the crystal. His gaze swept below him, where he discovered a purple clump of light

closest to the position of the crystal. Within that clump of light, there was a purple Spirit Crystal; however, it was far from the previous crystal that would make people shocked. However, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupting from it was still much more tyrannical when compared to those Spiritual Lights that Mu Chen and the rest had seen before.

“This is a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Knight.”

A pleasantly surprised expression flashed past Mu Chen’s eyes. Without a single bit of hesitation, a fist rumbled out as a violent Spiritual Energy impacted the purple clump of light. When the light clump shattered, the purple Spirit Crystal hidden within flew out, which was grabbed by Mu Chen.

As the purple Spirit Crystal landed in Mu Chen’s hand, it instantly radiated an extremely astonishingly pure Spiritual Energy. Mu Chen revolved his Spiritual Energy to absorb it, and he felt the consumed Spiritual Energy within his body starting to gradually restore.

“Truly worthy of being the Spiritual Light transformed from a Spiritual Knight at the Heavenly Transformation Stage!”

Mu Chen laughed loudly. Without any trace of courtesy, he took action. Within a short span of a number of breaths, he had shattered over ten purple light clumps, gathering the purple Spirit Crystals in his hands.

These ten purple Spirit Crystals would, at the minimum, be equivalent to thousands upon thousands of normal Spiritual Pawns.

Humm. Humm.

However, as Mu Chen snatched those ten purple Spirit Crystals into his hands, the gigantic magnificent Spirit Crystal seemed to have sensed something and instantly started to hum and shake.

Spiritual Energy immediately gushed out of it, transforming into Spiritual Energy waves that violent swept towards Mu Chen.

“Spiritual Energy without a single trace of attacking attribute, and you still want to cause harm to me?”

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen gave a laugh as he waved his sleeve. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames erupted out, easily resisting against the incoming Spiritual Energy waves. In the next moment, he turned his fiery gaze towards the Spirit Crystal. That was the genuine treasure!

With a clench of his hand, a long sword, sparkling with brilliance, appeared in a flash. Deep black Spiritual Energy covered it, as black flames surrounded it. With a step, he shot out, and appeared in front of that Spirit Crystal. The Spiritual Energy within his body fully erupted out as a gigantic lustrous black sword of a hundred feet howled out from his sword edge, and furiously chopped down on the Spirit Crystal.

Ding!

A metallic sound rang out as the crystal bits flew everywhere. Acute pain radiated from Mu Chen’s palm, as the web between his thumb and forefinger was torn. The hardness of this Spirit Crystal had exceeded his expectations.

Creak!

However, his full-powered slash had some effect. A crack appeared at a corner of the Spirit Crystal, causing a Spirit Crystal fragment, approximately the size of a fist, to break off, which was grabbed by Mu Chen.

Upon grabbing it, Mu Chen felt his hand sink, as if he had just grabbed a heavy rock that weighed a ton.

Astonishment flashed within Mu Chen’s eyes. He knew that this was due to the condensation of Spiritual Energy to a terrifying stage that brought along this weight. Looks like the Spiritual

Energy contained within this Spirit Crystal was too frightening.

However, this made the fire burning within Mu Chen's eyes to grow all the more bigger. However, he did not know that on the instant he had chopped down on the Spirit Crystal, the Spiritual King that was tangled up by Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest had suddenly raised its head and roared furiously towards the skies.

Roar!

The roar transformed into a Spiritual Energy storm which swept across, shaking and sending the unprepared Xu Huang and the rest flying backwards.

Stabilising their bodies not far away, they looked with suspicion at the Spiritual King, which had suddenly gone crazy. At this time the latter, had not cared about them. With a tight clench of its gigantic fists, it carried along frightening Spiritual Energies as they violent smashed into the earth below it.

Bang!

The stretch of earth shook, akin to an earthquake happening, as gigantic fissures started to extend from under the Spiritual King's feet. In the next moment, it started to explosively rush into the ground beneath at an astonishing speed.

At this moment, Mu Chen, who was underground had also discovered it. The expression on his face changed. Without daring to continue his stay, his figure explosively retreated.

Bang!

Giant stones suddenly descended as sunlight illuminated the underground world from the shattered earth. The place where Mu Chen previously stood was smashed through by a frightening power, leaving behind a bottomless black hole.

This was the all-out strike of the crazy Spiritual King, which was extremely terrifying.

“What is that?!”

As the underground world was revealed under the sunlight, it was immediately discovered by Xu Huang and the rest, who were floating in the sky, causing them to cry out in surprise. Dumbfoundedly, they stared at the innumerable Spiritual Lights that were sparkling with eye-piercing brilliance.

However, very quickly, their gazes congealed on that gigantic sparkling and transparent Spirit Crystal, which was radiating a terrifying Spiritual Energy. Their gazes immediately turned sluggish, as the Spiritual Energy present was enough to cause them to gulp their saliva down.

“There is someone down there!”

There were some people with sharp eyesight, as they managed to spot Mu Chen, who was preparing to quietly sneak away. Instantly, they cried out in shock.

Swish!

Everyone’s gazes instantly turned over and stared stubbornly at Mu Chen’s figure. When they had identified the figure, all of their gazes turned slightly sluggish.

‘How can Mu Chen be there?’ thought Mu Fengyang as the corner of his mouth twitched. Hurriedly, he turned his head towards the gigantic hole. The black pagoda suddenly disappeared at this instant, revealing a bottomless hole beneath it.

Upon being spotted, Mu Chen no longer continued hiding. Shooting out of the hole, he sent a smile towards everyone while saying, “Just now, I was mysteriously smashed underground, and discovered a slightly strange thing.”

Everyone stared at him suspiciously, as they obviously did not trust him. However, this was not the time to argue about that with him, as everyone stared with fiery gazes at the innumerable eye-piercing Spiritual Lights below. There were so many there. If they

were able to snatch some for themselves, it was already sufficient to be a rewarding journey.

Roar!

However, just as their greed was growing increasingly stronger, the Spiritual King started to roar, opening its big mouth as it sucked in the air. Everyone saw the innumerable Spiritual Lights immediately converging together, before completely being devoured into the Spiritual King's body.

At the same time, the massive Spirit Crystal had also flown up. Upon seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes sparkled as he explosively shot forward. In the next instant, his palm patted on the Spirit Crystal. His palm did not shatter the crystal. However, a black flame quietly shot into it, while Mu Chen explosively retreated away.

As for the Spirit Crystal, it shot up and was devoured by the Spiritual King into its body.

After a short span of a number of breaths, the underground world had become devoid and empty.

Everyone became stunned and stupefied.

However, when Mu Chen saw this, his heart jumped crazily. That Spiritual King had completely absorbed everything below. Would that mean that it would cross over its newborn state? Once its power dramatically increased, with their lineup, would they be able to defend against it?

He raised his head as his scalp tingled, only to see the eye-piercingly bright Spiritual King, akin to a scorching sun. The brilliance coming from it caused several people to be unable to look directly at it. In addition, its already gigantic body started to expand once again.

A strong Spiritual Energy started to radiate out, as if its entire body had summoned a storm.

"Wang Tong, quickly! Let's go!"

Mu Chen fiercely shouted out, instantly dropping his head and shooting explosively out.

Upon seeing the entire spectacle, Wang Tong and his two brothers faintly hesitated, before clenching their teeth, and closely followed Mu Chen. Luo Li, An Ran and the other girls, who were not far away, immediately shot over and followed closely behind them.

As for Zhao Qingshan, Xu Huang and the rest, they were somewhat unwilling, their faces fluctuating indeterminately.

Roar!

Just as they were hesitating, the Spiritual King roared, creating a thousand foot wave of Spiritual Energy. It violently impacted their bodies, causing numerous figures to spurt a mouthful of blood out as their faces turned pale.

“Let’s go!”

The faces of Zhao Qingshan and their group finally had an intense change as they looked with some palpitation in their hearts at Spiritual King who had already expanded to over three hundred feet. Clenching their teeth, they explosively retreated away.

Everyone was now retreating in distress, not daring to have half an idea of fighting that Spiritual King.

As they retreated, the Spiritual King stopped expanding in size. It furiously roar as its eyes, brimming with brilliance, locked onto Mu Chen, who was shooting of into the distance.

It could discover that the missing piece of its Spirit Crystal was on his body. As long as it could obtain that Spirit Crystal, it would be able to completely cross over from its weakest, newly-born stage!

Roar!

While furiously roaring, it shook the earth and mountains as it

moved, crazily chasing after him.

# Chapter 311 – Pursuit of the Spirit King

Rumble!

The earth shuddered as the countless Spirit Pawns that formed the Spirit Pawn Army was restless at this moment. Streams of light shot out from the depths, without daring to stop for the slightest degree.

These Spirit Pawns did not obstruct those that were rushing out. However, under the former's struggle, they were able to feel the pressure that's akin to a Spirit King was rapidly spreading from the depths.

This pressure made them unable to move a single step.

Bang!

As the pressure radiated out, a dazzling giant that's over 300 metres high stepped out from the depths, quaking the earth and shook the mountains as it marched forth. The earth split apart under its feet as the ferocious cracks continuously extended out.

Roar!

The eye-piercingly bright giant roared, causing incomparable berserking Spiritual Energy sound waves that shattered the unfortunate Spirit Pawns as they radiated out. However, the giant did not pay the slightest bit of attention to them as it locked onto the figure at the front and relentlessly pursued it without the thought to give up.

"Damn it."

Seeing the Spirit King that did not at all care about other people as it chased after him, Mu Chen's face changed.

"Why is that big fellow chasing us?" Wang Tong and the rest had also discovered the situation and instantly became slightly flustered. As of now, the strength of this Spirit King had risen

dramatically. Without even talking about them, even if Zhao Qingshan and Xu Huang were to attack together, they would still not be able to be its opponent.

“Its coming for me.” Mu Chen replied while clenching his teeth as he continued, “I’ll lure it away by myself. You guys leave first and find a safe place.”

“That’s too dangerous!” Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest hurriedly exclaimed.

“If it continues to chase us like that, it’ll eventually catch up to us.” Mu Chen replied as he shook his head. There wasn’t much panic showing within his black eyes. Taking a deep breath, he declared, “Let’s split up.”

“I’ll accompany you!” Luo Li exclaimed while softly biting her lip. She was extremely firm and blunt. The Spirit King before them was extremely strong. If Mu Chen tried to deal with it alone, it might be very troublesome for him. Therefore, she had to come along with him.

Mu Chen faintly hesitated, before nodding his head. He did not try to show off his ability. As of now. although the Spirit King could not be considered as having completely crossing over from its weak and newly born phase, there was no need to doubt its strength. If he tried to deal with it alone, it truly would be very thorny.

After nodding his head, he did not say anything more. With a move of his body, a dragon roar resounded out as he immediately displayed the Dragon Soaring Art. His figure transformed into the shadow of a dragon, rapidly shooting towards another direction akin to lightning.

Upon seeing this, Luo Li’s beautiful body moved and immediately followed after him. Her speed appeared to be not much slower than Mu Chen, who was displaying the Dragon Soaring Art.

Roar!

Following the change in Mu Chen's direction, the Spirit King that was chasing them had also immediately sensed it. While roaring, it chased after Mu Chen once again.

The ray of light in the front, the giant at the back. The earth trembled as they rapidly disappeared from everyone 's line-of-sight.

"Let's go." Wang Tong looked over at Mu Chen's and Luo Li's figures heading into the distance and clenched his teeth. Immediately turning his body, he brought An Ran and the rest towards the outside of the Spirit Pawn Army. As of now, if they were to follow Mu Chen's side, not only would they not be of the slightest use, they would even drag him down.

The other people had also understood. Although worry and unease filled their eyes, they still rapidly followed Wang Tong and left.

Since the Spirit King was chasing after Mu Chen, the people who were fleeing in fright from other directions had also noticed this. Soon after, they gradually came to a stop as they looked at the direction that the Spirit King had headed towards with doubtful eyes.

"What happened? Why did the Spirit King only head towards Mu Chen?" up in the air, Zhao Qingshan said with his brows wrinkled.

"Previously, only Mu Chen had entered the underground cave. He had definitely obtained something there; therefore, making the Spirit King chase after him." Mu Fengyang replied while clenching his teeth, his eyes brimming with the fires of anger. He was the one that thought of luring trouble to Mu Chen. However, who would have thought that Mu Chen was not only not sent out of the hunting grounds, he had even discovered the secret underground cave. Although the did not know exactly what Mu Chen did in the underground cave, since he was able to make the Spirit King

relentlessly chase after him without giving up, how could the thing that he had obtained be common?

Speaking from this point, didn't he give Mu Chen a chance to obtain a treasure?

Thinking about this scenario, Mu Fengyang was furious till his face turned green.

"What should we do?" Mu Fengyang said as he looked towards Zhao Qingshan. They had lost over ten people, and they haven't even dredged up a single hair. How could this make them give up?

Zhao Qingshan's eyes sparkled, as he was similarly not willing to leave without the slightest bit of harvest. Slightly muttering to himself, he clenched his teeth and replied, "Let's wait a bit, before following those two. Let's see if there will be a chance for us. If there is, we'll attack. If there isn't, we'll rapidly retreat."

He was a decisive person, and was clear that the current Spirit King was too strong and not something they could deal with. The only thing they could do was wait for an opportunity. If they rashly attacked, they would only end up being sent out of the hunting grounds.

Mu Fengyang nodded his head and looked towards the direction the Spirit King had gone. If the benefits of this place was obtained by Mu Chen, he'll truly be depressed until he vomited blood.

In the air, at another direction, Xu Huang had also stopped in his tracks. His gaze stared at the direction the Spirit King had gone, his eyes sparkling.

...

Within the layers of mountain, a strong gale resounded as two figures shot by. Without the slightest degree of stopping, they shot over to a distant place. Not long after they shot by, the earth started to move, the mountains started to shake, and the mountain range started to collapse. In the distance, a giant over 300 metres

tall rapidly shot over, eye-piercing Spiritual Light caused it to look akin to a clump of scorching suns, making several people unable to directly stare at it.

It furiously roared, causing some Spiritual Lights to shoot out, smashing apart mountains. While doing so, it crazily chased after the two figures in the front.

Its figure was gigantic; however, its speed was as fast as lightning. Using its full strength to pursue them, it able to gradually close in on Mu Chen, who had displayed the Dragon Soaring Art.

“Its speed is very fast. Furthermore, it has an endless supply of Spiritual Energy. If we continue running, we’ll end up being the first to be unable to maintain this speed.” Luo Li shot a look at the Spirit King, who was gradually getting closer. Her eyes were grave as she looked at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen’s face sank. He naturally knew that what Luo Li said was not false. The Spirit King had locked onto him. Obviously, it would not give up until it snatched the broken fragment of the Spirit Crystal back from Mu Chen. However, once it snatched the fragment back, it would truly cross over from its newly born phase. At that time, perhaps even a true Heavenly Completion Stage expert would be unable to hold it back. If, by any chance, still wanted to kill him, there would be nothing more miserable than that.

Mu Chen’s eyes faintly sparkled. As of now, the best way was to kill the Spirit King here. Although the Spirit King was very strong, he wasn’t forced to the point where he had no methods left.

“This was originally prepared for He Yao. Since you, bastard, wants to chase me relentlessly without giving up, I’ll let you have a taste of it first!”

Mu Chen was also a decisive person, and quickly decided on his decision. A chilling intent flashed within his eyes. Tilting his head

towards Luo Li, he said, “Can you hold that bastard back for a little while?”

“Okay.” Luo Li gently nodded her small head. Her jade-like hand slowly clenched tightly around the Luo Shen Sword on her waist. On its scabbard, there seemed to be a frosty air circulating around it.

Mu Chen gave a smile. He wasn’t especially worried about Luo Li, as the latter’s methods were something that even he was unable to clearly understand. In addition, there was the “Luo Shen Sword” in her hands. That was truly a Divine Weapon. Although it was in a sealed state at the moment, the two simple words “Divine Weapon” was synonymous to “Strong” and “Powerful”. Mu Chen had never even seen the appearance of a Divine Weapon before. That was a thing that would even cause a Sovereign’s heartbeat to race.

After the two had made a consensus, their figures rapidly shot out, before descending onto the peak of a distant mountain.

Upon landing, Mu Chen immediately crossed his legs and sat down. His eyes were faintly closed, while his hands rapidly created seals. While his Spiritual Energy fluctuated, Spiritual Seals condensed and rapidly flew out one after another.

“He wants to set up a Spiritual Array?” Luo Li said, while staring at Mu Chen. From the looks of it, he obviously wanted to set up a Spiritual Array to counter the Spirit King. However, the Spirit King before them was tyrannical. Even a Rank 4 Spiritual Array would be hard to cause any life-threatening injuries towards it. Unless, it was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

However, as of now, Mu Chen was considered a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master. Deploying a Rank 4 Spiritual Array wasn’t that difficult for him. However, if it was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, even if he had comprehended the Heart Array State, it might still not be that easy.

The higher the rank of the Spiritual Array, the more complicated it was. When it reached a certain degree, the Heart Array State would not be sufficient to provide much of a advantage. After all, the Heart Array State was still a very elemental state in the eyes of those true Spiritual Array Masters of the Grandmaster and Ancestral Ranks.

Luo Li's vision looked towards Mu Chen's handsome and outstanding face before giving a faint smile. If anyone was to compare their confidence in Mu Chen, there would be no one who had more than her. This confidence was accumulated during the year that they had lived together in the Spiritual Road. At that cruel place, this youth had never given up from the start till the end. He might have received oppression, and had failed before, but he had endured all of it. In addition, he had become increasingly tenacious. In this point, even the arrogant Luo Li had felt quiet admiration in her heart.

If not for Ji Xuan taking fancy for her in the Spiritual Road, the usually calm Mu Chen would not have bothered to start such a slaughter, which had led to him being kicked out of the Spiritual Road.

"Ji Xuan..."

Luo Li's jade-like hands slowly clenched tightly as the cold glint in her eyes condensed. Thinking about his talent, after entering the "Spiritual Saint Academy", he would be the most outstanding person there. From the looks of it then, Mu Chen still had the chance to cross hands with him. At that time, it would be a real exchange.

Roar!

A roar rang out while Luo Li's mind was still elsewhere. The earth trembled, and the mountain range continuously shook. In the far distance, a brilliance akin to a scorching sun swept over.

Luo Li looked towards the incoming Spirit King, before shooting

a look at Mu Chen, who had closed his eyes and was preparing a Spiritual Array. Her jade-like hand suddenly gripped the longsword on her waist tightly. With a gentle tap of her slender jade-like feet, her beautiful figure shot forward in a flash, and appeared in mid-air

“You should stop.”

Luo Li’s clear and limpid eyes reflected the gigantic image as a clear and cold voice resounded within this stretch of the world, while carrying along a swift and fierce Sword Qi that was gradually condensing together.

The Spirit King did not have any intelligence, and naturally could not understand her words. It looked at the puny figure blocking its path. While roaring, the gigantic palm had carried along a Spiritual Light that blotted the sky as it violent patted down on Luo Li in a fury.

A chilling intent flashed past Luo Li’s exquisite face. Those clear and limpid eyes grew increasingly incisive. In the next instant, she took a step forward. With a tremble of her jade-like hand, the black longsword in her hand instantly unsheathed.

Ring!

A clear sound rang out, as the entire stretch of the world reverberated with the light roar of the sword being unsheathed. A sky-blue Sword Qi transcended the heavens and rushed to the skies as if it wanted to shatter the heavens and crush the earth.

Bang!

That Sword Qi violently shot towards to giant palm that furiously patted over, causing metallic sounds to ring out. In the distance, Zhao Qingshan, Xu Huang and the rest that had chased after them stared dumbfoundedly as the Spirit King was sent flying. A mountain peak was smashed apart as it flew backwards.

All of them sucked in a breath of cold air as they stared in shock

at the scene before them, where a young lady dressed in an ink-black dress stood in mid-air. In her hand was a longsword, rippling with faint fluctuations as it slowly radiated out.

It was a scene that had startled everyone.

# Chapter 312 – Heart Eye

Boom!

The gigantic Spirit King was sent smashing backwards. When its giant feet descended towards the ground, the entire earth, as well as the mountain range, violently shook a few times at that very instant. However, the Spirit King quickly stabilised its body as it started to feel some anger. The brilliance around the gigantic body grew increasingly thick as the brilliance enveloped the entire mountain range.

Roar!

While it roared, it clenched its giant hand. Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies converged, transforming into a storm. With a pat of its giant palm, a Spiritual Energy beam, which was approximately a hundred feet wide, shattered the horizon, before violent it smashed towards the slender and beautiful figure.

The Spirit King did not know any Spiritual arts; however, it possessed boundless Spiritual Energy that even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would find hard to compare with. With this vigorous Spiritual Energy being its shield, the eruption of force from every movement was easily able to torch the mountains and boil the seas.

As the Spiritual Energy shattered the horizon, the mountain range below was smashed till a gigantic fissure was formed. The mountain tops and peaks along the side continued to shatter and explode.

Zhao Qingshan, Xu Huang, Mu Fengyang and the rest that had rushed over from the distance felt a palpitation in their hearts. The strength of the Spirit King truly was much more tyrannical than before.

No wonder why no one had the idea of fighting a Spirit King

these past few years. It turned out that the mature ones were, unexpectedly, even more frightening.

Luo Li's jade-like hand gripped her longsword tightly. The girl gently breathed out a mouthful of air as her beautiful bosom rose and fell. A chill akin to the frost filled her clear eyes as her jade-like finger ran across the body of the sword, causing a dark red colour to appear on the surface.

Buzz!

That smeared dark-red colour was rapidly absorbed by the the body of the sword. In the next instant, the longsword that rippled with azure light fluctuations started to emit a faint humming noise. Little traces of watery fluctuations started to appear on the sharp edges of the sword. This caused it to look akin to a longsword made from waves, looking extremely mysterious.

"Luo God Sword Art – Luo Water Transforming Sword."

The Luo God Sword in Luo Li's hand vibrated faintly as the sword edges danced. Akin to complex sword flowers, vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted out like waves, before she furiously slashed down.

Whoosh!

As she slashed down, an azure sword light howled out. It transformed into a gigantic sword light river a hundred feet long. The river surged forward, similar to an azure dragon that spiralled above Luo Li in the sky. The river water the seemed gentle, was filled with dense Sword Qi.

Once the sword light river was completely formed, it explosively shot out, violently smashing directly against the incoming Spiritual Energy beam.

Bang!

A gigantic sound rang across the sky as the berzerk Spiritual Energy, as well as the swift and fierce Sword Qi, swept out, turning

the entire mountain range into a disastrous state and complete disorder.

Luo Li's beautiful figure faintly trembled as she was sent back two steps. However, the longsword in her jade-like hand did not have the slightest degree of relaxing. Her beautiful eyes stared at the gigantic Spirit King, without even half the intent to retreat.

The Spirit King furiously roared. Its two attacks were blocked by the figure in front of it that was akin to an ant. This caused it enter an even more berserk state, wanting to pat the figure in front of it into dust.

Under its fury, it stepped out again, causing the earth the move and the mountains to tremble. It erratically attacked, akin to a storm erupting and sweeping out.

Facing its attacks, the young lady gripped her longsword. Without the slightest hint of yielding, the Sword Qi rushed towards the sky, blocking the incoming attacks.

Zhao Qingshan and the rest watched this spectacle unfold itself from afar, while being in a daze, before feeling a cold chill run up their backs. Although Luo Li's attacks were meant for defending, being able to defend till now under the attacks of the Spirit King, wasn't it also a kind of valiantry?

Due to this point, if her position was exchanged for any of them, none of them would be able to accomplish that. They never thought that the young girl that was always standing quietly beside Mu Chen's side, other than her absolutely stunning appearance and temperament, would actually have such strength that would cause people to be stunned.

"How formidable."

Unable to contain himself, Xu Huang softly sighed as his gaze turned complicated. Beside him, Xu Qingqing had also faintly bit her lip. She stared at the young girl that continued to have an

outstanding temperament under the attacks of the Spirit King, which even made other people feel stunned. Jealousy and dejection that were hard to conceal erupted from her eyes. Compared with the latter, she truly appeared inferior to her.

“However, it is still too difficult for her to fend off the Spirit King by herself. The area she could defend is getting smaller and smaller. She might not be able to hold on for much longer. Her defense will fail.” Xu Huang stared at the place in the far distance. At the mountaintop there, a seated figure was faintly discernable there. This caused his eyes to faintly narrow. Was that Mu Chen? What was he preparing? Could it be that the two of them truly wanted to deal with this Spirit King?

However, was that possible?

Although Mu Chen was not simple, his strength was, after all, at the Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage.

Xu Huang stared at the figure as his forehead started to wrinkle.

As Luo Li was holding back the footsteps of the Spirit King, Mu Chen was thoroughly blocked of the interference of the outside world. His mind had converged as Spiritual Seals continuously condensed around his body.

However, the amount of Spiritual Seals had gradually started to reduce in speed as he reached around 150 Spiritual Seals.

According to the number, most Rank 4 Spiritual Array Masters were able to condense 100 to 200 Spiritual Seals. Once someone was able to break past two hundred Spiritual Seals, that person would possess the qualifications to be promoted to a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master.

Naturally, that did not mean that a Spiritual Array Master that was able to condense enough Spiritual Seals would be able to arrange a Spiritual Array. Spiritual Seals were extremely complicated things. Spiritual Seals were only the foundation of

forming the structure of the Spiritual Arrays. How one perfectly created the mysteriously complicated links between these Spiritual Seals and caused them to shoot out their greatest and strongest power would be the capability that a Spiritual Array Master needed to possess.

Those Spiritual Array Masters of Ancestral Rank could casually arrange a Spiritual Array that might be formed from tens of thousands of Spiritual Seals. With that degree of complication, even a Sovereign level expert, with the talent in Spiritual Arrays, as well as practice over the years, would not be able to arrange it properly.

Naturally, as of now, Mu Chen was far from being considered as a Ancestral Rank. On the path of being a Spiritual Array Master, he was obviously still at the initial phase of his journey. The current him still required to ponder on how to settle the situation before himself.

As for these 150 Spiritual Seals, they were obviously unable to support the Spiritual Array that he needed to arrange.

He took a deep breath in his heart, gradually making his mind calm down. His consciousness had completely sank into the Heart Array State. As of now, Mu Chen had already mastered the Heart Array State to the point of perfection. According to his estimation, the level of his Heart Array State should be considered as a high-leveled Heart Array State. Due to entering this kind of state, the scenery from the outside world was seemingly reflected into his heart. This made him feel like he had seemingly reached a perfect level of mastery in this absolute calmness and tranquility.

However, following the increase of his strength, as well as the increase in the grade of the Spiritual Arrays arranged, the benefits that the state had brought him also gradually weakened.

Mu Chen knew that people who had reached Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master would have a chance to comprehend the Heart Array

State. However, this kind of state might be only considered as a low grade state in the eyes of those Ancestral Rank Spiritual Array Masters.

However, although the Heart Array State might not be of a high grade, it was a kind of foundation. Spiritual Array Masters that were able to master the Heart Array State to an even higher degree would then be able to comprehend the higher and deeper states.

As Mu Chen sank deeper into the Spiritual Array State, his mind was seemingly peeled off from his body, as he focused on the condensation of Spiritual Seals. He could feel the faint fluctuations of the Spiritual Energy within, as well as a faint linkage that was extremely hard for others to detect.

With a faint thought of his mind, he could see the condensed Spiritual Energy quietly disintegrating and fluttering away. However, without waiting for the Spiritual Energy to dissipate, with another thought, the dissipating Spiritual Energy started to condense and form into Spiritual Seals. In addition, it seemed that the formation this time was even more condensed. Furthermore, there was some surplus of Spiritual Energy that started to slightly leak out.

The Spiritual Seals that had been formed around Mu Chen's body started to dissipate. While dissipating, the Spiritual Seals started to recondense and take shape.

Formation, dissipation, formation, dissipation.

It had seemingly formed a perfect cycle. Under this kind of cycle, there was no unwanted consumption of Spiritual Energy. Instead, the number of Spiritual Seals present started to quietly increase.

At the same time, extremely huge changes appeared within the Spiritual Energy that had condensed to form the Spiritual Seals.

Mu Chen's mental state was as calm and tranquil as water. He had seemingly sank into this dissipation-condensation cycle. This

continued for quite some time. Under this mental state that had not the slightest presence of ripples, there seemed to be the appearance of water droplets dripping down, creating rings and rings of ripples.

Within the depths of his mind, there seemed to be some undulations. There seemed to be an eye-like object blinking slowly due to the ripples, and it appear to open its eye.

At the instant the invisible eye opened, a myriad of living things under this stretch of the world appeared within the heart of Mu Chen.

Fast forward to the fight between Luo Li and the Spirit King.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest were secretly watching from a distance.

The pleasant green scenery in the further distance, the undulating Spiritual Energy of the world.

That invisible eye examined the world, and everything appeared extremely mysterious and strange to it.

“This is the Heart Eye?”

Murmuring sounds seemed to ring within Mu Chen’s heart as the ripples disappeared. Mu Chen’s eyes suddenly opened, those black pupils appeared extremely deep and abstruse. He knew that he could only touch this state temporarily, and was unable to maintain it for long. Therefore, he had to grasp this short duration of time.

His hands suddenly came together to form seals as the Spiritual Seals around his body shattered, seemingly, at the same time. Spiritual Energy rippled as Spiritual Seals condensed and formed almost instantly.

Within a short span of a number of breaths, light erupted from around Mu Chen’s body. The number of Spiritual Seals had instantly exceeded two hundred.

The abstruseness of Mu Chen's eyes became increasingly thick. With a wave of his sleeve, hundreds of Spiritual Seals rushed towards the sky, rippling the air as they assimilated with the world. In the next moment, the Spiritual Energy of this stretch of the world instantly turned berserk. Everyone could see, as of now, an incomparably gigantic glowing array slowly taking shape in front of Mu Chen.

In the next moment, a Spiritual Energy hurricane seemed to blow within this stretch of the world. Spiritual Energy that was visible to the naked eye converged to form a glowing river, endlessly streaming and condensing towards the gigantic glowing array.

"That's a Spiritual Array?"

In the distance, Xu Huan, Zhao Qingshan and the rest looked towards the incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array. A jolt went through their hearts as shock erupted from their eyes. A Spiritual Array that possessed such influence and power was at least a 5th ranked Spiritual Array!

Could it be that the current Mu Chen was actually able to arrange a Spiritual Array of such a rank? How is that possible!?

# Chapter 313 – The Might of Twin Lotus

As the gigantic light array in the air slowly took shape, countless Spiritual Energy light rays explosively shot out. After mutually weaving and taking shape, they formed an outline of an incomparably gigantic and complicated array diagram.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Energy within this stretch of the world turned rebellious, as Spiritual Energy erupted forth akin to streaks of light, endlessly streaming and pouring into the Spiritual Array.

In the front, the Spirit King, who was relying on his mad and violent attacks to force the defending Luo Li to ceasely retreat, suddenly saw the gigantic Spiritual Array from in the sky before it. As it was formed by the convergence of the Spiritual Energy of the world, it was naturally extremely sensitive to such a gigantic gathering of Spiritual Energy. From the Spiritual Array, it could sense a considerably astonishing amount of power within it.

This made it feel somewhat uneasy.

Roar!

While roaring, it grabbed a gigantic boulder hundreds of metres large. Spiritual Energy enveloped the boulder, before the Spirit King violently threw it, shooting it towards the glowing array that was gradually taking shape in an attempt to destroy it.

Swish!

However, just as the gigantic boulder was thrown, a gigantic azure-glowing sword howled. It proceeded to cut the gigantic boulder up, transforming into broken rocks that blotted the skies as they dropped down.

The Spirit King furiously roared. It fanned its giant palm out once again, carrying along frightening Spiritual Energy as it furiously smashed down towards the young girl that was blocking

it all, along with a single trace of mercy.

Under its berserk attack, the glowing sword surrounding Luo Li's body gradually shrank, as it was obviously being thoroughly suppressed. On the jade-like hand that was tightly gripping the longsword, fresh blood started to ooze out. However, she tightly bit her lip, refusing to allow the Spirit King to pass her.

How could blocking the Spirit King's terrifying attacks by oneself be an easy matter, even with a Divine Weapon like the Luo Shen Sword in her hand? However, it was, after all, still in its sealed state.

However, regardless of everything, she would never retreat, as Mu Chen was behind her. The current him obviously could not be agitated or disrupted.

Roar!

The Spirit King furiously roared as its attacks became increasingly erratic. The sword glow that enveloped Luo Li's body gradually became teetering on the brink of collapse.

In the sky behind her, the light array became all the more brighter. Following the gradual completion of the outline of the diagram, the Spiritual Array faintly took shape. From the looks of it, it seemed like a gigantic black lotus.

"Is that the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array?" Upon seeing this Spiritual Array that was not considered foreign, the foreheads of Xu Huang and the rest wrinkled. They naturally knew that Mu Chen had used this array in his exchange with Li Xuantong. Although it was formidable, it was, seemingly, still a 4th Rank Spiritual Array. However, how could it have such prestige and power? If it was a Rank 4 Spiritual Array, it would obviously be a very stupid thing to use it to deal with this Spirit King.

"No..."

Xu Huang's eyes suddenly narrowed, as he could see another glowing outline beside the already formed black lotus glowing array. Unexpectedly, it was another gigantic black glowing lotus.

Unexpectedly, this Spiritual Array had two black lotuses.

Although from the looks of it, it was just another black lotus. However, its might and power had a gargantuan change. Although Xu Huan wasn't a Spiritual Array Master, he was able to feel that this current Spiritual Array was absolutely something that the previous "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" could not compare to.

'No wonder, the Spiritual Array that this fellow displayed before, was not complete...' Xu Huang thought. Naturally, he did not assume that this Spiritual Array was created by Mu Chen. He was very clear that this kind of capability was absolutely not something that Mu Chen could possess. Therefore, there was only one reason, which was that the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had displayed before, was not complete.

The two black lotuses slowly revolved in the air, as the entire stretch of the world seemed to turn much darker and deeper, with gales suddenly erupting.

Mu Chen raised his head to look at the formed Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, before exhaling deeply, spitting out a lump of white air. Following his increasing profundity in his attainments in Spiritual Arrays, his feelings and comprehension of the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" had obviously grown deeper. If not, he would not dare to try to use it in a situation like this.

As of now, he had already managed to feel the depths of the Spiritual Array that was once mysterious and unfathomable in his eyes. According to his estimates, the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array should have four parts. If he could complete the entire formation, there should be four black lotuses appearing.

Naturally, that form of the Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, might be a 7th Rank Spiritual Array. Its might would be terrifying enough to scare people. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would turn to dust under a Spiritual Array of that rank.

The current Mu Chen still did not have the capability to reach that level. Even the second black lotus that he had condensed was due to him touching the “Heart Eye” state by chance. Therefore, wanting all four lotuses to appear would obviously need some time.

“Luo Li.”

Mu Chen’s pupils that seemingly reflected the image of the two black lotuses looked towards the berserking Spirit King. A cold glint surfaced in his eyes as he gently spoke out.

Upon hearing Mu Chen’s voice, Luo Li slightly nodded her beautiful head before her lovable figure swiftly retreated. Landing beside Mu Chen, her hand was still gripping her longsword, taking precautions, while staring at the Spirit King.

Roar!

After losing the obstruction, the Spirit King turned its eyes, sparkling with brilliance, at Mu Chen. Without the slightest degree of hesitation, it immediately stepped forward with a earth moving and mountain shaking pace. As it furiously stepped over the land, its figure rushed towards the horizon, akin to a radiant meteor. Carrying a frightening impact force, it violently arrived before Mu Chen.

Bang! Rumble!

Under the impact, the mountain peak that Mu Chen and Luo Li were standing on collapsed, and the surrounding earth caved in.

Mu Chen’s expression remained indifferent. With a change of his hand seals, the two gigantic black lotuses in the air suddenly faced

towards each other. Spiritual Energy erratically condensed within the centre of the lotuses before they shot out.

Bang!

Two glowing Spiritual Energy pillars that seemed almost corporeal collided at the same time. However, there wasn't any repulsion nor explosion. Instead, they rapidly fused together. In a short span of a few breaths, the brilliance faded. Even the gigantic Spiritual Arrays had slightly dissipated.

While this happened, a 3 metre large glowing lotus appeared. Although this glowing lotus wasn't large, the fluctuations radiating from it were considerably terrifying. The glowing lotus contracted and expanded, akin to a beating heart, while giving off a demonic and strange sensation.

Mu Chen looked at the 3 metre high demonic and strange glowing lotus. With a flick of his finger, the glowing lotus explosively shot out. Creating a streak of light as it travelled, it rushed towards the gigantic radiant meteor that was headed towards Mu Chen.

The speed of the two were exceedingly quick. Within a short span of a number of breaths, they were about to collide high in the sky.

However, at the instant they were about to collide, a cold smile rose from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth as his palm suddenly clenched.

Boom!

The radiant meteor that the Spirit King had transformed into suddenly, intensely, vibrated. Within the Spirit King's body, there seemed to be a dark black fire starting to burn as it scuttled around.

Those black flames were not thick. However, with the body of the Spirit King that was brimming with Spiritual Energy, it created quite a big ruckus. As the black flames moved about, it started to

continuously ignite and burn the Spiritual Energy.

This was the lump of black flames that Mu Chen had sneakily placed into the Spirit Crystal. When the Spirit King had devoured it into its body, it had also devoured the black flames. Although the Spirit King had boundless Spiritual Energy, and these black flames were incapable of doing any harm to it, it had given Mu Chen an advantage in this battle.

Indeed, as what Mu Chen had expected, the black flames were quickly annihilated the endless streams of Spiritual Energy. However, the eye-piercing brilliance around the Spirit King's body still turned dim for an instant.

It was at this very instant that the demonic and strange glowing lotus shot violently towards the Spirit King's chest.

Bang!

A gigantic and clear sound resonated across the stretch of the world as Spiritual Energy shockwaves swept out. Spiritual Energy hurricanes had seemingly erupted in this stretch of the world, as countless giant rocks were swept into the air, before being shattered into dust.

The gigantic body of the Spirit King shot backwards, towards the far distance, under the terrified gazes of several people, before heavily impacting the ground. The entire mountain range vibrated at this instant, as a number of mountain peaks in the distance were smashed till they became flat ground. The Spirit King's gigantic body was within the rubble.

Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest casted their gazes over. After being smashed head-on by such a formidable Spiritual Array, even the Spirit King could not ignore such damage, right?

Under their attentive gazes, the distant mountain range started to shake again. Within the dust that blotted the skies, a gigantic figure started to stagger and stand up.

“It's still alive!”

A tremor shook their hearts; however, there was some unexpected rejoice in them.

Mu Chen stood at the mountain peak and fixed his eyes on the gigantic figure in the distance that had stood up within the dust that blotted the sky. However, there wasn’t even the slightest degree of fluctuation on that handsome and outstanding face as he quietly continued to watch it.

As the dust slowly scattered, the Spirit King came into view once again. However, as of now, it did not have the boldness and powerful feeling it previously had. On its chest was a foot long hole, while its surroundings were filled with cracks. Those cracks had seemingly crawled over half of its body. There was even one crack that extended from its chest all the way to the eye-piercing crystal on his forehead.

Xu Huang and the rest had similarly noticed this spectacle, and unable to control themselves, the corner of their mouths twitched. Terror even flashed within Mu Fengyang’s eyes, as no one could have thought that Mu Chen was actually able to injure the Spirit King to such a degree.

Boom!

The Spirit King faced the sky and roared, as it could feel the heavy injuries that it had suffered. The Spiritual Energy was rapidly escaping from it. Although it did not have the sensory organs to feel pain, the escaping Spiritual Energy made it feel anger and fury.

The earth trembled again as it suddenly rushed forward in a berserk fashion. It’s target was, obviously, Mu Chen.

Seeing the aggressive and overbearing Spirit King rushing over, Mu Chen’s forehead slightly wrinkled. Although the latter had suffered serious injuries, an injured tiger was still dangerous.

Regardless of whatever happened, the Spirit King was still an existence comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage expert. If not for the black flames he had hidden within the Spirit King's body that had done miraculous work, Mu Chen might not have been able to injure it to such a degree.

He tightly clenched his hands as Spiritual Energy burning with black flames erupted from his body. However, at this moment, a cold and jade-like hand grabbed him. Luo Li gave him a faint smile, before speaking in a gentle voice, "Can you let me finish this up?"

She was able to see that Mu Chen's current consumption was enormous. Although the Spirit King had suffered serious injuries, the assault before its death would also be very terrifying. In her case, she was more suitable to finish it than Mu Chen.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen paused for a bit, before smiling while nodding his head.

Luo Li started to slowly walk forward. Her jade-like hand that was gripping the Luo Shen Sword slowly rose up, pointing towards the incoming Spirit King. Within those beautiful eyes, a swift and fierce shadow was condensed within.

Mu Chen was able to feel that the Spiritual Energy of this region of the world was fleeing and scattered, as it was unable to withstand the Sword Qi radiating from the body of Luo Li's sword.

This Sword Qi even made Mu Chen's heart palpitate and jump. Looking at the exquisite, delicate and absolutely beautiful face that was akin to chinaware, the little bit of graveness on his face grew by a bit more.

Luo Li had planned to thoroughly destroy the Spirit King before her eyes.

# Chapter 314 – Killing the Spirit King

Sword Qi that was akin to waves undulated across this stretch of the world. This Sword Qi was not extremely swift not fierce, however it gave people a heart palpitating feeling, as if they would be chopped into bits if there were to move an inch.

Mu Chen gazed in astonishment at the girl before him. Luo Li's strength had somewhat exceeded his expectations. However, after thinking about it, he gave a mocking laugh at himself. Luo Li's talent was no less than his own. In addition, she was more dedicated to training than he was. If not for him possessing the ability of a Spiritual Array Master, he would truly not dare to pat his chest and say that he could genuinely suppress Luo Li in a real fight.

Luo Li's eyes tightly locked onto the Spirit King that was explosively shooting towards them. At this moment, unexpectedly, her eyes started to slowly close. In the next instant, the longsword in her hand suddenly slashed down.

Humm!

The instant when her sword slashed down, the earth before her suddenly split open. The Sword Qi erratically condensed around the longsword. In a short span of a few breaths, all of Sword Qi had condensed onto the edge of the sword.

Chi!

The sword edge rippled and undulated, making the longsword look akin to being made by waves. In the next instant, an azure ray of light suddenly swept out.

The azure light beam was so quick that one's naked eye would not be able to catch it. Everyone could only see a ray of light shoot past, before hearing a sonic boom that filled the skies. Even the air was split into two. Within the middle, there seemed to be residual

undulating Sword Qi, causing the air to separate, unable to fuse back

The temperature of that stretch of the world appeared to instantly drop at this moment.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed, the pores across his entire body tightened up when Luo Li's sword slashed down. This was a reaction that would happen when he was faced with an extremely dangerous sensation.

Luo Li's slash wasn't overly magnificent. However, the frightening power contained under the tranquility would make other people feel horrified.

Mu Chen raised his head to look at the azure ray of light that was formed by the Sword Qi condensed to the pinnacle point, which had already chopped down on the body of the Spirit King, before passing through it.

The mountain range in the distance was successively split into two. The areas that were split apart were as glossy and reflective as a mirror.

A mountain range that was at least a thousand feet long was quietly sliced apart.

Bang! Rumble!

The gigantic Spirit King was still violently rushing towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, as if it had not received the slightest bit of damage.

A shade of paleness appeared on Luo Li's face. Her lovable figure faintly trembled, before a hand came from behind hand embraced her waist. Tilting her head, she sent a faint smile towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen pulled her right hand over and looked at the bloodstains that were present. He could not help but feel some pain in his heart as he cleaned away the bloodstains. Feeling

helpless, he said to her, “Why did you risk your life for this? I’m able to finish this up.”

Luo Li smiled; however, she did not say anything as she stared at Mu Chen, who was looking at her dearly.

The two of them had seemingly not cared about the Spirit King that was rushing over.

In an instant, the Spirit King had already arrived. However, just as it was about to make contact with the mountain peak they were on, its gigantic body suddenly split apart. Turning into two halves, they rumbled as they fell to the sides, causing the mountain peaks below to be leveled into flat ground.

As smoke and dust filled the sky, the shaking of the earth slowly came to a stop.

Mu Chen’s eye stared indifferently at the Spirit King that had split apart. The latter’s split body rapidly transformed into a crystal, while rapidly shrinking at the same time. After a short span of a number of breaths, the gigantic Spirit King had turned into two clumps of scorching suns, illuminating the entire stretch of the world.

Terrifying Spiritual Energy radiated from within the two halves, and one could faintly discern that the spirit crystal’s halves that were present were the ones that the Spirit King had previously eaten. In addition, the purple colour had turned darker, with the Spiritual Energy within even more terrifying.

This was the Spiritual Light. However, calling it a Spirit Crystal was clearly more suitable.

Zhao Qingshan and the rest in the distance had regained their clarity, due to the eye-piercing brilliance. Upon doing so, they stared in shock at the two eye piercing brilliance as uncontrollable greed erupted within their eyes.

This was the Spiritual Light at the Spirit King Rank! If they could

get that, their Spiritual Empowerment this time would definitely be exceedingly perfect!

They could even take this opportunity to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage!

The eyes of both Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang turned red as they shot a look at each other. With a clench of their teeth, they abruptly shot out. At this time, their intelligence had seemingly dropped. Although Mu Chen and Luo Li were formidable, the bitter battle earlier had clearly left them weakened now. Now was the best chance for them!

Xu Huang's gaze slightly shook as he looked at the eye-piercing brilliance. However, in the end, he only gave a soft sigh and did not take any action, before shooting a cold look at Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang. He could be considered as having interacted with Mu Chen before, and knew how difficult it was to deal with this youth. Therefore, as for this two fellows who wanted to snatch the things in his hand, Xu Huang did not assume that was an intelligent decision.

Although Mu Chen and Luo Li's consumption of Spiritual Energy might be extremely large, with Mu Chen's character, Xu Huang would absolutely not believe there wasn't any contingency plans prepared.

In the far distance, Mu Chen embraced Luo Li; however, a coldness blanketed his black pupils. Looking at the two figures explosively shooting over, a mocking arc appeared from the corner of his mouth.

Luo Li had also discovered their actions, as chilling intent surfaced on her lovable face on the spot.

"You two have finally watch enough, huh?" Mu Chen sent an indifferent smile towards the two incoming people while speaking out.

Zhao Qingshan's and Mu Fengyang eye's sparkled; however, they appeared to be unwilling to look at Mu Chen. Obviously, when the latter had given the Spirit King serious injuries, it had given them great pressure at the same time. At this time, they did not dare to underestimate him, like they previously did.

"Snatch the Spiritual Light and split up!" With a low roar, Zhao Qingshan shot towards the Spiritual Light on the left, while Mu Fengyang did so to the right.

Mu Chen coldly stared at them. With a clench of his palm, a metal ball full of potholes appeared in his hands. With a flick, the metal ball shot out. Instantly, a myriad of colours blossomed as an incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array immediately condensed. Extending out, it enveloped the locations where the two clumps of Spiritual Light were.

He had long discovered the fellows that were spying on them from the distance. However, did they think he would not have a single contingency plan when he fought the Spirit King till both sides suffered injuries?

"Hmph!"

Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang's incoming figures hurriedly halted in distress. They looked at the Spiritual Array that was expanding with some trepidation. The threat brought by this Spiritual Array was not any weaker than the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had arranged earlier!

If they were insistent on rushing in, they might be instantly enveloped by the Spiritual Array. However, they did not have the confidence to meet with a Spiritual Array of this grade.

"This bastard!"

Mu Fengyang clenched and gnashed his teeth. He never expected Mu Chen would have any contingency plans.

"Let's go!" Clenching his teeth, Zhao Qingshan immediately

turned away and abruptly left. The preparation that Mu Chen had, left them without a single chance.

Mu Fengyang was clearly not as decisive as Zhao Qingshan, hesitating for a while before turning to leave.

“Since you’re here, then don’t leave!”

However, just as Mu Fengyang had just turned his body, the cold voice of Mu Chen had already rang out. As he turned his head back to take a glance, he was dumbstruck to see that the gigantic Spiritual Array had seemingly enveloped over. This immediately frightened him till his soul left his body and without a single trace of fighting intent as he hurriedly fled.

“Hmph!”

Mu Chen coldly snorted. With a move of his body, a dragon roar resounded out, and he disappeared at this moment. In the next instant, he appeared. He was like a spectre that had already appeared behind Mu Fengyang.

“Scram off!”

Mu Cheng’s body suddenly erupted with lightning, while his skin appeared to have a faint silvery-metallic look. Clenching his hand, he sent a fist rumbling out.

Bang!

Berserk Spiritual Energy swept out as a white tiger appeared, as though it was condensed by the gale of Mu Chen’s fist. Without a single shred of mercy, it rumbled towards Mu Fengyang, who was unable to muster any defense in time.

“You!”

The astonishing Spiritual Energy coming from behind him caused Mu Fengyang’s face to turn deathly pale. At this moment, there wasn’t enough time for him to even turn around, with the only thing he could do was to wrap his body in the Spirit Armor.

Ding!

Mu Chen's fist violent smashed against the Spirit Armor, instantly causing metallic sounds to ring out and sparks to shoot out. A mouthful of blood violently spurted out from Mu Fengyang, as his body was like a kite with a broken string, instantly dropping to the ground, creating a huge hole in the process.

Mu Fengyang miserably laid at the bottom of the deep hole. Cracks extended out of the armor on his body. This armor was almost shattered by the Spirit King's slap after he attempted to set up Mu Chen. After suffering a violent fist from Mu Chen, it had already reached its limit.

Mu Fengyang spurted mouthfuls of blood. His aura became depressed as terror filled his eyes. He never thought that Mu Chen would be that vicious, attacking just as he said that.

"It's a little too wasteful to use my Spiritual Array on the two of you." Mu Chen said with a cold smile. With a clench of his palm, the metal ball full of potholes returned to his hand.

Mu Chen descended slightly. With a clasp of his hand, a giant boulder the size of a small hill was sucked over. Upon reaching his hand, he violently smashed it down on the seriously injured Mu Fengyang.

"No!"

As Mu Fengyang screamed out in terror, the giant boulder caused the ground to shake for a while. In the next instant, a streak of light descended from the sky. Piercing the giant boulder, it transported Mu Fengyang, who had already faint from his injuries, out.

As Mu Chen was dealing with Mu Fengyang, Zhao Qingshan had already escaped into the distance. Mu Chen only shot a look, before retracting his gaze. He did not have the intention to chase him, as the current him had truly consumed quite a bit of his strength.

Wanting to smash Zhao Qingshan out of the Spiritual Light World might require him to use the metal ball. Obviously, Mu Chen was not willing to do so.

Standing in mid-air, he shot a chilling gaze to a further distance. From there, there were still some people looking towards him. However, when they noticed Mu Chen's gaze shooting over, a cold shiver swept past them before they promptly retreated.

Xu Huang looked at the youth with an imposing manner, standing in the air, before sighing. Gesturing with his hand, he said, "Let's go."

Behind him, Xu Qingqing had also fallen silent as she bit her lip. Staring at the youthful figure, her heart felt uncomfortable, and no one would have imagined that even her most worshipped big brother would not even dare to provoke that fellow's ire.

However, she had no choice but to admit that the current Mu Chen was truly much stronger than a few months ago.

Perhaps, the greatest dark horse in this hunt, would not be Zhao Qingshan, or whoever, but the Mu Chen in front of her.

# Chapter 315 – Shock

In the air, Mu Chen looked at the figures retreating in succession before quietly taking a breath of relief. Fortunately, the shock created from them killing the Spirit King was too great. If not, it might've been truly hard to force those fellows into retreating today.

Mu Chen turned around and waved his palm. The two lustrous spirit crystals, approximately 1.5 metres long, floated to his front. With a flick of his finger, one of them swept towards Luo Li.

"Half for each of us."

Luo Li smiled sweetly while nodding her small head. With a light hoist of her jade-like hand, she stored her half of the spirit crystal. This was very beneficial to her. With this spirit crystal half, she might be able to obtain quite a few benefits from the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

"Let's go. We should also leave this place. The previous fight was overly intense. We've got to find a place to recuperate." Mu Chen spoke out while storing the other half of the spirit crystal.

Luo Li nodded her head. Without anymore hesitation, the two settled on a direction. With a move of their bodies, they shot towards the distance, and had already disappeared into the horizon within a single breath.

As they left, the mountain range turned calm and peaceful once again. Only the earth was left in a disastrous state, which was the only evidence that an astonishing fight had erupted at that place.

However, when Mu Chen and Luo Li had left, they did not know that the matter about them killing the Spirit King had already created some giant waves.

—Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Northern Sea Plaza—

Within these last few days, the exceptionally expansive field was

seemingly filled to the brim at all times. Countless students had converged there, raising their heads to look at the sky above the field.

There was a gigantic screen located in the center. Within the screen were the peaks of three gigantic mountains faintly discernable in the clouds. At the top of the peak, one could faintly discern three figures quietly sitting there. An invisible pressure radiated from there, making all the people within the field feel uneasy.

They knew that this was the final point of the hunt. The people there were the final protectors.

And that place, was the final pass of this hunt.

Naturally, only on the final day for the arrival of the big fight would they be able to witness the appearance of that heaven-shockingly great battle.

Before that day, they would not be able to acquire much information of what happened within the hunt.

However, it would seem like there was an exception every time.

The light array that usually did not have any activity suddenly rippled and undulated. This strange movement attracted the surprise of countless students, as gaze after gaze was sent shooting over to see.

“What happened?”

“Could it be that the final stage arrived so quickly?”

Numerous doubtful whispers rang out as everyone had faces brimming with shock and amazement. Obviously, they did not know exactly what this appearance meant.

In the front of the field, and the front of those seats located there, was the seat of Dean Tai Cang. On his left and right were a few Northern Spiritual Heavens Academy Elders. At this time, all of

them had raised their heads to look at the rippling and undulating light screen.

There would be Elders specially supervising the hunt from inside. In most circumstances, if not for the final pass, the light screen would only show absolutely important information that happened within.

As doubtful gazes converged on the rippling light screen, it finally formed a clear image of a range of mountains. However, at this time, the mountain range was shaking. A radiant giant, approximately 300 metres high, towered over as tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated out, appearing and feeling extremely shocking.

“That’s a Spirit King?!”

As the giant appeared, voices of shock instantly rang out from within the field, while the faces of quite a few people had intense changes. Although the majority of the people here hadn’t participated in the hunt before, they had some consideration to gain some knowledge over the past few days. Naturally, they also knew what a so-called ‘Spirit King’ meant.

“They’ve actually lured a Spirit King out?”

It was not only them that were shocked. Even a few Elders stilling in the front were astonished. However, their foreheads started to wrinkle as they muttered, “Why does this Spirit King look weaker?”

“This is a Spirit King that was recently born.” Dean Tai Cang’s eyes, which were akin to the depths of the universe, congealed on the giant within the light screen and replied with a smile.

Only at this moment did the Elders have a flash of insight. Full of interest, they turned and looked over. Even if this was a recently-born Spirit King, it might not be something that those students could handle. They started to wonder which unfortunate little

brats had met with it.

As the light screen condensed, two figures became increasingly clear on the mountain peak in front of the Spirit King. When everyone was able to clearly see their appearances, shocked voices instantly erupted out.

“That’s the Freshman called Mu Chen!”

“The beautiful girl beside him should be called Luo Li, right? Fifteenth on the Heavenly Rankings. The two of them actually dared to challenge a Spirit King?”

The two figures were recognized very quickly, and at once, the entire field was in an uproar. Everyone had a face of shock, as this had obviously exceeded their expectations by far.

At the corner of the field, Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest of the Goddess Luo Association opened their mouths wide as they stared at the two in the light array with strange faces. Although they knew that Mu Chen would not be content in the hunt, they never thought that he would actually bring Luo Li to deal with a Spirit King.

That was a tyrannical existence that was comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage!

Under countless shocked gazes, the light screen flashed. The big battle had already erupted. As the picture flashed, the earth moved and the mountains shook, as both parties had already launched their attacks.

At the pictures of the combat continuously flashed. The students in the field, whose faces were filled with astonishment, started to slowly change grave, bit by bit, with even some terrified shadows erupting out in the end.

They saw the strong and powerful Spirit King unexpectedly being forced into retreating.

The final picture displayed on the screen rested on the slash that

Luo Li sent out. As the azure ray of light shot out, the earth moved and the mountains shook. In that instant, the gigantic Spirit King was sliced into two, rumbling as its halves fell.

While the light screen was vibrating, the entire field had turned deathly silent.

That Spirit King, was unexpectedly, truly killed by Mu Chen's and Luo Li's combined attacks!

At the seats in the front, the various Elders all had astonishment and shock on their faces. Dean Tai Cang's eyes congealed on the light screen and looked towards the thin figure within. A trace of astonishment flashed within his eyes before he said in a soft voice, "This girl is, unexpectedly, a member of the Luo God Clan? That sword in her hand, could it be the Luo Shen Sword? Isn't that the most valuable treasure of the Luo God Clan?"

"Dean, her grandfather should be the Luo Tianshen." said a white-haired old man beside Dean Tai Cang. From his appearance, impressively, it was the old man that Mu Chen and Luo Li had met when they went to the Spiritual Values Hall for the first time.

"The granddaughter of Luo Tianshen?" the astonishment within Dean Tai Cang's eyes increased. Unable to resist, he laughed out and said, "That old fellow was actually willing to allow his precious granddaughter train in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

"However, this little miss' talent is indeed extremely good. Being able to control the Luo Shen Sword at such an age shows that she's not simple."

Dean Tai Cang's vision suddenly shifted to look towards Mu Chen's figure before saying out, "That little fellow's called Mu Chen, right? Haha, the incidents within the Spiritual Road should've been caused by him, right?"

The old man beside him smiled, while nodding his head as he

replied, “The aftermath caused by that incident wasn’t small, okay? The Saint Spiritual Academy was determined to killing him then as a penalty; however, it was you, Dean, that didn’t accept that. This is the only reason why he was only expelled.”

Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile before saying , “This little fellow’s also a genius that is hard to come by. With additional guidance, he might not be inferior to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. The incident then was clearly due to Saint Spiritual Academy breaking some rules, and secretly giving that youth called Ji Xuan some hidden assistance. Did they really think that they could hide it from everyone? The only ones they could blame was themselves for the result they got in the end.”

The white-haired old man nodded his head and said, “They’d taken a fancy for Ji Xuan’s talent, and wanted to rely on him to press our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the Five Academies Great Competition. In that way, they might be able to obtain the title of the Top Academy.”

Dean Tai Cang’s eyes faintly narrowed as he continued to stare at the youthful figure in the light screen. Smiling, he muttered, “Although that Ji Xuan is a heaven-sent genius, this Mu Chen is also not simple…”

While the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was flaring up in shock and astonishment by the pictures within the light screen, it was, similarly, not calm and peaceful within the hunting grounds. This was because the same piece of news had also circulated across the entire Spiritual Light World.

“In the Northwest area, at an Extremely Dangerous Grade gathering point, a Spirit King was killed. The killers were Mu Chen and Luo Li.”

Enveloped by vigorous Spiritual Energy, this news instantly resounded across the hunting grounds, causing the faces of innumerable people to change.

A Spirit King… was killed?

The entire hunting grounds shook due to this news. Inconceivable and incredulous expressions erupted on the faces of everyone as they thought, After these last few years, a Spirit King was finally killed by students?

Weren't these Mu Chen and Luo Li only Freshmen? How were they able to accomplish this feat?

Innumerable people looked at each other. If not for the vigorous voices still ringing across the whole world, they would've assumed that it was some illusionary tale they'd heard.

While secretly sighing, they thought, looks like the darkest of all dark horses have already appeared within this hunt.

Within the depths of the hunting grounds, on a desolated plain, a figure was strolling slowly with a long spear on his shoulder. Before him were Spirit Pawns hiding the skies and covering the earth. Smiling, he allowed the Spirit Pawn flood to engulf him.

Bang!

Bright and resplendent golden light rushed towards the sky and swept out akin to an incomparably overbearing giant tide. The Spirit Pawns that hid the sky and covered the earth, as well as a large quantity of Spirit Generals, were immediately turned into dust at this instant, leaving behind fluttering Spiritual Lights that blotted the skies.

As the figure appeared once again, with a wave of his sleeve, he retrieved the Spiritual Lights that blotted the sky. Raising his head, his hair draped over his shoulder as a disdainful aura prevaded out, looking extremely abnormal.

That was precisely Shen Cangsheng.

Staring at the northwest direction, he gave a smile as he thought, Mu Chen, he is indeed an extremely interesting fellow; however, will he be able to climb up to the Spiritual Light platform at the

final pass?

Similarly, at the same time, in the depths of a mountain peak, Li Xuantong stood tall, with his hands behind his back. He had also looked towards the northwest direction; however, there wasn't much fluctuations on that handsome face. Gazing at the direction for quite a while, he finally turned around, without saying even a single word.

Bang!

He Yao's ferocious stomp caused a giant boulder, akin to a small mountain, to turn into dust. His eyes turned dark, while the crowd behind him trembled and shut their mouths, not daring to speaking any words.

"He actually managed to kill a Spirit King. He truly has some ability..."

Hu Yao coldly smiled, before turning around and walking towards the depths, before his chilling voice slowly rang out.

"You've indeed saved me some trouble. Since that's the case, I'll kindly accept the Spiritual Light at the Spirit King level that's in you hands, then."

# Chapter 316 – Breakthrough

The craze brought forth by the killing of a Spiritual King continued within the hunting grounds. There were some people who exclaimed in admiration, others with envy. There were even some who doubted it. However, regardless of that, everyone knew that the two Freshmen, one named Mu Chen and the other named Luo Li, might become the most dazzling dark horses in this hunt.

Within this hunt that did not lack any dark horses, they had obviously walked to the apex position. They had even stolen the limelight from Zhao Qingshan, whose ample fame was suppressed by them, without any room for discussion.

However, while the entire hunting grounds was abuzz with the news of the killing of a Spiritual King, Mu Chen and Luo Li disappeared without a trace. For almost a day, there was still no one that had seen them.

This made everyone guess that the two might have suffered overly serious injuries. After all, regardless of what method they used, wanting to kill a Spirit King without playing any price was obviously an impossibility.

On a lone peak within a desolated area of the Spiritual Light World, Luo Li stood tall on the mountain summit, her clear and limpid pupils would vigilantly search in all directions, from time to time. Only after detecting no abnormal activity did she turn around and look towards her back. There sat a youth on top of a giant boulder, whose eyes were tightly shut while his Spiritual Energy fluctuations were undulating and being unstable.

Different from the guesses of the outside world, the reason why the two of them had not shown up for a day was not due to injuries. Although their consumption was indeed extremely large due to the fight with the Spirit King, the injuries they suffered had completely recovered after a short span of less than a day’s worth

of time.

The reason why they were delayed in showing up was due to Mu Chen reaching a short-of-a-breakthrough state after experiencing that big battle.

After training bitterly in the Lightning Territory, Mu Chen's strength had increased; however, he was still unable to successfully breakthrough to Heavenly Transformation Stage. He could only be considered as a Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage. Although the difference between the two was only a single word, the disparity was pretty big.

Only those that could truly step pass that stage would be able to discover the marvels of the Heavenly Transformation Stage, and would possess the strength of a genuine Heavenly Transformation Stage.

For the past few days, Mu Chen had always been lingering with the feeling of breaking through. However, after recovering from this great battle, this marvelous feeling had involuntarily arisen, causing extreme joy and happiness within Mu Chen's heart.

This kind of breakthrough was a kind of enlightenment, and was unrelated to how overbearing one's Spiritual Energy was. Mu Chen knew that just based on the degree of overbearingness of his Spiritual Energy, he was comparable to a Heavenly Transformation expert. However, if he did not break pass this level, he could only be classified as having more vigorous and dense Spiritual Energy than a normal Heavenly Fusion Stage. As for wanting to experience the marvels of the Heavenly Transformation Stage, he should not even consider thinking about it.

Although this was a small step, wanting to step past it was not an easy task.

Mu Chen quietly sat cross-legged on top of the green boulder, allowing the Spiritual Energy around his body to undulate

indefinitely. Contrary to that, his breathing was abnormally calm and tranquil, as if there was not a single trace of influence from his Spiritual Energy.

Within his body, Spiritual Energy was churning and boiling. However, he did not give any particular care to control it; instead, he let it automatically circulate.

Within his aurasea, his Divine Soul was seated down while radiating light. Halos continuously erupt out from the surface of the Divine Soul, while a peculiar fluctuation was faintly discernable as it radiated out.

The Divine Soul slowly opened its eyes, revealing eyes that were akin to the night sky, looking exceptionally deep. Slowly spreading out its hands, it looked akin to trying to hug the world.

Rumble!

In the outside world, a low and deep rumble resound as gales started to erupt.

The surface of the Divine Soul turned increasingly radiant. Its small body was starting to expand, little by little. In a short period of time, it had already made contact with the edges of the aurasea.

Upon contact, a sluggish and astringent feeling transmitted out, causing the Divine Soul to have difficulty moving.

The Divine Soul peacefully sat motionless, sinking into the fantastic feeling that resonated within the heavens and the earth. In the next moment, a force of absorption started to radiate out in the outside world. It tugged at Mu Chen’s Divine Soul, causing it to break free from the aurasea bit by bit, while being increasingly unfettered.

A ray of light surfaced on Mu Chen’s abdomen, before passing through his body, and shot towards the Spiritual Energy enveloping the sky.

Cry!

A clear ray of light furiously shot out of Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy cover, rushing towards the heavens. This ray was extremely peculiar, as it did not have any Spiritual Energy fluctuations. However, it gave people a feeling that it was unable to be penetrated.

"The Divine Soul leaves the body, and enters the heavens and the earth."

Seeing this spectacle before her, a joyous smile appeared on the corner of Luo Li's mouth. Being able to achieve this step, this meant that Mu Chen had already stepped past his current stage, and had truly promoted to the level of Heavenly Transformation Stage.

The so-called 'Heavenly Transformation Stage' indicated the breaking of fetters by one's Divine Soul, and was able to enter the heavens and earth. This made one able to conceal one's body at any time, making it hard to detect someone. Even if one suffered an attack, as long as one could assimilate one's body into the heavens and the earth, one could reduce the damage caused by the attack. This was why people of the Heavenly Transformation Stage had far higher resistance to attacks than people of Heavenly Fusion Stage. A large portion wasn't due to becoming more stronger and vigorous, but when receiving an attack. A Heavenly Transformation Stage expert would be able to assimilate with the heavens and earth, dispelling part of the attack.

Brilliant and clear light erupted from the Spiritual Energy cover around Mu Chen, before the fist-sized Divine Soul surfaced. Upon surfacing, it followed the clear ray of light and rushed towards the sky.

When Mu Chen was still in the Heavenly Fusion Stage, his Divine Soul could only leave for a short period of time. In addition, it could not leave far from his body. However, following his promotion to Heavenly Transformation Stage, his Divine Soul had clearly been granted more freedom. This was the reason why the

fetters binding it had become increasingly less.

As the Divine Soul sat within that clear light pillar, it spread out its hands, akin to soaring through the world. At this time, a deeply drunk expression appeared on the little guy's face.

Mu Chen's body had also blossomed with radiance. When Luo Li looked over, she was able to see him sitting there. However, if she only used her senses and relied on Spiritual Energy fluctuations, she would discover that the place was empty and devoid of people. Even if she was to specifically examine that area where he was at, she would not find the slightest trace of him.

Obviously, Mu Chen had already stepped passed this stage.

In the sky, the clear light pillar gradually dissipated. Mu Chen's Divine Soul swept over, following the Spiritual Energy cover and drilled into his body, finally sitting down within his aurasea again.

His tightly shut eyes started to slowly open at this instant. His black pupils sparkled with brilliance akin to a scorching sun before dissipating, bit by bit.

"Ah!"

Mu Chen raised his head. Unable to contain the extreme feeling of carefreeness in his heart, he faced the sky and roared. His roar was akin to thunder, rolling around in this stretch of the world as it expanded out.

Standing up, he could feel that his body had become much more lithe and graceful. Although the Spiritual Energy within his body did not have an overly clear increase, he was able to feel that he had become much stronger.

The current him had an even deeper resonance within the heavens and earth. He was able to absorb the Spiritual Energy from the world much more easily. In addition, the degree of resonance and fusion had far exceeded his previous degree.

From Quasi-Heavenly Transformation Stage to Heavenly

Transformation Stage. Mu Chen had finally stepped across this gap.

“Congratulations, you now possess the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage.” said Luo Li as she gently strutted over. Walking to his front, her absolutely beautiful, loveable face was brimming with a smiling expression.

“I’m only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage. This is far from enough.” replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. He had told the girl in front of him before that he would become an expert that was at the apex of the world. The current him clearly still had an extremely far distance from that step.

“We should leave first and calculate the time. Perhaps this hunt should be nearing its end. We still have to reach the deepest parts.” said Luo Li.

Mu Chen nodded his head in approval. The true protectors were stationed in the deepest part. Although they had obtained the Spirit King’s Spirit Crystal, if they were unable to fight their way through the final pass, not only would it be of absolutely no use, all the other students that had obtained Spiritual Lights from this hunt would have to return empty-handed.

Mu Chen smacked his lips and hurriedly felt some pressure and stress. Although he had yet to see those three final protectors, according to his estimates, their strength might even be stronger than that Spiritual King. After all, not only did they possess vigorous Spiritual Power, they still had rich combat experience, as well as various kinds of powerful methods.

All the participating students in this hunt might feel exceedingly pressured to defeat them.

Mu Chen sighed and lamented, before grabbing hold of Luo Li’s small hand. The two of them swiftly shot forward. Taking out the map to identify their location, they swept towards the southeast.

After approximately an hour, the two of them slowed down, before descending on a nearby hill. There was a number of figures waiting for them. They were Wang Tong, An Ran and the rest. This was the place that they had previously decided to rendezvous.

Upon seeing Mu Chen and Luo Li's figures, Wang Tong and the rest instantly breathed a sigh of relief as they felt a heavy burden drop off their shoulders. They had already waited there for an entire day.

"You've finally appeared. If you two didn't appear, we'd all assume that something happened to you two." Wang Tong said while wiping away the cold sweat on his forehead.

Mu Chen smiled and replied, "Let's rest here awhile and delay a bit of time."

"You two are now famous people within the hunting grounds. Do you know how many people were looking for you?" Wang Tong said in a low voice.

"What's the matter?" asked Mu Chen with concern.

"The matter of you two killing the Spirit King has already spread throughout the hunting grounds. Everyone one knows that you two have the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal in your hands. If they are able to snatch it from your hands, they would be able to achieve perfection in their Spiritual Light Empowerment this time." An Ran replied with a smile.

"Therefore, there are, currently, quite a few people that have plans against you two. Before you two arrived, all of us assumed that something had happened to you."

Mu Chen faintly wrinkled his brows, as he never imagined that there was actually such trouble waiting for them. However, he only gestured with his hands while saying, "It's alright. If there are truly blind people wanting to come, they can't blame us for being discourteous."

As he said those finishing those words, he flicked his finger, sending multiple purple-coloured Spirit Crystals shooting out towards Wang Tong and the rest.

“These are Spiritual Lights of Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase Spirit Generals. There’s enough for everyone.” Mu Chen said with a smile. When he was in the underground world, he had obtained dozens of Spiritual Lights from the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase Spirit Generals. As of now, it had benefited Wang Tong and the rest.

“Hehe. Thanks very much.” Wang Tong and the rest did not act polite and received them with fiery eyes. It was already extremely hard to acquire a high grade Spiritual Light.

“Let’s go. We’ll head towards the deepest part of the hunting grounds.”

Mu Chen said while gesturing with his hands, while casually asking, “Is there any news that’s more important than that?”

Wang Tong thought for a moment, before grinning while replying, “Yes. It’s said that He Yao, who is rank 4 on the Heavenly Ranks, had sent a challenge towards Su Xuan, who is rank 3. The fight would be at the base of the Spiritual Light Mountain. The absolute majority of people are now currently heading over there.”

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen’s eyes abruptly contracted. So, that fellow was unable to endure it any longer?

# Chapter 317 – Spiritual Light Mountain

As time continued to pass till this point, the atmosphere of the hunting grounds had already completely erupted. Countless students went hunting berserkly for gathering points, while those that had some harvest would hurriedly rush to the deepest part of the hunting grounds. Everyone was very clear that regardless of how much they did their utmost in here, if they were unable to clear the final pass, their earlier hard work would be all for naught.

It was said that the final protectors were the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. They were the most influential people in the apex of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At that time, Shen Cangsheng, and Li Xuantong were perhaps similar to Mu Chen back then when they were just freshmens, staring at the back of those peak existences.

The hunts in the past only had one protector; however, this year, the difficult had increased. Facing the obstruction by the three Great Generals, even if Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were to collaborate, it would still be a hard thing for them to fight their way through.

This point was the worry within the hearts of many people. However, having reached such a point, there was absolutely no point in thinking and worrying at random about this. Everything had to depend on the start of that large battle before it could be reconsidered.

Mu Chen and the rest proceeded to head towards the depths of the hunting grounds. On the way, they did not stop once, even if they were to pass by any gathering points. They had already harvested to their maximum limit, and normal gathering points were already not enough to spark the slightest bit of interest.

Using their full-speed, they had already entered the depths of the

hunting grounds after a day. As they entered this region, they were able to sense the fiery atmosphere that was only present there.

Whooshing sounds seemed to endlessly ring across the sky as everyone headed towards the same direction at full speed.

On the top of a lone peak, Mu Chen looked at the figures that blotted the skies, before narrowing his eyes while turning towards the deeper depths. A faint cold glint started to circulate within those pair of black pupils.

Along the way, the news that they had gathered grew more and more. Now, he had also started to understand why He Yao wanted to take action against Su Xuan. She had a gentle temperament, and did not have a particular love for combat. Although she was ranked 3rd on the Heavenly Rankings, she did not pay special attention to it. If any possessed ample strength and wanted to take it from her, she might've even taken the initiative to hand it over.

Therefore, He Yao sending out the challenge was clearly not because he was eyeing the 3rd rank on the Heavenly Rankings that Su Xuan held.

He wanted to rely on this action to force Mu Chen, who had disappeared for a day, out. The driving force for this was sufficient, as Mu Chen had destroyed the main headquarters of the Demon Gate, which caused He Yao to lose face. Added with the fact that Mu Chen had a Spirit King's Spirit Crystal with him now, these were already ample reasons for the former to take action.

"So, he did all of this to deal with me." Mu Chen said with a faint smile.

"That He Yao wants to challenge Senior Sister Su Xuan at the bottom of the Spiritual Light Mountain. I think that he did this to lure you out." Luo Li said in a soft voice, before continuing, "Looks like he's very worried that you'll find a place to arrange a large quantity of Spiritual Arrays for him to fall into."

Mu Chen nodded his head in approval. This He Yao truly was discreet, and was afraid of Mu Chen having plans against him while hiding this intent. Therefore, he was willing to take the initiative as an advantage instead of allowing the latter to secretly arrange Spiritual Arrays to deal with him. Using Su Xuan as bait, he wanted to force Mu Chen out. This way, Mu Chen would not be able to arrange his Spiritual Arrays beforehand.

“That fellow truly is deceitful.” Wang Tong said with a grin. They had all faintly heard of the grudges between Mu Chen and He Yao, thus were slightly worried as he asked, “Do you want us three to scout the Spiritual Light Mountain first? As for Su Xuan, this is still in the Spiritual Light World; at most, she would suffer serious injuries and leave the hunt. Her life won’t be threatened.”

Hearing that, Mu Chen shook his head. Looking at the direction of the Spiritual Light Mountain, he replied, “There’s no need. That’s the end point. He Yao would wait for me there. Thus, the fight between him and me would be unavoidable.”

Although he knew that He Yao was always concealing and suppressing his strength, Mu Chen had, similarly, increased his strength by quite a lot since the day of the confrontation at the Demon Gate’s Main Headquarters. If He Yao wanted to suppress him, it might not be an easy task to accomplish.

“Let’s go.”

Without saying anything more, with a wave of his palm, Mu Chen took the lead and sped onwards, with Luo Li and the rest immediately following behind.

As Mu Chen and the group hurriedly rushed over, the depths of the hunting grounds were already filled with a vast crowd. Presently, there was a gigantic mountain, approximately 33 thousand metres tall whose peak rushed towards the heavens, rising straight into the clouds. Its peak was surrounded by a cloudy layer, causing people to be unable to view the scene present there.

This mountain, was Spiritual Light Mountain.

At the peak of this mountain, the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall were holding guard.

At its base was an extremely spacious platform, which was now packed full with a sea of people. If one were to look across, one would be unable to see the end. Innumerable clamouring noises converged together, with even the cloudy layers in the horizon being seemingly scattered by it.

As of now, within the centre of the Spiritual Light platform was a gigantic stone platform standing erect. It was devoid of people, create an obvious contrast compared to the surrounding sea of people.

Everyone's gazes were seemingly converged on the top of the empty stone platform. On it sat two figures, a female and a male. The male had a head full of long green hair, with an alluring face. The female, wearing a white dress, had a beautiful face that appeared gentle and heart-moving.

These two were influential figures at the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. With such a confrontation, it had naturally caused an abnormal amount of attention.

"He Yao, you've already waited for a day. Are you still not going to take action?" On the platform, Su Xuan spoke out while faintly wrinkling her slim eyebrows. Her eyes were filled with some chilliness as she stared at the green-haired figure in the distance. As her indifferent voice rang out, it carried a tinge of mockery. Being intelligent, she naturally understood the reason why He Yao had sought her.

He Yao gave a faint smile as he replied, "Su Xuan. You've protected that brat from the start to the end. As of now, when you're in trouble, he hides and doesn't dare to show himself. Looks like your eyesight isn't that good."

Su Xuan raised her long and beautiful pupils, the mockery in her eyes increased as she said, “He Yao, there’s no need to proclaim so pompously. You’re using me to force Mu Chen to appear. Aren’t you just scared that he’ll arrange some Spiritual Arrays beforehand to deal with you?”

A cold glint flashed past He Yao’s face as he replied indifferently, ‘You’re looking too highly on him. When he appears, I’ll naturally make you understand that the headquarters of my Demon’s Gate isn’t something that can be sliced apart by a waste like him.”

“He’s able to kill a Spirit King. Can you?” A disdainful arc appeared on Su Xuan’s lips as she mocked him.

Hearing her mockery, He Yao tightly clenched his fists. However, his face still remained indifferent as he replied. “That was only just a newly-born Spirit King. He had only managed to get lucky. That isn’t something worth mentioning.”

The two people stared at each other on the platform; however, He Yao still had no intention to take action. This made the countless people who had cast their gazes over to feel speechless. However, they were faintly able to discern, and were also able to understand, the motive of the latter. No wonder, this fellow’s goal wasn’t Su Xuan, but Mu Chen...

If it wasn’t for that shocking news about the Spirit King being killed, there might be people who would not understand why He Yao placed Mu Chen as his ultimate goal. However, now they no longer had such thoughts.

As of now, Mu Chen’s fame within the hunting grounds might’ve been even more than He Yao’s. This was due to him being the only person to ever kill a Spirit King in the past few years.

On the side of the stone platform, Su Ling’er watched the two people on the stone platform with concern. Beside her, Lin Qing and Guo Xiang were also resting their gazes on the stone platform.

“That fellow wants to force Mu Chen out, before snatching the Spiritual King’s Spiritual Light from him.” Guo Xiong said in a low voice.

“What should we do?” Upon hearing this, Su Ling’er instantly became slightly anxious. Previously, she had heard her elder sister say that the current He Yao was exceedingly strong, and even she wasn’t his opponent. If Mu Chen was truly forced out, wouldn’t that be unfortunate?

“We can only wait and see.” Lin Qing and Guo Xiong both helplessly sighed. As of now, they did not have any other methods to deal with this situation.

Su Ling’er stomped her little feet and bit her lip as she stared at He Yao on the platform. For the first time, she felt that that fellow made her feel unexpectedly disgusted.

While everyone’s gazes were converged on the Spiritual Light platform, on the cloud covered Spiritual Light Mountain, two figures had their hands crossed behind their backs as they stood under the giant trees that shot through the clouds. Their eyes pierced through the lingering clouds toward the sea of humans at the base of the mountain.

“He Yao’s strength has greatly increased. Su Xuan isn’t his opponent.” said Li Xuantong indifferently as he stared at a figure on the Spiritual Light platform, before continuing, “I don’t know whether Mu Chen will appear, since He Yao seems to be aiming directly for him.”

Hearing this, Shen Cangsheng smiled. Raising his head, he looked towards the summit of the mountain peak. Curling his lips slightly, he said, “ Those three fellows are really strong. It seems slightly impossible for only the two of us to deal with the three of them.”

“The three Great Generals. Their boss should be Senior Lin Zheng. I can deal with him; however, it would only end in a draw.”

said Shen Cangsheng with a slightly regretful tone as he shrugged his shoulders.

Upon hearing this, Li Xuantong's eyes faintly contracted before shooting a look at Shen Cangsheng. This fellow can actually fight evenly with Senior Lin Zheng? He's the strongest person amongst the three Great Generals, and was the previous #1 on the Heavenly Rankings!

"I can also deal with one. Although a victory would be hard to say, I'll not lose." he said slowly.

"That means that we're short one person." said Shen Cangsheng as he wrinkled his brows, before continuing, "Even if we were to have three draws, it would be considered our win. However, it's difficult to find another capable person again. This He Yao doesn't make the cut."

"There are still two people to choose from." Looking at the distance, Li Xuantong said slowly, "Mu Chen and Luo Li. However, in this kind of matter, there clearly needs to be a man to stand up and handle it."

"Mu Chen..."

Shen Cangsheng rubbed his chin and looked towards the the stone platform at the base of the mountain, before saying, "That will depend on whether or not he shows up. If he's able to defeat He Yao, the third slot will be his. I think by then, no other student will oppose that."

"However, if he loses to He Yao, then there's no other way, and the place can only be given to He Yao to try."

Li Xuantong faintly nodded his head in approval. This decision determined the interests of all the students. Therefore, even though he didn't like He Yao, if Mu Chen lost to him, the third slot would be given to the former.

Suddenly, he raised his head to look at the distance. Narrowing

his eyes slightly, he said in a soft voice, “He’s here.”

Shen Cangsheng smiled and similarly nodded his head. Shooting his vision brimming with interest at the distance, he stared at the number of streaks of light sweeping over, before muttering, “Next up, we’ll have to see, between him and He Yao, who exactly would be the one to earn the qualifications of the third slot…”

# Chapter 318 – The Third Spot

At the bottom of the Spiritual Light Mountain, the clamoring of passionate voices rushed through the clouds were ringing clearly in a 100 kilometre radius.

Everyone's gazes converged on the figures of the two on the stone platform. Being the 3rd and 4th rank in the Heavenly Rankings, they could be considered influential people at the apex within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Facing such veteran experts, even the hordes of dark horses that had erupted in the hunting grounds would be unable to easily shake their status.

Thus, their confrontation was, obviously, a matter that would make people's blood boil exceedingly hot.

Under the attentive gazes from the crowd, Su Xuan suddenly stood up, her slender and fully alluring body created miraculous and bewitching curves. Her eyes were filled with chilling intent as she stared at He Yao. An arc started to raise from the corner of her mouth as she said, "He Yao, although your plan is not bad, I won't let you achieve your goal that easily."

"What can you do about it? Don't tell me that you want to defeat me?" asked He Yao with a cold smile.

"I'm clear about Mu Chen's character. Since you've arranged this match, he'll definitely come. Since that's the case, I'll just have you waste some Spiritual Energy." With a clench of her jade-like hand, a unadorned smooth and round jade pearl appeared in a flash, as the sounds of waves started to ripple out.

"I truly am unable to defeat you. However, making you waste energy isn't anything difficult!"

He Yao looked at Su Xuan, whose beautiful face was now frosty while strong Spiritual Energy erupted out from her body. His face started to turn slightly ugly, as he clearly never imagined that Su

Xuan would do such an unexpectedly thing.

For the sake of letting Mu Chen obtain some advantage, she was willing to personally take action to waste his strength!

“I warned you!”

He Yao’s eyes turned dark as he stood up. Slowly clenching his fists tightly, the expression on his face brought a chill to people’s hearts when they saw it.

“You think too highly of that brat. Regardless of what you do for him, within my eyes, he’s just a clown jumping on the bridge!” He Yao said with a dense chilling smile. In the next instant, he suddenly took a step forward, and boundless Spiritual Energy, akin to the sea, rushed through the sky. The jade-green Spiritual Energy had seemingly concealed the sky. Under the envelope of this frightening Spiritual Energy, the faces of countless people in the vicinity had intense changes.

“This Spiritual Energy pressure…”

“Did He Yao break through to Heavenly Completion Stage?!”

Startled voices escaped from the mouths of students as the faces of a few outstanding ones had deep shades of graveness, while looking at He Yao’s figure, and were being overwhelmed with shock. This degree of Spiritual Energy pressure was absolutely not something that a Heavenly Transformation could possess.

At the edge of the stone platform, Su Ling'er’s beautiful face turned slightly pale as she clenched her little hands tightly. No wonder why Elder Sis said that she wasn’t He Yao’s opponent! She had already discovered it that He Yao’s strength had already reached such a degree!

Li Qing and Guo Xiong’s faces turned extremely ugly as they thought, This He Yao had concealed this too deeply.

Su Xuan’s beautiful eyes stared tightly at He Yao, whose imposing aura had blotted the sky. Her jade-like hand gripped the

jade pearl that was sparkling with bright brilliance as she said slowly, “After concealing it for so long, you’re still only half a step into Heavenly Completion. Just based on this, I’m afraid that you’re unable to compare with Li Xuantong.”

“You still dare act tough?!”

As a cold glint flashed within his eyes, He Yao sent a large palm patting out. The Spiritual Energy of the world started to turn tumultuous, before a jade-green streak of light, approximately 300 metres wide, violent smashed down onto Su Xuan without the slightest trace of mercy.

Crash!

With her jade-like hand elevated, an azure water wave swept out from within the jade pearl in her hand, before transforming into a whirlpool that surrounded her.

Bang!

The earth shook as the the water tide that blotted the sky was dispersed by the pat. Su Xuan’s beautiful face turned slightly pale as she hurriedly retreated a number of steps. The gigantic whirlpool that surrounded her had been completely dissipated by the palm in an instant. As of now, her strength was at the peak of Heavenly Transformation Late Stage. This realm looked extremely close to He Yao’s; however, there was quite a bit of disparity between the two.

“Let’s see how many attacks you can receive from me!” roared He Yao as he took a step forward. With the intent of not showing the slightest trace of mercy, he sent another palm patting out. Boundless Spiritual Energy transformed into a giant Spiritual Energy palm before heavily patting down.

The jade pearl in Su Xuan’s hand blossomed with dazzling brilliance as wave after wave of water erupted out. Akin to a waterfall, they enveloped her within.

Bang!

The giant Spiritual Energy palm patted on the water barrier, causing ripples to instantly form and extend out. Although the water barrier did not dissipate, it started to gradually turn smaller.

Su Xuan's strength was, after all, weaker than He Yao's. If not for the "Dense Water Spiritual Pearl" in her hand, she might've been unable to continue resisting He Yao's merciless attack.

However, if this continued, being defeated was only a matter of time.

Within the water barrier, Su Xuan bit her lip tightly. Pouring the last of her Spiritual Energy within the "Dense Water Spiritual Pearl", she tried to maintain the water barrier to the longest amount of time possible.

Humm. Humm.

As the water barrier shook, the ripples became increasingly intermittent, and from the looks of it, it was about to break and shatter. Upon seeing this, Su Ling'er's eyes started to turn slightly red, and her lovable face was filled with anxiousness.

Bang!

However, the instant when the water barrier was about to crack and and shatter, a Spiritual Energy ray shot over at lightning speed from a far distance. It violently smashed against the giant Spiritual Palm that was pressing down on the water barrier, shattering it in the process.

"He Yao, you're truly getting more and more incorrigible. The 4th rank of the Heavenly Rankings can be considered soiled by you."

During the time when the Spiritual Energy ray had suddenly swept out, a mockingly cold voice rumbled, becoming akin to thunder as it resounded out, as it rang across the entire region.

Everyone violently raised their heads, only to see a number of figures shoot over from the horizon from far away. After a few breaths, they appeared in the sky above everyone, with the leader, impressively, being Mu Chen!

“Mu Chen! He has arrived!”

“So he’s the Mu Chen that killed the Spirit King?”

“Look’s like there will be an interesting show to watch.”

Following Mu Chen’s arrival, the atmosphere within the area instantly flared up as the gazes of countless people turned fiery. As matters stand, Mu Chen had already become the most dazzling dark horse in this hunt, while He Yao was a veteran influential figure. All of them wondered, In the great fight where the new replaces the old that is about to erupt, how intense will it be?

“Mu Chen, so you’ve finally dared to show yourself?!” roared He Yao with a cold voice as he stared sinisterly at the youthful figure in the sky that made him feel exceedingly disgusted.

“Haha. I never thought that you’d dread me so much that you’d actually use this kind of method to make me rush here.” replied Mu Chen with a faint smile, within his laughing voice, there were hints of unconcealable ridicule.

He Yao stared at Mu Chen. However, the awe-inspiring attitude shown on his face started to gradually turn indifferent. With an indifferent smile, he said, “You’re indeed overestimating yourself. However, that’s alright. Since you’ve came, that saves me some trouble. Hand the Spirit Crystal of the Spirit King over to me and scram out of the Spiritual Light World. If you do that, I’ll overlook the matter of you destroying the headquarters of my Demon’s Gate.”

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen started to laugh. With the clench of his fist, the clear,sparkling Spirit Crystal appeared within his hand, its dazzling brilliance was akin to a clump of scorching suns.

As the Spirit Crystal floated within his palm, a mocking arc slowly appeared at the corner of his mouth as he said, “The Spirit Crystal truly is in my hands. However, hand it to you? Who are you considered to be?”

The clamoring noises ringing within this stretch of world had seemingly turned silent at this instant, as countless students were twitched their lips. They never imagined that Mu Chen would be impolite to that extent and completely not give the slightest bit of face towards He Yao.

Hearing Mu Chen’s reply, He Yao did not say anything more, and only proceeded to stare at Mu Chen with a gaze that seemed like he wanted to devour the latter.

“When the time comes where I’m stepping on you, I hope that you’re able to say those words.”

As He Yao’s cloudy and sinister voice slowly fluttered out, his fist suddenly clenched tightly. Boundless Spiritual Energy rushed towards the sky, as its jade-green colour filled the horizon, while frightening Spiritual Energy pressure started to pervade out.

He was already unable to endure himself from violently crushing Mu Chen beneath his feet!

Mu Chen’s gaze had also started to turn cold and dark as he gestured gently towards Luo Li and the rest with his hands. Upon seeing that, all of them retreated back. Although they knew that He Yao was extremely strong, they were similarly confident when it came to Mu Chen.

Su Xuan had also retreated off the stone platform, and was hurriedly supported by Su Ling'er, who looked towards the two people on the stone platform with some anxiousness. Speaking out, she asked, “ Elder Sister, do you think that Mu Chen can really deal with He Yao?”

As of now, He Yao’s strength had clearly increased by a great

amount, with even Su Xuan being unable to deal with him. Although Mu Chen cannot be judged by the strength shown on the outside, Su Ling'er still felt uneasy and worried.

Previously, at the Demon's Gate Headquarters, Mu Chen was only able to escape with his body intact and in good health due to ample preparation, added with the fact that He Yao did not want to reveal his strength. However, as of now, He Yao had obviously not allowed this apprehension happen again.

"Don't you understand enough of Mu Chen's character?"

Su Xuan said with a gentle smile. Looking at the youthful figure in the sky with her beautiful eyes, she continued speaking, "Since he had appeared here, it would not be that easy for He Yao to defeat him."

When Mu Chen was only at the Heavenly Fusion Stage, he was already able to kill that Bai Xuan, who was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. In addition, the former had already stepped into the Heavenly Transformation Stage, as of now.

Upon hearing this, Su Ling'er felt slightly less worried as she raised her head to look at the sky. The hostility and tension building up before the start of the great fight had caused people to be unable to catch their breaths.

Whoosh!

However, just as this kind of hostile and tense atmosphere was about to reach its peak, two rays of light suddenly shot over from the bright and resplendent Spiritual Light Mountain, before appearing on the air above the stone platform.

"It's Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong!"

When the two figures appeared, the atmosphere at this stretch of the world instantly flared up, as each of the gazes looking at them was brimming with excitement and worship.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, only these two people were undeniably the influential figures at the apex in their hearts!

“Haha! It truly is lively here.”

Shen Cangsheng exclaimed as he stood in the air, while his long hair scattered around him. He had a firm and unswerving face, with slightly coarse eyebrows. A disdainful aura radiated out of his body, and within its appearance, it was undeniably unable to make people feel the slightest bit of arrogance, as only he had such qualifications.

Contrary to him, Li Xuantong, who stood beside him, did not have much fluctuations on his handsome face. With his hands placed behind his back, he appeared exceedingly free and unaffected.

“You guys, continue fighting your battle.”

Shen Cangsheng said as he gestured towards Mu Chen and He Yao with his hand, before turning to look at the crowd. Pointing towards the peak of the mountain, he said, “ Everyone should know that the three Great Generals are waiting up there. Previously, I and Li Xuantong had already done an investigation. It very unfortunate; however, I have to inform everyone that the two of us are unable to deal with them.”

Upon hearing that, the entire region instantaneously turned silent as countless people looked at one another as they thought, The three Great Generals are actually strong to such a degree? Such that even the the collaboration between Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong is still unable to defeat them?

If this was true, won’t that mean that they would fail and return empty-handed from the hunt this time?

The hard effort they had put in for nearly half a month would all be wasted effort?

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen's brows also started to slightly wrinkle. He thought that if even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were unable to deal with the three Great Generals and were to be defeated, won't that mean that the Spirit King-grade Spirit Crystal in his hands would lose its usefulness?

"However, there's no need to feel too much despair. According to the rules this time, we are able to have three quotas to break through the last pass."

Shen Cangsheng said with a smile, before continuing his speech, "Which is to say, other than the two of us, there's one more quota. Naturally, this quota would be left for the strongest person amongst you all."

Speaking until here, his gaze fluttered towards Mu Chen and He Yao.

"Is there any benefit in obtaining this quota?" asked Mu Chen with a smile.

Shen Cangsheng pointed towards the sea of students below as he replied, "If you obtain this quota, the hopes of all the people here would be placed on you, as you will become the saviour in their hearts."

"If you're able to pass through the final pass with this hope, you're status within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not be lower than either of us."

Hearing the reply, Mu Chen hopeless shrugged his shoulder without showing any interest.

"In addition, according to the rules, if we're able to pass through the last pass, the three of us are be able to obtain a genuine Spirit King's Spirit Crystal. Remember, it's a genuine one, not the Spirit King-grade Spirit Crystal that's just born, like the one you have."

"Furthermore, our Spiritual Light Empowerment would be at an even higher degree."

After he finished speaking, Shen Cangsheng rubbed his chin while looking teasingly at Mu Chen and He Yao. At this instant, the eyes of the both of them instantly became brilliant and dazzling.

“This third slot... is mine!” Taking a step out, He Yao stared chillingly at Mu Chen.

With a smile, Mu Chen replied slowly, “ Scram.”

# Chapter 319 – Battling He Yao

"Scram!"

When such a clear and direct word sprung from Mu Chen's mouth, He Yao's face instantly turned somewhat twisted, almost wanting to rip the former into shreds. He truly did not know exactly where Mu Chen got all this confidence from and actually be so rampant towards him. Could it be that due to him managing to luckily kill a Spirit King, he possessed enough qualifications to step on He Yao's head?

"You untactful thing!"

A cold and sinister light shot out from He Yao's eyes. Finally, unable to endure it any longer, he sent a fist rumbling out. Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out towards Mu Chen, akin to a giant surging wave.

Bang!

Burning in black flames, Spiritual Energy surged and erupted from Mu Chen's body. Facing He Yao's attack, he did not show the slightest intent to retreat. Similarly, he sent a rumbling fist out, and the astonishing Spiritual Energies of the two violently collided in midair.

A gigantic sound rang out as Spiritual Energy radiated from the point of impact. An ear piercing bang resounded in the air. The Spiritual Energy storm was devastating, and expelled the air from this stretch of the world.

Within this region, scorching fires started to light up within the eyes of countless students as they thought, The two have finally started to fight.

The shock wave swept past Mu Chen's body, shaking and forcing him to retreat a number of steps, while He Yao had only retreated half a step. If the vigorous degree of their Spiritual Energies were

compared, the latter had already took half a step into the Heavenly Completion Stage. Even with the Nine Nether Flames fusing with his Spiritual Energy, which allowed Mu Chen's quality to rise to the next step, it was obviously unable to gain any advantage in a head-on clash.

However, facing this, Mu Chen clearly had some expectations, as there was not a single fluctuation on his tranquil-looking face. A sharp glint started to rise within his black pupils as he locked his gaze onto He Yao.

"Looks like your strength isn't as strong as your mouth!"

After occupying the superior position, He Yao could not help speaking out with a cold laugh. Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy, which was burning in black flames, was somewhat mysterious. Regardless of that, the latter was only at the strength of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase.

"Isn't it slightly too early to get happy?" Mu Chen replied while slightly raising his eyebrows. One could faintly discern a slightly silvery glow radiating from skin, while there seemed to be a lightning glow spreading out from under his skin.

Low and deep thunderous roars started to ring out from within his body.

"That is..."

Upon seeing this happening, a glint flashed past the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. Thick shades of astonishment erupted from their eyes, before they shot a look at each other while saying in a soft voices, "Thunder God Physique?"

"This truly is interesting. Looks like Mu Chen had met with that Senior within the Lightning Territory. The only thing is, to what degree had he trained his Thunder God Physique to?" asked Shen Cangsheng with some excitement. With regards to the Thunder God Physique, he was naturally not unfamiliar to it, as he had also

learnt and practiced it.

He Yao had also spotted the change happening in Mu Chen, and faintly narrowed his eyes. As of now, Mu Chen seemed to be clearly more dangerous than he was previously.

Bang!

Radiating with a lightning glow all around his body, Mu Chen took a step forward. His body transformed into something akin to a silvery lightning bolt as he explosively shot out. In a flash, he appeared right in front of He Yao. A silvery fist, surging with Spiritual Energy, rumbled towards He Yao's chest without the slightest bit of mercy.

"You dare to fight with me head-on!?" He Yao's face instantly turned cold as he spotted Mu Chen actions. With a roar, he also sent his palm patting out. With the Spiritual Energy in his body being displayed without restraint, every action he did with his hand carried along the strength to shatter mountains.

Ding!

When the fist impacted against the palm, a metallic sound rang out, as incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy crazily swept out, akin to a hurricane. A violent shiver went through the figures of the two as both of them flew out hundreds of metres away.

Whoosh!

Clamoring sounds instantly rang out from below, since Mu Chen was clearly not at a disadvantage in this exchange, and had even managed to be evenly matched against He Yao.

Mu Chen stabilised his body and rubbed his fist. After exhibiting the Thunder God Physique, his body had become exceedingly tyrannical, being even stronger and resilient than steel. Although He Yao's Spiritual Energy was more vigorous, from this exchange, it was obvious that Mu Chen had gained some advantage.

However, the former was still truly hard to deal with.

“Looks like you’re not as strong as I’ve imagined.”

Mu Chen smirked as he mockingly spoke towards to dark-looking He Yao. At this time, he naturally wasn’t restraining any forms of the attacks towards the latter.

“Oh really?”

He Yao’s eyes turned overcast and dark as his body suddenly flew out, before rising towards the sky. Jade-coloured Spiritual Energy circulated behind him, akin to a surging wave, and brought along an astonishing Spiritual Energy pressure.

Screech!

He Yao slowly closed his eyes. Following his actions, Spiritual Energy that blotted the sky erupted out. As it surged out, a sharp screeching noise was resounding across the skies.

Under that crane-like screech, traces of the Spiritual Energy in this region erupting out were faintly discernable.

Mu Chen’s face also started to turn grave, bit by bit. Obviously, this He Yao had truly started to show his genuine abilities.

“Using the Divine Crane Art so quickly?” Upon seeing the Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies behind He Yao’s body, the eyes of both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong slightly narrowed.

On the ground, the faces of Luo Li, Su Xuan and the rest started to turn slightly grave. Mu Chen’s opponent this time wasn’t like the rest. As of now, He Yao’s strength was more tyrannical than the Bai Xuan that they had previously met. Wanting to achieve victory in this fight was not an easy matter.

This fight might not be as relaxed as they had hoped.

Rumble! Rumble!

Boundless Spiritual Energy from this region of the world seemed to howl and twist akin to a storm. Suddenly, He Yao raised his head and roared towards the sky. The sharp roar resounded across

the skies, while at the same time, a dazzling brilliance erupted from his body.

As the glow extended out, it transformed into an incomparably gigantic shadow of a crane behind He Yao's body. The crane's shadow appeared to be approximately 3 thousand metres high, hiding the sky and covering the earth and its roar seemed extremely terrifying.

At this moment, He Yao's eyes suddenly sprang open. A fierce glint erupted from his eyes as his hands came together to form a seal. The seal was akin to a crane flying in the sky, its shadow endlessly encompassing him. At the same time, an ear-piercing crane screech seemed to be resounding from this hand seal.

Screech!

As the crane screech resounded across the skies, the gigantic crane shadow behind He Yao's body rapidly shrank, before turning into a jade coloured feather plume approximately 30 metres in height.

As the feather plume fluttered in the air, it looked exceedingly beautiful. However, underneath that beauty, the hearts of everyone started to have some palpitations. They had a feeling that within that feather plume was a great degree of frightening Spiritual Energy.

He Yao raised his eyes that were exuding sinister shadows, as he locked onto Mu Chen. A malevolent grin rose from the corner of his mouth as a low voice rang out across the skies, "Divine Crane Art – Falling Feather Slices the Heavens."

Extending his slender and long fingers, he slowly flicked towards the surface of the jade-coloured feather plume that was slowly fluttering as it descended from the sky.

Humm!

The instant as his finger flicked out, a fluctuation that was visible

to the naked-eye seemingly extended out. As the weak humm became stronger, the next instant, the entire stretch of the world had been pervaded by the humming noise.

Swish!

The jade-coloured feather plume suddenly soared towards the horizon. Jade-coloured light extended from it. From afar, it looked as if the feather plume had transformed into a gigantic feathery blade, as an indescribably swift and fierce aura started to radiate from it.

On the ground below, shock rose within countless gazes as they stared at the jade-coloured feathery blade. The feather that looked seemingly weak and soft had know possessed sufficient strength and power to shatter the skies.

Inhale-Exhale

Mu Chen exhaled a mouthful of white mist, as he stared at the feathery blade that caused the skin of people to turn cold. At this instant, however, his gaze started to turn tranquil, bit by bit, as his hands suddenly came together to form a seal.

Boundless Spiritual Energy condensed between him, transforming into a stretch of starry sky. A white tiger condensed and formed. Stepping across the starry sky, murderous killing intent undulated and radiated from it.

As Li Xuantong looked towards the formed white tiger, his forehead faintly twitched. During the Pact of Three Moves he previously had with Mu Chen, the latter had also displayed this divine technique. However, with the current strength of He Yao, which had far exceeded that of Mu Chen, coupled with the move he had displayed, if Mu Chen wanted to rely on this move to deal with the former, it might seem a little naive.

Roar!

The white tiger roared as murderous killing intent radiated out.

This roar was extremely strong. However, it was clear in the eyes of the people that with the limitations of Mu Chen's current strength, the imposing might of the white tiger was faintly suppressed by the jade-colored feathery blade.

On the ground, some unease and worry appeared on the loveable face of Su Linger, as Su Xuan faintly wrinkled her eyebrows.

"It truly is a waste of a treasure for a Deity Tier Spiritual Art of this grade to land in your hands."

He Yao's eyes turned apathetic and indifferent as a sinister arc appeared at the corner of his mouth as he spoke out, "Wanting to rely on this white tiger of yours to block my Divine Crane Art's feather blade? I can only tell you that you're truly overly naive!"

"Cut it for me!"

He Yao did not give any more chances to Mu Chen, as his arm furiously chopped down as his cold laugh rang out.

Bang!

As his roar resounded out, the jade-coloured feathery blade that was floating in the sky instantly started to hum and vibrate, akin to the cry of a blade. Jade-green light shot up the sky as the feathery blade faintly trembled. In the next instant, it furiously chopped down towards Mu Chen's location.

"Hmph!"

Everyone was able to see that at the very instant when the jade-coloured feathery blade chopped down, a jade-coloured slash line appeared in space. A jade-coloured glowing blade descended from the sky, encompassing Mu Chen in it.

Roar!

The white tiger roared, causing the murderous killing intent to rush out, smashing head first towards the jade-coloured feathery blade.

Roar!

However, just as the two made contact, the white tiger emitted a furious roar. The torrential murderous killing intent was sliced firmly into two by the jade-coloured blade, and the white tiger was also split into two.

The faces of everyone on the ground had also changed at this instant, as they thought, He Yao's attack is, unexpectedly, so ferocious!

A sinister smile surfaced on the corner of He Yao's mouth as ridicule appeared within his eyes. Looking at the youth that was standing erect in the distance, he thought, Looks like Mu Chen is going to get kicked out of the hunting grounds just like this...

Facing the shocked voices that blotted the sky, Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the jade-coloured feather blade. There were still no fluctuations on his face, as his hands came together again, and his hand seal instantly changing!

The torrential Spiritual Energy behind him suddenly surged as another patch of starry sky started to condense and form. While it started to sparkle, a beastial figure even more gigantic than the white tiger started to slowly appear.

Moo!

As the gigantic beastial figure appeared, a mysterious hiss that shook the world resounded across the world. A black wave, carrying with it cold, chilling air that was sufficient to freeze the Spiritual Energy of the world, swept out from within the starry sky.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture," At this time, Mu Chen's hoarse voice faintly rang out.

"Divine Seal of Black Tortoise!"

# Chapter 320 – Descent of the Divine Crane

The cold, chilling air diffused out, covering the entire world, and caused the temperature of the surrounding skies and earth to plummet. The air had seemingly condensed into ice threads. Even the Spiritual Energy circulating between the heavens and earth had started to become sluggish.

Everyone looked in shock at the gigantic figure that had formed on the starry sky behind Mu Chen. It was a giant beast that was fully clad in a jet-black colour. Possessing the shape of a tortoise, it quietly crept forward. At its rear, its tail comprised of a long, giant black python. As the giant python stared out, it revealed its head, while a jet black tongue flickered out from its mouth.

As it crept forward from the starry sky, a black wave swept from it. A crashing sound that looked as though it had substance resounded across the sky.

Divine Seal of Black Tortoise.

It was the second Divine Seal within the Four Gods Constellation Scripture. After obtaining this Deity Tier Spiritual Art for such a long time, Mu Chen finally displayed the second Divine Seal successfully.

This Deity Tier Spiritual Art had finally started to reveal the brilliance that was worthy of its title.

As he stood erected in the air, Mu Chen raised his head and looked towards the gigantic beast that had stepped out of the starry sky behind him. In the next instant, he waved his sleeve, as a chilling voice rang out, “Go.”

Moo!

The Black Tortoise made a long roar, causing the black tidal wave to instantaneously sweep out. Stepping on the wave, it seemingly transformed into a thousand meter long gigantic black water

pillar. Carrying along extremely terrifying chilling air, under the shocked gazes of numerous people, it brazenly smashed head-on against the jade-coloured feather blade that was furiously chopping down!

Ding!

At the instant of the collision, the entire sky seemed to have twisted and distorted. In the next instant, an ear splittingly giant sound rang across the horizon, as the black wave, as well as the jade-coloured glowing blade, swept across the entire stretch of the world.

As for Mu Chen and He Yao, it was obvious that both of them had to bear the brunt of the fall out. The incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy storm rumbled directly towards them. At this instant, the faces of the two turned seemingly pale, as they were engulfed within.

Bang!

Mu Chen was directly shot towards a mountain peak, his body laying embedded on the mountain cliff. Cracks extended, as the mountain cliff shattered, causing stones to crumble and descend.

Struggling to stand up, Mu Chen wiped the blood stains at the corner of his mouth off. Thousands of metres away, He Yao was also in a completely miserable state, as more than half of his outfit was ripped into shreds. His face was alternating between green and pale, while bloodstains had similarly appeared on the corner of his mouth.

On the ground, countless gazes looked towards the two that were flung back. They never thought that after the two had displayed such formidable Deity Tier Spiritual Arts, the both of them would still be evenly matched.

“This Mu Chen truly is formidable! Even though He Yao exhibited his Deity Tier Spiritual Art, he still wasn’t able to gain

any advantage!”

“No wonder why he was able to kill a Spirit King. Looks like he should be the most dazzling dark horse in this hunt.”

“Formidable!”

Clamoring noises rang out as countless people in the region started to whisper and discuss. However, regardless of the topic of discussion, all of them had clearly regarded Mu Chan as outstanding. After all, He Yao was an influential figure at the apex of the academy. Furthermore, he was also a Senior, when compared to Mu Chen. According to normality, he should be the one that would suppress and defeat Mu Chen. However, as of now, he had not been able to gain any superiority against him. From a certain perspective, this was a lackluster performance.

On one side of the platform, Su Ling'er, and the rest who had been observing, breathed a sigh of relief as they thought, Mu Chen truly has hidden some moves. If not, the previous attack by He Yao might have already ended this fight.

“This He Yao had already displayed the Divine Crane Art; however, he is still unable to gain any advantages over Mu Chen. Let’s see how he continues fighting!” Su Ling'er exclaimed.

As long as Mu Chen doesn’t lose this fight, it would completely be considered his victory.

Su Xuan wasn’t as optimistic as her sister. Her lovable face was still grave as she stared at He Yao, who was quietly cleaning the blood stains from the corner of his mouth as he stood in the air, his eyes turning more frightening and Su Xuan commented, “Don’t look down on He Yao. He isn’t someone that can be dealt with so easily.”

As everyone’s gazes were focused towards the sky, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong shot look at Mu Chen with slight shock. Obviously, they felt astonished by how the latter was able to

receive an attack from He Yao without letting him get a slightest degree of advantage.

“The Deity Tier Spiritual Art that he displayed isn’t simple.” said Shen Cangsheng in a soft voice. His eyesight exceeded other people’s, and with a single look, he was able to discover the uncommonness of the Deity Tier Spiritual Art that Mu Chen had displayed.

“It’s said that he had obtained it from the Spiritual Value Hall. According to my estimates, it might be a Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art.” Li Xuantong said. He had crossed hands with Mu Chen before; therefore, he already had some understanding towards the Four Divine Constellations Scripture.

“A Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art?” muttered Shen Cangsheng, as the shock within his eyes became more evident. Within the Spiritual Values Hall, the number of Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Arts could be counted with one’s fingers. Furthermore, the chances to obtain one was extremely small. Mu Chen’s luck was really that good?

In addition, Shen Cangsheng was also clear that although Deity Tier Spiritual Arts were powerful, that did not mean that they were easy to learn and master. Even if some people were to get their hands on them, they would not be able to successfully learn and master those arts. For Mu Chen to be able to successfully learn this, it was not an easy feat to accomplish.

“Being unable to deal with Mu Chen even after pulling this move out, He Yao’s shock must not be little.” commented Shen Cangsheng with a grin as he shot a look at He Yao in the distance.

“This fellow has always been hiding his strength within the academy, and should be doing this to deal with me. If he only has such methods, he should not have such guts.” commented Li Xuantong with a faint smile before continuing, “Perhaps, he might have never thought that he would be forced by Mu Chen to such a

point…”

Turning his gaze towards Mu Chen in the distance, he continued his comment, “However, facing against Mu Chen, this does not seem to be considered as good news.”

While the two of them were engaged in their conversation, at the distance, He Yao emotionlessly raised his head. His eyes looked towards Mu Chen with extreme darkness, as his palms scatter the broken pieces of clothing on his body, bit by bit.

“I never thought that such a formidable Deity Tier Spiritual Art would be successfully learnt and practiced by you…”

Mu Chen gave a smile without saying anything; however, some vigilance slowly started to surface within his heart.

“This was originally left for that fellow Li Xuantong. However, from the looks of it now, I’ve no other choice, but to use this to defeat you.” A smile started to rise from He Yao’s emotionless face; however, that very smile caused a cold shiver down everyone’s spines.

Upon seeing that, Mu Chen’s eyes faintly narrowed. In the next moment, the eyes that were staring at the body of He Yao’s suddenly contracted.

As the robes on He Yao’s body were completely swept away by him, a blood-red rune surfaced on his chest. The blood-red seal seemed to be drawn by thick blood. Faintly, it seemed to form a blood-red imprint. The blood seemed extremely mysterious. Even though it had been exposed for so long, it still radiated a strong vitality, while the blood was even circulating at a slow rate.

“That’s…” muttered Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, their gazes both converged on the symbol on He Yao’s chest that was formed by blood.

“The fluctuations coming from it seem to be from the blood essence of a kind of spiritual beast. Furthermore, I’m afraid it

might be one that is even ranked considerably high on the Myriad Beast Record.” said Li Xuantong.

Shen Cangsheng softly nodded his head and said, “Looks a little bit like the blood essence of the Heavenly Demonic Crane...”

“The Heavenly Demonic Crane, Ranked 26th on the Myriad Beast Record?” muttered Li Xuantong as he faintly raised his forehead, before replying, “I seem to have seen it in the Spiritual Values Hall, and it’s worth over 1,000,000 Spiritual Value Points. Looks like this He Yao had truly coughed out some blood just to deal with me.”

“However, looks like it has given bad luck to Mu Chen...”

The Mu Chen that they had deemed to be unlucky was now faintly wrinkling his forehead as he looked at the scene playing out before him. Although he was not overly clear as to what exactly He Yao wanted to do, he had also felt some taste of fear.

At this moment, He Yao did not care about other people, and bent his head down to look at the blood imprint on his chest. Biting his fingers, fresh blood flowed out, causing his hands to be stained in red. In the next moment, his palms suddenly came together to form seals, while dazzling symbols fluctuated out as they appeared.

Following the appearance of his hand seals, the blood imprint on his chest became an even darker blood-red color. In the next instant, it erupted with ear-piercing screeches, as the blood imprint extended. Quickly, it had already pervaded He Yao’s entire body.

As of now, his eyes had slowly started to turn blood-red, bit by bit. An aura that caused people’s skin to feel numb started to radiate from his body. This made his appearance akin to a human-formed ferocious beast.

“Divine Crane Art, Descent of the Divine Crane!”

He Yao's hoarse voice slowly rang out. As that happened, the skin across his entire body unexpectedly started to split apart. blood-red glowing feathers started to erupt from within his body, before finally completely encasing him.

In such a short instant, He Yao's appearance had a large change. blood-red feathers totally encased his entire body, with each of them being akin to a long and sharp sword, while an indescribable aura started to pervade out from him.

At this time, He Yao had become extremely dangerous.

Hiss!

On the ground, countless gazes locked onto the greatly changed He Yao as everyone could not resist breathing in a mouthful of cold air. In the next instant, they took a step back as they thought, What kind of Deity Tier Spiritual Art is that? Unexpectedly, such a frightening secret art existed?

"Mu Chen, forcing me to such a step. You can only say that you've courted your own death. Next up, I'll force you to scram!"

He Yao's blood-red eyes locked onto Mu Chen as blood-red light gushed out from his body. It seemed to transform into a incomparably large figure of a crane, while spreading its wings, encompassing the heavens.

As the blood-red glow erupted from He Yao's body, he seemed to look like a blood-red full moon. A long roar rang out, shattering the heavens as the blood-red light had seemingly pervaded the entire stretch of the world.

Mu Chen looked towards the blood-red full moon that contained frightening power. Taking a deep breathe, black flames ignited and started to burn from within his black eyes.

Mu Chen's hands started to slowly spread out at this instant, and black flames started to gush out from him. A clear cry suddenly rang out from within his body as black flames surged out. In an

instant, it had already pervaded throughout the horizon.

Countless gazes locked tightly onto the black flames that had curled up and blotted the skies. Under the envelopment of the black flames, the temperature of the entire stretch of the world started to follow and rise.

Screech!

Another clear cry resounded across the world, as the entire stretch of the world had seemingly flared up. Under the gazes of countless people, a pair of feathery wings clad in black flames that were able to cover up mountains suddenly unfurled out from within the surging black flames.

As the black flames diffused out, countless people cast their shocked gazes towards the horizon. There, at the place where the black flames were in a lower quantity, an incomparably giant big black bird had suddenly surfaced!

“That’s...!”

At this moment, the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong violently contracted as they became filled with thick shades of astonishment.

The Nine Netherbird!

# Chapter 321 – Kicked out of the Hunting War

Screech!

A resonant and clear cry rang across the world as countless gazes looked in shock at the giant black bird that had surfaced from within the torrential black flames across the horizon. As the giant bird unfurled its giant wings that could encompass mountains, black flames surged and swept out, causing the temperature of this stretch of the world to rise even higher.

“The Nine Netherbird…”

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong looked at each other, noticing the astonishment within each other’s eyes, as they mutter, “He is actually able to transform into a Spiritual Beast form even at this level…”

Everyone knew that once one steps into the Spirit Stage, everyone would possess a power, and that was to refine the Soul Essence of Spiritual Beasts. It’s exactly this power of the Soul Essence that allowed Spirit Stage experts to possess the might of Spiritual Beasts.

However, from a certain perspective, this kind of possession wasn’t eternal, as even the Soul Essence of the Spiritual Beast would one day dissipate. Furthermore, following the increasing strength of the refiner, gradually breaking through from Spirit Stage to Heavenly Fusion Stage and Heavenly Transformation Stage, the power gained from refining the Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence would gradually be replaced.

Naturally, not all of the refined Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence would dissipate. If one was able to reach a considerably high level of fusion with their Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence, the power gained from the Soul Essence would continue to exist. However, for that kind of situation to occur was not simple. After all, a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence had a natural rejection to mankind.

Even though the Spiritual Beast was already killed, its remnant thoughts would still resist this fusion. That is, unless they were willing to get refined. Only if this were to happen would the power from the Soul Essence be able to follow alongside the refiner.

However, with untamed and arrogant Spiritual Beasts, after being killing, would they be willing to be refined?

Therefore, following the increase in strength of people, after breaking through to Heavenly Fusion Stage, Heavenly Transformation Stage and Heavenly Completion Stage, the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence present within them would gradually dissipate. This kind of power from the Soul Essence would gradually be replaced by an even more powerful strength.

This was the reason why Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had shown such astonishment when Mu Chen transformed into the shape of the Nine Netherbird, and, in addition, into such a complete form.

"I truly don't know exactly how Mu Chen was able to reach such a point of fusion with the Nine Netherbird's Soul Essence..." Shen Cangsheng smiled in startlement, before saying, "Over these last few years, this is the first time I've seen someone who was able to transform into such a perfect form of the Nine Netherbird."

Li Xuantong slightly nodded his head in approval, as he looked towards the incomparably large Nine Netherbird. At this moment, a complicated expression arose on his face, since the current Mu Chen truly had a monumental change since a number of months ago.

"He's too formidable! He's actually able to transform into such a perfect form of the Nine Netherbird at this moment..."

On the ground, Wang Tong and the rest were also exclaiming in astonishment. All of them had also refined the Soul Essence of Spiritual Beasts that were not weak while they were at the Spirit Stage. However, once they promoted into the Heavenly

Transformation Stage, the power from their Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence had seemingly completely dissipated, without even talking about being able to completely transform into such a perfect form of their Spiritual Beasts. In addition, when the power of the Soul Essence was most abundant within their bodies, they were still unable to transform into such a Spiritual Beast form that was as substantial as a living creature.

Standing beside them, Luo Li gave a faint smile. She naturally knew about how Mu Chen was able to achieve such a step. Not only did he have a high level agreement with the Nine Netherbird within him, even their lives were intertwined. The Bloodline Bond wasn't something that just anyone could enjoy, as well as having the courage to be tied in one.

To many people, the power from the Soul Essence might be considered to be a provisional power source. However, for Mu Chen, it would be with him throughout his life.

Screech!

Under the countless gazes that were sparkling with various kinds of emotions, the gigantic black bird that covered the horizon raised its head towards the sky and gave a long screech. In the next instant, flapping its wings, it smashed, head first, into the blood-red full moon that had shattered space as it headed towards Mu Chen.

Bang!

The two frightening powers smashed against each other. The intense bang produced was akin to thunder, resounding across the skies, even causing a slight twist and distortion in the space.

The giant bird, burning in black flames, smashed head-on against the blood-red full moon. The two frightening powers were currently crazily trying to corrode one another.

Bang! Bang!

The incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations were akin to hundred metre high waves that were continuously sweeping and and trying to engulf the territory of the other. The scene that they created caused the skin of quite a few people on the ground to feel numb.

Everyone was able see a black and red colour condensing in the erratic corrosion that was happening between the giant bird and the full moon. In the short span of a number of breaths, these two powers turned into gigantic ball of light that was over a hundred meters in diameter. Within the centre of the ball of light, the two forces were erratically mixing in an extreme fashion.

Like a bomb.

Since it was a bomb, it would explode.

As this thought flashed past the minds of the crowd, they notice that the black and red colour was expanding in the sky. In the next moment, an astonishing sound rang out.

BOOM!!!

The Spiritual Energy ball of light that had condensed from the all-out attacks of the two finally could not hold onto its shape and furiously exploded. Spiritual Energy crazily swept out as the gigantic black bird, as well of the full moon, were instantly engulfed within it.

A dazzling light formed, causing countless people to narrow their eyes. A Spiritual Energy shockwave, approximately thousands of metres in length, radiated out, before finally diffusing into the ends of the horizon.

At this instant, the Spiritual Light Mountain, which was akin to a giant pillar that held the sky up, started to hum as it vibrated and shook.

Bang! Bang!

Under the buffeting from the devastating Spiritual Energy storm,

a black and a red streak of light were violently flung out, before heavily impacting the expansive platform on the ground below.

BOOM!

As the earth shook, the thousand metre long stone platform started to collapse as two deep holes appeared on it. Large and coarse cracks, spanning thousands of metres, appeared like spider webs as they extended from the giant holes.

Figures started to hurriedly rise into the air from all around the stone platform as they cast their gazes over. In the previous heaven-shattering collision, exactly who had gained an advantage?

Everyone was clear that this exchange was sufficient to determine the winner.

Under the convergence of countless gazes, the dust clouds slowly dissipated from the completely destroyed stone platform. Two unfathomably deep giant holes started to appeared in the eyes of the crowd.

The jet blackness of the deep holes masked every source of light and gaze.

Exactly who had won?

Whoosh!

Within the depths of the dark giant hole, a whooshing sound suddenly rang out, causing the crowed to hurriedly converge their gazes over. In the next instant, they saw, from the left deep hole, a figure that was covered in blood was staggering as he rose to the sky.

The figure had a head full of green hair, while the injuries were present over his entire body. Blood created a pattering sound as it dripped down from him, causing him to appear extremely miserable. It was He Yao!

Whoosh!

A few regretful clamoring noises rang out as everyone thought, So, it’s still He Yao that remains standing in the end?

The lovable faces of Su Ling'er and the rest who were attentively watching this scene before them could not resist and changed.

“Hahahaha.”

Covered in blood, He Yao looked at the deep hole before him that did not appear to have the slightest activity. In the next moment, he looked at the sky and laughed loudly, his facial features distorted as he roared, “Mu Chen, aren’t you very proud of yourself? However, the one that laughs, at the end, is me!”

There were several people who were sighing regretfully as they thought, Is Mu Chen still weaker? However, since he was able to force He Yao into such a miserable state, he could be considered as being extremely outstanding already. As long as some time was given to him, surpassing He Yao might only be a matter of time.

In the air, the faces of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were still tranquil and calm. As they shot a look at the deep hole that did not have the slightest trace of activity, a faint smile suddenly appeared on their faces.

Screech!

A clear and resonantly long screech suddenly resounded across the skies at that moment. Instantly, all of the clamoring noises turned silent as thick surprise and joy radiated from the gazes that were showing regret earlier, and they looked towards the deep hole that did not have the slightest bit of activity.

At this instant, He Yao’s face had also violently contorted.

The earth faintly trembled as a scorching heat wave rose from within the depths of the giant hole. In the next instant, everyone saw erupting black flames that blotted the skies. Within the black flames, a gigantic black bird rushed towards the sky as its shadow covered the earth.

Boom!

Across the horizon, the black flames erupted as the giant bird clad in black flames slowly flapped its giant wings. A pair of incomparably sharp eyes stared at the dumbfounded He Yao.

At this moment, the disparity of strength between the two could be seen with a single look.

“How’s this possible…?” muttered He Yao as he looked towards the Nine Netherbird that seemed to not have a single trace of injury. That was his strongest attack. However, from the looks of it, it unexpectedly did not do much damage to Mu Chen!

As the black flames swept out, the gigantic body of the Nine Netherbird started to rapidly shrink. Under the shocked and astonished gazes of the people on the ground, it transformed into a thin figure.

After Mu Chen reappeared, his face seemed somewhat pale; however, his black eyes were still shining with consciousness. Compared to He Yao, his condition was much better. He Yao’s previous attack truly was incomparably tyrannical; however, he still underestimated the completely transformed Nine Netherbird, and Mu Chen, who had possessed such strong resilience and defensive capabilities.

The form of the Nine Netherbird truly was much more tyrannical than the body of a human.

“He Yao, you’ve celebrating too early. That isn’t a good thing to do.” said Mu Chen with a faint smile as he looked towards the extremely miserable He Yao.

“I don’t believe it! The current you is just spent force! Give me less of your pretentious appearance!” The capillaries in He Yao’s eyes bulged as he malevolently roared. In the next instant, he explosively shot towards Mu Chen.

Looking at the incoming He Yao, regardless of speed, attack, or

strength, which had decreased too much, Mu Chen's eyes turned emotionless. With a flick of his finger, a Spiritual Energy ray howled as it surged out, and heavily impacted the body of He Yao.

Bang!

He Yao instantly flew backwards, and miserably scraped the ground as he fell. Long cracks extended out from the location where he fell as he spurted a mouthful of blood.

At this instant, Mu Chen's eyes turned frosty. Without the slightest shred of mercy, he flicked his finger once again, causing another Spiritual Energy ray to sweep out. Under the terror-filled eyes of He Yao, it violently impacted against his body.

Bang!

This stretch of earth trembled from the impact.

Whoosh!

A ray of light descended from the sky and encompassed He Yao within. With a whoosh, it sent him, who was already unable to move, out of the hunting grounds.

°

Seeing He Yao disappearing into the distance, Mu Chen raised his head and deeply exhaled, while the paleness of his face turned increasingly thick.

This fight was not easy for him. However, fortunately, he had won in the end.

After He Yao was sent out, the region turned deathly silent as everyone cast their gazes towards the pale-faced youth. Within their eyes, a sliver of respect started to slowly erupt.

In the air, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both started to smile.

Looks like the third slot had been won by Mu Chen, in the end.

# Chapter 322 – Pressure

The astonishing battle that happened in the air finally had an ending, while the vast Spiritual Light platform had already collapsed and was destroyed at this point in time. The two deep holes had taken up close to half of the surface of the platform, while the scary webs of cracks extending out caused them to look all the more chilling.

There was still a sea of humans that covered the mountains and the plains around the stone platform. However, the sea of humans was still in a quiet state, most likely still reminiscing the astonishing confrontation that happened in the air.

Countless gazes locked onto the figure of the youth standing in the air above them, with some having respect in their eyes. If Mu Chen had previously made people assume that he was just a Freshman; after this fight, it had truly made him into an influential figure of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On the Heavenly Rankings, he was sufficiently capable of being placed within the top three ranks.

This kind of accomplishment made quite a few people sigh in amazement. One had to know that Mu Chen had entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for, at most, half a year. However, the growth he had during this half-year had caused shock and astonishment to people.

Such an innate gift, such a monstrous talent.

“Mu Chen’s won!” Unconcealable joy and happiness erupted on Su Ling'er’s loveable face as she grabbed onto Su Xuan’s smooth wrist, while exclaiming out in excitement.

Beside her, both Li Qing and Guo Xiong had started to laugh while looking at the youth in the air with some complicated expressions in their eyes. They thought, Ever since we returned

two months ago, this fellow's strength has already improved to such a level.

Su Xuan had also shown a gentle smile as she cast her beautiful eyes, with a little peculiarity, at Mu Chen. Even she had never thought that Mu Chen would actually be able to defeat He Yao. After all, regardless of Mu Chen's talent, He Yao was still a veteran amongst the influential characters at the apex of the academy.

"Looks like my third rank on the Heavenly Rankings will have to be given up..." muttered Su Xuan with a soft laugh. She did not have any unwillingness, since she did not have any particular care about it. If not for He Yao being too much of a bully, she might've even been too lazy to put up a fight.

In the distance, Wang Tong and the rest had also taken a deep breath of relief, before looking at the figure in the air, while smacking their lips. At this moment, the gazes they sent out had faint traces of change. When they had known that Mu Chen and Luo Li had slain that Spirit King, although they had some astonishment and admiration, it was still not as strong and intense as the feelings they got at this moment.

After all, He Yao was an influential figure at the apex within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the academy, the only people who could suppress him would be Shen Cangsheng or Li Xuantong.

However, there appeared a third person who could accomplish that; furthermore, he was a freshman.

The shock and astonishment that this brought forth far exceeded that of when Mu Chen had slain a Spirit King. Although, He Yao's strength wasn't any stronger than the Spirit King...

"Since Mu Chen has defeated He Yao, he will be awarded the third spot..." said An Ran suddenly.

Upon hearing this, the expressions of Wang Tong and the rest

turned grave, as they casted their slightly fearful gazes at the majestic mountain summit that was encapsulated by clouds. On the peak of that mountain were the final protectors of this hunt.

They were the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall.

They were strong existences that even the overlord of the Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng, had to show extreme dread. If they were unable to pass the checkpoint of the three Great Generals, all of the hard work that they had put in during the period of time in the hunting grounds would be all for naught.

At this time, Luo Li's clear eyes had also faintly contracted. She was very clear that those three held the strongest places within the entirety of the students. This represented a kind of glory, while at the same time, they also represented a gigantic pressure.

The hunt was something that was anticipated by all the students throughout the year. As well as putting in hard work, they were willing to endure the loneliness of bitter training. All of this was to astonish people within the hunt, and to obtain Spiritual Lights in the end, because the Spiritual Light Empowerment was what made people drool.

However, the three great protectors in front of them had become a giant mountain in front of all the students. They were unable to cross it, and could only entrust their hopes on the shoulders of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, as well as Mu Chen, who had just obtained the final spot.

Similarly, following this kind of anticipation, the pressure was also present. Seemingly, the anticipation felt by all of the students that had participated in this hunt had transformed into a kind of pressure, pressing down on the bodies of the three. If the three were able to obtain victory against the three great protectors in the end, they would obtain the prestige from all of the students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which would reach the apex. They would also gain true respect and gratefulness from all

of them.

This was the glory that the victor should enjoy. However, what if they lose?

This anticipation would turn into disappointment. What kind of impact would that lead for everyone?

Luo Li gently clenched her jade-like hands as she stared at Mu Chen's figure with some graveness present in her eyes. The third spot wasn't something that was good to receive.

As Luo Li's gaze started to fluctuate, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong proceeded to descend from the sky, finally stopping beside Mu Chen. The both of them shot a peculiar look at the latter, sizing him up before saying with a smile, "Congratulations on defeating He Yao. However, we have to similarly inform you that the third spot had descended on your shoulders. I think that you should know what it represents. This isn't some terrific achievement."

Upon hearing their words, Mu Chen faintly hesitated before gently nodding his head. He naturally knew how gigantic the pressure was to possess this third spot. If he was defeated, he would gain too much disappointment from the students, and it would lead to all the efforts of everyone to go down the drain.

From the ground, Luo Li shot over and appeared beside Mu Chen. She shot a look at Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong with her beautiful eyes, without saying a single word.

Li Xuantong stared at Luo Li with a complicate gaze, before turning towards Mu Chen and said, "I think that you might still not understand the exact situation you're in. Shen Cangsheng and I had already investigated the three Great Generals. The both of us are able to resist two of them, with the final result being not a victory and not a defeat.."

Hearing his words, Mu Chen's eyes contracted. Not a victory and

not a defeat. That meant that they would draw?

“According to the rules, we students have a slight advantage, which is to say that if we are able to achieve three draws, it would be our victory.” Shen Cangsheng explained. With a slightly helpless smile, he continued, “That also means that Li Xuantong and I would be able to guarantee two draws. At the same time, with our two draws, the critical point would be the third fight.”

A grave shadow surfaced on Mu Chen’s handsome, yet pale, face, while Luo Li faintly knitted her eyebrows.

“If you are able to achieve a draw in the third fight, we would win. And, if you lose, we will all lose. The hunt this time would end here, and everyone would return with empty hands.” Li Xuantong added indifferently.

Mu Chen’s face changed faintly upon hearing that. In other words, what he meant to say was that the pressure that was originally on all three of their shoulders, had now been completely transferred onto Mu Chen’s body. If he lost, he would have to endure the loss of all of their hopes. There might not be people who would criticise him. However, this kind of indescribable disappointment might lead to the collapse of one’s self-confidence.

This kind of conclusion seemed to be even more miserable than losing to He Yao...

Losing to He Yao, he would still not be criticised by people; after all, it was a personal matter. However, if he lost at the final checkpoint, that would be equivalent to losing all the hopes and hard work of everyone.

This responsibility was somewhat too heavy.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stared at the quiet Mu Chen. They had stopped their lecture, and quietly looked at him. This indescribable, yet tightly knotted atmosphere diffused out, before spreading throughout the entire stretch of the world.

On the ground, countless people looked towards the few figures that had converged in the air. They were faintly able to understand what they were talking about, and this caused the expression on many people's faces to turn grave. Bringing anticipation in their eyes, they cast their gazes towards the figures in the sky that would bear the weight of their hopes and dreams.

The fruits of bitter training they had endured would have to depend the performances of the few in the sky, who represent their greatest strength...

The loveable faces of Su Ling'er, Su Xuan and the rest had also turned grave. This spot seemed to be somewhat too heavy. Letting it drop on the shoulders of a youth that was still a Freshman was slightly too cruel.

Li Xuantong looked at Mu Chen awhile before faintly moving his gaze while saying, "If you feel that you're unable bear the responsibility of this spot, you can give it up. I think there should be no one that has the qualifications to say anything about it. After all, you're still a Freshman, as of now. There's no need to bear such stress and pressure."

At this moment, Shen Cangsheng had also smiled. The wind tussled at his scattered hair, before he patted Mu Chen's shoulder. With a disdainful look in his eye that did not have the slightest degree of reducing, he said, "There's no need for this much stress. What Li Xuantong said isn't wrong. I've almost forgotten that you're just a Freshman. If you feel that you don't have the assurance, giving up is the best choice. Worst come to worse, I'll have to put out a little more effort and put my all in my fight against Senior Lin Zheng. As if I'm scared of him."

Under this stifling silence propagating across the entire stretch of the world, Luo Li extended her tender and jade-like hand and gently held onto Mu Chen's palm. Looking at Mu Chen's forehead, which had faintly wrinkled, she gave a light smile.

Even though everyone will be disappointed, you'll always be the most dazzling in my eyes.

Mu Chen looked at Luo Li's exquisite face that was akin to porcelain, before faintly closing his eyes. The palm that held Luo Li's little hand gradually gripped tighter, before he suddenly opened his eyes.

His black pupils had changed back to its previous sharpness and brilliance, with the hesitation within already completely removed.

Raising his head, he cast his gaze towards the mountain peak that was covered in clouds. A smile rose from his handsome face as he spoke out in a gentle and soft voice, "Although I know that this will result in me bearing a lot of stress and pressure, giving up isn't my style. Furthermore, if I don't even have the courage to bear such pressure and stress, how will I be able to pursue the path to become the unrivalled expert?"

Saying those words, he turned his head towards the absolutely beautiful young girl with silver hair, and dressed in jet-black clothes. He had promised her that he would become an unrivalled expert and appear before her. He wanted to stand before her and completely shatter the pressure on her that was coming from all directions.

If he was unable to muster the courage to endure the pressure present now, how would he be able to continue along the path of an unrivalled expert?

Looking at the youth in front of them, whose imposing aura had started to rapidly rise with some astoundment, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong felt some astonishment. In the next moment, they could not resist and smiled as they thought, This Mu Chen truly is more reliable than He Yao.

Mu Chen gave a smile as his gaze condensed on the cloud-covered mountain peak. Faintly, he could slightly discern the three figures that were akin to demon gods. The pressure coming from them

was akin to Mount Tai pressing down on him. However, the smile on his face grew increasingly thick.

“These two Seniors. Leave the third spot for me. Regardless of victory or defeat…”

Mu Chen’s black eyes turned increasingly bright as he exclaimed with fervor,

“I’ll give my all!”

# Chapter 323 – Last Battle

The sky became progressively dim: however, the majestic Spiritual Light Mountain became unusually lively. At this time, almost all of the students who had participated in the hunt had already rushed towards the place of the final battle.

Everyone knew that this was the most important issue, as of now, and did not continue collecting Spiritual Lights. They had to guarantee the smooth pass of the final checkpoint. Only by passing through the three final protectors would they be able to obtain the benefits of the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

According to the rules, there was only one chance to challenge the three great protectors. Therefore, if they were to lose, all of the people within this year's hunt would return with empty hands, their year's worth of hard work down the drain.

Being a fight of such a level, ordinary students were unable to get involved. Therefore, they could only cast their hopes on the three strongest people they knew.

Although they knew that this would create an exceeding amount of pressure on them, this was, after all, the only thing they could do.

On the small peak on the Spiritual Light Mountain, Mu Chen sat cross-legged on the edge of the cliff. Looking at the seemingly endless sea of humans, he noticed the thick apprehension and anticipation within all of their eyes.

The protectors this time were too strong. Even if Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were to collaborate, they knew that their chances of victory were still not high.

Rustle!

Soft footsteps rang out behind him, before Luo Li appeared beside Mu Chen. Taking a seat next to him, a faint smile appeared

on her face as she asked, “Are you nervous?”

Hearing her question, Mu Chen helplessly shrugged his shoulders. If it concerned him, alone, he would naturally have a single fluctuation of his state of mind. However, the hundreds and thousands of people below him had cast all their hopes on his shoulders. If he were to say that he was not nervous, that would be lying.

Faintly panning his head over, he gazed at the absolutely beautiful face of the young girl, while a cherishing gaze erupted out from his eyes. He had only carried the weight of the students’ hopes. However, what about Luo Li?

She’ll become the queen of the Luo God Clan, and would carry the expectations of millions of citizens. She was their queen, and she would need to protect them.

Were he to lose, it would only result in everyone here losing a year of their bitter training. However, if she were to lose, the citizens of the Luo God Clan would be met with a cruel slaughter. The Luo God Clan would turn into a mountain of corpses and a sea of blood. That was the most bloody truth, and was something that cannot be changed.

Compared to the burden of Luo Li, his was truly not worth mentioning.

“Is it painful?” asked Mu Chen in a soft voice, extending his palm and gently caressing the young girl’s cheek.

Luo Li’s soft and lovable face curled up within Mu Chen’s bosom, as a peaceful smile surfaced on her absolutely beautiful face, gently shaking like a cicada.

Mu Chen tightly hugged the young girl in his bosom. He knew that Luo Li possessed an extremely supple and strong character. Even with such pressure on her supple shoulders that would cause normal people to collapse and crumple, she would still carry it

quietly by herself. However, this made people feel even more pain in their hearts.

“Relax, I won’t lose.”

Burying his face into that delicately fragrant hair of hers, he muttered to her.

On another mountain peak, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong looked at the youth and the young girl snuggling together in the distance as the expression on their faces seemed somewhat different.

“I truly don’t know why the academy would increase the difficulty level of the final protector to such a high level this year.” Shen Cangsheng said while pursing his lips. If the difficulty was set similarly to the previous years, he would be able to deal with it sufficiently by himself. However, the difficulty level had risen multiple times this year.

The three Great Generals had come out. This was considered the first time such an occurrence happened in the past few years of the hunt.

“Only with stress would there be improvement. We can’t just let you reveal your might and prestige every year, right?” replied Li Xuantong casually.

“Wait till I finish the Spiritual Light Empowerment this time. It’s about time to settle things with that fellow, Mo Longzi.” said Shen Cangsheng with a laugh. While mentioning about Mo Longzi, a cold glint conspicuously appeared within his eyes.

“Is that fellow very strong?”asked Li Xuantong as his forehead faintly wrinkled. He hadn’t crossed hands with Mo Longzi before. However, since the latter was able to make Shen Cangsheng return with empty hands, he was obviously not someone easy to deal with.

“Yes.” Shen Cangsheng replied while nodding his head, then

continued, “After all, he’s the genius nurtured wholeheartedly by the Demonic Dragon Palace. Furthermore, he’s also still not considered the strongest amongst the younger generation of the Demonic Dragon Palace. That Mo Xingtian is even more terrifying. In a duel, even I might not be his opponent.”

“Mo Xingtian.” muttering that name, Li Xuantong’s eyes contracted. That was an extremely vicious person, who was number 1 on the Bounty List. With regards to any Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student, he represented an extreme amount of pressure.

“After this hunt, if you don’t have anything going on, you can become a team with me and head out of the academy. At that time, we can try to see if we can deal with Mo Longzi and Mo Xingtian.” Shen Cangsheng said with a smile as he extended his invitation out. Within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the people who possessed the qualifications to let Shen Cangsheng extend his invitations weren’t many.

Li Xuantong felt slightly emotional. However, in the next instant, he raised his head and looked towards the majestic mountain peak while saying, “We have to settle this problem in front of our eyes first. If we lose this Spiritual Light Empowerment, the plan to destroy and kill would have to be postponed for some time.”

Shen Cangsheng nodded his head in approval, before turning his gaze towards the youth in the distance. For the final fight tomorrow, the pivotal key would be on Mu Chen.

The night grew dimmer as the morning radiance split the cloud layers apart, illuminating the world once again. Under the Spiritual Light Mountain, the atmosphere started to grow fiery, bit by bit, as countless scorching gazes looked towards the mountain peak.

Whoosh!

Whooshing sounds rang out in the air, before the crowd cast

their scorching gazes towards the figures that appeared in the air, which were Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Mu Chen and Luo Li.

As Shen Cangsheng stood proudly in the air, he overlooked the sea of people on the ground, before slowly saying, “I think everyone should know about the final rule of the hunt. This fight is extreme, and concerns the personal benefits of every one of us. However, I’ll have to remind you that the three of us don’t have an obligation to bear this role. Therefore, regardless of the result, we three will not hold any responsibility. If the result in not desirable, at that time, whoever feels they can bear the role can just stand up, and we’ll give the position to them.”

Upon hearing his words, the entire stretch of the world turned deathly silent, as everyone quietly listened to him.

Mu Chen sent an appreciative smile towards Shen Cangsheng. Mu Chen knew that he did this to take precautions against the possibility of him losing. At that time, there would be many people who would criticise him in disappointment. Although the ending has yet to be known, Mu chen felt very grateful towards Shen Cangsheng’s intentions.

“Senior Brother Shen, please feel at ease. All of us won’t take and inch and want a foot, and aren’t discriminatory people. The three of you are the strongest amongst us. If even you three are defeated, we don’t even have the qualifications to put up a contest. As for criticism, that is complete nonsense. I, Lu Hao, hereby say that even if we were to lose the final checkpoint, I’ll absolutely respect the three of you, and would absolutely not feel resentment and indignation in my heart!” just as Shen Cangsheng’s words rang out, a person from the crowd below immediately roared in reply.

“Yes!”

“We ask the three of you to try your best! Even if you three were to lose, there isn’t anything worse than that!”

“Senior Brothers Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Junior

Brother Mu Chen, good luck! Even if we lose, you three are the most formidable!" the clear and resonant voices of young girls caused many echos of agreement.

Mu Chen looked towards sea of people, whose spirits were continuously on the rise and gave a faint smile. Looking towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, he said, "Seeing this, looks that there's no way for us to lose."

"It's good enough if you try your best."

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both gave a smile. Raising their heads towards the majestic Spiritual Light mountain, Shen Cangsheng said, "Let's go and take a look at exactly what areas the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall are standing at."

As the said those words, he immediately shot forward. Transforming into a streak of light, he rushed towards the peak of the majestic mountain summit. Mu Chen, Li Xuantong and Luo Li immediately followed closely behind him, with the sea of students similarly exploding forth. Covering the earth and hiding the sky, they swept towards the mountain peak akin to a swarm of locusts.

This spectacle, was exceedingly spectacular.

……

As everyone within the hunting grounds headed towards the mountain peak, within the northern public square of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy disturbances started to occur. At this moment, the atmosphere was considered to have reached its peak within this half a month.

Within the public square, countless scorching gazes converged towards the sky. Presently, there was a gigantic light screen, where clouds were shown within it. At this moment, they had started to become faint as the majestic mountain peak became faintly discernable as it started to appear.

This change made everyone understand that the final fight of the

hunt had already arrived.

Exactly whether everyone would return empty-handed or having a rewarding journey would depend on this fight that would astonish the heavens and the earth.

However, who exactly were the three strongest people that would represent all of the contestants? There naturally wasn't any need to talk about Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. However, will the third person be a veteran influential figure, or a dark horse that had popped out of nowhere?

Everyone was holding their breath in anticipation of this.

Gazes converged towards the surface of the gigantic light screen. As the layers of clouds retreated, the scene present within finally became completely clear.

The giant peak stood erect on the summit of the majestic Spiritual Light Mountain. Akin to pillars that supported the sky, they pierced straight through the clouds.

On the top of those three giant peaks, three figures quietly sat on the edge of the cliffs. As the mountain winds blew past, causing their clothes to flutter, an indescribable oppression started to quietly appear, enveloping the entire stretch of the world. Even the students outside of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were able to feel some pressure.

"Those are the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall? Such astonishing and imposing auras!"

"Their undoubtedly the top three on the Heavenly Rankings. I'm afraid that they might all possess the strength of Heavenly Completion Stage? That's truly terrifying."

"This final check truly is too difficult. With the three Great Generals protecting the pass, even with Senior Brother Shen and the rest, it would be difficult to pass through."

"……"

The faces of countless students changed as they looked, with some respect, at the three statue-like figures sitting on the top of the mountain within the light screen. Anticipation could be faintly discernable from their eyes as they awaited the incoming fight, while thinking, That should be the highest level within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy right? This truly made people feel anticipation.

While everyone was waiting in anticipation, they were able to hear hurried whooshing sounds ringing out from within the gigantic light screen. They turned their attention over, only to see figures that hid the skies and covered the earth rushing forth through the lingering clouds akin to a swarm of locusts. Finally, floating in the air surrounding the mountain peak, the dense and numerous sea of humans seemingly had no end.

“They’ve finally arrived!” quite a few people could hardly restrain their excitement as they hurriedly looked over.

Under the attention of countless gazes, the sea of humans within the light screen rippled as three figures slowly swept across the gazes of the large crowd.

The front two of them were not unexpected, which were predictably Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. After a split second of resting on them, all of the gazes turned towards the last thin figure.

As their gazes converged on the figure, the atmosphere within the northern public square seemed to have suddenly turned sluggish, since the mouths of countless people slowly dropped open.

“That’s…”

Ye Qingling and the rest had opened their eyes wide as they looked towards the familiar figure, while thick disbelief erupted from within their eyes.

“Actually Mu Chen!”

At this instant, the entire northern public square was completely shaken.

# Chapter 324 – Three Great General

At the peak of Spiritual Light Mountain, covered with lingering clouds, the three giant peaks, akin to pillars that propped the sky up, pierced through the clouds. As of now, however, a dense and numerous amount of figures had surfaced in the air surrounding them. With a glance, one can almost not find an end to the present crowd.

All of the students that had participated in the hunt converged there, waiting for the incoming final fight.

At this moment, gazes were sent towards the summit of the three great peaks, where three figures were quietly sitting. While the mountain winds were blowing at their clothing, their eyes were open, without even the slightest trace of change, due to the gathering of countless students. Even their breathing was calm and tranquil, without the slightest bit of disturbance.

All of the students were staring at the three figures with thick respect shown within their eyes. The three people in their sights should be the final protectors of this hunt.

They were the previous top three ranks of the Heavenly Rankings, and were now the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall.

In the surroundings of the mountain peak, the clouds fluttered around as the sea of humans pervaded the air. However, what's strange was that there wasn't any clamoring and arguing noises present. Everyone was able to feel a faint pressure radiating from the bodies of the three figures on the top of the mountain peak. Enveloping the entire stretch of the world, it caused them to feel as if their heads were being weighed down.

Within the silence that blotted the sky, three figures slowly walked out, before stopping in the air a thousands metres away from the 3 giant peaks.

Regardless of the surroundings of Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, everyone's gazes had converged onto the bodies of those three figures. Within those gazes, there was anticipation, apprehension, doubt...

However, regardless of that, those three figures, as of now, had undoubtedly become the focus of everyone's attention.

At the instant when they walked out, the three figures that were sitting on the giant peaks slowly opened their tightly closed eyes.

Bang!

The Spiritual Energy of the world seemed to have erupted and explosively swept out at this instant. Intense booming and rumbling sounds could be faintly discernable as they resounded across the world.

"Shen Cangsheng, you've finally arrived." at the middle giant peak, a male gave a faint smile as his tranquil voice slowly rang out. However, this made the hearts of countless people subsequently throb as a pressure enveloped over them.

"Haha, I've let Senior Brother Lin Zheng wait for a long time." Coming to a stop in front of the male. Shen Cangsheng cupped his hands and sent his greetings, while his eyes made a faint contraction that was unnoticable.

That's Lin Zheng of the three Great Generals? Mu Chen thought while sending his gaze over, only to see a male dressed in a black outfit. He had a head full of white hair. Instead of a pale white, it radiated with a silvery shadow, with light circulating through it, making it seem mysterious.

At this time, he had already acquired some information about the three Great Generals. This Lin Zheng was said to be the person with the highest strength amongst the three Great Generals.

"Undoubtedly the previous number one on the Heavenly Rankings."

Mu Chen's expression slowly turned dignified, as he was able to sense a strong pressure radiating from within Lin Zheng's body. That sort of feeling was akin to a mountain range appearing above someone's head, causing people to be unable to catch their breath.

This Lin Zheng must have already stepped into the Heavenly Completion Stage. Furthermore, he might not be only at the Heavenly Completion Initial Stage...

Heavenly Completion Stage, that's the final step before Sovereign Stage. If Sovereign Stage experts were able to become a Regional Lord in a continent, then Heavenly Completion Stage experts could be considered as Regional Tyrants.

Since Lin Zheng was able to achieve a strength of Heavenly Completion Stage at such an age, that was sufficient to indicate his possession of astonishing talent...

"There's nothing that could be said for the long wait. However, since it's the final fight, we'll not throw it." A voice rang out from the giant peak on the right of Lin Zheng. Looking over, Mu Chen spotted a male dressed in red. His hair was scarlet red, akin to a burning flame. Around him, the air showed faint traces of distortion, as if created by a high temperature.

"That's Gu Tianyan, your opponent this time," muttered Li Xuantong to Mu Chen in a low voice.

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen's eyes instantly contracted as he gravely stared at the red-haired male. The Spiritual Energy of the world around the latter seemed to be exceedingly erratic, as if it was a patch of the burning sea of flames.

This pressure coming from Gu Tianyan was not as strong as Lin Zheng's; however, it still caused a dangerous flavor to coarse through Mu Chen's body. Mu Chen knew that there would not be a single one amongst the three Great Generals that were easy to be dealt with.

“Gu Tianyan’s strength should be around Heavenly Completion Initial Stage. The divine art he trains in is called the Heavenly Inflammation Divine Art. This makes his Spiritual Energy akin to heavenly flames, which are overbearing and burn with a furious intensity. Any action he makes is enough to burn and incinerate cities and mountains.” Li Xuantong tried his best to give more information to Mu Chen, in an effort to allow him to muster a better response.

Mu Chen nodded his head as he thought, Heavenly Completion Initial Stage is exceedingly strong. This was not something that He Yao, with his half-step into the Heavenly Completion Stage, could compare to. If He Yao was allowed to cross hands with Gu Tianyan, Mu Chen could definitely confirm that He Yao would be defeated extremely miserably within five rounds.

Furthermore, Gu Tianyan’s Spiritual Energy was somewhat different from the norm. Mu Chen wondered, Compared to my Spiritual Energy that is fused with the Nine Nether Flames, exactly which one is more overbearing?

Mu Chen stared at Gu Tianyan for a while, before looking at the leftmost giant peak. Right there, similarly, was a sitting man. This person had a head full of black hair, with a rather handsome face. Faintly smiling at the crowd, he did not show any intent to speak.

Compared to Lin Zheng and Gu Tianyan, this person clearly appeared to not want to attract too much attention. However, Mu Chen knew that if anyone underestimated him, the only thing they could say was that their heads got muddled.

“Is that Senior Brother Zhou Qing? Who’s also your opponent this time?” Mu Chen looked towards Li Xuantong and asked.

Li Xuantong turned his gaze towards the black-haired male, faintly nodded his head, then replied, “It’s said that during that year, Senior Brother Zhou Qing had a nickname within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he was called ‘Undefeatable

Mountain'..."

"Undefeatable Mountain?" Mu Chen muttered in startlement.

"The meaning is that when he fought with people, he would basically not lose." Li Xuantong replied with a smile.

"Then why did the 1st rank in the Heavenly Rankings still belong to Senior Brother Lin Zheng?" Mu Chen asked with some doubt.

"I never said that he won." Li Xuantong replied with a smile, as he abstrusely looked at the faintly smiling black-haired male sitting on the giant peak in the distance, before continuing, "A large majority of his fights resulted with no victories and no losses. The main reason was due to his special intentions; however, there were also other reasons."

"The divine art he trains in is named the Undefeatable Divine Art. It sounds absolutely overbearing; however, it is an extremely gentle divine art. There isn't any overly intense attacking moves within it, and the majority is focusing on dealing with people, before finally causing the opponent's Spiritual Energy to be completely wasted..."

"Therefore, within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the large majority of the people he crossed hands with would end with a draw. Therefore, other people have given him the nickname of 'Undefeatable Mountain'."

Hearing the explanation, Mu Chen was astonished. This so-called 'Undefeatable Divine Art' was unexpectedly that special and unique. However, it was very clear that, at certain times, not being defeated and not having a victory was, from some sense, already a very frightening achievement.

Zhou Qingshan, naturally, could not be overly vicious when crossing hands with the people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, if he were to truly have killing intent, even that gentle divine art might reveal its malevolent side.

These three Great Generals. None of them were simple...

While Mu Chen and Li Xuantong were talking in low voices, Shen Cangsheng cupped his hands and sent a smile towards Gu Tianyan, before saying, “A victory gained by the other’s throwing is something that I also cannot stand to see. How should the later fight be fought?”

“Undeniably, you are the current 1st Rank on the Heavenly Rankings. Your courage isn’t small.” replied Gu Tianyan with a smile, while his scarlet hair appeared to be like burning flames. It could be seen that he treats Shen Cangsheng with extreme regard. The latter’s strength was something that even made him feel dread. This made him unable to help secretly sighing in exclamation. This batch of students in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time seemed more formidable than theirs.

Lin Zheng made a gesture with his hands, before standing up and saying, “We’ve already waited here for so long. Shen Cangsheng, you three should already come up. Only by passing through us will all the students that have participated in the hunt be able to obtain the Spiritual Light Empowerment, if not...”

Before completing his words, the intent within was something everyone understood. In the next instant, Shen Cangsheng tightly clenched his fist as anticipation and nervousness erupted within his eyes.

“I invite Senior Brother Lin Zheng to bestow his guidance.”

Shen Cangsheng spoke out with a large laugh, with the laughing voice filled with a powerful and free intent that showed his disdain. Clenching his palm, golden light condensed, transforming into a golden-coloured divine spear. The tip of the spear was akin to a folded lotus. Golden light circulated and radiated from it, showing off its boundless Spiritual Energy that was contained within.

Shen Cangsheng gripped the golden spear in his hands. With a

move of his body, he appeared on the giant peak that Lin Zheng was on. Heavily impaling his golden spear onto the ground, a shock wave swept out, causing the surface of the summit of the mountain peak to be instantly swept clean.

The moment Shen Cangsheng moved out, he had intercepted the strongest of the three Great Generals, Lin Zheng. This did not exceed the expectations of the crowd. Being the previous 1st Rank of the Heavenly Rankings, only the current 1st Rank of the Heavenly Ranking could contend with him.

Upon seeing this, Li Xuantong patted Mu Chen's shoulders. In the next instant, his body moved, and appeared on the giant peak Zhou Qingshan was on. Cupping his hands and sending his greetings, he said, "Senior Brother Zhou Qingshan, this time, let me be your opponent. The Undefeatable Divine Art is something that I've also wanted to ask guidance from."

Zhou Qingshan continued to maintain his gentleness and gave a smile. Without saying any words, he only nodded his head. His hands faintly hung down from his body, while a warm and affable expression appeared on his handsome face.

Following the successive movements of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, all of the gazes in the stretch of the world instantly shot towards Mu Chen, who was still standing in the air. At this moment, faint startlement and surprise appeared within the eyes of Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan.

"Don't tell me that you're letting him come up for the third slot?"

Gu Tianyan said while faintly wrinkling his forehead. Looking at Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong in the distance, he asked, "Your batch of students should not be weak to such an extent, right? Can a Heavenly Transformation Initial Stage be a representation of your strongest?"

He did not mean to look down on Mu Chen, but this was just an

elaboration of the facts. After all, a youth at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase had appeared here, and this was not something that was rational.

“Senior Gu Tianyan, he’ll show you something unexpected.” facing Gu Tianyan’s doubts, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong simultaneously smiled, by chance, before replying to him.

“Oh, really? That truly makes me want to see it.” Gu Tianyan said while raising his eyebrows. He was, similarly, not an idiot. Since even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had spoken out, that meant to say that the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase youth in front of him should have some methods of his own. If not, those two would definitely not let the latter carry such an important burden.

Facing the doubtful gaze of Gu Tianyan, Mu Chen took a deep breath. The expression within his eyes gradually turned dignified and grave as his body slowly fluttered towards the giant peak the former was at.

Regardless of the surroundings at Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, both had quietened down at this instant. Countless gazes anxiously stared at Mu Chen. Of the three fights, the one he would be in would be the most unbalanced.

Disregarding the gazes that hid the sky and covered the earth, Mu Chen tightly stared at Gu Tianyan. Slowly cupping his hands, a low and deep voice that contained not a single trace of fear resounded across the sky.

“Senior Brother Gu, Freshmen Mu Chen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy seeks your guidance!”

# Chapter 325 – Battling Gu Tianyan

“Freshman Mu Chen…”

When Mu Chen’s deep and calm voice rang across the majestic mountain peak, the expressions on Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan’s faces all froze as a peculiar shadow appeared within their eyes. They never imagined that the youth in front of them was just a Freshman.

However, it was such a Freshman that had finally distinguished himself above the rest in this hunt, and had even become the representation of the strongest within the students. This kind of matter made Gu Tianyan feel truly incredulous. While the three Great Generals were still students, Freshmen didn’t even have the qualifications of participating in the hunts, even so much so as becoming the representation of strength…

“Your batch of students are also truly interesting.”

Lin Zheng shook his head, before staring at Shen Cangsheng in front of him, whose imposing manner was astonishing, and wasn’t the slightest bit weaker than himself. Speaking to him, Lin Zheng said, “ However, I hope he’s truly something, If not, we’ll presume that your batch of students are truly not worthy of respect.”

“Haha!” Gripping the golden-coloured spear in his hands, Shen Cangsheng laughed heroically, before replying, “Senior brother Lin Zheng, please feel relaxed. Our batch of students will definitely win, no matter what!”

“Oh, really?”

Lin Zheng said with a smile, before taking a step forward. Boundless Spiritual Energy instantly swept out, bringing a surging pressure with it. At this instant, the clouds lingering in the sky were immediately scattered by the pressure wave that was sweeping out.

Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Lin Zheng did not have the slightest intent of restraint. Taking a step forward, he had completely revealed his full strength.

Feeling the strong Spiritual Energy pressure radiating out, the faces of the countless students in the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain had faintly changed as they thought, This Senior Brother Lin Zheng is too strong. If he was placed among us students, the only person who could chat and laugh in front of him might only be Shen Cangsheng.

“Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase. Undeniably, you’re the previous 1st Rank on the Heavenly Rankings.” a ripple seemed to spread out from within Shen Cangsheng’s eyes as a scorching intent slowly erupted from within. Grabbing his golden spear tightly, he furiously stomped his feet.

Bang!

At that very instant, the earth seemed to intensely quake, as a similar boundless Spiritual Energy furiously swept out with Shen Cangsheng in the centre.

Golden-coloured Spiritual Energy illuminated the horizon, completely resisting the Spiritual Energy pressure radiating from within Lin Zheng’s body.

Shen Cangsheng’s strength had similarly reached Heavenly Completion Middle Stage, it was not the slightest bit weaker than Lin Zheng!

“He’s too awesome!” countless students exclaimed excitedly in admiration, as unconcealable worship showed within their eyes. Although the two were of a similar level, Shen Cangsheng was, after all, younger than Lin Zheng. However, his power was not weaker than Lin Zheng. In the competition, it was clear that Shen Cangsheng had gotten the upper hand. If he were to reach the same age as Lin Zheng, he would definitely far exceed the current

Lin Zheng.

The Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings sure deserved his title.

“No bad.”

Facing the Shen Cangsheng in front of him, even Lin Zheng had faintly nodded his head in approval, with admiration even showing in his eyes. He had a lot of sentiment towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Being able to see his Junior Brothers exceeding him, other than sighing in lamentation, he felt exceedingly gratified.

As of now, Shen Cangsheng’s strength was worthy to be treated seriously.

While Lin Zheng and Shen Cangsheng were locked in a confrontation, Li Xuantong and Zhou Qingshan had also exhibited their strongest might. The degree of Spiritual Energy of the two was slightly inferior than the former two; however, it had also reached the degree of Heavenly Completion Initial Stage, When the two boundless Spiritual Energies radiating from the latter two collided, peals of thunder seemed to form and ring out.

The opponents for these two fights were exceptionally similar to each other. Furthermore, all of them clearly possessed abundant combat experience. Added with their various skills and techniques, wanting to quickly find the victor was clearly not an easy matter.

Therefore, countless gazes started to turn and landed on the giant peak where the third fight was. Over there were the two people with the greatest disparity in strength. Of the three fights, it was clearly the place where the difference was easiest to determine

“Looks like you’ve become the most critical key.”

Gu Tianyan retracted his gaze from the other two fights in the distance and looked towards Mu Chen. With his capabilities, he was naturally able to see that the people in the two fights were of

similar strength. If they continued like that, the result would most likely be a draw. And if they were both to draw, their fight over here would be the critical point to determine victory or defeat.

If Mu Chen won, all of the students would able able to smoothly pass through this hunt. If he were to lose, the result would be self-evident that everyone would leave with empty hands.

Mu Chen pursed his lips as the expression in his eyes turned dignified; however, he did not reply to Gu Tianyan.

“Although your strength doesn’t seem to be strong, your courage isn't small. This placement isn’t something that ordinary people would dare to accept.” Gu Tianyan said indifferently. He was once a student, and had also participated in the hunts, and was even the strongest student representative in that batch. Therefore, he was very clear of how much pressure that place gave. With that kind of strength, Mu Chen was still able to stand up. This kind of pressure was exceptional.

It was this point that made Mu Chen feel rather pleasing to Gu Tianyan’s eyes.

“Although this place is very stressful, someone has to stand up.” Mu Chen replied in a soft voice.

Hearing his reply, Gu Tianyan nodded his head before retreating two steps. Inserting his hands into his sleeves, his fiery-red hair was blown by the mountain winds till they resembled flames fluttering and dancing. He slowly spoke out, “ Looking at your courage, I’ll let you make the first move.”

After all, Gu Tianyan had arrogance in his blood, with his strength far outclassing Mu Chen. He was also older; therefore, he felt it was not worth his dignity to get the first attack off.

“Then, I’ll thank Senior Brother Gu.”

Mu Chen was not stupid to let go of this kind of opportunity. As of now, he was the inferior side. If he was unable to guarantee even

this kind of opportunity, even Gu Tianyan might shake his head towards him.

An unreasonable person was not worthy of high regards to him.

Gu Tianyan faintly nodded his head. Obviously, Mu Chen's decisiveness made him feel rather satisfied. If he continued to force his way in a fight, that would simply be taking everyone's hard work and making a joke out of it.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, Without saying any more words, his body fluttered back as he retreated. In the next instant, he sat down high in the air, as his eyes slowly started to close.

Upon seeing this, Gu Tianyan was faintly startled, before a peculiar expression erupted from his eyes. This was due to him noticing Spiritual Seals starting to condense around Mu Chen's body.

"So he's a Spiritual Array Master..." Gu Tianyan understood in a flash, before an interested expression erupted from his eyes.

Mu Chen's mental state had already calmed down. He blocked all of the disturbances coming from the outside world as his mental state sunk down, trying hard to find the miraculous feeling he had felt when he touched the "Heart Eye" state.

Facing an opponent on the level as Gu Tianyan, he simply did not the slightest chance of winning, as he did not have the qualifications to drag the fight on. He had to use his genuine method the moment he took action; if not, he would not have the slightest chance of success.

Arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array was obviously one of the strongest methods Mu Chen had in his arsenal.

As of now, Mu Chen was a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master. Wanting to successfully arrange a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, he had to rely on the "Heart Eye" state. However, as of now, Mu Chen simply had no guarantees in entering this state, and could occasionally

touch it. Thus, the current him could only work hard in order to feel that miraculous feeling once again, and rely on it to enter the “Heart Eye” State.

Mu Chen had completely calmed down as Spiritual Seals continued to condense around his body. However, he did not have the intention of bringing this a step higher. This pace that was not hurried or rush continued to spread out.

Countless gazes were already converged on Mu Chen’s body. Even on the northern public square, everyone had trained their eyes tightly onto him. All of them wanted to know exactly what Mu Chen wanted to use to contend against Gu Tianyan, whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

On the podium in the northern public square, a few elders started to narrow their eyes as they looked at the gigantic light screen in the sky that was showing the fights of the Heavenly Completion Stages. This was already enough to spark interest in them.

“Oh?”

The eyes of Dean Tai Cang, which were as deep as the starry sky, suddenly had faint fluctuations as he looked with some astonishment at the figure of Mu Chen in the light screen. Beside him, a number of white-haired Elders started to make startled noises.

“These fluctuations…” the eyes of a white-haired Elder lit up a bit, before saying with a gentle smile, “ Interesting. This Mu Chen seems to have a high talent in his training in Spiritual Arrays. He’s actually able to reach the initial contact with the Heart Eye State. Not simple…”

As the voice of the white-haired Elder rang out, on the giant peak, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations around Mu Chen’s body suddenly erupted out. The Spiritual Seals that were already formed shattered in an instant, before condensing again at an astonishing speed.

The number of Spiritual Seals had also explosively increased multiple times. In a short span of a number of breaths, it had exceeded over two hundred!

“Rank 5 Spiritual Array?” countless people involuntarily cried out in shock. Only when arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array would one need so many Spiritual Seals.

The expression on Gu Tianyan’s face changed as he stared, with some astonishment, at Mu Chen. He never thought that the latter would actually be able to arrange a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. He thought, This Mu Chen truly has some capabilities. No wonder why he would be able to allocated the third strongest representative spot.

“Huuu!”

Around Mu Chen’s body, hundreds of Spiritual Seals rushed towards the sky, before rapidly assimilating into the air. Instantly, the Spiritual Energy of the world erupted out. As Spiritual Energy swept out like gales, they took a form across the horizon.

Incomparably complicated rays of Spiritual Energy rapidly formed an outline. In the next moment, they had formed an incomparably large Spiritual Energy light array that was faintly discernable in the sky, while tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations gushed out.

As the light array enveloped the horizon akin to two black lotuses, it slowly revolved, radiating with astonishing pressure.

At this moment, Mu Chen opened his eyes and looked at the formed Spiritual Array, before deeply exhaling in relief. Although the time he took was somewhat long, he was fortunately able to successfully arrange it.

“Not bad. Never would’ve imagined that you’re capable of arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array…”

At this time, Gu Tianyan had slowly spoke. Raising his head to

look at the incomparably large Spiritual Array, he faintly smiled while saying, “So, this is your method?”

Upon hearing his words, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. With a clench of his palm, a metallic ball, covered in rust spots, appeared in a flash. With a flick of his finger, the metallic ball shot out. Rays of Spiritual Energy that hid the skies and covered the earth erupted out. Under the shocked gazes of countless people, it rapidly took shape.

The Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from it were not any weaker than the Rank 5 Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had just successfully arranged!

That means that this Spiritual Array was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array!

Mu Chen had, unexpectedly, thrown out two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays at once!

As Gu Tianyan gazed at the gigantic objects in the sky, the tranquil expression on his face finally started to become grave, bit by bit.

# Chapter 326 – Twin Spiritual Array!

The gigantic light array slowly rotated in the air. The frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from it had condensed together, causing incomparable erratic Spiritual Energy hurricanes to billow out, and even caused some distortions to appear in the sky.

When the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays appeared at the same time, their might was considerably astonishing.

With a trace of shock, countless people looked at the spectacle before them. Although they were able to guess that Mu Chen had some hidden tricks up his sleeves, they never expected that he would actually conjure two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays at once...

If these two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays were to released, even Gu Tianyan might not dare to show the slightest bit of disdain, right?

The gazes of the countless students that participated in the hunt were turning scorching, but were not ignited with the flames of hope. Of the three fights, they were able to see that Mu Chen's one was the most important, and was even the most critical one of them.

If Mu Chen was able to fight to a draw, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would definitely give their utmost to ensure that the final result would be a draw. That way, the students would still achieve the final victory.

At the other two giant peaks, both parties that were releasing their full might had also noticed this situation. Sensing this, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's tensed bodies faintly relaxed by some degree. They were also worried about Mu Chen. However, seeing the spectacle before them, they knew that the latter really did leave some tricks up his sleeves.

As for Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, both of them were slightly

startled as they thought, No wonder why Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were willing to allow a Freshman, whose strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, to come up and fight. So, this Freshman isn't that simple after all.

Looks like the fight this time was truly interesting.

"Two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays..."

Gu Tianyan had also raised his head and gazed towards the two enormous objects in the sky. The Spiritual Energy pressure sweeping out of them had made his clothes violently flap. His fiery-red hair fluttered about, and his expression finally turned dignified and grave.

"Being able to cause some much activity with your strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase... You're truly incredible." said Gu Tianyan slowly.

"I just managed to pull a fast one. If this was a life or death battle, I might not have that long of a time to arrange my Spiritual Arrays." replied Mu Chen while shaking his head. With his current strength, arranging a Rank 5 Spiritual Array was still, somewhat, difficult. Furthermore, his success rate was not a hundred percent. If he was unable to make contact with the Heart Eye state, he might not have been able to achieve this step.

As for the Spiritual Array Seed, that was completely relying on foreign objects. That treasure was something that Mu Chen had used to scare people. However, as of now, he had no choice but to use it.

After all, Mu Chen felt that he was not able to defeat Gu Tianyan using a single Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

"The result is more important than the process. The so-called 'fast one'. That also depends on whether you're capable of achieving it in the first place." Gu Tianyan said with a faint smile. A scarlet shadow seemed to be erupting, bit by bit, from within his

eyes. In the next instant, his hands started to slowly spread out. Akin to flames, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy furiously erupted from within his body.

At this instant, the temperature of this stretch of the world seemed to rise, while the ground he was standing on turned unusually dry and parched.

“Make your move. Let me see exactly how strong the might of your two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays are!” as scarlet-red Spiritual Energy enveloped Gu Tianyan, akin to flames, his indifferent laughing voice resounded.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. Without saying any more nonsense, he raised his head and gazed towards the two gigantic Spiritual Arrays in the sky.

Other than the Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array, the Spiritual Array that was arranged by the Spiritual Array Seed was called the “Mysterious Yin Spiritual Array.” It was also a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. However, according to Mu Chen’s estimates, this “Mysterious Yin Spiritual Array” could only be considered as an Initial ranked one among the Rank 5 arrays. That meant that it could only achieve the prestige similar to a Heavenly Completion Initial Stage.

If the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays were to simultaneously erupt, they should be able to deal with Gu Tianyan, right?

As Mu Chen’s eyes sparkled, he no longer had any more hesitation. His hands instantly came together to form a hand seal, causing the two Spirit Arrays to be activated.

Boom! Rumble!

Following Mu Chen’s activation, the two gigantic Spiritual Arrays instantly started to revolve as astonishing Spiritual Energies radiated from them.

As the two gigantic black lotuses revolved, their black petals

started to fold up. At their centre, a black light, which had been compressed and compressed to the extreme point where they took shape, gushed out. At the place where they collided, a glowing lotus, approximately 3 metres high, took shape and appeared. The size of this glowing lotus was not small. It pulsated akin to the beating of a heart. While it was pulsating, terrifying fluctuations started to radiate from it.

Crackle! Crackle!

At the other side, the “Mysterious Yin Spiritual Array” had also erupted, causing the chilling air from the world to condense. In the next instant, it formed a black-coloured stream in the middle of the Spiritual Array. The stream splashed as it flowed, causing an extremely chilling air to radiate out. At this moment, even the air was frozen solid by the flowing stream.

Due to the glowing lotus that was pulsing like a beating heart, and the black-coloured water stream, the world become cold and gloomy.

“Interesting.”

Flames erupted within Gu Tianyan as he slowly clenched his hands.

“Senior Brother Gu, please!”

In the sky, with a dignified expression on his face, Mu Chen extended his thin finger and gave the air a tap. As his fingertip descended, ripples seemed to spread out from the space.

Boom!

At the place where the fingertip had tapped down, the pulsing glowing lotus shot over. Akin to a giant black python, the black-coloured stream also shot over, with the extremely cold air contained within causing even the air to get frozen.

Swish! Swish!

The two astonishing attacks streaked across the horizon, akin to lightning. Before the countless anxious gazes, they violently rushed towards Gu Tianyan down below.

The hearts of everyone watching skipped a beat.

Regardless of the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, everyone had opened their eyes wide and clenched their fists.

Under the attentive gazes of countless people, Gu Tianyan's face had turned exceedingly grave. Looking at the two terrifying attacks sweeping towards him, he suddenly brought his hands together. Scarlet-red Spiritual Energy instantly erupted out, akin to an inferno.

"Heavenly Inflammation Divine Art – Flaming Dragon's Protection!"

Following the deep voice that rang out from Gu Tianyan, boundless Spiritual Energy frantically condensed. As an astonishing dragon roar rang out, the Spiritual Energy transformed into a vivid and lifelike flaming dragon. Giving a long roar, it occupied the space below Gu Tianyan, its gigantic body sparkling with an indestructible radiance.

"He had actually used his strongest defense..."

Upon seeing this, the eyes of both Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan faintly contracted. They thought, Looks like even Gu Tianyan is feeling some pressure. He immediately utilized his strongest defense upon making a move.

Roar!

As the flaming dragon took sat down, two streaks of light were already howling over. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, they violently impacted against it without a single shred of mercy.

Bang!

At the instant of impact, a muffled sound that made everyone's hearts tremble rang out. In the next instant, everyone saw a gigantic Spiritual shock wave, a thousand metres high, sweeping out as cracks rapidly extended from the point of impact.

Looking at the shock wave sweeping out, Mu Chen immediately exhibited the Soaring Dragon Technique that he had prepared beforehand. As the dragon's shadow appeared, with a flash, he appeared thousands of metres away, evading the incoming blast.

After evading the shock wave, Mu Chen looked towards the giant peak with incomparable graveness showing in his eyes. He did not know exactly what result the attack that he had sent out would have.

He hoped that it would have some effect; after all, he was unable to arrange such an attack again. He was also not able to find the second Spiritual Array Seed for his use.

It was not only him who had such a thought. Countless gazes tightly locked onto the dust-filled area as everyone tightly clenched their fists. It was already not easy for Mu Chen to reach such a step. If this fight was able to end here, that would be a monumentally good thing for them.

On the other two giant peaks, both Shen Cangsheng, and Li Xuantong remained quiet without making any move. Clearly, they were all waiting for the result of Mu Chen's fight.

If Mu Chen was able to achieve a draw, as everyone hoped, it would be infinitely easier for them. If he had carelessly gave up a lost, either one of them might need to be prepared to pay a very high price.

Obviously, that was not the scenario they wanted to see.

Under the convergence of countless gazes, the dust on the giant peak finally started to slowly clear away. Following the dissipation of the dust, a figure gradually become clearer and clearer.

Gu Tianyan was still standing on the giant peak.

The hearts of countless people had seemingly turned cold at this moment as they stared astringently at the male standing on the giant peak, whose scarlet-red hair was akin to flames dancing in the wind.

Gu Tianyan was actually successful in receiving the attacks from two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays!

He was, unexpectedly, strong to such a level?

Sigh, it's a pity.

A sigh resonated within the hearts of everyone.

While everywhere was deathly silent, Gu Tianyan faintly trembled as the sleeves around his hands instantly turned into dust. In the next instant, everyone saw fresh blood dripping from his left arm. As for the right arm, it faintly hanged down as though it had lost all of its strength.

An arm of Gu Tianyan seemed to have been temporarily crippled from the earlier collision.

Under everyone's gazes, Gu Tian Yan revolved his Spiritual Energy, causing the blood stains on his arms to gradually evaporate away. Raising his head, one could clearly see extreme graveness present within his eyes.

"Fortunately, I didn't let my guard down. If not, I might have already lost." Gu Tianyan's voice deeply rang out. If he had not cleverly utilised his strongest defense, the injuries he sustained as of now might've been even worse.

Upon hearing his words, Mu Chen gave a helpless laugh and thought, Gu Tianyan is undeniably one of the three Great Generals. He truly is not easy to deal with. Mu Chen had given his utmost; however, he could only temporarily cripple a single arm of the latter.

Gu Tianyan stared gravely at Mu Chen without speaking and even without making any moves. Everyone knew that's because by losing the Rank 5 Spiritual Array, if Mu Chen did not have any other methods, it would already be needless to continue this fight.

Naturally, Gu Tianyan would not give Mu Chen a second chance to arrange any Spiritual Arrays.

Within the silence that blotted the skies, under the attentive gazes of everyone, Mu Chen's eyes started to slowly close again.

# Chapter 327 – Using the Black Lightning

When Mu Chen closed his eyes again, everyone was instantly shocked. Even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong violently contracted their eyes. From the looks of it, Mu Chen didn't exhaust all of his abilities yet?

He still had some hidden methods?

At this time, Mu Chen, obviously, would not continue to arrange a Spiritual Array, as his speed was too slow. Furthermore, Gu Tianyan would not give him a second opportunity to do so. Therefore, he needed to utilise other methods.

However, what methods would truly allow him, whose strength was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, to contend against Gu Tianyan?

Nobody knew. Therefore, they could only lock their eyes tightly onto Mu Chen in the sky.

At this moment, Gu Tianyan's forehead had faintly wrinkled. Although he did not assume that Mu Chen was just putting up an act, after experiencing the Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays earlier, he would not see the latter as an ordinary Freshman again.

However, as to exactly what method Mu Chen would use to contend against him, he appeared slightly curious. After all, common methods would definitely not be able to let a person of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase to contend with an opponent of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

In the air, Mu Chen, whose eyes were tightly shut, did not make everyone wait for long. Lightning was faintly discernable around his body as it started to appear, while his skin started to turn a silvery colour, bit by bit.

The peals of thunder quietly rang out.

"Is that the Lightning God Physique?" upon seeing this, a trace of

disappointment and doubt flashed past the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. They had also practiced the Lightning God Physique before. Although it was capable of increasing one's combat prowess by quite a bit, it was far from being able to substitute the disparity of Mu Chen from Gu Tianyan.

If Mu Chen tried to use this to contend against Gu Tianyan, the result was already clearly evident.

In the sky, Mu Chen's eyes slowly opened as lightning sparkled within them. Lightning arcs danced and jumped around his body as a destructive power was faintly discernible as it radiated out.

"His strength has grown."

Gu Tianyan's eyes faintly narrowed as disappoint flashed within them as he thought, This is far from enough...

The ones who felt this wasn't only them. Even the participating students in the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain faintly wrinkled their foreheads as some worry surfaced within their eyes. Although Mu Chen's aura had grown stronger, it was clearly far from being able to contend with Gu Tianyan.

However, facing those gazes that blotted to sky, Mu Chen did not care to bother much about them, with his gaze only having Gu Tianyan present within. In the next instant, he took a step forward. With his body transforming into a bolt of lightning, he shot forward.

Gu Tianyan did not have the slightest trace of movement as he looked at Mu Chen, who was hurtling over akin to a bolt of lightning. Gently shaking his head, he thought, Is Mu Chen trying to shatter the broken jar? However, for him to just rush over like this...

Giving a helpless smile, he did not continue to think about it. With a twist of his palm, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy rose out, akin to dancing flames, as boundless fluctuations started to radiate out.

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's speed was exceedingly quick. Within a number of breaths, he had seemingly appeared before Gu Tianyan. Without the slightest trace of hesitation, he immediately sent a fist rumbling out.

Spiritual Energy burning with black flames gushed out while bringing along strong fluctuations. This caused even the ground to crack under the force of his full-force attack.

The violent fist of winds caused Gu Tianyan's hair to shock and flutter. However, the latter only shook his head gently. Clenching his finger tightly, in the next instant, Gu Tianyan similarly sent a fist rumbling out.

"Sigh."

Looking at the fists that were about to smash together in a moment, a low sigh rang out in the hearts of everyone watching. There were even some people who had turned their heads away. In such a head-on confrontation, Mu Chen simply didn't have the slightest chance of victory.

Wang Tong and the rest laughed bitterly, before shaking their heads and sighing.

Su Linger's lovable face turned pale at the moment. Only Luo Li, standing beside her, still had clear eyes, while tightly staring at Mu Chen, because she knew him too well...

Regardless of how difficult the situation was, he would never do an action that was absolutely pointless.

Under the unblinking gazes of countless people, Mu Chen's and Gu Tianyan's fists were about to collide. However, just at this instant, the other hand of Mu Chen quickly formed a mysterious symbol.

Humm! Humm!

Following the completion of that symbol, astonishing sounds of lightning furiously rang out from within his body. In the meridians of a part of his body, an uneven black lightning bead furiously exploded at this instant.

Bang!

At the instant when the black lightning bead exploded, an indescribably terrifying force gushed out from within, akin to a flood. Black-coloured lightning liquid overflowed, circulating erratically along his meridians.

Intense pain spread out from within Mu Chen's body, causing his eyes to turn bloodshot as the capillaries in his eyes bulged out. Despite this, he firmly resisted the pain and hurriedly displayed the Lightning God Physique, frantically absorbing the terrifying power of lightning.

Bang!

At this same instant, the fists of Mu Chen and Gu Tianyan violent collided into each other!

Black-coloured lightning suddenly gushed out from every pore of Mu Chen's body, while a faint bloody mist was even discernable.

Boom!

An astonishingly loud sound that shook the heavens and earth rang out and resonated across this stretch of the world. A violent tremor seemingly ran through the giant peak that seemed to prop the sky up, while everyone could see that the earth there had collapsed, as giant cracks endlessly extended from there like black pythons.

Waves of shattered rock shot out from the origin of impact, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they shot out in all directions, before transforming into fragments that blotted the skies with a bang.

Everyone opened their eyes wide as they stared at the place

where shattered rocks continued to shoot out. The place was enveloped by the dazzling rays of erratic Spiritual Energy, causing people to be unable to exactly see what had happened within.

Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, as well as Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, locked their gazes there with graveness showing in their eyes.

At the instant when their gazes had locked onto the origin of impact, the pupils of the four violently contracted as an erratic roar of thunder furiously resounded. In the next instant, a shadow had, unexpectedly, shot out from the place of dazzling radiance.

The two feet of the figure dug into the ground, creating two foot holes in the hard stone surface, before dragging back, forming two eye-piercing marks, approximately a hundred metres long. Scorched marks were presented on the rocks along the sides of those marks.

Exactly who was that?!

Everyone's gazes instantly converged over where the figure that was shot out staggered and stumbled, before stabilising his footing. As the radiance dissipated, bit by bit, it finally revealed a conspicuous head of scarlet-red hair

That was Gu Tianyan!

The pupils of countless people violently expanded, with some even forgetting to breath as thick shock and incredulous expressions crept onto their faces.

"How is that possible...?"

Regardless if the surroundings were the Spiritual Light Mountain or the northern public square, everyone was mumbling in disbelief. The person that was miserably flung out was, unexpectedly, Gu Tianyan?

On the podium, the gazes of the Elders watching the fight started to turn dignified at this moment.

“What’s happening…?”

The four, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, looked in astonishment at the spectacle that made people feel incredulous. Even the four of them were slightly able to regain their clarity.

Previously, the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays were unable to force Gu Tianyan to such a miserable state. However, could this kind of head-on confrontation that should not have the slightest chance of victory, lead to such a result?

Under the shocked gazes that blotted the sky, Gu Tianyan slowly raised his head. At this moment, an obvious trace of blood dripped down from the corner of his mouth as he looked towards the direction of the giant peak with a similar shock in his eyes. From there, an erratic Spiritual Energy was still enveloping the place.

“You’re truly formidable. I never imagined that you’re actually still hiding an ace that’s even more formidable that the two Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays…” Gu Tianyan’s hoarse and deep voice rang out as he wiped away the blood stains at the corner of his mouth, while no longer appearing to be as relaxed as before.

Within the centre of the radiance where the erratic Spiritual Energy was still present, footsteps seemed to be ringing out as everyone’s gazes tightly locked onto that area.

Thump! Thump!

The sounds of footsteps become increasingly heavy, within the Spiritual Energy radiance, a figure became increasingly clear. In the next moment, he stepped out of the dazzling radiance, and appeared before all of the gazes.

Hiss!

When that figure appeared, everyone instantly sucking in a mouthful of cold air.

The Mu Chen that had appeared before them had a huge change

from his previous appearance. Shattered lines had appeared on his body as black-coloured lightning liquid endlessly flowed from the pores of his body, before enveloping him within.

Black-coloured lightning danced across his body, while the pair of black pupils were filled with an indescribable savageness that seemed to be the flavor of destruction.

If the previous Mu Chen gave people a gentle and calm feeling, the current him was akin to the creature that had crawl out of the depths to destroy the heavens and earth, causing people's hearts to palpitate.

"What is that...?"

Everyone looked in shock at the changed Mu Chen. The destructive energies radiating from him, was that truly something that could be displayed by a person at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase?

"That's the Lightning God Physique?" muttered Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong as their eyes were brimming with doubt. They were able to detect the familiar fluctuations from Mu Chen's body. However, this familiar Lightning God Physique was much stronger than the Lightning God Physique they knew...

Within the northern public square, countless people were still in shock, while the faces of the Elders at the podium turned grave and dignified.

"This fluctuation..."

The abstruse eyes of Dean Tai Cang faintly contracted, before saying in a soft voice, "This is the might of the Divine Black Lightning. Unexpectedly, there's a strand of Divine Black Lightning in that brat's body."

"He truly is messing around." said a white-haired Elder on the side as he shook his head, before continuing, "Although I don't know where he got that Divine Black Lightning from, its the stuff

that even people of Sovereign Rank would not dare to casually touch. However, that kid actually dared to keep it within his body…”

“Haha, that Physique Cultivating Deity Tier Spiritual Art sure looks familiar.”

Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile without saying anything else. However, the gaze that locked onto the figure of the youth in the light screen radiated with increasing interest.

Looks like our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has produced another brat with a monstrous talent.

On the giant peak, under the attentive gazes of countless people, Mu Chen slowly raised his head. With black-coloured lightning liquid flowing around him, he tightly stared at Gu Tianyan. At this moment, a hoarse voice, along with the flavor of destruction, slowly rang out.

“Let’s continue.”

As the hoarse voice rang out, Mu Chen took a step forward, with the earth seemingly vibrating at this instant.

# Chapter 328 – Blood Battle

On the giant peak, destructive fluctuations gushed out from Mu Chen's body as low and deep rumbles of thunder continuously rang out from within him. As those sounds resounded, even the sky seemed to turn dark and overcast.

Countless gazes converged on Mu Chen's body, which was covered in black lightning liquid that was flowing across the entire surface of his body. Due to the successive shocks and astonishment they had received from him, the faces of a large number of people started to gradually turn calm. Instead, their gazes towards Mu Chen started to turn peculiar and weird, since the latter's performance had exceeded far beyond their expectations...

"Are the current Freshmen strong to such a level?" the gazes of Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan had also turned strange. They never imagined that a Freshman, whose strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, would actually be able to force Gu Tianyan to such a miserable state.

Upon hearing that, the gazes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong in the distance, intersected for a moment. Obviously, they were also unable to understand the hidden cards that Mu Chen had now displayed.

However, regardless of that, to them, this was not bad news.

The fight in front of them had seemingly turned slightly towards Mu Chen's favor.

Staring at Mu Chen, whose current appearance had become somewhat terrifying, Gu Tianyan's eyes turned increasingly solemn and grave. At this moment, the destructive fluctuations radiating from the former's body had made his heart start to palpitate and tremble.

Strength of such a level shouldn't appear on the body of a

Freshman, whose strength was only at the level of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase.

Taking in a deep breath, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy curled onto his arms, akin to raging flames. Across the horizon, boundless scarlet-red Spiritual Energy swept out, akin to a prairie full of heavenly fire.

At this moment, he could no longer continue to show any mercy.

Boom!

As boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out of Gu Tianyan's body, Mu Chen, who was completely covered in the black lightning liquid, had already taken a step forward. Instantly, the earth tremble as peals of thunder resounded. Akin to a black bolt of lightning, Mu Chen instantly shot out.

Looking at the black bolt of lightning heading his way, while radiating with devastating fluctuations, Gu Tianyan's eyes instantly narrowed. With a clench of his hands, scarlet-red Spiritual Energy erupted out, before transforming into a long flaming spear in his hands.

Hong!

As a tremble shook through his arms, the long flaming spear transformed into a fiery streak of light. Shattering space, while carrying along violent and explosive fluctuations, it fiercely shot towards Mu Chen.

Facing the berserking fiery long spear flying explosively towards him, Mu Chen did not show any sign of wanting to give way to it. Clenching his hand tightly to form a fist, the black lightning liquid enveloped his fist, which he violently sent rumbling towards the fiery long spear.

Bang!

As they violently collided, the fiery spear, which was capable of piercing through an expert at the Heavenly Transformation Stage

Late Phase, was directly sent shooting away by Mu Chen's fist, before transforming in fluttering scarlet-red bits that blotted the sky. In the next moment, Mu Chen's figure travelled through the plume that was created. In a flash, he had already arrived right in front of Gu Tianyan.

Bang! Bang!

Without the slightest courtesy and hesitation, Mu Chen's black lightning liquid-covered fists howled. Transforming into shades, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they hurtled towards Gu Tianyan.

Every single fist sent out was abnormally frightening, with even the surrounding space showing slight traces of distortion.

If it was before, Gu Tianyan might have commented on Mu Chen's stupidity for wanting to engage in close-quarter-combat. After all, the difference in strength between the two of them was too large. Mu Chen could only rely on special methods to defeat him. In a head-on confrontation, the latter would lose without a doubt.

However, facing the attacks that Mu Chen had launched at him now, Gu Tianyan did not dare to show the slightest negligence. The current Mu Chen, who was enveloped in the black lightning liquid, was too terrifying! The strength radiating from the former was to such a degree that made even him feel a sliver of dread.

Boundless scarlet-red Spiritual Energy erratically gushed out from Gu Tianyan's body. In an instant, his arms were covered in a majestic layer of scarlet-red crystals; the embodiment of the degree of condensation of his Spiritual Energy.

After unleashing all of the Spiritual Energy within his body without any restraint, Gu Tianyan's gaze started to turn scorchingly hot, and fighting intent erupted from his eyes.

Roar!

A howl resounded from his throat as he too took a step forward. Sending his fists howling out, they seemed to have transformed into a boundless sea of fighting intent as they violently rumbled out.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Seemingly in an instant, fists of the two collided into each other. Akin to meteors striking the earth, they erupted with extremely astonishing erratic fluctuations.

Everyone watching could only see the black lighting, as well as the scarlet-red Spiritual Energy, frantically erupting about, and the figures of the two violently collided into one another. As fist shadows dissipated, everyone could see the deep and enormous holes that they created around the surrounding earth.

Countless people became tongue-tied as they watched the crazily clashing figures hidden behind the the erratic eruption of Spiritual Energy.The raw confrontation when fists smashed against flesh caused the hearts of countless people to feel fear and trepidation.

No one would have guess that this fight would be violent and ferocious to such a degree.

Bang!

Under the countless gazes that showed fear and trepidation, the fists of the two, whose eyes had already turn red, violently smashed against each other in the erratic eruption of Spiritual Energy.

Shock waves visible to the naked-eye swept out, and the entire stretch of the earth there instantly cracked and shattered.

Bang! Rumble!

Destructive black lightning seemed to flash within Mu Chen’s eyes as the black lightning liquid started to squirm and wriggle on his arm, causing destructive energies to gush out from within.

Bang!

Once again, Mu Chen's black lightning-covered fist smashed straight against Gu Tianyan's scarlet-red crystal-covered fist.

Black-coloured ripples radiated out as Gu Tianyan's face instantly changed, some cracks had, unexpectedly, started to appear on the scarlet-red crystal on his fist.

The destructive fluctuations within the black lightning liquid continued to ceaselessly pervade him. Under these destructive fluctuations, the Spiritual Energy within Gu Tianyan's body started to rapidly get destroyed and defeated.

"Go back!"

A hoarse roar furiously rang out from Mu Chen's mouth, causing the black ripples to violently tremble. Instantly, the crystal layer on Gu Tianyan's arm completely shattered, while his body was flung back a thousand metres by the former's fist.

As Gu Tianyan was sent flying, Mu Chen's feet dug deep into the hard rock ground below him by the rebounding force, causing him to almost flip backwards.

"He sent Gu Tianyan flying yet again!"

Shocked, clamoring voices rang out once again from the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain as excitement and strong emotions surfaced within the eyes of countless students. No one would have imagined that the current Mu Chen would be frightening to the point he was actually able to send Gu Tianyan retreating in a head-on confrontation.

Under the soaring atmosphere, Mu Chen pressed his hands on the ground, and pulled himself out from the earth as a bit of the black lightning liquid flowed out.

Raising his head, he looked towards Gu Tianyan, who he had sent flying. At this moment, there weren't any traces left of the initial expression he had in the beginning of the fight, since blood was

continuously dripping from his arms. Not only was his clothing tattered, his head of fiery-red hair had turned messy and charcoal black.

The energy contained by shattering that black lightning bead had far exceeded Mu Chen's expectations. This energy was too terrifying. Even with him learning the Lightning God's Physique, there were still some pretty serious internal injuries within his body.

Thinking about it, if he didn't learn the Lightning God's Physique, and possessed the ability granted by it to absorb the strength of lightning to temper his fleshly body, the current him would've been completely fried by the energy of the black lightning and turn into ashes.

Regardless of that, he was unable to maintain this state for too long. As of now, his current body was simply unable to endure the devastating black lightning that was wreaking havoc.

"I have to end this fast."

Instead of succumbing to the intense pain radiating from within his body, it had caused Mu Chen to maintain his calmness at all times. Eyes sparkling, he did not allow the advantage that he seemed to have gained to flood his mind, as he firmly decided to prevent this fight from dragging on any longer.

Bang!

Just as this thought flashed past Mu Chen's mind, an exceedingly erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuation suddenly rushed to the heavens in the far away sky. Raising his head, Mu Chen saw that the horizon present before him had already turned into a purgatory of flames.

Under the burning horizon, Gu Tianyan stood erect. As of now, his eyes were scarlet-red, as if flames had erupted from them. Staring tightly at Mu Chen, a hoarse sound rang throughout the

horizon.

“Mu Chen, with your strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, you’re the first person that is able to force me to such a stage!”

“I admired your capabilities! In this fight today, if you’re able to receive this move of mine, it’ll be considered your victory!”

Upon shouting those words, Gu Tianyan did not show the slightest hesitation. Rapidly placing his hands together, he formed a seal. Following the seal’s formation. The scarlet-red Spiritual Energy that blotted the horizon hid the skies and covered the earth as they rapidly converged in his hands.

Bang! Bang!

As the scarlet-red Spiritual Energy crazily converged, a scarlet-red halberd, approximately ten metres long, was faintly discernable as it finally formed within Gu Tianyan’s hands.

The long halberd was akin to a twisting fiery dragon, looking exceedingly malevolent and sinister. It’s entire body was scarlet-red, as if it was made entirely of scarlet-red crystals. As the fiery dragon slowly wriggled and squirmed, indescribably erratic fluctuations started to ripple and undulate.

Roar!

As the fiery dragon roared, the entire stretch of the world seemed to be in a fiery and scorching state.

“He even had to use that move…” the eyes of both Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan contracted. Both of them had deep understanding of Gu Tianyan, and naturally had ample knowledge of his skills and abilities. The move the latter was using right now was considered the strongest attack in his arsenal.

At the beginning of the fight, who would have expected that Gu Tianyan, who had victory grasped within his hands, would be forced to such a stage?

Both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had also raised their heads and stared gravely at the horizon. Anyone could tell that at this stage of the fight, both parties had already brought out all of their trump cards. In this fight today, even if Mu Chen were to lose, there would be absolutely no one that would mutter half a word of doubt...

“Looks like this is his final move.”

Following the appearance of the fiery dragon halberd, Gu Tianyan’s face turned somewhat pale. As his scarlet-red eyes stared at Mu Chen, he furiously took a step forward. As a tremble shook through his arm, the long halberd erupted with scarlet-red light that blotted the skies.

“Great Heavenly Fiery Dragon Halberd!”

Roar!

Within the sea of flames, a dragon roar seemed to resound as the flames that blotted the sky erupted out. Transforming into a scarlet streak of light, the fiery dragon halberd shot across the horizon, before enveloping Mu Chen within its light.

Within the scarlet streak of light, the fiery dragon spread its jaws and claws open as the dragon roar shook the earth.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked at the scorching gale blowing at him, causing the earth around him to be roasted to the point of cracking and shattering. Within his black eyes, the destructive black lightning started to grow increasingly erratic.

Placing his palms together, the black lightning liquid started to flow within his palms, before fiercely forming a seal with his hands.

At this moment, Spiritual Energy erupted from his back, before transforming into a starry sky. Within the starry sky, Spiritual Energy the blotted the sky gushed out as a tiger and a tortoise stepped out from within, appearing simultaneously.

Roar!

Moo!

As they roared and howled together, countless nervous and emotional gazes immediately swept over, while noticing the black lightning twisting and arching around their bodies.

A dragon, a tiger and a tortoise.

Shattering the skies, under the gazes of countless people who were close to suffocating under their pent up breaths, they furiously collided against each other!

# Chapter 329 – Victory

The skies turned dark and overcast, while every single gaze in the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain was focused on the air above the giant peak. There were two frightening attacks that caused everyone to shudder and tremble. They howled, before violently colliding like two comets that streaked across the skies.

In that instant, an intense shock wave rang and resounded across the entire hunting grounds.

The dazzlingly intense light produced was akin to a scorching sun, sending its intense rays of light that shattered the darkness of the world. Under the eye-piercing light, the eyes of countless people could not help turning narrow.

Boom!

As the intense sun surfaced in the sky, the dragon, tiger and tortoise released all of the strongest energies contained within them without the slightest bit of restraint. This caused an approximate thousand metre wide Spiritual Energy storm to form, and faint traces of distortions could be faintly discernable in the surrounding space.

Everyone tightly stared at the incomparably large Spiritual Energy storm. As the Spiritual Energy within it grew increasingly erratic, the storm started to distort, traces of it being unable to contain the energy within it any longer.

Creak!

As the distortions present within the Spiritual Energy storm reached its limit, before the crowd could react, it exploded, causing thousand metre wide Spiritual Energy ripples to sweep across the skies.

That was a rather spectacular scene.

Being at the front most position against the shock waves, Mu

Chen and Gu Tianyan both bore the greatest brunt of it. Although the two of them had done their utmost to defend against them, they were still sent flying the instant they made contact with them.

Bang! Bang!

As the bodies of the two flew out, the neighbouring mountain peaks were all smashed through by them.

Bang!

Finally, the two of them smashed straight into the inside of the two mountain peaks. Rocks rolled down, covering and burying the both of them up. While both of them had miserable outcomes, the people close to the giant peak were akin to small fishes stuck in churning waters as each of them was sent tumbling into a pitiful state. There were some that were even more unlucky, being sent twisting in the air while spurting out blood from their mouths.

However, it was fortunate that this was, after all, just the aftermath of the collision, with not much destruction being caused. After a few minutes, the devastating Spiritual Energy storm started to slowly get weaker, bit by bit.

Only when that happened did the surrounding crowd start to regain their senses, and turned their gazes towards the giant peak. Unable to bear it, their mouths started to twitch. As of now, the lowering giant peak was in a completely ruined state, with giant cracks extending from it, akin to a spider web, covering it entirely.

The collision between the two had seemingly destroyed the entire towering giant peak.

This caused quite a few people to feel shock and astonishment within their hearts. The destructive power of these two people was too terrifying...

“What about the two of them...?”

Someone thought about the two main characters, before

hurriedly turning their gazes towards the two collapsed mountain peaks in the distance. Those students that participated in the hunt were, as of now, incomparably nervous and anxious. Mu Chen's victory or defeat concerned all of them being able to acquire the Spiritual Light Empowerment. As of now, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had yet to make their move, as even they were waiting, waiting for Mu Chen to give some closure for them...

As long as Mu Chen was able to finish his fight with a draw, all of the students there would basically achieve a definite victory in the combined results. However, if Mu Chen lost, they would need to win a fight amongst the last two. Furthermore, thinking about the need for them to defy the heavens to pull off a reversal, this would be an extremely difficult task to accomplish for even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

After all, both Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, who had yet to make a move, weren't people that were easy to deal with.

At this moment, the expressions on Shen Cangsheng's and Li Xuantong's faces turned increasingly grave and solemn. Locking their sights on the two collapsed mountain peaks, even with their strong emotional control, their hearts started to beat faster.

Contrary to them, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan remained more calm and collected. However, their tight and unwavering gazes reveal their concern for the result.

The entire stretch of the world turned quiet again, while everyone awaited the result. However, the pressure coming from the surroundings was extremely fierce, causing people to be unable catch their breath.

This atmosphere was similarly present in the northern square, since everyone was staring tightly at the gigantic light screen in the sky, while tightly clenching their hands. The previous fight had admittedly caused them to feel shock, as well as sighing in admiration. However, regardless of that, the result was the most

important.

Crash! Boom!

Under the attentive gazes of countless people, rocks started to suddenly shift and roll down from one of the collapsed mountain peaks, causing everyone's gazes to hurriedly turn over. Over there, a scarlet-red Spiritual Energy rushed to the skies, before a figure rushed out from within the collapsed mountain peak.

"That's Gu Tianyan!" someone exclaimed.

The scarlet-red light slowly dissipated, revealing Gu Tianyan. As of now, his entire body was covered in blood, with his face appearing exceedingly pale. The Spiritual Energy surrounding his body appeared extremely weak and exhausted, without being as strong as his initial appearance.

Obviously, the previously astonishing clash was not something light for Gu Tianyan.

Upon noticing the reappearance of Gu Tianyan, the hearts of countless students could not help sinking. Although he had suffered serious injuries, he was still not at the stage where he was unable to continue the fight...

As for Mu Chen...

Looking at the other collapsed mountain peak that was showing no signs of activity, their palms were all filled with sweat.

This kind of silence, continued for a short moment.

Creak!

At the other collapsed mountain peak, the rocks started to shift and roll down. Everyone's eyes turned large when they noticed a weak black ray of Spiritual Energy rushing out from within the layer of rocks that were pushed apart.

Within the black Spiritual Energy, a figure stumble and staggered as he shot through the air, before stopping a short distance away.

It was Mu Chen.

However, as of now, he was entirely covered in blood, with rather serious and terrible-looking wounds on his body. Compared to Gu Tianyan, he obviously appeared more miserable and pitiful.

However, even though he had suffered such serious injuries, he still stood perfectly straight in the air. As of now, the youthful figure appeared exceedingly thin. As his tattered clothing fluttered in the wind, his miserable-looking appearance was unexpectedly unable to conceal the imposing aura that made people's hearts palpitate.

Due to his injuries, the eyes of the youth had appeared dark and dim. Staring fiercely at Gu Tianyan in the distance, they appeared akin to a ferocious gaze of a wolf or a tiger.

Countless gazes blankly stared at the youth that still stood up on the sky, covered in fresh blood. The silence continued for a long moment, before it was broken by the earth-shattering cheers.

Facing Gu Tianyan's strongest attack, Mu Chen had managed to successfully endure it!

He did not collapse!

Countless students were emotional to the point that their faces were turning red as they waved their hands in the air. Their gazes looking at the thin figure in the sky were filled with admiration and worship. These kinds of gazes had already resembled those that were used when they looked at Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, and no one else.

"Too awesome..."

The faces of the three Wang Brothers had also turned red, and their expressions were filled with emotions. As of now, their eyes were filled with respect. Mu Chen's performance in this fight had completely won them over.

Naturally, they knew that the people being conquered would be

many of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students. From this day onwards, Mu Chen's place within the academy might not be much weaker than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

Even influential characters like Su Xuan and He Yao had already been tossed far, far away by Mu Chen.

Su Ling'er had also started to cheer, with her lovable face turning red, while emotionally grabbing onto Su Xuan's wrist. Previously, she had almost suffocated, while watching the fight. If Mu Chen had lost in the final exchange, she would have simply lost her life.

Su Xuan gently nodded her small head as she looked at Mu Chen's figure with a gentle smile on her face. Who would have thought that a few months ago, this Freshman was still an unknown person within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? However, now...

Perhaps he would become the fastest improving Freshman in the history of the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.

Contrary to everyone, Luo Li did not show the same level of emotions as the others. Staring quietly at Mu Chen, a faint upwardly-curling arc appeared at the corners of her small red lips. She had always believed that the youth that she loved would be someone that became as dazzling as the stars.

Regardless of before, or now, or even in the future...

""Hu~.""

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both exhaled a quiet breath of relief as they looked at Mu Chen's figure. Unable to help it, they nodded their heads as they thought, That fellow truly makes people have a whole new level of respect for him.

In the sky, Gu Tianyan had also looked with complicated emotions at the battered and exhausted youth, whose eyes were still shining exceedingly bright. Hearing the deafening sounds of cheering coming from the surroundings, he could not help letting

out a bitter laugh. When he was still a student, there were a lot of people then that had cheered for him in the same manner. However, as of now, the positions were reversed...

“Senior Brother Gu, did you have a great fight? If you feel that it's not enough, I might be able to accompany you for a move or two more.” From a distance, Mu Chen slowly wiped away the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth as he spoke out, while a smile that was hard to raise appeared on his mouth.

Upon hearing that, Gu Tianyan made a laugh, before slowly relaxing his body. Gesturing with his hand, he said, “It’s alright. If I continue to say anything more, I’m afraid I’ll invoke the anger of the crowd. Furthermore, I said earlier that if you’re able to receive that move of mine, you’ll be the victor of this fight.”

After saying those words, Gu Tianyan’s gaze turned serious as he stared at Mu Chen. Cupping his hands, a low and deep voice slowly rang throughout the sky.

“I’ve lost this fight.”

His actions had shown that he had already placed Mu Chen on equal grounds to himself. As of now, to him, the latter was no longer just a Freshman of Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase.

“Thanks for going easy, Senior Brother Gu.”

Without being unreasonable, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. He had risked his life for this fight. But, it was all worth it.

Following his words, the cheering voices in the surroundings instantly rose another notch as countless people became so emotional that their faces turned red.

“Mu Chen won!”

“Mu Chen won!”

As countless sounds of cheering resounded, even the students at

the northern square, who had not participated in the hunt were feeling abnormally emotional. This fight was sufficient to make their hot blood boil.

On the podium, a few elders had also faintly nodded their heads. Obviously, they felt extremely satisfied by the fight that had just occurred.

“Dean, looks like our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has another new monstrous talent. Congratulations...” said a white-haired old man sitting beside Dean Tai Cang.

As of now, there was also a faint smile present on Dean Tai Cang’s face as he looked at the youth in the light screen, before slowly replying, “For the sake of that Ji Xuan, Saint Spiritually Academy had not hesitated to use those underhanded moves. However, I have to tell them that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Mu Chen isn’t any weaker than him...”

While deafening cheering sounds resounded around them, on the giant peaks, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had smiled and laughed. In the next moment, they turned around, looking at Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan, who had slightly complicated expressions on their faces.

“Senior, the next fights, should be our turn now...”

# Chapter 330 – The End

On the two giant peaks, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong respectively looked towards Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan. As of now, the expressions on their faces were undeniably much more relaxed than before, stemming from their self-confidence.

Although Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan weren't so easy to deal with that even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were not daring to even say they were absolutely able to defeat them, to them, achieving a draw in such a fight wasn't something difficult.

Of the three fights, Mu Chen had already won one. Even if they were to both draw, or lose one fight, in the end, they would still achieve victory.

Naturally, losing one match was something that they would obviously not do. In front of them, Mu Chen had become so miserable just to achieve a win. If they were to lose, they would truly be unable to explain themselves in front of all the students.

Looking at each other in the eyes, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan both gave helpless laughs. They never imagined that the final checkpoint would come to such a stage...

In the surroundings of the Spiritual Light Mountain, the cheering sounds that had lasted for quite a while gradually grew softer as everyone looked excitedly at the confrontations happening on the other two giant peaks. With the advantage on their side, after Mu Chen's victory, they had already seemingly won half of the final fight.

As long as no aberrations happened during Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's fight, victory would definitely be theirs.

Looking at the scene before him, Mu Chen finally relaxed his body completely. What happened after this was already none of his concern. He had already done what he was able to do, and he had

completely achieved his goal.

Upon completely relaxing, the weakness of his body instantly surfaced from the depths, causing him to stagger and stumble.

Suddenly, a clear and beautiful fragrance blossomed from behind him as Luo Li appeared beside him. Without any scruples on the blood that covered his entire body, her white and slender hands supported Mu Chen's body, before resting him on her lovable body.

As Luo Li supported Mu Chen, she looked at the heart-wrenching injuries present on his body. These were all caused by the black lightning's energy, causing them to look extremely horrifying. For the sake of enduring such power, Mu Chen had shouldered an extreme amount of pain and suffering.

"Are you alright?" asked Luo Li softly, concern flashing within her clear and limpid eyes. Although she was not willing to have Mu Chen engage in such life-threatening fights and earnestly wished to help him, she knew...that she couldn't interfere in these kinds of matters. It wasn't a question of the dignity of a male, but a responsibility.

This was the responsibility that Mu Chen had embraced, and he needed to face it by himself. Similarly, he would not wish for anyone to interfere and take action, including her.

Smiling, Mu Chen extended his hand to embrace Luo Li's slender waist, with his body seemingly pasted on her soft and delicate body. At this moment, his body would faintly tremble from time to time, originating from the intense pain radiating from within his body. These tremors were extremely minute, causing others to be unable to discover them. Luo Li was only able to feel them when he rested on her, causing her to feel even more concern for him.

"Everything that happens from now is of no concern to me." said Mu Chen while looking at the two giant peaks in the distance. Regardless of the results of the final fights, he was unable to

interfere at all.

“You’ve already completed the most important part. There shouldn’t be much more suspense in the following two fights.” Luo Li said with a slight smile as she continued, “Congratulations. As of now, you’ve truly become an influential character at the peak of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

“I don’t care about such things.” replied Mu Chen as he stared at Luo Li’s beautiful and exquisite face, before continuing to say slowly, “ For me, you came to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This has already consumed your training time. Although I’ve done nothing about this, I can at least do my utmost to reduce your losses…I don’t care about other people getting their Spiritual Light Empowerment; however, that’s something that you definitely need to have.”

Hearing his words, Luo Li gawked. Looking at the youth, although, he had some bloodstains on his face, it was still as handsome and dashing. A slightly acidic feeling rose on her small nose. Was this the reason why you would risk your life…?

“I don’t think that I’ve lost anything. On the contrary, during these past few years, especially the time within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I’ve never felt more happiness in my entire life.” said Luo Li gently as a gentle and beautiful smile blossomed on her face.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen smiled as the arm wrapped around Luo Li’s waist slowly grew tighter, seemingly as though he wanted to sink her into his body.

As Mu Chen continued to enjoy the gentle and fragrant embrace, under the gazes of countless people, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong slowly took a step forward on the two giant peaks.

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy shot through the skies as the pressure

coming from the two strong Spiritual Energies flooded out. Instantly, the entire stretch of the sky was enveloped under the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the two.

Obviously, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had already prepared to use their full strength in their fights.

Contrary to expectations, facing the strong Spiritual Energy pressing down on them, the expressions on Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan still remained calm and unchanged.

“Senior Brother Lin Zhen.”

“Senior Brother Qingshan.”

Cupping their hands at the same time, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong roared in a low voice, “Please give your guidance!”

Bang!

As they roared, the expression within the eyes of the two instantly became fierce and sharp. Stomping their feet on the ground, their figures instantly shot out as the Spiritual Energy that hid the skies and blotted the earth rapidly converged together.

Looking at the two shooting towards them with fierce fighting intent erupting from them, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan shot a look at each other. After helplessly shrugging their shoulders, they made a move. Unexpectedly, out of everyone’s expectations, they had taken a step back.

Facing the attacks of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, they had unexpectedly retreated?

Whoosh!

Clamoring noises instantly resounded across the world. Although Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were strong, they were obviously incapable of scaring Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan away.

Feeling somewhat shocked, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong

both halted in their steps. Looking at the two who had retreated and unable to detect the faintest traces of fighting intent from them, they started to wrinkle their brows, obviously unable to understand their intent.

Facing the doubtful stares coming their way, Lin Zheng gave a helpless smile and said, “There’s no need to continue fighting.”

“For this last checkpoint, let’s consider it your win.” said Zhou Qingshan while shrugging his shoulders.

Upon hearing their replies, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong gawked, something which was replicated by all of the students around the Spiritual Light Mountain. A split second later, furious sounds of cheering that shook the skies erupted out.

Lin Zhen and Zhou Qingshan had actually admitted defeat on their own accord!

That would mean that they have passed through the last checkpoint! All of them would obtain their Spiritual Light Empowerment! Their year’s worth of bitter training wasn’t wasted!

“They’ve given up, huh...?” Mu Chen also felt somewhat shocked. However, it was too much of a surprise for him. Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan were obviously not weak. However, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were not the slightest bit weaker than them. Even if the former two were to utilise all of their cards, they might only be able to achieve an evenly matched situation. However, this kind of result would already be unable to create the slightest bit of change in the entire situation.

Of the three fights, Mu Chen had won his, while Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had both achieved draws. Therefore, once this result was out, it was already unable to be changed. Since that was the case, there was simply no point for this confrontation to continue.

However, Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan's straightforwardness was something that made Mu Chen feel slightly intrigued. He had assumed that they would cross hands for at least an exchange before choosing to give up on the fight. He never imagined that the fight would be over before it even began...

Obviously, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were having the same thoughts as Mu Chen, since their jaws were slightly hanging down. Not only did everyone have a feeling that they had no choice but to withdraw due to this unexpected turn of events, it truly made people fall into a bad mood.

They were originally planning to enjoy the fights to their hearts content. However, they never thought that Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan would not give them such a chance...

"So, this ends like that, huh?" said Shen Cangsheng as he restrained the boundless Spiritual Energy radiating from him.

Hearing those words, Lin Zheng smiled in acknowledgement. With a flick of his finger, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot towards the sky, before exploding in midair. In the next moment, as the surrounding space started to faintly distort, two old figures slowly appeared from within.

Upon them appearing, a hoarse voice rang out, "Since Lin Zheng and Zhou Qingshan have given up, the victors for the final fight goes to the side of the students. According to the rules, all of the students will be able to obtain the chance of Spiritual Light Empowerment."

Hearing the final verdict of the two Elders, countless students reacted instantly by emotionally cheering out loud.

Waiting for the cheering voices to gradually decline, the two Elders turned towards Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong and said, "You three have achieved victory in the final fights; therefore, you three will get your deserved rewards."

One of the Elders waved his sleeve, causing three bright and resplendent rays of light to shoot out, before transforming into three clumps of light in front of them. Within the clumps of light, one was able to see approximately three metres tall clear and sparkling Spirit Crystals. There seemed to be liquid slowly flowing within them, and they radiated with extremely strong and pure Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

These were Spirit Crystals of Spirit King level. Furthermore, from the thickness of the Spiritual Energy present, it was clearly much stronger than the Spirit Crystal that Mu Chen had obtained from killing the Spirit King from before.

“The Spiritual Light Empowerment the three of you will receive is different from the rest of the students. After three days, head to the Punishment Hall. There will be Elders there who will personally take action to help with your Spiritual Light Empowerment.” said one of the Elders with a smile.

Hearing the Elder’s words, the students in the surroundings were casting envious gazes towards them. However, all of them knew that this was something that Mu Chen and the other two deserved. Without them, all of the people there would have already lost their qualifications to undergo the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

Looking at the clear and sparkling Spirit Crystal in front of him, Mu Chen faintly hesitated, before asking, “Elders, would it be possible to transfer such a Spiritual Light Empowerment to another person?”

Upon hearing Mu Chen’s question, Luo Li’s beautiful face faintly changed, before instantly being suppressed by Mu Chen’s glare.

The two Elders had also gawked upon hearing his question, before they turned and shot a look at Mu Chen and Luo Li. From the looks of it, they seemed to have some inkling of understanding, since they replied with a faint smile, “It’s not only you three that are entitled to such a special Spiritual Light Empowerment.

There's another criteria that can be fulfilled to obtain it, which is to obtain a complete Spirit Crystal of the Spirit King. Only when one has one of these would this criteria be fulfilled."

With a thought, he immediately brought out his half of the Spirit Crystal of the Spirit King out. Luo Li had also fished her half out. Placing the two halves together, they seamlessly fused together.

Extending her jade-like hands, Luo Li received the completed Spirit Crystal. With the gentle light radiating from it, it caused her youthful and absolutely beautiful face to appear exceptionally soul-stirring.

"Elders, would this be alright?" Mu Chen asked with a smile.

"Mu Chen, for the Spiritual Light Empowerment, the more Spirit Crystals, the greater its effect." seeing Mu Chen handing over half of a Spirit Crystal to Luo Li without the slightest hint of hesitation, the two Elders could not help feeling slightly surprised before speaking their thoughts.

Mu Chen declined to comment on their words. Although the Spiritual Light Empowerment was admittedly important, in his eyes, it was clearly not the slightest bit as important as Luo Li.

Tugging her slender and jade-like hand against Mu Chen's palm, a gentle ripple undulated within Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes as she stared at him.

After seeing Mu Chen's determination, the two Elders did not continue to say anymore. Retracting their gazes, a strong and vigorous voice resounded in the ears of every single student.

"Since the results of the final fight are known, I will now announce that this hunt is officially over!"

As the last of his words rang out, countless rays of bright and resplendent light erupted erratically from the horizon. As they shot out, everyone was enveloped under their light.

Under the envelopment of the light, Mu Chen unfurled his hands

and looked towards the expansive space before him. Instantly exhaling a deep breath of relief, he was finally able to exit from there.

# Chapter 331 – Rest

In the air above the northern square.

Countless students raised their heads to look at the gradually dissipating gigantic light screen. Remnants of excitement and a myriad of emotions replayed in their minds as they stared at it. The fight between Mu Chen and Gu Tianyan had truly made people gasp in amazement.

In fact, the final result was something that everyone still found hard to imagine. With a status as a Freshman, unexpectedly, Mu Chen was able to achieve a victory, which directly resulted in the quick ending of the final battles.

Countless people were still sighing in admiration over this. For the past few years, it could be said that there were quite a few talents that had come out from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, there were extremely few people who were able to get a result similar to Mu Chen's. Achieving such dazzling results with the status of a Freshman made everyone sigh in admiration. There was one thing that they knew; from now, Mu Chen's prestige in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might not be any weaker to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

By relying on a single fight to reach the position of a peak influential figure, perhaps there might be no one that would dare to have a single shred of doubt against him anymore.

Swish! Swish!

While countless students were still sighing in admiration, the space in the sky suddenly distorted, before countless figures hid the skies and covered the earth as they shot out from within. They were covered by a thick layer of light, which was radiating with rather astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

Whoosh!

As those figures appeared, not the slightest hint of stopping was discovered on them as they shot across the horizon akin to streaks of light, and flew in every direction. As of now, all of them needed to find a place to train, and absorb all of the vigorous Spiritual Energy that had flooded their bodies due to the Spiritual Light Empowerment.

Upon completing this stage, their strength would have greatly increased.

Envious gazes came shooting over towards the locust swarm-like figures from the many students present on the northern square. Naturally, everyone knew after these people had to completely refine the Spiritual Energy granted to them by the Spiritual Light Empowerment, so that their strength would have a substantial increase.

At this point, the total strength of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might rise to a new level.

As figures continued to blot the skies as they shot out of the distorted space, four figures shot out without any rush or hurry. Stopping in the air, they immediately attracted the gazes of countless people.

“Its Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and the rest!”

“Huh? Why aren’t they covered by the Spiritual Light Empowerment?” Someone voiced out in doubt, as Mu Chen and the other three didn’t have any light radiating from their bodies, and their internal Spiritual Energy levels weren’t overly boundless.

“Are you stupid? The four of them are the most outstanding people in this hunt. How could they just obtain some normal Spiritual Light Empowerment?”

“There are Grades for the Spiritual Light Empowerment?” asked a Freshman in doubt.

“That’s for sure! Normal Spiritual Light Empowerment would happen the instant one leaves the Spiritual Light World. The Spiritual Light that one obtains would automatically transform into Spiritual Energy and enter their body. Although this kind of Spiritual Energy is pure, a large portion of it would be lost during the absorption process. In the end, isn’t the amount that would be refined and absorb be more than 50 to 60%?”

“However, the Spiritual Light Empowerment Mu Chen and the other three are going to receive is different. It’s said that the Elders of the academy would assist in their empowerment. This kind of treatment isn’t something a normal Spiritual Light Empowerment would be able to compare with.”

“I see…”

As he appeared in midair, Mu Chen looked towards the sea of humans that filled the sky. Upon seeing the northern square, he took another breath of relief. Truly, the air of the outside world made people feel more relaxed. Although the Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Light Word was more vigorous, Mu Chen had truly felt that there was just something missing.

“The four of you should head back and rest. After three days, come to the Punishment Hall for your Spiritual Light Empowerment.” Also appearing in the sky, the two Elders turned towards Mu Chen and the other three before speaking out instructions.

“Yes.” Hearing those instructions, Mu Chen and the other three nodded their heads in acknowledgement.

“Mu Chen, you’re the only one that had a tough battle. Go take a rest before meeting up at the Punishment Hall three days from now,” said Shen Cangsheng while sending a smile towards Mu Chen. The latter’s fight had truly exceeded the expectations of the people. Originally, he had assumed that he and Li Xuantong would need to engage in an intense fight. However, who would have

thought that the one that suffered the most was Mu Chen? As for the both of them, they had ended their fights by simply revealing their faces.

Replying to Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen could only present a smile. As of now, his face was extremely pale, and he was truly exceptionally weak and frail. The acute pain radiating from within his body caused even difficulty for him to speak. Right now, his strongest wish was to head back and immediately take a rest.

“I’ll bring him back first.” Seeing Mu Chen’s miserable state, Luo Li felt some pain in her heart. Carrying Mu Chen, she said a soft word or two towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, before rapidly streaking away in a ray of light.

Looking at the figures of the two as they head towards the distance, Li Xuantong fell somewhat into a daze with a complication expression displayed on his face.

“So, you like her, huh?” Beside him, Shen Cangsheng’s eyes had become slits as he grinned, while asking Li Xuantong. He was able to see that Li Xuantong was paying a lot of attention to Luo Li.

In response, Li Xuantong only gave a bitter laugh.

“However, from the lovey-dovey actions of those two, I think that you don’t stand a chance,” said Shen Cangsheng with a little sympathy. The girl by the name of Luo Li truly was very outstanding. However, her eyes had always been focused on Mu Chen. Even the two of them were able to see that Mu Chen and Luo Li had already fallen into the webs of love.

Li Xuantong shot a cold glare at Shen Cangsheng. This fellow, he just likes to do stuff that pours salt into other people’s wounds.

“Forget about it. Why bother hanging oneself to death on a tree? After receiving our Spiritual Light Empowerment, let’s give the bounty of killing Mo Longzi a try. This time, let’s collaborate and settle things with that guy once and for all.”

Shen Cangsheng patted on Li Xuantong's shoulder, before a cold glint flashed within his eyes as he said, "I'm afraid that the number of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students that have died while going out for Outworld Training in the past two years by Mo Longzi's hands has already reached the triple digits."

Hearing his words, Li Xuantong's forehead started to wrinkle. A cold glint also flashed within his eyes as he said in a soft voice, "It's said that the Demonic Dragon Palace is getting more rampant in the Northern Heavens Continent..."

"Let the Deans and Elders care able those headache-inducing matters. Soldiers should be faced against soldiers. The Old Dog of the Demonic Dragon Palace should naturally be stared at by the higher levels of our academy. However, as for that thing called Mo Longzi, he should be dealt with by us. If not, people might say that we Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students are useless," replied Shen Cangsheng casually.

"How do we go about it? Form a team and hunt him?"

Muttering to himself, Li Xuantong faintly nodded his head and said, "Let's collaborate for this time. That Mo Longzi should be killed..."

"Haha, that's good."

With a loud chuckle, Shen Cangsheng patted Li Xuantong's shoulder. Without saying anything else, his figure shot towards the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Upon seeing this, Li Xuantong started to head towards the mountain peak that he lived on.

As the crowd of people in the sky started to scatter, the countless students at the northern square started to leave with somewhat dissatisfied hearts. Looking towards the direction of the Heavenly Rankings, all of them knew that in a short couple of days, there might be a earth-shattering upheaval displayed on it.

At this time, Mu Chen and Luo Li had already reached their small building in the Freshman Area. Upon entering the house, Mu Chen's already pale face grew even more white, while a mouth of blood spewed uncontrollably out of his mouth.

In this fight, the true injuries weren't caused by Gu Tianyan, but the Divine Black Lightning's overly terrifying energy wreaking havoc within his body. This kind of energy was something that Mu Chen's current body was simply unable to control and leash.

Fortunately, he had learnt and practised the Lightning God's Physique, causing his fleshly body to become stronger. If not, he might have had to deal with an exceedingly high cost to his life upon his usage of the Divine Black Lightning.

Looking at the seriousness of Mu Chen's injuries, Luo Li's beautiful face started to faintly change, as she hurriedly carried him into the room. Resting on the bed, Mu Chen weakly gestured to her.

"It's alright. The energy's already simmered down. I just have to rest and I will be alright."

"You really pushed your luck too much," said Luo Li, while getting slightly angry. To her, Mu Chen had simply caused all of these troubles for himself. The Divine Black Lightning was something that would bring dread to even a strong Spiritual Beast like the Nine Netherbird. She never expected that Mu Chen would actually dare to cause it to erupt within his body.

This kind of action was something that would instantly cause one's death, without a doubt. It was still not convenient to say it while they were outside. However, after they returned, she was finally unable to control her concern and anger.

"Even without the Spiritual Light Empowerment, I won't lose anything. Furthermore, I've not come all those thousands of miles to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy just to see you compensate me," said Luo Li while biting her lip.

Looking at the girl who was truly feeling a little angry, Mu Chen could not help lowering his head. Extending his hand, he attempted to grab hold of Luo Li's slender and jade-like hands. However, his hand was evaded by the girl, whose eyes had now turned slightly red.

With a smile, Mu Chen sent his palm out to grab again, and tightly held onto the girl's little hand, without letting her go. With a pull, he sent the girl lunging into his bosom.

Faintly struggling in Mu Chen's bosom, the gorgeous girl tried to get out. Unable to do so, she gave a soft snort, before tilting her lovable face away, indicating her intent of not wanting to easily forgive Mu Chen's nonsensical behaviour.

With a grin, Mu Chen looked towards the gorgeously beautiful face that was now filled with a little anger and indignation. As Luo Li lowered her head amidst the panic she felt, without waiting for the girl to put up any resistance, her red lips were already in contact with his.

The girl used her little hands to gently pound on Mu Chen's chest, before her lovable body finally turned soft like spring water. As she did so, her silvery hair spread out, covering the entire bed.

After kissing for a long time...

Mu Chen was still someone not willing to let go of those tender red lips. As he lowered his head to look at the blushing-red face of the girl, he said in a gentle voice with a faint smile, "I'm sorry for making you worry..."

"Yah, I'm not trying to compensate you in any way. I just feel that, if I'm unable to even clear this obstacle on my own, in the future... how should I protect you?"

A faint tremor shook through Luo Li's body as she looked at Mu Chen's eyes, which were brimming with gentle emotions for her, causing her emotions to slowly turn relaxed.

“I’ve risked my life to win back the Spiritual Light Empowerment, and you’re still angry with me. Shouldn’t you give me some kind of compensation?” asked Mu Chen with a grin.

“What kind of compensation?” noticing Mu Chen’s gaze, Luo Li felt somewhat unsafe, and wriggled her lower body.

With a smirk Mu Chen’s palm quietly slid down, passing through her soft clothing, touching the tender and delicate skin that was cool and akin to jade.

Luo Li’s lovable body instantly turned stiff as her beautiful face turned even redder. Shock and fuster akin to a skitter of a little deer could be seen within her clear and limpid eyes.

As Mu Chen’s hands slipped into Luo Li’s blouse, they grasped hold of that little waist. Unable to bear it anymore, Luo Li was about to shove him away; however, she discovered that Mu Chen’s actions had stopped. Faintly tilting her head over, she realised that Mu Chen had unknowingly pressed lightly on her body. As of now, his eyes were tightly closed, while his breathing was weak and feeble.

He had unexpectedly fallen asleep at this moment due to the stress and tiredness he had sustained earlier.

This made Luo Li feel like crying and smiling at the same time. After hesitating awhile, she extended her jade-like arms and wrapped Mu Chen into her embrace. Gentling kissing the youth’s lips, gentle feelings flooded her eyes as she looked at the youth’s handsome face.

While gentling rubbing Mu Chen’s forehead with her little hands, she muttered, “Mu Chen, rest assured. I won’t let anyone hurt you…I’ll protect you, too.”

# *Chapter 332 – New Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings*

The next day, as Mu Chen woke up from his sleep, he instantly felt that all of the tiredness within his body had disappeared into thin air. The acute pain radiating from within his body had dissipated by quite a bit, compared to yesterday.

Within his meridians, Spiritual Energy was, once again, coursing through, gently healing the many injuries that his meridians had suffered from the Divine Black Lightning.

As Mu Chen swept his senses throughout his body, he discovered that there were some meridians that were stained with a burnt-black colour. Obviously, the injuries that they had sustained were not light. However, on the bright side, the Thunder God Physique that he had practised had become somewhat stronger. If not, there would've been some trouble if those meridians cracked and shattered.

"I should be able to recover from all of these injuries after resting for the next two to three days."

After muttering to himself, as he turned his body over, he felt a gentle and soft feeling coming from within his bosom. Lowering his head to look, he saw Luo Li resting on his bosom, sleeping extremely soundly. Under able to bear it, a smile appeared on his face as he bent down and gave a gentle kiss on Luo Li's glistening forehead, before quietly leaving the bed and opening the door.

As he left the house, the gentle rays of the sun shone down, causing Mu Chen's eyes to narrow uncomfortably, while his tight body quietly started to relax.

Various kinds of training sounds rang out from the distance as birds flew across the clear and blue sky. Their clear chirps caused the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to be uplifted with

vitality.

As Mu Chen took a slow stroll out, the Divine Soul within his consciousness started its devouring. Absorbing the Spiritual Energy eagerly in the surround sky and earth within his body, the Divine Soul proceeded to refine it before devouring it.

As this continued, the dried-up reserves of Spiritual Energy within his body started to recover, bit by bit. As the Spiritual Energy flowed along his meridians, they ceaselessly cleared and repaired the damage present within his body.

Enjoying the rare chance to be idle and laze around, Mu Chen walked along to little road that ended at the public square by the lake where the Freshmen would usually train. Right now, there was already a huge crowd formed by the Goddess Luo Association members, who were engaged in their training.

“Big Brother Mu!”

Upon seeing Mu Chen’s arrival, all of the gazes seemed to have instantly locked onto him with joyful and worshipping looks erupted on the youthful and tender faces of the crowd.

Waving his hands towards them in acknowledgement, Mu Chen headed towards a stone platform, then towards one side of the public square, before taking a seat. Gently closing his eyes, he proceeded to continue absorbing the Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth.

“Your recovery speed truly something. You’re already capable of jumping around after a day.” A voice containing gentle laughter suddenly rang out beside him, causing Mu Chen to open his eyes, only to see Ye Qingling smiling while standing next him.

“So you wish to see me lying down?” Mu Chen asked with a smile.

Taking a seat, Ye Qingling replied with a smile, “Congratulations. You’re now a peak influential figure in our Northern Heavens

Spiritual Academy. Even He Yao has been beaten down by you. Do you know that after the end of the hunt, the people of the Demonic Gate seem have been avoiding us the moment they see us? There isn't any of the previous arrogance present in them now."

"As of now, you're the most famous person within our academy. When compared to Shen Cangsheng, you're not the slightest bit behind."

"And yet, I want to find some peace and quiet," feeling helpless, Mu Chen said with a smile.

"If it's peace and quiet, that's something very difficult to find."

With a sweet smile, Ye Qingling gripped her jade-like hand, causing a scroll of lambskin to appear in a flash. Handing it over to Mu Chen, she said, "Ever since the end of the hunt, the Heavenly Rankings have momentarily changed. As for you, you're already the 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, second to only Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong..."

Receiving the lambskin, Mu Chen unfurled it, only to see a stone rubbing of the Heavenly Rankings. At the 3rd Rank, sure enough, he had spotted his name.

As for the 4th Rank, it had changed to He Yao, with Su Xuan being the 5th. Zhao Qingshan was 6th, while Xu Huang had dropped from the 5th to the 7th... other than the top two in the previous Top Ten in the Heavenly Rankings, all the rest had truly changed. Below the Top Ten places, there were even more foreign-looking names. Obviously, they should be the dark horses that had appeared within this hunt.

As for the 10th Rank, Mu Chen was surprised to unexpectedly see that it had been assigned to Luo Li. Although that lass had made her move for an exceedingly little number of times, the matter of her collaborating with him to kill that Spiritual King seemed to be enough to cause her to jump up a few places in the rankings.

“Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings.”

While he gave a smile, Mu Chen’s expression still remained exceedingly calm, without feeling overly joyous or surprised.

“Sigh. We’ve entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the same time. And now, you’ve become an influential figure, ranked 3rd on the Heavenly Rankings, while the rest of us are slowing crawling up.” said Ye Qingling, while somewhat sighing in lamentation. When she had first met Mu Chen, wasn’t the latter’s strength not even at the level of Spirit Stage? However, after a period of time that hadn’t even reached a year, the latter had already become an expert that stood at the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings…

When people were compared to people, it sure caused people to feel extreme indignation and inferiority.

Mu Chen smiled at her. Not wanting to engage in a conversation about this topic any longer with her, he asked, “Where’s Sun’er? It seems that I’ve not seen her for some time already.”

“That little lass’ luck is quite good. After wandering around the academy, she met an Elder of the Northern Spiritual Academy. That Elder primarily trains in Spiritual Arrays, and is reportedly a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. After seeing Sun’er’s extremely good talent, she took her under her wing to train in Spiritual Arrays.” Ye Qingling replied.

“Spiritual Array Grandmaster?” upon hearing those words, Mu Chen’s eyes instantly contracted. For Spiritual Array Masters, the initial stages were ranked one to nine. However, strictly speaking, Spiritual Array Masters ranked one to five can only reluctantly be considered as entering this inner room of the Dao of Spiritual Arrays. As for those that had stepped past the threshold of 5th Grade and became a 6th Grade, that would be a completely different story. Spiritual Array Masters that reached this stage were worthy enough to be called Spiritual Array Grandmasters.

Only Spiritual Array Grandmasters were considered to have touched the true mysteries and workings of Spiritual Arrays.

The 5th Grade to the 6th Grade were akin to the frightening gap between the Heavenly Completion Stage and the Sovereign Stage.

Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Arrays was extremely high. From being a 1st Grade to a 4th Grade Spiritual Array Master, it was basically smooth without any hitches. However, even though that was the case, he did not dare to say that he could easily step past the threshold and become a genuine Spiritual Array Grandmaster.

As for this kind of Spiritual Array Grandmaster, Mu Chen dared to bet that there might not be more than a few people with such capabilities even in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Being able to be mysteriously taken under a wing of such an Elder, this was an opportunity that Sun'er had gotten that had made even Mu Chen feel his eyes turning slightly red.

Sun'er truly did have a rather high talent on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, and her being spotted was something that Mu Chen didn't feel strange about. However, his talent in Spiritual Arrays wasn't any weaker than hers. But he didn't see any Elders showing a particular fancy towards him. Looks like having a cute appearance does have many uses.

"Haha. According to Sun'er, this Elder's temper is extremely strange and peculiar. She doesn't only look at one's talent, she also doesn't have any biasness. Even if your talent is much higher than others, she might not care the slightest bit about you," looking at Mu Chen's current appearance, Ye Qingling couldn't help laughing while commenting.

In response, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. As of now, he was already a 4th Grade Spiritual Array Master. However, in reality, his speed of improvement had started to slow down. Furthermore, he was still not clear of the many states of mind towards the Spiritual Arrays, and did not know exactly what way he needed to

go to increase his familiarity and comprehension of them.

After all, currently, he had just managed to come in contact with the “Heart's Eye” state. As a 4th Grade Spiritual Array Master, he should not be able to arrange a 5th Grade Spiritual Array. However, relying on the mysteriousness of the “Heart’s Eye” state, he was able to compensate for the disparity of his achievements.

But, the problem was that Mu Chen’s attainments in the “Heart’s Eye” state was only the preliminary contact, and was inconsistent whenever he used it. If he were to meet with an off-chance of it failing while in a life-or-death situation, that would result in him losing his life.

However, if he was able to receive the guidance of a Spiritual Array Grandmaster, perhaps, he might be able to increase his familiarity and control over the “Heart’s Eye” state...But, how could such an opportunity be easy to find?

The few Spiritual Array Grandmasters have extremely high statuses in the Northern Heavens Academy. If they didn’t want to teach you, no amount of Spiritual Value Points would matter to them.

“I’ll have a chat with Sun’er later to see if she could mention you to that Elder. Your talent in Spiritual Arrays is higher than Sun’er. I think that the Elder should not reject your request.” Upon seeing the fluctuation of emotions on Mu Chen’s face, Ye Qingling did not dare to continue teasing him as she spoke her suggestion earnestly.

“That would be much appreciated,” replied Mu Chen while nodding his head. As of now, what he really needed was training in the aspect of Spiritual Arrays. After all, it wasn’t like training one’s Spiritual Energy. There was too many overly complicated information and intricacies in this aspect. Without the guidance of others, there would always be a lot of winding paths in a solitary person’s pursuit along this road.

Gesturing towards Mu Chen, Ye Qingling noticed that there was a

faint trace of paleness still present on Mu Chen's face. Not wanting to continue disturbing him, after a short word or two, she turned around and left.

Looking at Ye Qingling's figure as she headed towards the distance, Mu Chen temporarily put the issue of his Spiritual Array mastery aside. As of now, the most important thing he needed to do was to recover from his injuries, before heading to the Punishment Hall within three days to receive his Spiritual Light Empowerment.

Over the next two days, although the news of Mu Chen rising to the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings was trending rather fervently, he did not give a single care about it. Not taking even half a step out of the Freshman Area, he had put an end to all of the disturbances coming from the outside world.

Under the peaceful and quiet rehabilitation, the injuries present within Mu Chen's body gradually recovered. Although there were still some slightly hidden injuries within his meridians, these could only be ridden through time, and was something that couldn't be rushed.

With the arrival of the third day, Mu Chen's complexion had almost completely recovered. All the paleness on his face was completely gone, while vigorous Spiritual Energy coursed throughout his body with faint traces of some improvement to them.

Standing on top of the house, Mu Chen did a lazy stretch, causing crackling sounds to rattle off from all the joints in his body akin to firecrackers. This extremely comfortable feeling caused Mu Chen to let out an uncontrollable groan.

"Looks like you've recovered quite well." Luo Li's satisfied voice rang out from behind him. As of now, Mu Chen was truly back to becoming vigorous and lively like a rising dragon. Three days ago, after becoming that frail and weak, it had caused quite a bit of pain

to Luo Li’s heart.

“Basically more or so.”

Mu Chen replied while nodding his head. Looking towards the inner part of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he said, “Let's go. We should head towards the Punishment Hall. After risking my life to obtain the Spiritual Light Empowerment, we should at least enjoy what it’s worth, right?”

Luo Li gently nodded her small head in approval. With regards to the Spiritual Light Empowerment, truthfully, she was also somewhat curious.

Extending his hand out, under Luo Li’s blushing face, Mu Chen grasped her lovable little hand with his. With a light squeeze and he grin, he lead her along and floated into the air. In the next moment, the two transform into streaks of light, shooting towards the Punishment Hall within the academy.

# Chapter 333 – Punishment Hall

The Punishment Hall sat within the inner region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the entire academy, it held an extremely high status, as well as power, as the absolutely large question of the safety and guarding of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was under its control.

The majority of the Punishment Hall members were students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had already graduated, but chose to stay behind. With each successive batch, they provided a unceasing supply of fresh blood into the Punishment Hall.

Naturally, once one entered the Punishment Hall, one could no longer be called a student, and could no longer participate in the various competitions between students. Therefore, most students would generally find it extremely difficult to see the members of the Punishment Hall on most occasions within the academy.

Similarly, once one became a member of the Punishment Hall, the tasks one was sent out on would have a higher increase of danger. This place wasn’t some ivory tower, as the various rules and regulations implemented here were obviously even more strict and severe. After all, the Punishment Hall was constructed for the sake of the protection of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The enemies they faced were no longer the students and seniors that were comparing notes, but the various evil powers that were clearly presented or hidden in obscurity within the Northern Heavens Continent.

Compared the the gentle academy, the interior of the Punishment Hall clearly had an extra iron-blooded taste with a cold and strict feeling.

...

There wasn't any of the luscious and vibrant atmosphere of

vitality of the outside present within the inner region of the academy. Even the sky appeared to be darker and more overcast. A giant hall that looked different from the rest of the surroundings stood erect on top of a mountain peak. Within the air, there would be groups of people in armor darting in and out, from time to time. As they moved along, fluctuations of killing intent could be felt within the air.

This kind of imposing aura was absolutely not something that the students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could compare with.

Upon seeing this with their eyes, both Mu Chen and Luo Li felt somewhat shocked and startled. This was the strength that truly protected the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although the academy was considered to be a leviathan in the Northern Heavens Continent, it did not mean that there wasn't any power or influence that had the qualifications to challenge it within the Northern Heavens Continent. Within the great continent, where experts were akin to the numerous clouds in the sky, there were still some strong powers that were observing and eyeing it from the darkness.

And this Punishment Hall was here to scare and keep all those eyeing powers at bay.

Upon arrival to this inner region, Mu Chen and Luo Li did not encounter any obstructions. Clearly, the Punishment Hall had already received the news about their impending arrival. The two of them went through some detailed screening before descending on the giant peak that shot through the distant sky.

An incomparably giant hall sat quietly on the top of the giant peak, akin to a ferocious and cold-blooded beast that was quietly stalking its prey, while a heart-palpitating, ferocious aura radiated from it.

Before the giant hall stood a black stone square with the jet-black

colour of it sparkling with traces of cold light.

As Mu Chen and Luo Li descended onto the black stone square, they noticed Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who had arrived earlier than them, standing in the centre. The ones in front of them were Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan.

As Mu Chen's gaze swept past them, it rested on a space in front of them. There stood a black-clothed middle-aged man with his hands behind his back. This person's face was cold and fierce. As Mu Chen's gaze crossed paths with him, an ice-cold air permeated from him, causing the air to freeze up.

While he was standing there, not a single word came from him. Instead, an invisible pressure enveloped over them. Under this pressure, even wild and arrogant people like Shen Cangsheng became docile and meek.

Feeling this pressure, Mu Chen shot a startled look at the black-clothed middle-aged man. From the looks of it, this man's strength was rather terrifying.

"We're sorry for arriving late." Leading Luo Li and walking forward, Mu Chen cupped his hands and said to the group.

"Don't fret about it. It hasn't started yet." With a smile, Lin Zheng gestured with his hand. Turning and pointing towards the black-clothed middle-aged man in front of him, he said, "This is the Hall Master of our Punishment Hall, Hall Master Mo You. At the same time, he's also one of the Elders on the Heavenly Seats within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Hearing Lin Zheng's introduction, Mu Chen felt slightly shocked. As of now, he had somewhat of an understanding towards the higher levels within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the entire academy, there were five seats within the Heavenly Seated Elders. Before, during the Great Freshman Banquet, there was an Elder by the name of Zhu Tian that seemed to be a Heavenly Seated Elder. The person in front of him... was,

unexpectedly, another one of the five Heavenly Seated Elders. So he was considered one of the peak combat forces of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

“Mu Chen pays respects to Hall Master Mo You.” Bowing, Mu Chen cupped his hands and greeted Mo You.

“So, you’re the Freshman Mu Chen that defeated Gu Tianyan?” A dark light filled the eyes of Hall Master Mo You as he stared at Mu Chen. The gaze coming from him was exceedingly sharp and piercing, as if he was trying to see right through Mu Chen.

“It was only due to Senior Brother Gu Tianyan giving way to me. If we continued fighting, I wouldn’t have had any strength left to fight.” Mu Chen replied while shaking his head. Those words by him were the truth. If he were to continue fighting with Gu Tianyan, Mu Chen would only be able to achieve a draw, at the very most. Wanting to obtain a victory was, more than likely, an impossibility. Regardless of how numerous his hidden cards were, there was still a huge disparity from Heavenly Transformation Stage to Heavenly Completion Stage.

“So, this brat knows modesty, huh?” Mo You muttered. Smirking, he shot a look at Gu Tianyan, who had a somewhat unnatural look on his face and said, “This brat’s usually very arrogant. Being able to obstruct his haughty spirit shows that you have some ability.”

Hearing those words, Mu Chen could only give an awkward laugh.

“Regardless of that, you truly are quite good, since you’re able to reach this step with the status of a Freshman. After the past few years, you can be considered as the first one to do so. Even Shen Cangsheng wasn’t able to do so during his Freshman years.” Looking at Mu Chen, not the slightest hint of restraint was left with regards to his praise for the latter.

Hearing that praise, Shen Cangsheng started to smile. During his

Freshman year, he had only buried his head and bitterly trained. He had also not participated in the Hunting War during that year, let alone achieving such results in a fight.

“So, you’re Luo Li, right?” Mo You’s gaze suddenly turned towards Luo Li, who had been standing beside Mu Chen the whole time. In the next instant, his gaze turned from the former to the Luo Shen Sword that was tightly gripped in her jade-like hand.

“Yes.” Luo Li replied while slightly nodding her head. Upon noticing that, Mo You’s gaze was focused on the Luo Shen Sword in her hand, and Luo Li’s eyebrows started to faintly knit together.

“Haha, I’ve seen before that sword in your father’s hands…” Mo You replied as a slightly complicated look appeared on his face.

Upon hearing his reply, everyone was blankly staring in confusion, while Luo Li felt somewhat startled. This Mo You actually met with her father before? Looks like the latter also understood her status.

Mu Chen also felt slightly startled. However, it was not something especially unexpected. Mo You was a Heavenly Seated Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and should have some understanding towards Luo Li’s status. However, he never guessed that the former had met Luo Li’s father before.

“During my training years, I’ve met your father once, by chance. Speaking of which, I also owe him my life. It’s a pity that I didn’t get the chance to return the favor.” Feeling somewhat sad, Mo You replied to quell the confusion.

Hearing his explanation. Luo Li’s expression also turned dim. Naturally, there was nothing that she did not know about the matters that had happened.

As the atmosphere turned slightly dark, this became the first time that Lin Zheng and the rest had seen such an expression on Mo You’s face, causing them to be unable to muster any nice words

to say.

Fortunately, Mo You quickly recovered his usual expression. Gesturing with his hand, he said, “Okay. Since you guys have all arrived. Let’s prepare to carry on with the Spiritual Light Empowerment.”

With a wave of his hand, three old men walked out from within the great hall. These three people were Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, it was obvious that their status’ weren’t as high as Mo You’s.

“For the three of you, these three Elders will personally help with your Spiritual Light Empowerment.”

Looking towards Luo Li, Mo You said, “Lass, I’ll personally help you with your Spiritual Light Empowerment.”

Upon hearing those words, Lin Zheng and the rest involuntarily uttered a sound from their shocked reactions. Mo You was actually going to personally take action to help a student with her Spiritual Light Empowerment? This was truly the first time in these past few years.

On the matter of the Spiritual Light Empowerment, the stronger the helping person was, the greater the benefits the recipient would get. Mo You was one of the five Heavenly Seated Elders in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Within the entire academy, clearly, there were not that many who were stronger than him.

Luo Li hesitated awhile. Only upon seeing Mu Chen nod his head did she gently nod hers while saying, “Then, I’ll have to trouble Hall Master Mo You.”

Gesturing with his hand, Mo You replied while sighing, “This can reluctantly be considered as returning a small bit of the favor. Although, this is the only thing I can do.”

Upon saying those words, he continued to say his order, “ You

three will follow the three Elders inside."

Mu Chen and the other two nodded their heads. Just as they were about to move, a dispirited and ancient-sounding voice suddenly slowly resounded within everyone's ears.

"Wait."

The sudden voice made everyone gawk. Raising their heads, they noticed the figure of an old man sitting on a stone pillar before the giant black hall.

Tattered clothing covered the old man's body, while his head was bald, without a single strand of hair, and his eyes always looked dispirited as they drooped down. This made him look as though he had never had a full meal.

Upon noticing this bald-headed old man, Mu Chen instantly felt some astonishment. Isn't this old fellow the person I met in the Lightning Territory? The Lightning God Physique he had trained in was given to him by this bald-headed old man.

Besides him, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had faces brimming with shock, as they had similarly previously met with this bald-headed old man while in the Lightning Territory.

As he noticed the bald-headed old man, shock had also instantly appeared on Mo You's face. Hurriedly, he greeted respectfully, "Lord Northern Sea."

The attitude that Mo You displayed caused everyone to feel further shock. There was actually someone within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that could make Mo You show that much respect? What exactly was the origins of the bald-headed old man in front of them?

"Lord Northern Sea?"

Shen Cangsheng, and Lin Zheng, as well and the rest, frowned in thought, before a sudden change happened to their faces. Overwhelmed with shock, they spoke out in a low voice, "Could

this be the Divine Beast Protector of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon?”

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, other than Dean Tai Cang, the only person that could make Mo You to show so much respect would be the mysterious and seemingly wisp-like Northern Sea Dragon?

A tremor went through Mu Chen’s mind as he heard those words. He was somewhat in disbelief as he looked at the bald-headed old man, who always seemed so dispirited, and was simply unable to picture the latter as the Divine Beast that was capable of intimidating the Heavens and earth.

On the stone pillar, the bald-headed old man waved his hand. In the next instant, he had already appeared in front of Mu Chen and the rest. The seemingly instantaneous movement speed caused the eyes of Mu Chen and the rest to twitch.

The bald-headed old man waved his hand towards Mo You, before sweeping his gaze towards Mu Chen and the rest, finally resting on the latter.

“Senior...”

Seeing that he was being stared at by the old man, Mu Chen instantly felt somewhat unnatural.

Ignoring Mu Chen’s change in expression, the bald-headed old man shot a slightly weird gaze at him. Only after a while did he slowly spit out some words. “From what I’ve heard, is it true that you’ve gathered some Divine Black Lightning?”

# Chapter 334 – Lightning Poison

“From what I’ve heard, is it true that you’ve gathered some Divine Black Lightning?”

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen clearly gawked awhile. After hesitating awhile, he nodded his head while replying, “It’s by a fluke that I’ve managed refine a single strand of Divine Black Lightning into a lightning bead and absorbed it within my body… during the Hunting War, for the sake of fighting with Senior Brother Gu, I shattered that Divine Black Lightning bead.”

In a flash, Gu Tianyan finally understood why Mu Chen was able to erupt with such terrifying power while relying on his Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase strength. However, he still proceeded to shoot a weird look at Mu Chen as he thought, This fellow truly is a freak. He had actually absorbed the Divine Black Lightning into his body. That is something that even Sovereign experts would stay clear of!

What’s more, after shattering the Divine Black Lightning bead, unexpectedly, Mu Chen was able to survive. This made them feel all the more strange. Wasn’t this fellow’s willpower to live that overly tenacious?

A ray of light flashed within the murky eyes of the bald-headed old man. Extending his withered palm, he lifted Mu Chen’s sleeve. In the next instant, a black ray of light seemed to have shot up the latter’s arm.

Chi. Chi.

As the black light shot up, black lines started to instantly surface on Mu Chen’s arm. Those black lines started to squirm and wriggle under his skin, while radiating with fluctuations that caused slight unease to people.

“What’s that?” Mu Chen exclaimed in shock as the expression on

his face changed.

“Lightning Poison.” said the bald old man indifferently, “The Divine Black Lightning is the tribulation that a Spirit Beast needs to experience for it to promote into a Divine Beast. Not only is it destructive, it also contains a mysterious Lightning Poison, which people are simply unable to discover. However, as time elapses, the Lightning Poison will gradually turn corrosive. That is to say, if the Lightning Poison doesn’t erupt. If it erupts, a crack will suddenly ring out from your entire body, and you’ll become a pile of ashes…”

Mu Chen’s face instantly turned ugly as a cold sweat started to appear on his forehead. Beside him, a panic-stricken expression appeared within Luo Li’s clear eyes as she looked towards Mu Chen with anxiety.

At this time, the expressions on the faces of Mo You, Shen Cangsheng and the rest also changed. They never expected that there would be a such a huge impending disaster hidden within Mu Chen’s body.

“Senior, please help him.” Luo Li could no longer maintain her usual silence as she hurriedly spoke out. Her frantic appearance, however, caused a slightly complicated expression to appear within Li Xuantong’s eyes as he faintly tilted his head away.

“Why should I help him? This is something that he had brought about to himself. Is the Divine Black Lightning something that he can bear? Moreover, he had even shattered it within his body. He’s already lucky to not die as a result of doing so.” the bald old man’s temper appeared to be somewhat strange, since he slowly said his reply while withdrawing his withered palm.

Biting her lip, Luo Li said, “If you help him get rid of the Lightning Poison, I’ll compensate you.”

Sizing Luo Li up, the bald old man replied in a lazy manner, “On your entire body, the only thing that’s of interest to me, would be

the sword in your hand."

"If Senior likes it, I'll gift this sword as compensation." Still biting her lip, Luo Li gave her reply.

Upon hearing her words, the expression on Li Xuantong's face changed. Seeing this, Shen Cangsheng walked over and said in a low voice, "You don't stand even an ounce of chance."

Luo Li's words had also made the bald old man startled. The sword in her hands would cause even the hearts of Sovereign experts to move. However, unexpectedly, Luo Li was willing to use it as compensation, which created some surprise within him. This was due to him being able to see that Luo Li was very clear about the true value of the sword in her hand.

"Lord Northern Sea." Unable to bear it any longer, Mo You spoke out. After all, he had some connections to Luo Li's father, and would naturally help, if possible.

Extending his palm out and holding onto Luo Li, Mu Chen shook his head faintly towards her. With a faint smile, he said, "Senior, you're highly respected and worshipped in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Playing a joke like this on a girl isn't something suitable."

"Do you think I'm joking?" Faintly urling his mouth, the bald old man asked.

"Senior's usually somewhere hidden. So, your sudden appearance today should have some connection to me, am I right? Perhaps, it should be connected to the matter of me absorbing the Divine Black Lightning, am I right?" Mu Chen replied with a smile.

Hearing his words, the bald old man stared at Mu Chen. Only after a long while did he smile while saying, "You're tremendously astute, brat."

Only upon seeing the bald old man reveal a smile did everyone quietly breathe a sigh of relief. The Northern Sea Dragon had an

extremely high status in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Furthermore, he had a weird temperament. If he really did not wish to help, it would truly become something troublesome.

“Indeed, I’ve come seeking you due to some matters. Perhaps, you’ll have to help me with a little problem. Of course, to compensate you, I’ll help you deal with the Divine Black Lightning within your body,” replied the bald old man.

Hearing his words, everyone felt somewhat shocked. What kind of strength did the Northern Sea Dragon possess? Within the entire Northern Heavenly Continent, you might not even find a person that could contend with him! However, from the looks of it, unexpectedly, he had needed the help of Mu Chen, a student at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase?

“May I know what Senior needs me to do? With my little bit of strength…”Mu Chen asked while slightly wrinkling his brows. If it was a problem that even the Northern Sea Dragon was unable to deal with, what could he offer?

“Just follow me first. At that time I’ll give you a rundown about it. Relax, I won’t let you do something that would make you lose your life.”

Feeling helpless, Mu Chen replied, “ However, I’m currently about to receive my Spiritual Light Empowerment…”

“I’ll help with your Empowerment!” shouted the bald old man as he shot a glare at Mu Chen; he was able to see this brat’s intentions with a single look.

Only when he heard those words did Mu Chen start to faintly smile. With regards to the Spiritual Light Empowerment, the stronger the person in charge, the greater the effect. Within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the bald old man in front of him was obviously the best person possible for the job.

Originally, Mu Chen did not have such hopes. However, who

would have known that he would actually appear at this moment? This kind of opportunity doesn't come knocking on one's door twice. One would be too stupid to forsake such an idea.

Beside him, Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, and even Lin Zheng and the rest were casting somewhat envious looks towards Mu Chen. Being able to let the Northern Sea Dragon personally help one with their Spiritual Light Empowerment; within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could be considered to be the first.

"Since Mu Chen has such an opportunity, let him follow Lord Northern Sea." Mo You said with a smile. This Mu Chen truly was a lucky fellow. He's even able to meet up with such a good opportunity.

Luo Li released Mu Chen's hand, while the anxiousness in her eyes dissipated, bit by bit. With a smile on her absolutely gorgeous face, she stared at Mu Chen, who had just obtain such good fortune.

"Then, I'll go first." said Mu Chen as he waved towards Luo Li. However, without waiting for him to say anymore words, the bald old man had already dragged him away. With a fluttering of space, the two of them instantly disappeared within the distortion.

Looking at the place where Mu Chen had disappeared into, Shen Cangsheng and the rest were still sighing with envy. Why doesn't good fortune befall onto them?

"Stop sighing, this sort of good luck seems to be tied to not dying after absorbing and shattering the Divine Black Lightning in one's body. If you guys want it, you can give it a try." Mo You said indifferently.

Hearing his words, the expressions on Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's faces faintly changed. He had to be joking. The number of peak-level Spiritual Beasts killed by the Divine Black Lightning while trying to promote to become a Divine Beast was

uncountable. What's more, shattering it within one's body. Even thinking about it would cause a person's scalp to crawl. Only a freak like Mu Chen would do such an absurd thing.

Seeing the two becoming scared stiff, Mo You smirked, before turning around and heading into the great hall, with Luo Li rapidly following behind him.

"Sigh. Give it up. Seems like the both of us don't have such a life. Don't feel too bad about it."

Helplessly patting Li Xuantong's shoulder, Shen Cangsheng headed into the great hall. Looking at the back figure of Luo Li, Li Xuantong made a dejected sigh before following suit.

...

The moment he was grabbed onto by the bald old man, Mu Chen felt the scenery in front of him change so rapidly, he felt somewhat dizzy. An intense feeling of drowsiness erupted in his mind. Fortunately, this didn't last long, before it rapidly dissipated.

"Okay."

After hearing the indifferent-sounding voice of the bald old man, Mu Chen opened his eyes, before staring somewhat dumbfoundedly at the scenery before him.

This was a dim and dark place, with a profound and unfathomable black colour everywhere. Naturally, what created the most shock within Mu Chen was the unending sea of Black Lightning. Like thousands upon thousands of water pillars, Black Lightning fell from the sky into this Black Lightning sea.

Mu Chen stared at this sea as gigantic lightning bolts arced and danced around within. As deep and low rumbling sounds resounded across this world, it carried along with them the indescribable prestige of the heavens and earth.

"What is this place?" Mu Chen asked as his scalp started to crawl. The unending sea of Black Lightning in front of him was too

terrifying.

“The last layer of the Lightning Territory.” The bald old man casually replied.

Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air. This was the final level of the Lightning Territory? No wonder there’s such terrifying lightning energies present here. Compared to here, even the 7th Level of the Lightning Territory would appear insignificant.

“Carefully feel it. Aren’t there some slightly familiar fluctuations within there?” asked the bald old man with a grin as he pointed towards the unending Black Lightning sea.

Panning his doubtful gaze outwards, he tried to sense what the bald old man was talking about. After a long while, his face, however, started to turn slightly pale as he said, while being overwhelmed with shock, “These are… the fluctuations of Divine Black Lightning?”

Within the Black Lightning sea, Mu Chen discovered the fluctuations of Divine Black Lightning!

Unexpectedly, there’s actually Divine Black Lightning hidden within the black-coloured lightning sea!

The quantity present was seemingly more terrifying than those present in the Nine Netherbird’s tribulation.

Who would have thought that there would actually be so many Divine Black Lightning present in the final level of the Lightning Territory?

“As for the other levels of the Lightning Territory, their lightning energies are formed from those that have dissipated from here,” explained the bald old man with a smile.

Hearing that, Mu Chen was speechless as his heart was filled with shock.

“Senior, what exactly did you call me here to do?” Unable to

resist his curiosity anymore, Mu Chen asked his question with some worry. This place was too terrifying, and any casual Divine Black Lightning that descended might be capable of blasting him into bits. He truly wasn't able to think of how, exactly, he could help the Northern Sea Dragon.

Rubbing his withered palms together, a smile surfaced on the wrinkled and dried-up face of the bald old man. However, this smile only caused Mu Chen's goosebumps to instantly stand up as a feeling of unease erupted from within his body.

Extending his finger, the bald old man pointed towards the Black Lightning sea that filled the space in front of them as a laughing voice rang out.

"I want you to help me retrieve something from within the lightning sea."

# Chapter 335 – Lightning God Pill

"I want you to retrieve something for me from within this lightning sea."

Upon hearing those words, the expression on Mu Chen's face clearly froze for a while. Opening his eyes wide, he stared at the bald old man in front of him, while having some doubts as to whether he had heard something incorrectly.

"You want me to enter that?" Mu Chen said as he blinked his eyes, while pointing towards the unending sea of black lightning. If he didn't hear incorrectly, it ought be that the bald old man had spoken incorrectly, right?

Nevertheless, facing his trembling gaze, the bald old man calmly nodded his head, dispelling all the hopes that Mu Chen had.

"Senior, are you joking with me?" Mu Chen felt as if his scalp was about to be fried. There's Divine Black Lightning within that black lightning sea! Even a Sovereign would not casually set foot within that place. With his strength at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, there might not even be ashes left of him upon him just setting foot within there.

"I'm not asking you to directly rush in like that," said the bald old man as he rolled his eyes.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen finally managed to slightly calm his nerves down. With a bitter laugh, he asked, "Exactly what thing do you want me to retrieve?"

"This Lightning Territory was created by me hundreds of years ago."

While pointing towards the mysterious space, before pointing towards the black lightning sea, the bald old man continued with his introduction, "I initially discovered something unique about this space, as it was filled with lightning energies. After noticing

that, I casually took all the lightning energies out of the space and condensed them here. After racking my brains and gathering Divine Black Lightning from all over the place, I threw them all into thisi place and let them grow unsupervised…”

Mu Chen tugged at this mouth awhile as he thought, As expected of the Northern Sea Dragon. The Divine Black Lightning that even Nine Nether was afraid of was, unexpectedly, gathered by him from all over the place. Naturally, this was due to Nine Nether being too young. According to her words, she was considered as just coming-of-age within the Nine Netherbird Clan. Furthermore, being able to endure the Divine Black Lightning Tribulation while being a Nine Netherbird that had just come-of-age, her talent, as well as her abilities, was truly stronger than Mu Chen and the rest.

After all, when Nine Nether wakes up, she would have successfully completed her transformation, and become a Nine Netherworld Bird. At that time, she should have the strength to contend against Sovereigns. Added with some training in the future, there would even be the chance for her to exceed this Northern Sea Dragon…

“However, as time passed, I discovered that some things had already left my scope of control. That’s because the strength of the lightning energy within was too terrifying, and condensed together to form a strange and unexpected living thing.” The bald old man continued his explanation while showing his somewhat helpless dilemma.

“Living thing?” Mu Chen gawked. In the lightning sea, which was completely devoid of life, it could condense to form an unexpected living thing?

“I name it as ‘Lightning Spirit’. This entire lightning sea can be considered its body.”

Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air as he looked towards the unending sea of lighting, while being overwhelmed with shock.

Isn't this so called "Lightning Spirit" too terrifying? No wonder even the Northern Sea Dragon was unable to deal with it. The myriad of living things in this world were truly incomparably mysterious and marvelous.

"It's fortunate that this Lightning Spirit's intelligence isn't too high. However, if I were to get close to it, I'd have to endure its most violent and intense attacks," said the bald old man as he tugged at his mouth. Staring at the black lightning sea, a chilling glint flashed within his murky eyes as he continued, " If I were to use my strength and take action, I'd be able to destroy it. However, I'd also destroy the thing I want."

"What does Senior want to retrieve?" slightly curious, Mu Chen asked the bald old man. The Northern Sea Dragon had prepared this space for hundreds of years, and even created this terrifying lightning sea. In the end, he had even created the Lightning Spirit. What exactly did he want to obtain from this?

As the murky eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon converged on the black lightning sea, he said in an indifferent tone, "Lightning God Pill."

"Lightning God Pill?" Mu Chen blankly repeated those words, while a vacant expression filled his face. Obviously, he had never heard of that before.

"Although it's called a pill, it isn't something that people can refine. It's something created by the heavens and earth," explained the bald old man slowly, "Only when lightning energies are boundless enough to reach such a terrifying level would there be some chance for a Lightning God Pill to form. I've been searching and accumulating countless Divine Black Lightning for the past hundreds of years, all for the sake of a Lightning God Pill to be formed."

"Fortunately, my luck's not bad. However, I never knew that when the Lightning God Pill was born, it would also give birth to a

Lightning Spirit that has been preventing me from acquiring the pill this whole time."

"What use does that Lightning God Pill have?"

"With that Lightning God Pill, I'll be able to rely on it to make a breakthrough and step into the realm of Earth Sovereign," replied the bald old man.

"Earth Sovereign." A shock went through Mu Chen's mind. If that's the case, the bald old man in front of him should be at the level of a 9th-Grade Sovereign? That's truly terrifying! He was already considered to have reached the apex of the Sovereign Realm. One more step, and he would reach the legendary Earth Sovereign Realm. Even considering the entire Great Thousand World, an expert of that level would absolutely be sufficient to be called First Class.

With that kind of strength, even within those super strong clans, one would be able to be comparable to their clan leaders.

"Senior, why don't you find Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders? If Dean Tai Cang were to help you, shouldn't it be much more easier?" Mu Chen asked doubtfully. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with the Northern Sea Dragon's status, if he needed help, who would dare to not give their utmost to help?

"It's no use. This Lightning Spirit's very cautious. I've already spoke of this to Tai Cang. When he had just entered the other day, it caused the lightning sea to erupt. If the two of us were to appear at the same time, the Lightning Spirit would feel threatened. What if it felt that it was in a life-or-death struggle and destroyed the Lightning God Pill? Won't that waste my hundreds of years of hard work?" replied the bald old man helplessly.

Hearing his explanation, Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh and looked at the black lightning sea. At this moment, there weren't too many fluctuations radiating from it. However, under this unchanging peace, Mu Chen was able to feel his heart palpitate. "However...

Senior, you should know that my strength's inadequate..."

"Relax, I've already said that I won't let you lose your life for nothing."

The bald old man waved his hands and stared at Mu Chen while saying, "I've called for your help due to you absorbing a bolt of Divine Black Lightning before. Furthermore, you've let it erupt within your body. Although the strength of the Divine Black Lightning within your body have been completely used up, there's still some remnants left..."

A sparkle flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he said, "Is Senior talking about the... Divine Black Lightning Poison?"

The bald old man nodded his head and replied, "The Divine Black Lightning Poison truly is a very frightening thing. However, from another perspective, it can be said to be a valuable treasure..."

Mu Chen's forehead wrinkled up.

"The Divine Black Lightning Poison is something that even Sovereign Realm experts dare not to casually come into contact with. If you are able to control the Divine Black Lightning Poison, to you, it would become an extremely formidable trump card."

"Control the Divine Black Lightning Poison?" Mu Chen replied with a dry laugh. He didn't even have the ability to discover the Divine Black Lightning Poison that was hidden within his body, let alone control it.

"It isn't difficult for you to sense the Divine Black Lightning. As long as I pass the complete version of the Lightning God Physique to you, you'll naturally be able to sense them. Relying on the Lightning God Physique, you should be able to even control the Divine Black Lightning," said the bald old man with a smile.

"The complete version of the Lightning God Physique?" Mu Chen repeated those words as his heart palpitated in eagerness. He had already seen how overbearing the Lightning God Physique was. If

he didn't learn this body-refining Divine Art, the eruption from the Divine Black Lightning's strength would have ended very miserably for him. Furthermore, that was only the incomplete version of it. If he was able to learn the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, to what degree would his fleshly body become?

"How about it?" The bald old man asked with a grin. He believed that with this condition, Mu Chen would be unable to resist it. After knowing the formidability of the Lightning God Physique, Mu Chen would definitely not forsake it.

As expected, in an instant, Mu Chen fiercely nodded his head. Searching for riches and power through risks. For the sake of obtaining the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, Mu Chen dared to take the risk of running through extreme danger. Furthermore, he was, after all, a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and the Northern Sea Dragon won't send him to his death for nothing.

Seeing Mu Chen's reacting, the smile on the bald old man's wrinkled and dried-up face instantly grew thicker. Extending his withered palm to pat on the former's shoulder, he said, "Since that's the case, then let us do some necessary preparations."

"Preparations?" Mu Chen gawked, before staring blankly at the bald old man? Was there anything else that needed to be prepared?

"Cough."

With a dry cough, the bald old man replied, "It's like this. Although your body has some Divine Black Lightning Poison, it's still too weak and sparse. That level isn't enough to mask the fluctuations of your life force. If you were to enter the lightning sea like that, you'll definitely be discovered by the Lightning Spirit."

"Therefore?" Mu Chen suddenly felt thick uneasiness.

“Therefore… you need to get zapped by the Divine Black Lightning a few times. This would increase the density of the Divine Black Lightning Poison within your body to some extent, to the point that it can mask your life force,” replied the bald old man with a dry laugh.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen tugged at his mouth slightly as he thought, This damnable bald freak! Indeed, he didn’t have any good intentions! He had actually wanted him to get close to the Divine Black Lightning on his own initiative…During the previous time, it was fortunate that he was able to endure it. That was completely due to the Divine Black Lightning being only a remnant left behind by the Lightning Tribulation, with some luck added in. Only then was he able to endure it.

However, if this was to occur a few more times, could it be that he would have to always rely on his good luck?

Looking at Mu Chen’s progressively darkening face, the bald old man gave another dry laugh. Touching his bald head with his withered palm, he said, “Relax, I’ll reduce the Divine Black Lightning to a level that you’re able to endure. I’ll definitely make sure that nothing will befall you!”

Mu Chen’s expression wavered indecisively. Although he had a super powerful existence of a 9th-Grade Sovereign guarding his side, the Divine Black Lightning was truly too ferocious. If there were any unfortunate circumstances, even he might not be able to provide any aid in time.

This matter was obviously filled with danger.

Looking at the struggle Mu Chen was having, the bald old man hurriedly incited the former, “When this thing is complete, I’ll personally aid you in your Spiritual Light Empowerment, and will definitely give it my all. I dare to say that there’s absolutely no one in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that can exceed the results that I can help you achieve.”

Mu Chen was still stuck within his struggles.

“Hey, little fellow. Just treat it as me owing you a favor…I’ve also helped that little Nine Nether that has a bloodline bond with you successfully cross the Divine Black Lightning Tribulation. Not only did I give her some protection, I even stole a bolt of Divine Black Lightning. If not, that little Nine Nether would have already turned to ash during the Lightning Tribulation…” The bald old man hurriedly played the sympathetic guilty card, since he was afraid of Mu Chen retreating from this matter.

“There’s such a case?” Mu Chen was shocked and somewhat startled. This was something that even he did not know.

“Hehe. Although collecting the Divine Black Lightning was also my goal, it could be considered as me helping you. Furthermore, if not for the feather plume that I’d given that little Nine Nether, she would’ve been unable to grasp the time to recover.” The bald old man replied awkwardly.

Mu Chen shot a look at the bald old man. He actually did see a feather plume going to work when Nine Nether was undergoing the Tribulation. The energy that radiated from the feather plume had obviously not originated from Nine Nether.

“So, what’s your decision?” The bald old man hurriedly asked.

With a smile, the struggle within Mu Chen’s eyes slowly dissipated, bit by bit. He had always lived by the rule: An Eye for An Eye, A Tooth for A Tooth. Regardless of what motive the bald old man had, he truly did help Nine Nether a great deal. Furthermore, with the bloodline bond, by helping Nine Nether, it can be considered that he had also helped him.

Since that was the case, he would naturally not have any reason to reject this task.

Looking towards the bald old man, Mu Chen took a deep breath, before nodding his head.

“Alright, I accept.”

# *Chapter 336 – Complete Version of the Lightning God Physique*

“You accept?”

The bald old man appeared slightly surprised as he looked at Mu Chen. Previously, when he gave many lures and enticement, Mu Chen had always been hesitant and was struggling within his mind. He never thought that his final statements would actually make Mu Chen agree so straightforwardly.

Giving only a faint smile, Mu Chen did not say anything more.

“Truly an interesting little fellow.” At this moment, upon looking at Mu Chen’s eyes, the bald old man understood his intent, causing an additional sliver of admiration to grow towards the former. People that were able to differentiate gratitude and grudges were truly able to make people fond of them.

Looks like this little fellow treasures a thing like friendship very strongly.

“What time do we start?” Since he agreed, Mu Chen would naturally not have any more hesitation and immediately asked about the specifics.

“Let’s do it now.”

The bald old man said, “If you’re able to endure the Divine Black Lightning, I’ll pass you the complete version of the Lightning God Physique.”

Patting Mu Chen’s shoulder, he continued talking, “Relax, I won’t let you go in there just to be cannon fodder. Once there’s a problem, I’ll immediately take action. After waiting for hundreds of years, waiting for just a little longer isn’t much.”

“I’ll try my best.” Mu Chen replied while nodding his head.

With a nod, the bald old man shifted his body and shot straight at

the black lightning sea that occupied the mysterious space. However, he didn't get too close, and stopped when he was around ten miles from the edge.

"Go over there."

The bald old man pointed at a space not far from where he was, where a black stone platform stood floating in the air.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen swept over and descended onto the stone platform. Upon sitting down, he felt a cold sensation radiating from it. A cold and refreshing aura seemed to coarse throughout his body, and under it, the hidden wounds that were left in Mu Chen's body by the strength of the Divine Black Lightning started to gradually disappear.

"This stone platform was cast using Lightning Refining Stones, and has some dispelling effects towards the strength of lightning. While you're on it, it'll help you reduce some of the pain," the bald old man explained.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before panning around and stared at the bald old man.

Seeing that Mu Chen had already completed his preparations, the bald old man raised his head to look at the unending sea of black lightning. In the next moment, he extended his withered finger, and gave the space a tap.

Humm!

As the bald old man's finger descended onto the space, it instantly started to intensely warp and distort. Spatial lines started to ripple out, before transforming into something akin of spatial chains. Directly passing through space, they went straight into the lightning sea.

Bang! Rumble!

Familiar low and deep rumbling sounds that caused people's heart to tremble resounded. Turning his head around, Mu Chen

saw a black lightning bolt, approximately ten metres long, being tangled up by the spatial chains, like a giant python, before being dragged out from within the lightning sea.

The black lightning bolt struggled intensely, causing destructive lightning energies to continuously gush out from it. However, it was still unable to cause the slightest movement towards the seemingly weak spatial chains.

Looking at this spectacle, Mu Chen quietly smacked his lips. The Northern Sea Dragon was undeniably a super strong existence of the 9th-Grade Sovereign level. Within his hands, the Divine Black Lightning was akin to a baby, unable to put up even an ounce of resistance.

As the bald old man dragged the Divine Black Lightning out from the lightning sea, with a clench of his palm, the spatial chains wrapping around the Divine Black Lightning violently contracted. Instantly, sparking sounds erupted out as the size of the Divine Black Lightning unexpectedly started to rapidly shrink. At the same time, the destructive energies present within it also started to rapidly grow weaker.

After a short span of a few breaths, the Divine Black Lightning was now only about ten centimetres thick. Obviously it had been weakened by quite a bit.

“That should be enough.” said the bald old man as he looked towards Mu Chen and said, “Are you ready?”

Mu Chen shot a look at the Divine Black Lightning. The destructive energies contained within it seemed to be around the same as the one that he had endured during Nine Nether’s tribulation. Thinking about it, he should be able to endure this bolt.

“Yes.” Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen nodded his head.

Bang!

Without continuing to be polite, with a wave of his palm, the Divine Black Lightning shot forward. Carrying along its destructive energies, it violently descended onto Mu Chen.

On Mu Chen's body, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames instantly erupted as a faint silvery colour surfaced onto his skin. Obviously, he had also activated his Lightning God Physique without restraint.

Bang!

Just as he had completed activating his defenses, the Divine Black Lightning heavily stuck against the body of Mu Chen with a loud bang.

Bang!

At the instant of being struck, Mu Chen suffered something similar to a heavy blow, and he almost seemed to fly backwards. Despite that, clenching his teeth, he stuck firmly to the stone platform. As this happened, the Spiritual Energy that was burning in black flames was rapidly being compressed and dissolved.

In a short span of two breaths, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy was forced back into his body. Following suit, carrying along its destructive energies, the Divine Black Lightning crazily gushed into his body.

Chi! Chi!

As the black lightning arced across the surface of Mu Chen's body, intense pain that would make people faint spread, once again, across his body.

As Mu Chen tightly clenched his teeth and tremors faintly shook his body, Spiritual Energy crazily erupted from his body, trying its best to resist the surge of the Divine Black Lightning energy.

However, it was clear that his little bit of Spiritual Energy was unable to be of much use, since it quickly became completely submerged, and the black lightning liquid started to wreak havoc

within Mu Chen's body. His meridians started to distort under the impact, while horrifying cracking noises started to erupt from his muscles and bones.

As the intense pain continued to spread out, blood started to spurt out of his mouth, while a wave of dizziness rushed through his mind, in an attempt to make him faint. However, he understood that once he fainted, he would lose all control, allowing the havoc-causing Divine Black Lightning energy to cause a whole load of destruction within his body.

The black lightning light enveloped Mu Chen, sparkling as it arc around malevolently.

Upon seeing this, the bald old man started to get slightly anxious. If Mu Chen was unable to endure the Divine Black Lightning, his hopes on this matter of his would seemingly be dashed.

"Endure it," said the bald old man in a low voice.

Dizziness continuously surged through him. However, just as he was feeling somewhat difficult to endure the intense pain, a cold and refreshing aura suddenly erupted within his body. As this surge within his body grew, the intense pain with Mu Chen's body had suddenly been dispelled by quite a bit. As of now, the devastating black divine lighting that was wreaking havoc was now lacking a sliver of craziness.

This was the Lighting Refining Platform at work.

Sighing a breath of relief, Mu Chen clenched his teeth and continued to endure. Only after approximately half an hour, did he slowly open his eyes. At this time, the Divine Black Lightning around his entire body had already completely dissipated, with a large majority having scattered within his body.

Mu Chen's face was pale, and every slight movement would cause pain akin to his flesh being split apart, causing incomparable pain.

"You've succeeded!" said the bald old man in gratisfaction as he

descended.

With a bitter laugh, Mu Chen did not say anything, opting to close his eyes while observing the injuries within his body.

As the bald old man waved his hand, boundless and majestic Spiritual Energy erupted out and gushed into Mu Chen's body, helping him rapidly treat his wounds, while allowing him to completely recover from the injuries left behind by the Divine Black Lightning.

Under the help of the bald old man, within tens of minutes, Mu Chen's injuries were completely healed.

"Again?" Seeing that Mu Chen had already recovered, the bald old man instantly asked with a grin.

A cold shiver shook through Mu Chen. However, no tears came out from his eyes as he nodded his head.

Bang! Bang!

Crackles of thunder resounded once again.

As time slowly ticked by into the late afternoon, Mu Chen had suffered the feeling of his flesh and skin being split apart time and time again, while hovering between life and death. He could even smell the burnt flavor coming from his body. As of now, his entire body was akin to a piece of immovable wood.

On the Lightning Refining Platform.

As the eighteenth bolt of Divine Black Lightning gradually dissipated, Mu Chen was finally unable to endure the pain. Collapsing on the stone platform, his face was deathly pale, while he continuously gasped for air. Currently, his body felt as if it had already shattered.

As the bald old man descended onto the Lightning Refining Platform, his palm pressed against Mu Chen, while Spiritual Energy erupted out. After checking the injuries in Mu Chen's body,

he removed his palm.

With some difficulty, Mu Chen recovered some of his strength. However, he felt extremely tired, not even having the wish to move his fingers. Although he was tired, Mu Chen was able to feel that his Lightning God Physique had seemingly become stronger. This kind of self-torture truly had some benefits.

Bringing about a black glow, the bald old man's withered palm swept across Mu Chen's body. In the next moment, Mu Chen saw black spots appearing on his body. Akin to a liquid, they circulated around, while radiating with fluctuations that made people feel unease.

This was the Divine Black Lightning Poison. However, it was obvious that the lightning poison present within Mu Chen's body was much thicker than before.

Staring at those black spots, Mu Chen felt his scalp turn numb. After all, no one would feel comfortable to have such life-threatening things within their body.

"There's already enough lightning poison. This should be able to mask your aura," the bald old man said while nodding his head. Those words were akin to removing a heavy load off of Mu Chen's shoulders. Thank god, I don't need to continue being struck by lightning.

"Next up, I'll pass the complete version of the Lightning God Physique to you. Afterwards, I'll tell you how you can control the Divine Black Lightning Poison."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen's mind instantly shook. After enduring so much pain, he could finally get some compensation.

With a smile, the bald old man extended his withered finger and gave a tap on Mu Chen's forehead. As the finger sparkled with a lightning light, a sliver of lightning light liquid followed his finger and drilled into Mu Chen's forehead.

Bang!

Just as the lightning light liquid drilled into Mu Chen's forehead, he instantly felt an astonishing peal of lightning erupting within his mind. While his body instantly gave a faint tremble, a majestic and complicated piece of information appeared like a surging tide.

Lightning God Physique, Middle Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art of the Body-Refining category. Able to harvest the lightning energies of the heavens and earth to refine and strengthen one's body. Besides being overbearing, one could rely on one's fleshly body to shatter space, while possessing the strength to shift mountains.

As one acquires higher accomplishments in this Divine Art, its power would be comparable to a High Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

"Comparable to a High Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art..."

While muttering those words, Mu Chen sighed in shock. Body-refining Divine Arts were rare, and he never thought that the Lightning God Physique would be that strong. When one fully mastered it, it's power would be no weaker than a High Rank Deity Tier Spiritual Art! One wasn't even able to buy a Divine Art of this grade within the Spiritual Values Hall!

As for the matter of being struck by lightning. After suffering that much pain, the benefits reaped weren't little, too.

After an instant, Mu Chen withdrew the rampaging emotions within his heart. Proceeding to calm his mind down, he started to observe and emulate the entire process of learning this Divine Art.

# *Chapter 337 – Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger*

Mu Chen's mind sank into the exceedingly complicated Lightning God Physique training method. After a long while, he slowly opened his eyes, while a shocked glint flashed within.

According to the training method, the Lightning God Physique seemed to be differentiated into nine levels, which were simultaneously called the Ennea Rune Lightning Physique. That's due the formation of a Lightning Rune every time the Lightning God Physique promoted to the next level. Once the number of Lightning Runes reaches nine, it would be considered as having a great accomplishment in it. When one reached that level, a single punch sent out purely from one's fleshly body would be able to explode an ordinary Sovereign Stage expert.

"Ennea Rune Lightning Physique..."

A scalding-hot look erupted from within Mu Chen's eyes. This Lightning God Physique was truly exceedingly extraordinary. Even within the body-refining Divine Arts category, it can be considered to be rather formidable.

"Hmm, how many runes is my Lightning God Physique at?" Mu Chen muttered to himself.

"Psh..." Unable to bear it, the bald old man snorted and sneered before saying, "As you are now, you're not even at the first rune, and you're still thinking of runes? Do you think that the Lightning God Physique is that easy to learn and master? Furthermore, as the level of your Lightning God Physique increases, the refining difficulty will also progressively increase. Once you can reach the third rune level of the Lightning God Physique, the Divine Black Lightning will possess no threat to you."

"At that time, you'll have to find a source of lightning that's even

more formidable than the Divine Black Lightning. Only then would you be able to refine your fleshly body and further promote your Lightning God Physique."

"Lightning that is even more formidable than the Divine Black Lightning?" Hearing those words, Mu Chen's expression faintly changed. As of now, just a weak bolt of Divine Black Lightning was able to send him to a near-death state. Exactly how terrifying would the lightning that's more formidable than Divine Black Lightning be?

From the looks of it, although this Lightning God Physique was formidable, it also went along the path of being slightly oppressive to oneself. Finding terrifying lightning to get struck by, there should be quite a few people that practised the Lightning God Physique that were being split open while training, right?

"Those things are now too far from you. You should just focus on attempting to sense the Divine Black Lightning Poison within your body," urged the bald old man while waving his hand.

Mu Chen nodded his head as his hands came together to form a mysterious seal. As the seal formed, peals of thunder could seemingly be heard as slivers of lightning bolts started sparkling out.

Within Mu Chen's body, in his flesh and bones, little bits of black lightning seemingly started to surface. As these lightning bolts travelled back and forth within his body, they continuously refined his meridians, bones, flesh and blood.

As Mu Chen gradually sank into the slivers of numbness brought by the refinement, a slightly cold, chilling fluctuation suddenly appeared within his body.

This immediately roused Mu Chen from his training. With a sweep of his mind, he saw a drop of black liquid that silently appeared, without a sound, from an extremely well-hidden part of his body. In the next moment, it directly traveled through his

blood and flesh. There were times that it even hid within his bones. However, as the black liquid passed through those places, minuscule and undetectable black imprints would be left on his blood, flesh, bones and meridians. These were the results of the corrosion caused by the lightning poison.

“This is the Divine Black Lightning Poison?”

Mu Chen felt a faint shock travelling through his mind. This thing was truly strange. If not for him practising the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, he would simply be unable to even detect its existence.

As Mu Chen discovered that drop of black liquid, several cold, chilling fluctuations started to appear at various parts of his body. These were the Divine Black Lightning Poisons that were hidden within his body.

Upon sense those lightning poisons, Mu Chen could not help feeling his head ache. These things truly made people feel extremely worried and troubled.

“Mu Chen, listen to what I say. Activate your Lightning God Physique and attract them towards the meridians in your right hand!” While Mu Chen was feeling a headache, the voice of the bald old man suddenly rang within his mind.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen slightly hesitated, before clenching his teeth and started to revolve the refining method. Activating his Lightning God Physique, peals of thunder instantly resounded within his body as a faint black lightning bolt passed through his flesh, before rushing towards the Divine Black Lightning Poison.

As the Divine Black Lightning Poison sensed the incoming black lightning bolt, it instantly tightened up, looking as if it would instantly jump up and flee.

Seeing that, Mu chen hurriedly relaxed his control. If this

lightning poison started to recklessly scuttle around his body, it might create a huge problem for him. He did not assume that he would be able to prevent the eruption of the Divine Black Lightning poison within his Lightning God Physique, which was not even to the level of the first rune.

As Mu Chen relaxed his control, the drop of Divine Black Lightning Poison started to calm down once again. In the next moment, the drop seemed to sense a slightly familiar fluctuation coming from the black lightning bolt controlled by Mu Chen. After hesitating awhile, it finally approached it, bit by bit.

At the same time, Mu Chen hurriedly controlled the sliver of black lightning bolt as it slowly retreated, bit by bit, down the meridians of his arm.

Just like that, with one retreating and one advancing, after a number of minutes, the drop of lightning poison was attracted to the meridians of Mu Chen's arm,

"Attract it to the meridian of your middle finger." The voice of the bald old man resounded out once again.

Mu Chen nodded his head, and slowly attracted the drop of lightning poison into a small meridian within his middle finger. That meridian was only one of the many small branches within his middle finger. From a certain perspective, it was a wasted meridian, as it wasn't broad and properly connected to other meridians. However, from the looks of it, it had become the best prison for locking the lightning poison up.

After attracting the lightning poison within that wasted meridian, Mu Chen proceeded to use the sliver of lightning bolt to seal of the entrance. After repeating this process laboriously for over an hour, he had attracted the lightning poisons present throughout his entire body into this wasted meridian.

Several drops of Divine Black Lightning Poison circulated within that meridian. At this moment, they seemed to have discovered

that something was amiss. Suddenly erupting out, they violent surged towards the black lightning bolt that blocked the entrance of the meridian.

Sensing this, Mu Chen opened his eyes and stared gravely towards his right hand. As of now, his middle finger had already become a jet-black colour. Compared to his fair palm, it appeared exceedingly conspicuous, while giving people a mysterious and sinister feeling.

“They’re about to rush out!” Mu Chen exclaimed in a deep voice as his middle finger continued to tremble.

The bald old man nodded his head indifferently in response, as his withered finger suddenly shot out a drop of dull gold blood essence. Wriggling as they appeared, it descended straight onto Mu Chen’s palm, before rapidly submerging within.

A dull gold glow started to permeate from Mu Chen’s right arm, before slowly retracting. bit by bit, as it transformed into a golden rune. Sweeping across his palm, it finally entered Mu Chen’s middle finger. Transforming into something akin to a seal, the golden rune completely sealed the lightning poisons within Mu Chen’s middle finger, causing them to be unable to struggle free again.

As this happened, the jet-black colour of Mu Chen’s middle finger slowly started to recover its original colour, bit by bit. Nevertheless, he was still able to feel those Divine Black Lightning poisons hidden within his middle finger.

“That seal is able to seal up those lightning poisons. I’ve broken off my control over it, so you should be about to control that seal as you wish.” The bald old man said with a smile, “This can be considered as your second benefit. The Divine Black Lightning is a double-edged sword. Although it's very dangerous for you, you too shouldn’t underestimate its uses.”

“In the future when you cross hands with others, you could

secretly activate it and send your finger pointing out. Hehe, at that time, even an opponent at the Heavenly Completion Stage would instantly suffer serious injuries."

"During the Hunting War, if you had this move, you wouldn't have even needed to take such a risk in your fight with that brat, Gu Tianyan. With a single touch, your matter's settled."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen instantly felt exultation as he stared with sparkling eyes at his long and slender middle finger. He never imagined that the Divine Black Lightning Poison would have such great uses. Looks like he had truly gotten quite a bit of benefits.

"In the future, I'll call it as Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger." Mu Chen said with grin as he clenched his hand. He had casually given it the most closest and simplest name. However, even with such a simple name, it possessed a rather astonishing killing power.

"Senior, what do we do now?" After happily looking at his finger for a good while, Mu Chen finally raised his head and took the initiative to ask for the next instructions. After receiving so many benefits, he would truly feel a little guilty if he didn't offer some contributions.

"I'll take action in a while and lure the 'Lightning Spirit' out. When that happens, you'll enter the lightning sea and search for the Lightning God's Pill. Remember, with your strength, even if you've practised the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, you can only stay within the lightning sea for, at most, half an hour. Therefore, within this time limit, if you're unable to find the Lightning God's Pill, you have to immediately retreat out of there. If not, you'll instantly turn into ashes," the bald old man said solemnly.

With a grave expression on his face, Mu Chen nodded his head. Naturally, he wouldn't play around with his little life.

Seeing Mu Chen's nod, the bald old man didn't continue to say any more words and let the former rest for another half an hour. After the former had completely recovered, he started to slowly rise into the air.

As the bald old man rose into the air, Mu Chen was suddenly able to feel the space intensely erupt. Lines started to extend crazily from the space surrounding the former, leading to something akin to a spatial storm to erupt, which caused the entire stretch of space to tremble.

An extremely frightening pressure extended out. Under the envelop of the pressure, even the space started to tremble.

This was the pressure of a Sovereign!

This pressure was even stronger than the White Dragon Sovereign!

A serene expression filled the face of the bald old man as a jet-black ocean tide seemed to erupt behind him. Within the waves, a unendingly giant fish-like creature seemed to shoot out from it.

Roar!

As the roar awed and shook the heavens and earth, the giant fish-like creature split apart the endless waves, before unfurling a gigantic pair of draconic wings, which hid the skies and covered the earth. This scene, it was exceedingly terrifying.

"This is the Northern Sea Dragon?"

Mu Chen was extremely shocked, since the Northern Sea Dragon was too gigantic! It's approximately ten thousand metres long. With a look, one would not be able to see its entire length. At the same time, the pressure radiating from it was so strong that even the space seemed to be unable to endure it.

Bang! Rumble!

Just as the Northern Sea Dragon appeared, the bald old man's

body disappeared, and extremely terrifying peals of thunder instantly erupted from within the black lightning sea.

As Mu Chen looked over, he saw countless thousand metre long black lightning pillars rushing towards the sky from within the lightning sea. After converging on the air above the lightning sea, they transformed into a indefinitely-shaped black lightning spirit. Lightning liquid transformed into lightning rivers as they dripped from it, while a pair of jet-black lightning bolts appeared, which looked akin to eyes that have formed out of black holes. As they appeared, they proceeded to stare at the Northern Sea Dragon in the far distance.

Bang!

That indefinitely-shaped black lightning spirit gave a furious roar, causing black peals of thunder to wreak havoc as they resounded, enveloping around thousands of metres wide.

Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air once again as shock filled his eyes.

That spirit, should be the Lightning Spirit, right?

That perverted existence was truly too frightening.

# Chapter 338 – Infiltrating the Lightning Sea

Bang! Rumble!

Erratic peals of thunder rang out across the horizon as destructive energies, akin to wanting to destroy the heavens and earth, surged out, causing people to feel extreme terror upon seeing it.

Once it appeared, the Lightning Spirit had locked onto the person it was most familiar with, the Northern Sea Dragon. The boundless fluctuations radiating from the latter's body caused it to feel extremely threatened.

Bang!

The lightning sea crazily erupted out, causing ten kilometre high giant waves to form. As the Lightning Spirit furiously roared, the ten kilometre high lightning waves condensed as the lightning immediately surged out. Hiding the sky and covering the earth, they pressed onto the Northern Sea Dragon.

However, facing the incoming attacks, a chillingly cold glint flashed within the giant eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon. Opening its big mouth, jet-black waves gushed out. Those waves contained an unlimited amount of chilling air that seemed to be able to even freeze space.

Crack! Crack!

As the waves and the lightning waves smashed against each other, the lightning waves instantly froze. As the black icy layer rapidly extended out, it rushed towards the lightning sea at lightning speed.

Bang!

Countless bolts of black lightning, akin to furious dragons, rushed out from within the lightning sea. As they violently colliding with the black icy layer, they caused it to shatter into

pieces.

Mu Chen sat on the Lightning Refining Platform, his eyes filled with shock as he looked at the terrifying exchange happening before his eyes. This was genuine strength, one that could shatter space and cause the heavens and the earth to tremble by simply raising one's hands.

This was a Sovereign.

A true expert of the Great Thousand World.

Scalding hot intent erupted within Mu Chen's eyes. This was his goal in his pursuit of cultivation. One day, he would also be able to reach such heights!

Rapidly withdrawing his intentions, Mu Chen turned his gaze towards the churning black lightning sea. As of now, since the Northern Sea Dragon was already entangled the Lightning Spirit up, this was his best opportunity to enter the lightning sea.

Although the crazy and devastating black lightning bolts blotted the sky, Mu Chen did not feel much dread in his heart. Immediately after he stretched his body, he suddenly shot out, before quietly entering the lightning sea without a sound.

Upon seeing this, a glint flashed within the giant eyes of the Northern Sea Dragon, before its attacks suddenly became more erratic, forcing the Lightning Spirit to retreat, time after time. Obviously, he was trying to diverge the attention of the Lightning Spirit. If not, once Mu Chen was discovered, any casual lightning bolt it threw at the latter would cause him to immediately turn into ashes.

However, it was fortunate that Mu Chen's strength was truly too weak. The little bit of Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from Mu Chen was masked by the terrifying exchange that was caused by the clashing parties. Therefore, when Mu Chen neared the lightning sea, he still wasn't discovered by the Lightning Spirit.

Upon seeing that, Mu Chen quietly sighed in relief, before staring gravely at the unending black lightning sea before him. Standing there, he was akin to grain of sand within the ocean, completely unremarkable.

With such a large disparity between their sizes, it was extremely easy for terror and dread to surface within others.

Mu Chen tightly clenched his fists as his black pupils stared at the black lightning sea. Fiercely clenching his teeth, with a move, he transformed into a ray of light and shot straight in.

Plop.

As a big wave formed on the surface of the black lightning sea, Mu Chen's figure had already disappeared.

The instant Mu Chen entered the black lightning sea, he was able to feel the lightning energies that pervaded this ocean. Within this sea, there were even quite a few Divine Black Lightnings swimming around. Looking akin to giant black dragons in the sea, they wriggled around in a frightening manner.

As Mu Chen appeared, he had immediately attracted the attention of some Divine Black Lightning, causing them to swim over. Obviously, they had discovered energy fluctuations that were different from their own.

Seeing their reactions, Mu Chen hurriedly activated his Lightning God's Physique, causing a faint black lightning bolt to surface around his body. At the same time, his middle finger also turned jet-black. As the fluctuations of the lightning poison radiated out, it masked the fluctuations of his Spiritual Energy.

Just as Mu Chen completed his actions, the Divine Black Lightning had already shot over. Swimming around Mu Chen's body, they seemed to have detected something.

At this time, Mu Chen did not dare to make a single move. In this kind of place, as long as he was somewhat revealed to be different

from the Divine Black Lightning, he would be instantaneously struck into ashes by them.

Fortunately, his luck wasn't bad to such a point. The bald old man truly didn't want him to turn into ashes. After circling around him awhile, the Divine Black Lightning proceeded to swim away. After all, they were only a part of the lightning energies, and didn't have any intelligence. Therefore, it was natural that they were unable to differentiate Mu Chen apart from themselves.

Whew. Mu Chen wiped away the cold sweat that appeared on his forehead. With a move, he shot straight through the lightning sea. Pushing apart the lightning liquid, he shot into the depths of the lightning sea that was jet-black to the point of causing people's hearts to palpitate.

This lightning sea was extremely expansive, and Mu Chen did not know which direction the Lightning God's Pill was at. However, after thinking about it, that object should be born in a place where the lightning energies were at its thickest. Therefore, it was clear that the depths were the most probable place for the Lightning God's Pill to be born.

However, saying and doing were two different things. Wanting to search for a Lightning God's Pill in such an expansive lightning sea was still not an easy task. Mu Chen diligently searched around. However, even after ten minutes passed, he still had not the slightest bit of reward.

As he searched deeper and deeper into the depths of the lightning sea, the Divine Black Lightning bolts that he met grew increasingly terrifying. Their sizes were approximately hundreds and thousands of metres long. Looking from a great distance, they were akin to icy-cold black dragons sitting at the bottom of the ocean, causing people's blood to run cold.

As time ticked by, Mu Chen couldn't help getting somewhat anxious and impatient. Although he was relying on his Lightning

God's Physique, as well as the lightning poison to conceal himself, this was only a temporary measure. Also, it was clear that this state couldn't last long. Once half an hour of time was reached, he would be unable to resist the corrosion caused by the lightning energies in the lightning sea. At that time, he might be instantly turned into ashes.

"I can't continue staying in this blind state, if I do, there would simply be not enough time."

Thoughts rapidly floated into Mu Chen's mind as his eyes sparkled. Only after quite a long while later did clarity reappear within his eyes. While deeply pondering, he muttered, "Although the lightning energies within this lightning sea are frightening, the lightning sea is full of them. Some of them should definitely contain some information. Since the Lightning God's Pill is the object that represents the source of the lightning sea, the lightning energies rippling within the lightning sea will definitely have some response!"

This idea of Mu Chen's was rather gutsy. Within this lightning sea, his strength was obviously too weak. The slightest mistake would cause him to be destroyed hundreds and thousands of times. Originally, he should be avoiding the lightning energies that filled this lightning sea. However, as of now, he planned to take the initiative and acquire the information he wanted from them.

This was an extremely dangerous plan. However, Mu Chen seemed to never lack such guts.

After muttering to himself, Mu Chen finally made his decision. If something unfortunate truly popped up, he would immediately turn around and leave. Relying on the concealment provided by his Lightning God's Physique and the lightning poison, he should be able to smoothly leave this place. However, if that happened, it be would considered that he had failed this task...

However, at this time, Mu Chen also had no other road left to

walk on. Therefore, he could only take such a risk.

After making his decision, Mu Chen did not hesitate anymore. With a thought, the black lightning bolt around his body grew slightly dimmer. He did not dare to completely let it go, with the only thing he could do was to attract the attention of the lightning energies in this lightning sea, little by little, and search using such a method.

As the black lightning bolt around Mu Chen's body gradually became dimmer, he instantly felt the tranquil lightning energies immediately starting to churn and surge. In fact, even the gigantic Divine Black Lightning in the far distance seemed to have sensed this change.

As a bolt of lightning energy came into contact with his body and went straight through him, Mu Chen immediately activated his Lightning God's Physique. The lightning bolt blossomed, enveloping his enter body once again.

The Divine Black Lightning that had sensed the changes came to a stop once again, before slowly swimming around and becoming tranquil.

Enveloped by the lightning bolt, Mu Che's body vigorously trembled. The lightning energy that entered his body obviously contained the power of black lightning, causing it to be extremely formidable. However, it was fortunate that he had already endured the strikes of several bolts of Divine Black Lightning; therefore, creating a little bit of resistance. After wasting some time, the lightning energy within his body was finally absorbed and refined by him.

After refining the lightning energy, a black lightning bolt flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Lowering his head, he looked towards a certain place within the jet-black lightning sea, while joy surfaced within his eyes.

Indeed, from that lightning energy, he was able to sense some

unique fluctuations. The origin of those fluctuations were at the place he was looking at.

The Lightning God's Pill was definitely at that place!

With a move, Mu Chen traveled through the lightning sea like a fish, increasing his speed as he swept towards that location.

Because of his increased speed, within a short span of a few minutes, Mu Chen had arrived at the deepest part of the lightning sea. There, the colour of the lightning sea was an increasingly mysterious black colour. The jet-blackness was akin to ink, while feeling slightly vicious.

Lightning arced within the liquid of the sea, radiating with destructive fluctuations. This caused Mu Chen's scalp to slightly turn numb. A place like this was truly not somewhere that he, a little Heavenly Transformation Stage, should come to.

A lightning bolt erupted within Mu Chen's eyes as he continuously scanned his surroundings. Piercing through the jet-black lightning liquid, he continued his search for his target.

At this time, less than half of the time he had remained. If Mu Chen did not increase his speed, he might not be able to continue and would have to escape from this lightning sea.

Cold sweat dripped from his face as Mu Chen's heart rate increased. As of now, a sliver of anxiousness and impatience appeared within his eyes.

"Hmm?!"

While his heart was as impatient as a roaring fire, suddenly, his eyes violently contracted. Rapidly shooting forward and traveling through the lightning liquid, his palm seemingly touched a membranous-like substance.

With a thought, a black lightning bolt erupted from his palm and enveloped his body as he slowly penetrated that surface.

Upon passing through it, he could immediately feel that the black lighting liquid, which contained destructive energies, had completely disappeared. At that moment, even the surrounding lightning sea had also disappeared.

“This is…”

As Mu Chen curiously looked around, he understood that he was in an isolated space that was independent from the surrounding depths of the lightning sea.

Obviously, this place… would only be used to hide the most precious of objects.

Mu Chen’s heart pumped increasingly fast before he looked at the centre-most position of this isolated space. Immediately, his breathing suddenly froze at this instant, while unconcealable joy and happiness erupted from his face.

At a distance within his sight, a metre wide black lotus stood floating in the dark space. The lotus seemed to be made of liquid that was continuously circulated within itself. Within the centre-most position of the lotus was a black pearl, approximately the size of an infant’s head, that was slowly rotating around.

Indescribable fluctuations radiated from within the pearl, as if it was the origin of the lightning energies of the heavens and earth.

Flames erupted from within Mu Chen’s eyes.

He had finally found the Lightning God’s Pill.

# Chapter 339 – Got It

Within this isolated space, Mu Chen looked at the circular pearl, whose jet-blackness was akin to a black hole, with incomparable joy. From the latter's fluctuations, Mu Chen knew that he had definitely found his target.

The Lightning God's Pill!

"I've finally found it."

Mu Chen suppressed the joy and happiness surging from within his heart, and continued to maintain his vigilance. Rapidly shooting forward, he neared the black floating lotus that seemed to be made of black liquid.

As he near it, Mu Chen was able to discover that the black lotus was seemingly created from black lightning liquid. However, even though it looked like a liquid, it gave people a mysterious feeling that it was something that can't be destroyed. Furthermore, Mu Chen was unable to discover a single trace of destructive fluctuations coming from this black lotus that was formed from the lightning liquid.

This was entirely different from the erratic lightning energies found in the lightning sea that seemed to want to destroy the heavens and wreak the earth.

After staring at the lightning liquid-like black lotus awhile, Mu Chen turned his attention to the Lightning God's Pill. This thing was his primary objective, and he needed to immediately acquire it, since the time he had left was getting shorter.

Extending his hand out, traces of black lightning bolts erupted from the centre of his palm. With a flick of his finger, those lightning bolts shot out, and wrapped around the Lightning God's Pill like a silkworm's cocoon.

Since Mu Chen's Lightning God Physique had absorbed some

energies from the Divine Black Lightning, the Lightning God's Pill did not develop the slightest resistance against the energy of the same origin as itself. Thus, it would be acquired and stored by Mu Chen in an extremely easy fashion.

Seeing everything going so smoothly, Mu Chen sighed a breath of relief. A suction force erupted from his palm, and the Lightning God's Pill, wrapped in the lightning bolt, landed in his hand.

Bang!

However, just as the Lightning God's Pill descended onto his hand, the isolated space instantly started to intensely shake. As the space distorted and warped, signs of it shattering started to appear.

Seeing this spectacle, the expression on Mu Chen's face instantly changed. Instantly, he stored the Lightning God's Pill and was about to leave. However, as his gaze swept across the black liquid lotus floating in the centre, a slight thought entered his mind.

Although he didn't exactly know what use this lightning liquid lotus had, for it to be born in the same place as the Lightning God's Pill, it was definitely not an ordinary object. Since it had appeared before his eyes, why not just conveniently take it? If not, how long do he have to wait for such an opportunity to present itself again?

As Mu Chen's eyes sparkled, he extended his hand. Lightning bolts erupted from the centre of his palm again, and brought the lightning liquid lotus into Mu Chen's hand.

Chi!

After storing the lightning liquid lotus, Mu Chen did not dare to stay there a moment longer and explosively shot out from that place. Passing through the collapsing isolated space, he appeared, once again, in the mysterious depths of the lightning sea.

Chi. Chi.

A black lightning bolt enveloped Mu Chen's body. Ramping up his speed to the very extreme of his capabilities, he crazily shot out

away from the depths of the lightning sea.

Bang!

However, just as he had increased his speed, an astonishingly ferocious roar erupted from the Lightning Spirit, which was being entangled by the Northern Sea Dragon in the air above the lightning sea. Seemingly turning crazy, countless black lightning bolts erupted from it, causing the black waves that were endlessly rushing towards it to explode away from it.

Seeing this sudden eruption of craziness from the Lightning Spirit, happiness filled the Northern Sea Dragon. From the looks of it, Mu Chen should have already found the Lightning God's Pill.

Bang! Bang!

As the Lightning Spirit roared, countless bolts of black lightning, akin to a giant dragons, shot out. Rumbling towards the lightning sea, they attempted to strike and kill Mu Chen, who had stolen the Lightning God's Pill.

However, the Northern Sea Dragon was obviously not going to allow it to strike and kill Mu Chen. Opening its giant mouth, cold black air that was sufficient to freeze space gushed out, causing the lightning bolts to completely freeze up.

Seeing the unending interference of the Northern Sea Dragon, the Lightning Spirit became completely furious. Its gigantic body suddenly blew up, transforming into lightning liquid that blotted the skies. With a scream, it rushed towards the lightning sea. Transforming into a gigantic black bolt of divine lightning that was approximately a mile long, it split apart the lightning sea. With an incomparable speed, it descended to a certain place within the lightning sea.

As Mu Chen was hurrying along in the lightning sea, chilling intent erupted from every pore of his body, as an indescribable aura of death enveloped his heart.

Furiously raising his head, he saw that the lightning sea was being split apart. A black bolt of divine lightning, approximately a mile long, pierced through. Akin to a heavenly punishment, it locked onto the space surrounding him. There was absolutely no way for him to evade now!

Mu Chen's face turned deathly pale. Facing an attack of such a degree, there was simply no way for him to evade or endure it.

Facing this kind of attack, the only thing he could do was to simply wait for his death.

Bang!

However, just when Mu Chen was totally helpless, the lightning sea was suddenly parted by a frightening energy. Black cold air howled and rushed through, and right before the Divine Black Lightning arrived, it enveloped Mu Chen within it.

Chi. Chi.

The black cold air transformed into an iceberg, locking Mu Chen within its depths, who was covered by layers of protection.

Boom!

As the Divine Black Lightning furiously struck the iceberg, the lightning sea instantly erupted, causing lightning liquid thousands of metres high to surge out. Gigantic cracks extended out from the iceberg. However, in the end, it had resisted the furious strike from the Lightning Spirit.

Chi!

The iceberg shot out. In a flash, it rushed through the lightning sea and appeared in the air.

The gigantic and endless body of the Northern Sea Dragon rapidly shrank, before turning into the fragile and delicate look of the bald old man. Descending before Mu Chen, he started to tightly churn lightning sea before him.

Within, the Lightning Spirit furiously roared. Sending lightning liquid thousands of metres tall, it attempted to launch an assault at the bald old man once again.

“Hmph.”

Upon seeing this, the bald old man gave a cold snort. As his hands turned illusionary, the space surrounding the lightning sea suddenly distorted, while black cold air erupt from it. Transforming into an incomparably large black icy prison, the lightning sea was locked within.

Bang! Bang!

Countless black lightning bolts struck the surface of the icy prison; however, it was still unable to shatter and break it apart. Previously, the bald old man was afraid of the Lightning Spirit destroying the Lightning God’s Pill upon sensing its doom; therefore, he had apprehension in using that much strength. Since the apprehension was gone now, the Lightning Spirit, which didn’t have much intelligence, was naturally not his opponent.

After entrapping the Lightning Spirit, the bald old man turned around and grinned at Mu Chen, while rubbing his hands together. None of the imposing aura and manners that was able to shatter the heavens and rend the earth with each action was present in his current appearance.

Mu Chen shot an unhappy glare at him. However, without dilly-dallying, a black lightning bolt appeared within the extended palm. After the lightning bolt dissipated, a Lightning God’s Pill, which was the size of a human’s head, revealed itself.

One could faintly discern a countless number of minute lightning vortices present on the surface of the Lightning God’s Pill. As it continuously rotated, low and deep peals of thunder rang out.

Upon taking the Lightning God’s Pill out, lightning bolts started to form within the surroundings, creating an extremely

mysterious sight.

Upon seeing this Lightning God's Pill, the eyes of the bald old man instantly turned red. With a grab, he took it. Even though black lightning bolts started to strike his withered palm, he did not let it move him a single inch.

"The Lightning God's Pill..."

Emotions gushed out from the bald old man's eyes. For the sake of this Lightning God's Pill, he had been preparing for hundreds of years. Finally, today, he had achieved his wish.

With this Lightning God's Pill, he would be able to take a step forward and break the threshold of 9th Rank Sovereign, and become a true Earth Stage Sovereign!

After feeling emotional for quite a while, the bald old man finally regained his calmness and stored the Lightning God's Pill. Breaking the threshold was obviously not an easy matter. Even though he had managed to get his hands on the Lightning God's Pill, he still needed to make lots of preparations for this attempt.

"Mu Chen, treat this as me owing you a favor," said the bald old man as he looked towards Mu Chen.

With a laugh, Mu Chen replied, "Senior, you're too polite. The benefits I've received are already enough. I'm afraid I can't accept this favor."

Indeed, not only did he receive the complete version of the Lightning God Physique, he also had the Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger, as well as the Spiritual Light Empowerment he was going to receive. This amount of harvest was already incomparably abundant.

"Hey. looks like the benefits that you gained are indeed quite big," said the bald old man with an intentful smile as he shot a look at Mu Chen.

Seeing the look coming from the bald old man, Mu Chen

instantly gave a guilty smile. With a wave of his sleeve, the lightning liquid lotus that he obtained from within the lightning sea appeared in front of him.

“Senior, this is something that I found at the same place as the Lightning God’s Pill. However, I don’t know what it is,” explained Mu Chen as he pointed at the lightning liquid lotus.

As the bald old man stared at the lightning liquid lotus, a ray of light flashed within his eyes as he replied with some shock, “This seems to be a Lightning God’s Lotus…an extremely rare Heavenly Treasure. Similar to the Lightning God’s Pill, there’s only an extremely small chance that it would be born within the lightning energies. I never imagined that this lightning sea would simultaneously give birth to the Lightning God’s Pill and this Lightning God’s Lotus…”

“Lightning God’s Lotus…” Only from his explanation did Mu Chen know what this lightning liquid lotus was. From the name, one can obviously tell that it was something extraordinary.

“Since this Lightning God’s Lotus was found by you, it should belong to you, too,” said the bald old man as he gestured with his hand.

Mu Chen tilted his head forward. Obviously, he had never imagined that the bald old man would be that generous. After all, this Lighting God’s Lotus was not an ordinary item.

“Although the Lightning God’s Lotus is also very rare, it doesn’t have much effect on the current me.”

With a smile, the bald old man explained, “Your luck’s quite good. This Lightning God’s Lotus will have an extremely good effect on the training of your Lightning God’s Physique. In the future, when you practice while sitting on it, you’ll be able to absorb endless amounts of lightning energies from it to temper or fleshly body. This is extremely beneficial, since it would increase the progression of your Lightning God’s Body.”

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen felt slightly happy. This Lightning God's Lotus had such an unexpected godly effect? He was currently worrying that his Lightning God's Physique was too hard to practice and train. He never imagined that this Lightning God's Lotus would help solve some of his troubles.

"Then, thank you very much, Senior." Mu Chen voiced his thanks in a sincere tone. Although it was somewhat dangerous, the benefits that he had obtained was sufficient to warrant him to undertake them. He believed that there would be countless people lunging and fighting for their lives to offer their help, should the bald old man put the word out. However, it was a pity that there weren't many people of this level who would dare to endure the Divine Black Lightning with their bodies and survive to tell the tale...

Thinking about it, if not for this point, the Northern Sea Dragon would not have come to find him.

Shaking his head, the bald old man gave a wave of his sleeve, grabbed Mu Chen and left the last level of the Lightning Territory to a mountain in the 9th level.

The space over there wasn't as pressurising as the previous level. Although lightning rivers were present everywhere as they floated around, it was countless times better than the last level of the Lightning Territory.

"Next up..."

The bald old man gave a faint smile as he looked towards Mu Chen.

"As with my promise, I'll help you with your Spiritual Light Empowerment."

# Chapter 340 – Accepting the Spiritual Light Empowerment

"Spiritual Light Empowerment..."

Hearing those three words, a trace of excitement flashed uncontrollably within Mu Chen's heart. Although his harvest was abundant during this trip, it was clearly the Spiritual Light Empowerment that moved Mu Chen the most.

Compared to the Lightning God's Physique, which required a long time of practice and training, the Spiritual Light Empowerment was able to cause his strength to advance and progress in the shortest amount of time without any side effects.

As of now, his strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. Compared with Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest, who were at the Heavenly Completion Stage, this disparity was too great. Within the Hunting War, after risking his life to fight, he had only managed to achieve a reluctant victory. Furthermore, it was only due to Gu Tianyan not being the slightest bit overbearing. Otherwise, if they had truly fought till the end, Mu Chen truly did not have the confidence to achieve victory.

After all, the disparity of the Heavenly Transformation Stage to the Heavenly Completion Stage was truly too large.

However, if his strength was able to progress by some lengths, he would not need to suffer that much when faced with a Heavenly Completion Stage opponent.

"Bring out your Spiritual Light." said the bald old man with a grin. After receiving the Lightning God's Pill, the bald old man's mood was extremely good.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen flicked his finger, causing a bright and resplendent clump of light to shoot out, before transforming into a sparkling and transparent gem. Within the gem, boundless

pure Spiritual Energy continuously radiated from it.

After taking this Spirit Crystal out, Mu Chen had also taken all the other Spirit Knight's Spirit Crystals out. Although their effects weren't as strong as this Spirit King's Spirit Crystal, no matter how small they were, they were still meat.

However, the bald old man did not care about those Spirit Knight's Spirit Crystals, and only extended his hand to grab the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal. Nodding his head, he said, "The Spiritual Light World is somewhat miraculous. The Spiritual Aura that it condenses appear to be extremely pure. Using this for empowerment truly can't be anymore suitable."

Although the Spiritual Aura of the heavens and the earth were boundless and majestic, they would always be contaminated by other sources of energy. If one wanted to absorb them, one would have to do so after refining them. However, the Spiritual Light World was different. Although it was not a large space, the Spiritual Energy that was condensed by it was clearly much more pure, compared to the Spiritual Aura of the outside world.

"Take the Lightning God's Lotus out. With the assistance of that thing, the results of your Spiritual Light Empowerment would improve by a notch," said the bald old man.

Hearing that, Mu Chen felt some surprise and joy. Looks like the Lightning God's Lotus truly was a treasure for training and cultivation.

With a wave of his sleeve, the Lightning God's Lotus appeared and floated in the air. Black lightning liquid slowly circulated around like water. Nevertheless, it still maintained its lotus shape.

With a move, Mu Chen sat down of the top of the Lightning God's Lotus. As he made contact with the Lightning God's Lotus, he instantly felt waves of lightning energies quietly erupting out, before finally entering his body.

The energy of Divine Black Lightning was contained within these lightning energies. However, it was far from the erratic lightning bolts that struck him before. Slowly permeating Mu Chen’s body, bit by bit, they passed through his muscles, meridians, blood vessels and bones, leaving behind a feeling of numbness.

At this moment, the Lightning God’s Physique within Mu Chen’s body seemed to have activated on its own accord. His entire body was akin to a voracious wolf, greedily devouring those lightning energies. Relying on those energies, Mu Chen started to refine his body.

Unable to bear it, Mu Chen comfortably exhaled a clump of white qi. The white air even contained minute traces of lightning bolts sparkling around.This Lightning God’s Lotus was truly a good treasure! This kind of practice was truly countless times more comfortable than being struck by the previous lightning!

With the flick of his finger, the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal instantly shot out of the bald old man’s hand, before finally floating above Mu Chen’s head. In the next moment, the Spiritual Lights adorned Mu Chen’s body were akin to the starry sky.

A wave of boundless pure Spiritual Aura spread out. Like a faint mist, it enveloped Mu Chen within.

“Prepare to start.”

With a wave of his sleeve, black chilling air erupted from within. Violently sweeping the Spiritual Lights together, rays of brilliance instantly started to grow brighter as the Spiritual Lights were completely connected to one another. Finally, they shot straight into the Spirit King's Spirit Crystal.

Bang!

Strong and powerful Spiritual Energy exploded from the Spirit Crystal. Due to its purity, they had seemingly formed drops of Spiritual Energy liquid on the surface of the Spirit Crystal,

sparkling with dazzling brilliance.

Whoosh!

As the bald old man's withered finger gave a tap on space, a boundless ray of Spiritual Energy suddenly shot out. Finally, descending from the sky, it enveloped Mu Chen, who was sitting on the Lightning God's Lotus, within it.

Boundless and pure Spiritual Energy gushed into Mu Chen's body like flooded waters.

This Spiritual Energy was too pure. Absolutely not requiring any kind of refinement, it was completely sucked in by the wide open, small mouth of the Spirit sitting within Mu Chen's aurasea.

A Spiritual Energy halo appeared around the Spirit's body, while boundless Spiritual Energy rippled within every one of Mu Chen's meridians and bones. However, following the influx of more and more Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen was able to feel that quite a bit of Spiritual Energy was starting to escape from his body.

This was a very common occurrence, as no one could completely absorb all of the Spiritual Energy provided by the Spiritual Light Empowerment. Seemingly half of all the Spiritual Energy entering Mu Chen's body was escaping Mu Chen's absorption.

Regarding the escaping Spiritual Energy, although Mu Chen felt pain in his heart, there was absolutely nothing he could do about it. This was obviously not something he could manage.

Naturally, although he could do nothing, that did not mean that the bald old man could not do so.

Upon seeing the Spiritual Energy that was escaping from Mu Chen's body, the forehead of the bald old man started to wrinkle up. With him supporting Mu Chen's Spiritual Light Empowerment, that Spiritual Energy still dared to be so disobedient. If he could allow Mu Chen to enjoy only half of the Spiritual Light Empowerment, that would truly make him lose

face.

“All of you, go back in for me.”

Pointing his finger out, a cold black stream instantly shot towards Mu Chen’s body. In the next moment, a icy-black layer extended out, wrapping Mu Chen within.

As Mu Chen was being wrapped by the icy layer, the Spiritual Energy that had attempted to escape was being forced back once again into Mu Chen’s body.

This was the benefit of having stronger people to support one during one’s Spiritual Light Empowerment. With the bald old man’s powerful strength, he was able to easily use the most perfect method to help Mu Chen complete his Spiritual Light Empowerment. As for the other elders, they were obviously unable to achieve such a complete impenetrability.

Since the Spiritual Energy was being forced back into his body, Mu Chen was able sense them once again, causing him to involuntarily sigh in admiration. Truly worthy of the Northern Sea Dragon. He was actually able to force the Spiritual Energy back into Mu Chen’s body without harming him or losing any of the Spiritual Energy.

With the bald old man supporting his Spiritual Light Empowerment, Mu Chen was able to release all of his vigilance. Starting to focus, Mu Chen activated his Spirit, and completely absorbed all of the Spiritual Energy that was endlessly streaming in.

Upon seeing that Mu Chen, who was sitting on the Lightning God’s Lotus, had completely sank into a training state, the bald old man faintly nodded his head. He did not choose a barbaric method of empowerment. That kind of empowerment would be too disadvantageous, and with his status and seniority, he would naturally not opt for that method. Furthermore, it would disappoint Mu Chen too much. The latter was able to help him

retrieve the Lightning God's Pill, and this was something that still made him feel gratitude.

Therefore, the bald old man did not mind the increase in time and concentration needed from him. He had chosen to use the most perfect and most economical method; every Spiritual Energy pulse that entered Mu Chen's body would be at the exact upper limit of what the latter could absorb. Next up, when Mu Chen completely absorbed the last pulse, another pulse of pure Spiritual Energy would enter his body. This was seemingly endless and would not show the slightest feeling of sluggishness. This way, it would allow Mu Chen to gradually enter a deep state of training. With that, the results of the empowerment would be even better.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the people with the capability of achieve such a perfect control weren't many.

As for the Spiritual Light Empowerment of an ordinary student, they were the lowest end method. That method doesn't even require anybody to take action. At the instant where they left the Spiritual Light World, the Spiritual Light would automatically radiate out and enter their bodies.

Naturally, the wastage of this method could be around 60 to 70%, with that percentage dissipating away.

As the bald old man sat in the air, his eyes tightly stared at Mu Chen, who was undergoing the Spiritual Light Empowerment. The method of empowerment he had employed was extremely wasteful of time. However, anybody would neglect such a small and unremarkable problem.

"Next up, let's quietly wait for this Spiritual Light Empowerment to end."

The bald old man gave a lazy stretch. Looks like for the time being, he had to momentarily guard this area.

——

Time quietly elapsed within this 9th level of the Lightning Territory. Unknowingly, an entire month had passed by.

Within this month, Mu Chen's body had seemingly entered into a completely deep sleep, without the slightest bit of movement. Even his breathing had been reduced to the bare minimum, akin to a dying person.

However, although his breaths was getting weaker and weaker, anyone would be able to sense that the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from within Mu Chen's body was getting more vigorous and overbearing, day by day.

Obviously, he had received an extremely huge benefit in this Spiritual Light Empowerment.

From the side, the bald old man was casually sitting down. Feeling bored, he gave a lazy stretch. He had been taking care of Mu Chen for an entire month. However, from the looks of it, there seems to be no sign of this ending.

"This brat..."

The bald old man muttered, before shaking his head. With a spread of his palm, the Lightning God's Pill appeared within in a flash. Grinning, he gently rubbed it around, while a drunk expression appeared on his face.

As long as he possessed this Lightning God's Pill, even this kind of boring wait would become interesting.

——

As time continued to quietly lapse, it had been over a month. Due to the Spiritual Light Empowerment, Mu Chen had disappeared from within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This caused doubt in a lot of students. After all, the past Spiritual Light Empowerments did not seem to need such a long period of time.

Naturally, the news of the Northern Sea Dragon personally helping Mu Chen with his Spiritual Light Empowerment did not

spread. Therefore, this allowed for the many ordinary students a reason to be envious.

In this period of time, the shock brought along by the Hunting War gradually quietened down. The intense fluctuations that were initially brought about by the changes in the Heavenly Rankings had also started to become still. As various dark horses revealed themselves, the places on the Heavenly Rankings had also changed accordingly.

People wanting to cause a gigantic change in the Heavenly Rankings might have to wait for the next Hunting War to start. At that time, however, there might be another batch of dark horses that would appear.

However, even though the mass knew that dark horses might appear, for a dark horse like that monstrous talent, Mu Chen, to reappear, that might be rather difficult.

He had the strength of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, and yet he was able to defeat a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. From the view of many people, this was simply an inconceivable matter.

As the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy started to gradually turn peaceful, some other matters caused waves to surge within the spiritual academy once again.

# Chapter 341 – Academy Exchange

The craze brought forth by the Hunting War had lasted for approximately one month in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before it finally started to dissipate. As the Heavenly Rankings headed towards stability, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy headed towards its usual peacefulness once again.

In this peace, there were some matters whose announcements had attracted people to enthusiastically discuss. One of them being that Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had collaborated and formed a team, and had taken the task of killing Mo Longzi from the Mission Hall.

This matter had immediately caused an uproar in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Mo Longzi's terrible name could be said to be very fierce within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It's said that as long as those students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that were training in the outside world ran into him, almost all of them would either be sadistically tortured to death, or suffer an extremely miserable death. This caused an implacable hatred within the student masses. However, although Mo Longzi was savage and cruel, his strength was exceedingly tyrannical. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the number of people who were able to be a threat to him would only be two, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

In the past, Shen Cangsheng would head out alone, by himself. However, he had returned without any results. This time, he had finally collaborated with Li Xuantong. Obviously, they had decided on a plan that they had to get rid of this poison of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The 1st and 2nd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings collaborating was something beyond worth seeing. However, it was helpless for the masses, as they were unable to follow the two, and could only

quietly wait within the academy for the good news. All of them believed that Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, this astonishing and absolute duo, would definitely not return with empty hands.

However, it's obvious that this kind of news would not come so soon. Therefore, approximately ten days after Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had left the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, much of this craze had also gradually faded away to peacefulness.

However, after this matter, there was another one that had broken the peacefulness of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, yet again.

It was well-known by everyone that there were countless spiritual academies within the Great Thousand World. Although the names of the Five Great Academies had the greatest reputation, this did not mean that there were truly no other spiritual academies whose strength was on par with the Five Great Academies.

There were a few similarly strong spiritual academies whose strength were not weaker than the Five Great Academies. However, their reputation and fame were, all in all, somewhat weaker. Therefore, when people often talked about spiritual academies, the Five Great Academies would be the most easily remembered by people.

Due to this point, it had undoubtedly stimulated those strong academies that had the qualifications to challenge the Five Great Academies, but were somewhat only lacking in fame and prestige. They had thought of all sorts of methods, and searched for geniuses all over the place in an attempt rely on them to promote the academy's name as those geniuses rose.

Naturally, this kind of fame and reputation had to rely on the namesake of the "Five Great Academies".

Therefore, this had lead to the creation of the so-called "Academy

Exchange". Simply speaking, after a certain period of time, there would be some strong academies who would bring their teams towards the "Five Great Academies" and use them as a pretext to call for students to compare notes. From its appearance, it looked good-natured. However, the competitive and provocative intent contained within was already self-evident.

Although the "Five Great Academies" were clear about these so-called "Exchanges", they did not have any means to reject them. After all, their opposition's reasons were truly high sounding and dignified. Being the Five Great Academies, their prestige and reputations were at stake. Therefore, they did not have any reason to reject.

Similarly, after more than a month since the end of the Hunting War, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy welcomed an Academy Exchange. This undeniably caused the peaceful Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to become restless and disturbed once again.

Quite a few outstanding students started to roll their sleeves up for action and were prepared to reveal their abilities in this Academy Exchange. They wanted to let those fellows understand that the quality of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't something that any random spiritual academy could compare to.

Being one of the Five Great Academies, they naturally had their own kind of arrogance. Perhaps, they were very ordinary within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, regardless of that, they had all surmounted all difficulties to be able to become students of this academy. This was what they drew their arrogance from.

Therefore, this Academy Exchange was something the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had risen their heads and looked forward to, unhurriedly as it arrived.

This year, the academy that was undergoing the Exchange with

the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy. It was a strong spiritual academy that sat within the Ancient Cauldron Continent. It's said that the fame and reputation of the Ancient Cauldron Continent was lower than the Northern Heavenly Continent. However, underestimating a spiritual academy that took its name from the continent it was on due to this lower fame and reputation might be a rather stupid thing to do.

Therefore, during this period, all the students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would pay attention to this matter. The degree of attention had even exceeded that of the Hunting War.

After all, regardless of the changes that happened due to the Hunting War, the most outstanding person was still a person of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, in such an Exchange, if they were to lose, that would sully the fame and reputation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Regardless of a single defeat, all of their faces would turn ugly.

Therefore, at this time, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were extraordinarily cooperative. Regardless of the contradictions within the internal factions, they had to deal with this Exchange before settling their disputes. If not, they would incur the despise and contempt of all the students.

As a result, this exchange had proceeded as planned.

The location of the Exchange was set up in the northern square. It could be seen that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had regarded this exchange exceedingly important. After all, this concerned the fame and reputation of their spiritual academy.

To a founding spiritual academy, fame and reputation were very important matters.

For such an exchange, to put it nicely, one can call it as somewhat of a little public shaming venue. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy was unable to defend this place, it would have quite a bit negative effect towards the fame and reputation of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Following the launch of this Exchange, the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy became more solemn and serious. This was due to the sensations they got from the students of the Ancient Cauldron Academy that had come over. These students seemed to have undergone rigorous screening and selection process, as none of them appeared to be easy to be dealt with.

This exchange had continued for three whole days.

On the first day of the exchange, both sides had sent their experts out. However, none of them were able to gain any superiority. A few of the outstanding and famous students on the Heavenly Rankings obtained some victories, as well as some losses. On a whole, the situation could be said as being stable.

However, this result caused the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to withdraw their contempt and scorn. This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy had come prepared. Added with the fact that their 1st Rank and 2nd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, were outside of the academy on a mission to kill Mo Longzi, obviously, they could not come back on such a short notice. Furthermore, Mu Chen, who had achieved widespread fame and stepped into the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings, had mysteriously disappeared for over a month, with no one knowing where he went.

With their three strongest people not present, if they continued with their negligence, wanting to achieve victory in this Exchange might truly become a difficult task.

Thus, on the second day, the top ten ranks within than Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings, He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan and the rest of the top ranked

students all came out. With such a lineup, Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy final managed to achieve an overwhelming victory and suppressed the grandeur of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy back down.

However, this kind of suppression only lasted for a day. On the third day, the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy did not continue to send out more outstanding students. In fact, they had only sent one person out.

However, it was this one person that had started his challenge from the 9th Rank of the Heavenly Rankings. Within a short span of a day, under the countless horrified gazes of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, he had successively defeat Mu Fengyang, Xu Huang, Zhao Qingshan, Su Xuan and the rest of the outstanding students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in an uproar due to that.

More than half of the top ten within the Heavenly Rankings that took action were eliminated by that person. Moreover, that person's actions were very fierce and vicious. Seemingly all of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students that lost to him had suffered serious injuries. This kind of violent and vicious way had incurred the combined wrath and anger of the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, they still had no way to deal with that person's strength.

Therefore, they could only place their final hope on the shoulders of He Yao, who had yet to lose.

However, in the end, this kind of hope was still mercilessly shattered.

He Yao was able to contend with the opponent, and had used all of his means and methods. However, due to a wrong move, he still regretfully lost. Therefore, the top ten of the Heavenly Rankings

had seemingly been completely wiped out.

The voices from the entire side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were instantly extinguished. Obviously, no one thought that there would actually be such a situation in this Exchange.

On the contrary, the atmosphere on the side of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy was in high spirits. Some of their students already had contempt and disdain in their gazes as they looked at the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In their hearts, they had truly believed that their Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy had already exceeded the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in terms of strength, and was already sufficient to replace this academy from one of the Five Great Academies.

After this fight, every student from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy came to know the vicious person that had seemingly caused a complete wipeout to the top ten within the Heavenly Rankings. It was a youth by the name of Liu Zheng. His talent was absolutely astonishing. Furthermore, what made people feel shocked and astounded was that he was once chosen by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, in the end, he was unable to pass through the evaluations. After being eliminated, he had switched to the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy..

Yet, this student that was previously being eliminated had appeared once again in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This was an unexpectedly present scenario. With such a mocking irony, it caused a fiery pain within the hearts of all the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

No wonder why this fellow would be that vicious when he made his moves! He was relying on this to take revenge on the fact that their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had no eyes!

The students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual ACademy

were all furious and angry. Those evaluations could not be considered as completely fair, as it relied on both strength and luck. Although this Liu Zheng had shocking talent, what he was lacking was only some luck. Speaking of that, there simply wasn't anyone to blame. However, from the viciousness shown in his attacks, he appeared to have excessive grievances.

Feeling furious, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students continued to search for their finest students that have yet to make their move. However, following that, they discovered that other than the trio of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Mu Chen being missing, there seemed to be no student who was stronger than He Yao in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy...

This result caused all of them to tear up. Could it be that this Exchange would end with such a depressing result? If that were to happen, once the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy leaves, they might immediately proclaim about it wantonly. At that moment, the fame and reputation of their Northern Heavens Spiritual ACademy would suffer a serious blow. This might even affect their prestige, as well as their ranking within the Five Great Academies...

However, hope would always inadvertently appear. Just as all of the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were in tears, Su Xuan had recommended a person that had incurred the agreement of the masses.

That person was naturally the only one, other than Mu Chen and the other missing two, within the top ten of the Heavenly Rankings that had yet to take action.

That person, was the one and only Luo Li.

# Chapter 342 – Liu Zheng

Northern Square.

As of now, this square, which was devoid of people after the end of the Hunting War, had once again become the focal point of countless people, due to the arrival of the Exchange.

The attention it gained seemed even more fervent and passionate that the Hunting War.

This was due to the whole Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy unanimously gathering together to face a foreign opponent.

The Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy was already pressing the top of their heads. If they were not able to return the expression that filled their faces back to their opponents, they might truly become the laughingstock of the Five Great Academies, and would receive the ridicule of everyone.

This was absolutely not something that the arrogant Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could endure.

A sea of humans pervaded the vast and expansive square. Over 90% of the people there were students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only within the northwest corner was a small group of people that were inharmoniously present.

They were the students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy.

Those students wore green-coloured robes, with males and females present. However, the majority of them had their arms folded in front of their chests, while a cold smirk appeared on their faces as they looked towards the large and imposing number of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. So what if you have more people? You're still unable to defeat Senior Brother Liu Zheng! In this Exchange, our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy will step on your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

If they were able to step on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and have a prominent and outstanding performance in the Great Academy Competition half a year later, then, maybe their Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy might be able to take over the place of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

“Senior Brother Liu Zheng, you just have to defend us for one more day for our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy to achieve victory! At that time, let’s see if they have anything else to say!”

“Hmph, all of these Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students are just reluctant to admit their mistakes, like saying that their strongest students aren’t around. Senior Brother Liu Zheng had been fighting since yesterday till now. So those so-called ‘Top Ten” of your Heavenly Rankings, aren’t they just completely useless?”

“Exactly, even if the top three of your Heavenly Ranking came today, Senior Liu Zheng will make them scram with their tails between their legs like usual!”

“Haha.”

“……”

The mockery and loud laughter coming from those Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students rang out with restraint, which immediately incurred the wrath and fury of the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Ever since the appearance of that Liu Zheng, their attitudes had appeared extremely rampant. However, due to the drop in results, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students had bellies full of fire, they were unable to let it out, with the only thing they could do was let their eyes sprout with flames.

On the square before them stood a man in green robes, whose his arms were crossed before him. With his back ramrod straight, he stared indifferently at the furious Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students, while a cold smirk appeared at the corner of his

mouth.

This is the spiritual academy that I've dreamt of entering? From the looks of it, it doesn't seem as awesome as in my dreams.

He wanted to let the people of the Northerns Heavens Spiritual Academy know that losing him, Liu Zheng, showed how blind they were!

Within the very front of the student masses of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the current gathering spot for the most elite people within the student body. He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang and the rest of the veteran elite students, as well as those new elites like Zhao Qingshan, had all crowded around there. However, at this time, the expressions of their faces weren't a pretty sight to behold.

"Su Xuan, have you already sent people to inform Luo Li? Will she come?" asked Xu Huang in a low voice as he looked at Su Xuan. As of now, other than Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, as well Mu Chen, who had mysteriously disappeared for over a month, of the top ten within the Heavenly Rankings, there was only Luo Li, whom hadn't taken action, left.

"I've already sent the message out. Although Luo Li usually doesn't like to fight with people, this matter concerns the face of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. She should come." Su Xuan replied while nodding her small head.

"Is there any use for her to come? This Liu Zheng's strength should be at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. He's not weaker than Li Xuantong. Without speaking about Luo Li, even if Mu Chen comes, I'm afraid that he might not even be able to achieve a victory. After all, this isn't a friendly comparison." After all that had happened, He Yao had maintained some distance from Mu Chen. With Luo Li having that kind of relationship with the latter, although he knew that the situation before him was suitable, he still could not resist to mention it.

Su Xuan shot an indifferent glare at him and said, “If you think you’re capable, all of us will let you continue.”

Hearing her words, He Yao turned sluggish. Clenching his teeth, he turned his head around. Although he was exceedingly close to the Heavenly Completion Stage, he was still unable to take that step forward. If not, he would have already defeated Liu Zheng.

Silence filled the crowd as everyone felt slightly sullen. These people from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly knew when to pick a challenge. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had just left the academy, while that Mu Chen had mysteriously disappeared. They had chosen such a time to send their attack, causing them to be caught unprepared and simply unable to muster any defenses.

While provocative and furious gazes were exchanged between the students from both academies, their higher-ups were both similarly seated on the chief podium within the northern square. Although the atmosphere there wasn’t as incisive and competitive compared the atmosphere between the students, it was clear that there wasn’t any friendliness, either.

“Haha, Headmaster Tai Cang, looks like our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy has come at an unfortunate time for you guys. The talent of that brat, Liu Zheng is extremely high. However, he’s too arrogant. I’ve originally wanted him to meet up with the most elite students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and rely on them to file down his haughtiness,” said a rather fleshly man with a grin as he sat on the chief podium.

“You must be joking, Dean Fei. Exchanges are only small competitions to compare notes. When mutually comparing notes, finding one’s weaknesses would be enough. Why bother about filing down other’s haughtiness, right?” Dean Tai Cang replied with a faint smile.

The fatty who appeared to be a merchant was the Dean of the

Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, and was named Fei Qingsong. Although his appearance wasn't awe-raising, he was a figure at the extreme peak within the Ancient Cauldron Continent. If not, he wouldn't be able to become a Dean of an academy. Therefore, anyone who underestimated him due to his appearance might get killed with a single strike from him, without knowing exactly what had happened.

"Dean Tai Cang's bearing is better," said Fei Qingsong while still beaming at both corners. Patting his big and coarse palm onto the table, he said, "Looks like our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy has an unfair advantage in this Exchange. Please feel relaxed, Dean Tai Cang. When I go back, I'll reprimand those little fellows, and make them tightly seal their mouths up. Haha."

A faint smile still lingered on Dean Tai Cang's face without any warmness or rage. Only the Elder sitting beside him started to frown and wrinkle his brows. That was the Hall Master of the Punishment Hall, Mo You. Faintly moving his lips, a sliver of a sound rang within Dean Tai Cang's ears.

"Dean, I've already passed this news to Lord Northern Sea. However, as of now, there hasn't been any reply...and I don't know exactly whether Mu Chen will appear..."

Hearing those words, Dean Tai Cang faintly nodded his head without being detected.

"Dean Tai Cang, are there any other students that want to make a move from your North Heavens Spiritual Academy? If not..."Fei Qingsong said with a face beaming with smiles. However, before he could finish his statement, his eyes started to faintly narrow. Turning his head towards the skies in the northern direction, he saw a streak of light shooting over. Like a graceful swan, it landed within the northern square under the countless gazes from the surroundings.

As the light dissipated, it revealed the slender physique of a

young girl. Wearing an outfit that was black as ink, with silvery hair flowing down from her head, and a delicate and exquisite face, she brought along an extremely unique aura that made her seem to be independent of the world around her as she appeared within everyone line-of-sight.

The originally clamoring northern square seemingly turned much quieter at this instant. Regardless of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy or the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, astonishment and shock flashed within the eyes of the students from both sides.

“She’s arrived!”

Upon seeing this, a tremor went through the minds of Su Xuan and the rest.

“What? There truly isn’t any other student left from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that has yet to make a move? I’ve waited for so long just for a girl?” Liu Zheng was also faintly stunned by Luo Li’s appearance. However, in the next moment, bring along cold laughter, his voice rang out.

Luo Li’s clear and limpid eyes quietly stared at Liu Zheng. However, she did not respond with any words, with only her jade-like hand slowly covering her Luo Shen Sword.

“10th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Luo Li, seeks your guidance.” Luo Li’s gentle and clear voice slowly fluttered throughout the square.

“10th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings? Even your 4th Rank, He Yao, had lost under the hands of Senior Brother Liu Zheng. What can she, the 10th Rank, do?” At this time, some of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students managed to regain their clarity, before tugging their mouths. Discussions rang out in succession as they thought, Could it really be the honey trap of the legends?

While the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students were undergoing their discussions, a gaze quietly shot out from within their ranks. Finally, it converged on the lovable body of the absolutely beautiful girl with an outstanding character within the square.

There seemed to be a peculiar and ruminating smile contained within that gaze.

Luo Li, you really are here...

Within the square, Liu Zheng coldly stared at Luo Li, whom was elegantly standing not too far way, before slowly saying, “I’m a person that doesn’t know how to show mercy. Don’t assume that I’ll let you off just because you’re pretty. Therefore, if you don’t wish to damage your face, it’s best that you step down, now.”

Luo Li’s eyebrows faintly bunched up before replying in a gentle voice, “Please.”

Hearing her reply, Liu Zheng’s expression gradually grew cold. With a cold snort, he took a furious step forward. Instantly, boundless Spiritual Energy shot to the sky as overbearing Spiritual Energy pressure came enveloping over.

Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

The expressions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students turned solemn and grave. This Liu Zheng was truly fierce and vicious. However, his strength was also extremely tyrannical.

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest were also staring at the square. Even they had never seen Luo Li truly take action before. However, she was able to collaborate with Mu Chen to kill a Spirit King. Thinking about that, her true strength shouldn’t be just that little bit that was revealed. Naturally, they were also unable to fully determine exactly how strong Luo Li was. Only when she truly took action would they be able to tell.

I hope she has also concealed her strength.

Su Xuan thought as she gave a soft sigh in her heart. That Liu Zheng's moves were extremely heavy. If he hurts Luo Li, at that time, when Mu Chen arrives, no one knows how mad and furious he would be. As of now, she can only hope that Luo Li's strength would be able to give all of them a surprise.

Standing arrogantly in the square, boundless Spiritual Energy swept out from Liu Zheng. Staring at Luo Li, a cold and sinister light erupted from his eyes. As long as he was able to defeat this final opponent, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should have no words left to say, right?

"The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is nothing more than this."

A ridiculing smile appeared at the corner of Liu Zheng's mouth as he said in a soft voice, "Since I'm unable to meet up with your top three of your so-called 'Heavenly Rankings', I'll just have to step on them one by one during the Great Academy Competition half a year later."

Hearing his words, a chilling intent flashed within Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes. Staring at Liu Zheng, her jade-like hand slowly grasped the Luo Shen Sword tightly. In the next moment, everyone could feel a similarly boundless Spiritual Energy sweeping out from her body, akin to a storm.

The density and strength of the Spiritual Energy had similarly reached the Heavenly Completion Stage!

The eyes of countless Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students instantly grew wide open. No one would have guessed that other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, the 10th Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Luo Li, would actually have such astonishing strength!

She's simply even better than Mu Chen at concealment!

However, Luo Li treated the countless shocked gazes that were

converged on her as nothing. Staring at Liu Zheng, whose face had similarly changed, her clear and cold voice, followed by the the melodious and sharp ring of a sword, resounded across the horizon.

“To deal with you, I only need…”

“One sword!”

Boundless Sword Qi rushed through the skies.

# Chapter 343 – The Might of One Sword

Buzz!

A clear sword ringing sound accompanied the boundless Sword Aura as it shot directly through the clouds. The swift and fierce Sword Aura undulated in the skies, causing the skies to seemingly turn dark and gloomy.

The originally clamoring sounds that pervaded the air in the square had stopped upon this happening.

Regardless of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy or the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, the faces on all of the student had a shadow of graveness. No one would have imagined that this young lady that seemed outstanding in both her temperament and beauty would actually be able to display such an astonishing and imposing manner.

However, with such strength, how was she still ranked as the number ten on the Heavenly Rankings?

This was absolutely enough to target the top three rankings!

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest were all in shock with amazement displayed on their faces. This was especially true for He Yao, he had a vexatious expression on his face. Amongst the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there were merely two people who could be said to have truly stepped into the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Those two were Shen Changsheng and Li Xuantong. Even Mu Chen, who had various methods and exceedingly strong combat prowess, was too far away from the Heavenly Completion Stage with regards to his true power.

Originally, He Yao had assumed that Mu Chen would be the third person to step into the Heavenly Completion Stage. However, who could have thought that Luo Li, someone who had extremely little

occasions to cross hands with people and someone that revealed her true strength in extremely few occasions, would actually possess such frightening strength?

This pair of lovers were simply abnormal!

Were they not afraid of their diaphragms feeling unbearable by hiding like that? There were a few people who were secretly clenching their teeth, because this was obviously quite a big blow to them.

However, other than those few depressed people, the absolute majority of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students had joy and happiness rushing out of their eyes. Luo Li's strength was this strong, in that case, that Liu Zhen could no longer continue to be that insolent anymore!

"Hmph, a single sword? You're too arrogant!"

Under the innumerable attentive gazes from the surroundings, the startled expression of Liu Zhen disappeared as he snorted with a cold laugh. This Luo Li's strength had truly far exceeded his expectations; however, it was still at the Initial level of the Heavenly Completion Stage. If she wanted to defeat him by using a single sword, that was simply an enormous joke!

However, Luo Li seemed to have not heard his cold laughter. Clenching the Luo Shen Sword in her jade-like hands, her slender fingers ran across the sword sheath. In the next instant, a cold light blossomed as the Luo Shen Sword left its sheath once again.

Upon its appearance, the entire world seemed to have turned cold and frosty.

A Sword Aura blotted the skies as a 300 metre long gargantuan light blade shot into the skies. The boundless and majestic Sword Aura started to condense at an astonishing speed. In a short few breaths, the 300 metre long gargantuan light sword started to condense and form a river of Sword Aura.

With its appearance, a frightening Sword Aura started to radiate from it.

As he looked at the river of Sword Aura, there was a faint change in the expression on Liu Zhen's face. A chilling intent arose from his skin as an extremely dangerous fluctuation started to erupt from his heart.

Seeing that, Luo Li gently strutted forward. With a light tremble of her jade-like hands, the longsword in her hand was gently thrusted out.

Buzz!

The longsword buzzed and screamed as if something was resonating with the sword. In the sky, the river of Sword Aura started to surge downwards, turning into an eye-catching light beam. Carrying along an indescribably swift and fierce Sword Aura, it swept fiercely towards Liu Zhen.

A single sword turned into the Luo River.

Bang!

Ten thousand strands of Sword Aura surged forward, and before the river of Sword Aura descended towards the ground, the earth was already sliced to a disastrous state. At this time Luo Li had displayed all of her strength and put everything into this move. Therefore, this time, it was much stronger than the previous time in the Hunting War!

Liu Zhen raised his head, the image of the river of Sword Aura reflecting off his pupils. At this time, his gaze had turned extremely grave as he thought, This single sword truly is astonishing.

However, wanting to make him, Liu Zhen admit defeat was not that easy to do!

A cold glint surged out from within his eyes and with a grasp of his hand, a scarlet spear suddenly appeared within it. From the

spear in his hand, an erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuation swept out, like flames.

“Fire God’s War Spear!”

All of the Spiritual Energy exploded from within his body without a trace of restraint as scarlet-coloured Spiritual Energy shot up towards the sky. With a frontal thrust of his spear, the air within the region seemed to have been pierced through and was ruptured by it.

BANG!

Everyone present could see the dreadful flames erupting explosively from within Liu Zhen’s body as a scarlet light engulf the heavens and earth like the rage of the fire god. Carrying along torrential amounts of angry flames, it violently collided against the river of Sword Aura.

BANG!

At the instant of the collision, the Sword Aura and the scarlet light exploded. The Sword Aura wrecked havoc across the area, causing the earth to instantaneous shatter and crumble as a gigantic fissure rapidly extended on the ground.

At this moment, the Scarlet light suddenly shattered.

As the Sword Aura swept across, it actually managed to thoroughly slice and break down the scarlet-coloured Spiritual Energy that was akin to flames.

A dumbstruck look appeared within Liu Zhen’s eyes as he thought, Her Sword Aura is so swift and fierce and it has far exceeded my expectations.

His hand started to tremble as he explosively retreated, not daring to have the resolve to face that sharp edge again.

Swish!

However, just as he started to retreat, and his imposing manner

had weakened, a beautiful, graceful figure shot towards him with. The Sword Aura that blotted the skies seemed to follow the beautiful figure as it started to surge towards her.

Akin to lightning, the Sword Aura tore space apart and headed directly towards Liu Zhen as he stared at it with an aghast look.

That speed was too quick, and he could only watch helplessly as the sharp edge rapidly grew larger in his view; however, he did not have a single trace of energy left to evade it.

As the sword light swept forward, the body of the sword, which rippled like water, patted Liu Zhen's chest before the Sword Aura erupted out.

BANG!

Liu Zheng flew across the sky, before landing disastrously on the outside of the arena. A mouthful of fresh blood violent spurted out as his face turned deathly pale, while his eyes became filled with terror and relief that he had survived.

He had previously tasted the feeling of death when the Sword Aura struck him. If Luo Li wanted to kill him, he would have absolutely no way to live.

The victor had appeared too quickly.

The grace of that single sword was only felt by a minority of people. However when Liu Zhen disastrously landed on the ground, everyone present already knew who the victor was. Therefore, cheers of joy that shook the world instantly rang out from the location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest wore expressions of astonishment as they stared at the beautiful figure in the arena with somewhat peculiar gazes. Who would have thought that this young lady, who had only followed quietly behind Mu Chen, would actually hide such strength?

All of them had underestimated her.

She did not only possess a beauty and temperament that stole people's breaths away, her strength was equally breathtaking.

"She truly is formidable," exclaimed Xu Huang with a sigh. This batch of Freshmen were truly outstanding. Having one Mu Chen was already enough, and now, who would have thought that this girl, who was usually quiet, would actually be that terrifying?

It looked like she had purposefully restrained her sharp edge when standing beside Mu Chen and acted introvertly. Yet, just like the uncommon sword in her hand, there would be a day that she would reveal her sharp edge.

And that was today.

While the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were cheering, the students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy wore indeterminate and downcast expressions. At the beginning, they were still feeling excited; however, who could have imagined that after a short moment, there would be such a thorough reversal in the situation?

Liu Zhen of the Heavenly Completion Stage had actually been defeated in such a short amount of time.

On the podium, the smiling face of the Dean of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, Fei Qingsong, slightly twitched, before saying with a smile, "Undoubtedly one of the five great academies. Who would have thought that there was actually such a formidable person, other than the Top Ten on the Heavenly Ranking that had yet to reveal themselves?"

Dean Tai Cang smiled as he looked towards the young lady standing in the arena and replied, "You're overpraising, Dean Fei. Luo Li dislikes fighting, and if not for her emotions being different from other days, she would not have taken action."

Fei Qingsong also smiled. Narrowing his eyes, he said, "She is called Luo Li? Hmm... That sword that she had executed. It made

me recall the Luo Shen Sword Technique of the Luo God Clan... Could it be that she is a member of the Luo God Clan?"

Dean Tai Cang refused to comment and replied, "Since Liu Zhen was defeated, this Exchange should end here. Both parties had their wins, and Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy sure is strong and robust."

"Haha, wait a moment," said Fei Qingsong with a grin, "Dean Tai Cang, we, the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, still have people that have yet to fight... I didn't say that Liu Zhen was the strongest student of our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy... Furthermore, although you all have a member of the Luo God Clan... Haha... We also have a student with a special background."

Upon hearing his words, Dean Tai Cang could not resist wrinkling his forehead.

This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy had surely come prepared.

On the arena, Luo Li slowly started to restrain the Sword Aura that surrounded her body as she quietly looked towards Liu Zhen, who looked like a sorry figure and said, "Your Spiritual Energy is superficial. It seems that there was someone who had forcefully risen your strength. With your original capabilities, you don't have the qualifications to challenge the Top Three of the Heavenly Rankings within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

An ugly expression appeared on Liu Zhen's face as he wanted to curse out. However, due to that previous fierce and swift sword of hers appearing in his mind, he was unable to speak at that moment. That faintly trembling appearance had lost all of its previous awe.

The students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy clenched their teeth; however, there was still no one who dared to open their mouths and speak. Even Liu Zhen was defeated, and it was obvious that they were not able to achieve victory against Luo

Li.

Luo Li looked towards the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, who were suppressing their rage and anger, before graceful turning and walking away with the longsword in her jade-like hands. Although she did not like to fight with people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she was still a student here and would naturally not stand at a corner and watch the people from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy come there and humiliate the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, since she had already achieved her objective, she would not continue to stay in the arena.

Looking at Luo Li, who had turned her body and walked away, Liu Zhen clenched his fists, before finally calming down. A disappointed look appeared within his eyes as he understood that he truly was not a match for Luo Li.

“Haha...”

However, just as Luo Li had taken two steps, a soft laughing voice slowly rang out from within the group of students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy.

Upon hearing that laughter, a slight pause occurred in Luo Li’s footsteps.

After hearing the laughter, unexpectedly, those few Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students had a cold shiver run up their bodies as the expressions on their faces changed.

Innumerable gazes shot towards the direction of the laughing voice.

At the rearmost position within the group of Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, a figure slowly stood up and walked through the group. Finally standing in front of Liu Zhen, he casually said, “Useless.”

A faint tremor ran through Liu Zhen; however, he could only

unwillingly lower his head.

The figure strode passed Liu Zhen and slowly walked onto the arena. Raising his head, a handsome face was revealed. On his face was a pair of scarlet pupils that looked akin to blood, which made them particularly eye-catching.

“Haha, Luo Li... the next Empress of the Luo God Clan. I never imagined that you would actually be at this place...”

Luo Li turned around. When she spotted the scarlet pupils of the man in front of her that were akin to blood, an endless chilling intent erupted from within her clear and limpid eyes.

Her jade-like hand slowly gripped her longsword tightly as a cold voice filled with chilling intent spilled out from those red lips.

“Blood God Clan...”

# Chapter 344 – Xue Shi

"Blood God Clan..."

When those three words rang out from Luo Li's lips, the absolutely beautiful face of the girl had already turned ice-cold. Swift and fierce killing intent had even erupted from within her eyes. This kind of emotion and state of mind was rarely displayed by her.

The handsome youth gave a faint smile. Wearing a striking set of blood-red robes, an aura reeking of blood seemed to radiate from his entire body, while the pair of eyes that seemed to be coloured with fresh blood appeared extremely mysterious and strange.

"Look's like the news that we've gotten out really is real. Being the next Empress of the Luo God Clan, you've not properly received the inheritance under the protection of Luo Tianshen, and have run all the way to this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy..."

The handsome youth smiled and said, "Is this your escape?"

Luo Li's jade-like hand slowly gripped the Luo Shen Sword tightly as her expression grew even more cold and frosty.

"That's right, I've forgot to introduce myself. My name's Xue Shi. A member of the Blood God's Royal Clan," the handsome youth faintly bowed forward, appearing modest and cultured. However, the unconcealable aura of blood radiating from him caused people to feel wary and vigilant.

Like the Luo God Clan, the Blood God Clan was one of the four God Clans in the Western Heaven World.

The person in front of them had unexpectedly come from the same place as Luo Li.

"Xue Shi? I've never heard of such a name within the Blood God's Royal Clan. Looks like your status within the Blood God Clan isn't

high, right?” said Luo Li in a cold and detached voice as she stared at the handsome youth in front of her.

Hearing her reply, a cold glint flashed within the blood red eyes of the handsome youth. With an increasingly thick smile, he replied, “ If I’m able to capture you, my status would naturally be different.”

“By yourself?” gripping her long sword tightly, Luo Li slowly spoke out.

“Haha, being able to be crowned as the next ‘Luo Empress’ by Luo Tianshen, naturally, I dare not show any contempt towards you. However, your age is, after all, too young, and you’ve not even received a single inheritance…” replied Xue Shi has he licked his lip, while his blood-red pupils stared at Luo Li. At this moment, a thick bloody light erupted from his palms, radiating with bloodthirsty fluctuations.

“As for me, I’ve already received the inheritance once. Therefore… you have to be careful, and don’t get killed by me. Otherwise, you're Luo God Clan will truly be finished.”

“You don’t have to worry about that,” replied Luo Li indifferently.

Xue Shi responded with a smile. However, there was not the slightest bit of laughing intent within his eyes. In the next instant, he took a step forward. Bloody Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies gushed out from him, and the originally bright skies were instantly dyed blood-red.

Thick auras of fresh blood rippled and undulated across the heavens and earth.

The fluctuations of that boundless Spiritual Energy was unexpectedly more tyrannical than Liu Zheng’s!

These fluctuations seemed to already be at the brink of reaching Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase!

This fellow was even more formidable than Liu Zheng.

The expressions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student masses had also violently contorted at this moment, while shock erupted from within their eyes. No one would have guessed that there would actually be a person within the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy that was even stronger that Liu Zheng!

Graveness had also flooded the expressions of Su Xuan and the rest. This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly had the intent to give their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy a fierce kick to the face.

“When did the people of the Blood God Clan run into the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy?” At the chief podium, Dean Tai Cang stared at Xue Shi, before casually asking this.

“Haha, isn’t your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy the same? Nowadays, our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy can be considered to have some fame and reputation. Even some of those strong clans are willing to let their members come to our spiritual academy to train and cultivate...” replied Fei Qingsong with a beaming smile.

Dean Tai Cang did not respond with any comment. However, he thought, For the sake of raising their fame and reputation, the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy really did whatever they could...

The Hall Master of the Punishment Hall, Mo You had also wrinkled his forehead. This Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly was somewhat undiscriminating.

However, being the overlords of the north, there’s nothing they could say, but only hope that Luo Li would be able to stabilise the situation. However, dealing with that member of the Blood God Clan seemed to be easier said than done...

On the square, Luo Li’s eyes faintly narrowed. If this Xue Shi’s

strength was to progress one step further, he would be able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase. Furthermore, his Spiritual Energy was even stronger than Liu Zheng's.

From the perspective of stages, he and Liu Zheng were both at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. However, Luo Li knew that Liu Zhen was absolutely not Xue Shi's match. After all, regardless of their appearance of strength, Xue Shi was a member of the Blood God's Royal Clan...

Therefore, the latter was not someone that Liu Zheng could compare to.

"Luo Li, let me see exactly how formidable the next Empress of the Luo God Clan is," said Xue Shi as he locked his blood-red eyes on Luo Li, while the smile at the corner of his mouth grew increasingly bloodthirsty.

Luo Li's charming face grew increasingly frosty as the boundless quantity of swift and fierce Sword Aura rushed to the skies once again.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As the Sword Aura that blotted the skies converged, the sword river condensed once again. Obviously, Luo Li did not have any intent to show any mercy. Upon launching her attack, she had used her killing move.

"Wanting to use a single sword to deal with me? Haha! Let us see, exactly who's single move is superior!"

With a sinister smile, a chilling light erupted from the blood-red eyes of Xue Shi. In the next instant, his figure explosively shot forward as a Blood Aura that blotted the skies immediately surged forth. Akin to a sea of blood, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept towards Luo Li.

As Luo Li's jade-like hand faintly trembled, her charming figure

shot out similarly at the same time, while the sword river howled as it swept out. Seemingly merging together, a sword light that carried along a swift and fierce Sword Aura surged out, splitting the horizon apart.

This sword of hers appeared to contain a much thicker and colder killing intent than her previous one.

Seeing this spectacle unfolding before them, everyone opened their eyes wide. Both parties had no intention of warming up. Upon taking action, they had planned to use their killing moves to inflict serious injuries to one another!

“Sword of the Blood Sea!”

The sea of blood and the sword river seemingly collided together in an instant. As the two incomparably violent and explosive attacks collided, within the sea of blood, Xue Shi gave a sudden cold roar. With a clench of his palm, a longsword that seemed to be forged from fresh blood had condensed within. Bringing along a torrential Blood Aura, he thrusted his sword out.

Ding!

As the sea of blood and the sword river pervaded out, the two longswords furiously collided against each other.

The earth below the two cracked and shattered, while distortions seemingly appeared in the air.

The two longswords vibrated intensely as their tips pressed against one another, with one side filled with boundless Spiritual Energy, while the other being filled with erratic bloodthirstiness. Two Sword Auras that were similarly filled with extremely strong destructiveness smashed against one another. The devastation brought forth instantly caused deep fissures to form on the earth around them.

As Xue Shi’s arm violently shook, his blood-red eyes sparkled, while a sinister smile rose from the corner of his mouth.

Suddenly, the sea of blood behind him churned and roll, before transforming into a screen of blood. Within the screen of blood, there seemed to be a pair of soldiers condensed from fresh blood as they howled and exited. At the back of the powerful current were gigantic cities. Those cities were sparkling with gigantic lightning flags, where a golden-coloured dazzling word was present.

Luo

As the current of blood surged forth, those cities were instantly destroyed. Countless people turned into bloody waters under the current, while mournful cries of despair rang out from within.

“Luo Li, take a look! As of now, the territories of your Luo God Clan are continuously being devoured. Those citizens that have worshipped your Luo God Clan are continuously being bathed by blood!” roared Xue Shi with a sinister smile. With a demonic sound, the laughter rushed toward Luo Li.

Seeing the images of bloody seas within the screen of blood, Luo Li’s mind violently shook, while a distressed mood rushed towards her mind, causing her Sword Aura to collapse.

At the moment when her Sword Aura collapsed, Luo Li was able to sense and understand that her opponent was disrupting her mind. This was the method that the Blood God Clan was the most adept at.

However, at this moment, she was already a step too late.

“Haha, you’re too tender, after all.”

Said Xue Shi with a sinister chuckle. At the instant where the Sword Aura that completely surrounded Luo Li faintly weakened, the blood sword in his hand instantly erupted with a Blood Aura that blotted the skies. As the sword light howled further, it pierced through Luo Li’s defenses, causing the blood light to impact against her delicate figure.

Whoosh!

Luo Li's delicate figure instantly flew out. However, at that very instant, with a raise of her jade-like hand, a ray of sword light pierced through Xue Shi's shoulder at lightning speed.

As the Sword Aura devastated the surroundings, the two figures flew out.

Luo Li's body landed directly out of the square. Descending, her charming face was filled with a slightly frosty expression, while blood flowed along her slender jade-like fingers before dripping onto the ground.

On the square, Xue Shi had stabilised his body. A sword slash was present on his shoulder, with fresh blood staining his robes. However, he did not give the slightest care about his injury. As a blood light erupted out, the blood around his shoulder completely retracted within his body. Even his injury was rapidly healing itself.

"Haha, Empress Luo is truly soft-hearted. Only such a scene is able to shake your mind and concentration. In the future, when you're in charge of the Luo God Clan, how can that be a good thing?"

A smirk appeared on Xue Shi's handsome face as he stared at Luo Li, who was sent flying off of the square with ridiculement in his eyes. Continuing his statement, he said, " One cannot have such compassion if one wants to become the ruler of a clan."

Luo Li's charming face instantly turned cold as she gripped her longsword tightly. If not for Xue Shi's method that had shook her mind and disrupted her concentration, it was absolutely not possible for him to force her off the square.

"Shameless!" Roars of fury and anger instantly erupted from the side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students. This Xue Shi was too despicable! He had actually used such an underhanded method!

However, facing their condemning roars, Xue Shi did not give the slightest bit of care. With a ridiculing smile, he said, “Victory and defeat has been decided for his match. If there are still students of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that are not convinced, you can come up by all means. By then, you’ll be able to clearly understand whether I’ve only those few means and methods.”

The expressions of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students turned ashen in anger as they thought, This Xue Shi is simply more repulsive and abominable than the previous one, Liu Zheng.

However, although they were angry and furious, at this time, almost all of the elite students of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had already taken action. Even Luo Li, who had demonstrated her extraordinary skill and talent, had been forced off the square by Xue Shi. According to the rules, she had already lost the qualifications to continue fighting.

Therefore, aside from feeling angry and furious, there was no one that could step out from their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. All of their faces appeared extremely sullen as they thought, If only one of the Top Three ranks on the Heavenly Rankings were here! We’d like to see if these fellows would be that rampant then!

“I know that the Top Three ranks on the so-called ‘Heavenly Rankings’ of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy aren’t here. Since that’s the case, I’ll give you all a chance. For three days, we’ll be right here. Within these three days, you guys can try all you want to call them back.”

A mocking arc rose from the corner of Xue Shi’s mouth as he said, “Naturally, as long as they truly dare to appear…”

Upon saying those words, he did not continue waiting. Turning around, he proceeded to leave the square.

However, just as Xue Shi had turned around, at the chief podium,

a faint smile suddenly surfaced on the face of Dean Tai Cang. Standing by his side, Fei Qingsong also seemed to have sensed something, since he had knitted his brows together.

Humm. Humm.

The space above the northern square started to distort and warp, while peals of thunder seemed to ring out from within.

This sudden spectacle immediately attracted the attention of everyone as shocked and startled gazes panned over.

Xue Shi's footsteps had also froze as his blood-red eyes faintly narrowed. Raising his head, he stared at the distorted space. From there, lightning lights sparkled around as a thin figure slowly walked out from within.

Following the appearance of the figure, peals of thunder seemingly resounded across the skies as familiar Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated across the heavens and earth.

Feeling those Spiritual Energy fluctuations, countless Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students furiously rose from their seats while unconcealable joy and surprise erupted from their eyes.

These fluctuations... they're Mu Chen's!

He had finally appeared!

# Chapter 345 – Appearance

In the air above the northern square.

As the space distorted into a whirlpool shape, a thin figure slowly walked out from within. At the moment when it stepped out, Spiritual Energy fluctuations that felt familiar and tyrannical to everyone rippled and undulated across the stretch of world.

“Mu Chen!”

At this moment, the eyes of countless Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were all wide open as ecstasy uncontrollably erupted from within. Those Spiritual Energies were too familiar to them.

“Mu Chen’s arrived!”

“He’s finally here?”

“It’s good now! Let’s see if those fellows from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy dare to continue being that rampant!”

Earth-shatteringly passionate and fervent voices rang out around the northern square as everyone’s faces were brimming with joy and surprise. As of now, Mu Chen’s reputation and prestige were no weaker than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. When the latter two were not at the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen’s prestige was obviously the greatest.

During the final fight of the Hunting War that day, he had thoroughly cemented himself at the apex position within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

That position was something that even He Yao was unable to strive for.

“This fellow… he’s finally appeared…” Su Xuan and the rest felt as though a heavy rock had been lifted off their backs. Mu Chen’s appearance had undeniably given every student a dose of

adrenaline.

Beside her, He Yao's expression started to waver between cloudy and clear. However, in the end, he did not say anything out loud. As of now, regardless of prestige or strength, Mu Chen was already above him, Even though he was unresigned, there was nothing that he could do.

Within the square, Xue Shi stared at the figure that had stepped out from the spatial whirlpool across the horizon with faintly narrowed eyes. From the passionate and fervent voices that rang out of his surroundings, he was able to realise the identify of the latter.

This is Mu Chen, 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings?

After realising that, a cold laugh rang out from Xue Shi. Indeed, he wanted to see exactly how capable the 3rd Rank on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings was to actually inspire such confidence in them.

The entire square was enveloped by this passionate and fervent atmosphere. This caused Mu Chen, who had appeared in the air, to faintly feel some bafflement. Just an instant ago, he had just exited his long and deep state of training...

However, after leaving his training state of mind, without even having the opportunity to say his thanks to the bald old man, the latter had shattered and cracked space apart, before throwing him in.

Therefore, he had appeared at this location.

"What's the matter?"

Mu Chen muttered with a slightly wrinkled forehead as he looked towards the northern square below him. After undergoing closed-state training for over a month, there shouldn't be any big incidents happening in the academy, right? Why was it so lively down there?

Mu Chen's gaze swept across the northern square below him. In the next instant, a chill suddenly erupted from within his eyes.

He had spotted Luo Li standing below the square. Currently, eye-piercing blood was dripping from the latter's jade-like hands.

Luo Li's injured?

A wave of anger flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as his figure instantly shot forward, before appearing before Luo Li. Faintly frowning, he asked in a low and deep voice, "What happened?"

Upon seeing the appearance of Mu Chen, a shadow of happiness flashed within Luo Li's eyes. Gently wiping away the blood stains on her hand, she replied with a faint smile, "It's just a small injury, nothing of any importance."

"Who did it?" Mu Chen asked in a deep voice. As of now, there were not that many people who dare to provoke them within this Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right? Could it be He Yao? Hadn't that fellow fought enough?

"I did it." At this moment, an indifferent voice rang out from close by.

Slowly turning around, Mu Chen looked towards the square, and imprinted the youth with blood-red eyes, who was clad in blood-red robes and standing with his hands behind his back, within his eyes.

"Who are you?" Mu Chen asked while his forehead faintly wrinkled up. The person before him was extremely unfamiliar, and he had never seen such a person within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy before.

Whoosh!

From a short distance away, Su Xuan shot over, before descending beside Mu Chen. In a low voice, she explained the whole story of what happened to him. As she continued her recount, Mu Chen's expression grew increasingly ugly.

This was especially so the moment when he heard that the youth with blood-red eyes before him had used such a despicable method to cause Luo Li to lose her concentration, injuring her shoulder and forcing her out of the square. As of now, the expression on his face was as dark and overcast as a thunderstorm.

“Sorry. We’ve originally planned to not let Luo Li get entangled with this. However, we truly had no one else to rely on. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had temporarily left the academy, while you have been missing…” said Su Xuan with some regret.

“Senior Sister Su Xuan, I’m also a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Protecting its name is also my duty,” Luo Li’s voice gently interrupted Su Xuan’s apology.

Mu Chen nodded his head faintly, while his originally dark and overcast expression slowly returned to calmness at this moment. With a soft voice, he said, “You two step back of first. Next, let me take over.”

Seeing that Mu Chen was that calm, while having such chilling intent gushing out from his voice, Su Xuan and Luo Li both knew that the former had become angry. Next, he would take action.

“Careful, he’s a member of the Blood God Clan, one of the four God Clans in the Western Heavenly World,” reminded Luo Li. Although this Xue Shi had used some despicable methods, anyone who neglected his strength due to this might have to pay serious consequences.

Hearing her reminder, Mu Chen gently nodded his head. Blood God Clan, huh? Although they’re influential fellows, they didn’t have the qualifications to extend to such a place. Since they’d extended to such a place, Mu Chen didn’t mind to chopping this extension off.

Due to Luo Li, Mu Chen did not have the slightest bit of favorable impressions towards the other three God Clans in the Western Heavenly World.

Luo Li and Su Xuan proceeded to retreat, leaving Mu Chen alone, standing in the square. Upon seeing this scene, the atmosphere within the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy instantly flared up and became more fervent.

“Brother Mu, beat that wretch to death!”

“Make them scram out of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with their tails between their legs!

“……”

Various kinds of voices and words rushed towards the sky. Those students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy all appeared to be psyched up, since all of them appeared to be emotional and excited.

The students of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy looked at each other. Obviously, they had never imagined that the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, who had all looked sullen and were about to die, would change and have such confidence.

Could it be due to that youth by the name of Mu Chen?

They casted their doubtful gazes towards the youth, who was slowly walking towards the square. He’s that young? At that age, he obviously didn’t have the look of an elite student that had a bountiful experience.

On the chief podium, Fei Qingsong faintly narrowed his eyes as he stared at the figure of the youth. With a smile, he said, “Is this Mu Chen person the 3rd Rank on your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Rankings? However, his strength…seems to be far from enough.”

With his eyesight, he was naturally able to tell that the current Mu Chen had not even reached the stage of Heavenly Completion Stage. Seemingly more than half of the Top Ten ranks of the Heavenly Rankings were even stronger than him.

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang replied, “There are times when looking only at the cover would cause one to suffer a crushing defeat.”

“Oh?”

Fei Qingsong’s eyebrows jumped, before saying with a smile, “Then, I really have to see exactly what capabilities this Mu Chen has…he’s the 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, right? Haha. Dean Tai Cang, if you are to lose again, you might not be able to say anything more. As for Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, I think that Xue Shi and their group would compare notes with them in the future…”

Hearing his words, Dean Tai Cang smiled, without saying anything in response, and cast his gaze that was filled with interest towards the youth on the square. As of now, the latter seemed to be much more stronger than a month ago. However, he did not know if this time, would the latter be able to fill the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy with shock once again?

Under the fervent atmosphere, as well as the doubtful gazes of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen walked onto the square and stood at a distance not far from Xue Shi. At this moment, those pair of black eyes radiated with an indifferent chilling glint.

“The 3rd Rank of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn’t seem to be as strong as I’ve expected,” said Xue Shi as he stared at Mu Chen. He was unable to feel any Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from the latter’s body that was comparable to his own.

“You should not have injured her,” said Mu Chen slowly as his pupils faintly drooped down.

“Oh?”

Xue Shi’s eyebrows were faintly raised up. Staring at Mu Chen

with his blood-red eyes, he smiled and said, “She truly is very formidable. If she used her true power, even I might not be her match. However, she’s still somewhat too soft-hearted. Even I am easily able to shake her mind…That is her weakness.”

“Therefore, I’ll have you pay some price for that.” Mu Chen seemed to not care about Xue Shi’s voice. Minding his own business, his voice softly rang out.

“Haha…”

Xue Shi gave a smile, one that contained thick bloodthirstiness. Tilting his head to stare at Mu Chen, he replied, “Just based on you? Who do you think you are?!”

As his last words rang out, the smile on Xue Shi’s face had completely disappeared, being replaced by a cold and sinister expression. He dreaded Luo Li, and, therefore, used that underhand method against her. However, who did the fellow in front of him think he was…daring to be pretentious in front of him!

“You’re looking to die!”

The blood-red colour within Xue Shi’s eyes intensified, as blood-red Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies swept out from him. A thick smell of blood permeated the skies, while strong Spiritual Energy pressure came enveloping over. Compared to before, this was even stronger.

Obviously, this Xue Shi already had the intent to kill.

Outside of the square, Su Xuan and the rest had grave expressions on their faces. The strength of this Xue Shi seemed to be even stronger than Gu Tianyan by a sliver. They truly didn’t know exactly how Mu Chen would deal with him. After all, this time won’t be a friendly comparison of notes, like last time.

For the sake of achieving victory in this fight, both sides would use any methods.

Whoosh!

Under the pressure from the blood-red Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a clump of white air. Raising his head, black lightning seemed to gush out from the depths of his black eyes.

Abruptly clenching his fists tightly, Spiritual Energy similarly erupted from his body without the slightest restraint.

Boom!

Burning with black flames, Spiritual Energy akin to smoke plumes gushed out and rushed across the horizon. Pervading out, without caring about the pressure coming from the blood-red Spiritual Energy, it shot straight up like a pillar of light, with nothing that could shake it.

Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase!

Clamoring instantly arose from the entire square, with the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students gawking and feeling shocked first. In the next moment, mocking arcs appeared, bit by bit, on the corners of their mouths.

How exactly did someone become the 3rd Rank of the Heavenly Rankings with such strength?

Their gazes turned to mockery and ridicule as they looked towards the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, to their surprise, they saw that the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were using mocking gazes to stare back at them, as though rejoining in the misfortune that was about to befall the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students.

This group of idiots. They dared to even send a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase person up. They're truly asking for trouble...

"This group of morons...when Mu Chen was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase, he's already able to fight

equally with Senior Brother Gu Tianyan...

The silent words in the students' hearts erupted out at this moment. However, no one spoke them out. As of now, the atmosphere was subtly causing people to feel comical.

# Chapter 346 – Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird

Two boundless and tyrannical Spiritual Energies rippled and undulated across the air above the northern square. As the Spiritual Energies pressed against each other, a hurricane seemed to have formed, crazily blowing across this stretch of the world.

“Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase…”

A dark and chilling glow surfaced within Xue Shi’s blood-red eyes. Staring at Mu Chen, whose Spiritual Energy had completely erupted, the sinister arc on the corner of his mouth grew increasingly thick. His feelings were indeed correct. That fellow in front of him, Mu Chen, simply hadn’t broken into the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Where exactly did this fellow at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase get the courage to jump and hop around in front of him?

Xue Shi, who had never experienced Mu Chen’s astonishing road of combat results, wouldn’t know. Similarly, those students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy would also not know…

However, the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy knew.

Bang!

Without wasting any more time talking nonsense, Xue Shi did not care whether the person in front of him, Mu Chen, was truly formidable or just acting pretentiously. As long as he took action, he would naturally come to know. Therefore, taking a step out, he started to form a hand seal. In the next instant, a blood-red glowing Spiritual Energy that lingered across the horizon gushed out. Instantly, the smell of blood reeked out, before transforming into a gigantic hand print that descended from the sky.

Bang! Rumble!

As the blood waves gushed out, the bloody handprint howled as it descended, causing even the air to be pressed to the point of exploding, while a gigantic hand impression formed on the earth below Mu Chen.

This move by Xue Shi had made the expressions of quite a few people turn grave. Previously, against Luo Li, his attacks were too vicious, resulting in people simply unable to understand how strong he was in those brief glimpses. However, after truly revealing his extraordinary strength, everyone finally knew that his strength of being exceedingly close to Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase was not baseless.

Bang!

Raising his head up, Mu Chen looked towards the bloody handprint that was about to press down on him. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames spread out like a sea of fire. In the next instant, a starry sky surfaced behind him, before a white tiger treaded the air and appeared.

Four Divine Constellations Scripture, White Tiger Divine Seal!

Mu Chen’s fist rumbled out as the White Tiger Divine Seal transformed into a black streaking fiery meteor. Splitting the horizon apart, it smashed head-on against the bloody handprint.

Bang!

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energies impacted one another, before surging out across the horizon. As the gigantic Spiritual Energy shock wave spread out, the earth instantly cracked and fissured. Despite this, the two figures within the square stood firmly and majestically, without moving a bit.

To them, this kind of shock wave didn’t create the slightest bit of sway.

As the Spiritual Energy fluctuations within the square slowly

dissipated, everyone got a glimpse of the earth, which had already cracked and fissured into little pieces. Panning their gazes towards the two figures that had yet to move, their expressions turned grave.

A gentle breeze blew by, swirling up the broken pieces of rock, causing them to flutter in the air.

As the two figures within the square interlocked their gazes, black pupils and blood-red pupils, a chillingly cold shadow abruptly flashed from within.

Bang!

The two of them seemingly moved at the same time, akin to two streaks of light shooting out. Heading towards the middle of the expansive square, they smashed head-on against each other.

Black flames and the bloody light rushed towards the sky, each filling their half of the horizon.

At the point of contact between the black flames and the bloody light were two figures sending their shadowed fists howling out. Carrying along churning Spiritual Energies, they smashed against one another.

Remnant shadows appeared as the two figures continued with their exchange. Akin to the collapse of mountains, low and deep sounds of fists and legs colliding rang out, bringing along with them extremely heavy sensations of strength. The two of them had unexpectedly chosen the most violent and vicious way of bare-handed combat.

This was an extremely eye-stimulating way of combat.

Everyone’s gazes were firmly locked onto the two indistinct figures within the square, as erratic Spiritual Energy continuously erupted from them like storms, before violently smashing into each other.

As the two figures continued their successive exchanges, wave

after wave of Spiritual Energy shock waves extended out, smashing and splitting the earth apart.

Whoosh!

In the earliest moments of this confrontation, the figure burning in black flames appeared to be somewhat suppressed, as the blood-red glowing Spiritual Energy eruptions were having the absolute superiority. This made many students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy clench their fists tightly.

Fortunately, however, their worries did not last for very long. After being suppressed time after time, the figure clad in black flames grew increasingly brilliant, while his attacks gradually became more violent and vicious. At the end, the pressurising situation was completely broken.

Bang!

The two figures continued their exchange as their fist winds violently slammed against each other, causing the ground they were standing on to collapse. This caused them to retreat, skidding on the earth as they drew back hundreds of metres, leaving behind long marks.

Countless people held their breaths in silence, not even daring to inhale loudly.

Those few students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy were totally dumbfounded. This was the first time they'd ever seen someone who's able to fight equally with Xue Shi in such an intense brawl. Furthermore... Xue Shi's current opponent was only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. In the past, when he had faced opponents of that stage, he would seemingly dominate and achieve victory.

At the front ranks of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, a grave expression was present on Liu Zheng's face. Looking at the figure of the youth in the distance, he thought, This

3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings is truly formidable...

Liu Zheng was not weak; therefore, he was naturally able to clearly see the entire process of this bout of an exchange. At the beginning, Xue Shi seemed to always be the one that initiated the offensive. Mu Chen was somewhat in the disadvantage with his initial defense. However, as time went by, this disadvantage became smaller and smaller. The latter had started to become increasingly proficient with the control over his strength. At the end, there was not much of a difference between the two, with neither one being able to even gain a bit of superiority.

At this moment, on the opposite side of Liu Zheng, Su Xuan and the rest quietly sighed in relief.

“He’s familiarising himself with the sudden increase in energy within his body.”

Luo Li explained in a soft voice. She was too familiar with Mu Chen, after all. Previously, he had clearly used Xue Shi to help himself break in the sudden increase in strength due to his closed up training. This was the reason why he was being suppressed at the beginning of the fight. However, once had managed to gain total control the strength in his body, the violent and vicious Mu Chen of the past was clearly back.

Su Xuan and the rest all nodded their heads. In any case, Mu Chen had dared to engage in a fierce fight with Gu Tianyan when his strength was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. As if it would be easy for him to be suppressed by Xue Shi.

“You’ve some ability.”

On the expansive square, a dark and overcast shadow erupted on the handsome face of Xue Shi. Staring tightly at Mu Chen, he had finally understood why Mu Chen was able to become the 3rd Rank on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Rankings. Although the latter was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, his Spiritual Energy was somewhat strange.

Furthermore, his fleshly body seemed to also be very strong. No wonder why the latter had such confidence.

“However, even if you rely on those, I’m afraid that you’ll still be unable to safely walk away from here!”

A chilling intent erupted from within Xue Shi’s blood-red eyes. The true combat capability of this Mu Chen had truly exceeded the outward appearance of his strength. However, wanting to rely on that to defeat him would truly be too naive.

“Blood God’s Art, Blood River Piercing Heavens!”

Xue Shi’s body shot towards the sky. With a pat of his palm, a bloody light that blotted the skies converged over, before transforming into a churning river of blood. As the river of blood snaked around him, it appeared akin to a blood dragon, while an astonishing aura of blood radiated from it.

“Suppress!”

Xue Shi roared furiously, sending his palm patting out. Carrying along with an extremely astonishing and tyrannical power, the churning river of blood, condensed from the boundless Spiritual Energy, pressed straight towards Mu Chen.

Everyone was able to tell that Xue Shi had already planned to use his true strength to deal with Mu Chen once and for all.

However, Mu Chen wasn’t someone that he could suppress just like that. Although this Xue Shi might be stronger and even more overbearing that Gu Tianyan by a sliver, the current Mu Chen could be said to have grown more tyrannical by a number of times since the Hunting War.

“This time, it isn’t your turn to suppress others!”

Mu Chen’s figure explosively retreated, before forming a seal using his hands that caused people to feel dazzled. In the next instant, churning Spiritual Energy burning with black flames akin to flooding waters erupted from him.

A starry sky started to condense behind him, once again. As the black flames rippled, an extremely astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuation rushed to the skies.

Screeee!

A clear and resonant cry resounded out. In the next moment, a giant fiery-red bird emerged from within the starry sky. The giant bird was clad in burning flames, making it appear like a Divine Beast living within fire. With a flap of its wings, the temperature of the entire stretch of the world instantly rose explosively. Even the surrounding space started to distort due to the heat radiating from it.

“That is…”

As Su Xuan and the rest looked towards the giant fiery-red bird that emerged from the starry sky, all of their expressions were in faint shock.

“Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird!”

With an expressionless face, Mu Chen furiously sent his palm patting out. In the next instant, the starry sky behind him shattered and collapsed. Flapping its extremely magnificent flaming wings, the giant fiery-red bird brought forth a terrifying temperature that was sufficient to raze the heavens and earth. Under the countless gazes from the surroundings, it viciously slammed against the torrential river of blood heading towards him.

Following Mu Chen’s increase in strength, the Four Gods Constellation Scripture’s Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird became increasingly tyrannical. The control he had over this Divine Art could be said to have increasingly neared perfection!

Chi! Chi!

As the two forces smashed head-on, the river of blood instantly

erupted with a bloody mist that filled the skies. Unexpectedly, the river of blood that was condensed from the boundless Spiritual Energy was being dispelled at an astonishing rate.

At this moment, the expression on Xue Shi's face finally had some changes. His river of blood was created from Spiritual Energy. Even if it was tossed within a sea of fire, nothing would happen to it. However, before his eyes, it was actually being burnt down and destroyed by his opponent's giant bird.

Exactly what kind of Divine Art did his opponent use?

"Suppress!"

Regardless of that, Mu Chen did not give him much time to ponder and think. With a cold and frosty expression on his face, Mu Chen gave a backhanded slap. In the next instant, a blazing inferno erupted from the Vermillion Bird. Sweeping out, it immediately evaporated the river of blood away.

Screech!

After evaporating the river of blood away, without dissipating, the Vermillion Bird transformed into a fiery-red streak of light and split the horizon apart. Finally, under Xue Shi's rapidly contorting gaze, it violently impacted against his body.

Bang!

Flames instantly erupted across the horizon, appearing extremely dazzling.

Countless students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy started to loudly cheer. Mu Chen's counterattack was so beautifully done that there's not a single thing that people could fret about. In contrast, as for the students from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, their faces were somewhat pale, while no longer having the provocative looks on their faces.

"Formidable..." Unable to resist, Su Xuan and the rest sighed out in admiration.

Contrary to them, Luo Li raised her lovable face and stared fixedly at the place where flames permeated its entirety, while her eyebrows started to knit.

Mu Chen had also raised his head. Black lightning flashed within his black eyes as he stared at the place where the flames were raging. At this moment, his indifferent voice resounded out.

“If you’re unable to even block this move, I think it’s best that you scram out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

Hearing Mu Chen’s words, all of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students were stunned. Unexpectedly, that Xue Shi hadn’t been defeated yet?

Countless gazes swept across the horizon towards the place burning with flames. As of now, the flames had truly started to dissipate, bit by bit. In the next moment, everyone was able to see a figure that was wrapped within a blood-red armor. Like a god of slaughter, it slowly appeared within the sky.

At this moment, the smell of blood within this stretch of the world seemed to become increasingly thick.

# Chapter 347 – Blood Gods Armor

As the aura reeked in blood pervaded out across the sky, everyone’s gaze had converged in the air. There, as the flames shrunk and disappeared, a figure clad in a blood-coloured armor appeared before their eyes.

This blood-coloured armor appeared extremely malevolent and sinister, while its blood-like colour was extremely eye-catching, making it appear as though it was condensed from blood. The surface of the armor was covered with pointy spikes that were incomparably sharp. With a single look, one could tell that they contained astonishing killing power.

There were also many groups of mysterious runes glowing and sparkling, and permeating with traces of malevolence.

This armor was completely like an outstanding weapon for killing people.

It was malevolent and reeked of blood.

As Luo Li stared at the blood armor, her pupils started to contract. With a soft voice, she muttered out, “He’s actually produced a Blood God's Armor...”

“Blood God's Armor?” Su Xuan and the rest voiced out in doubt. Obviously, this was foreign and unfamiliar to them. Although, they were similarly able to sense how frightening that blood armor was.

“It’s a unique cultivation technique of the Blood God Clan. It’s able to allow one to refine one’s body and blood into the shape of armor. This would lead to a great increase to one’s fighting strength. At the same time, both offense and defense would be strengthened.”

Luo Li explained in a soft voice, “With Xue Shi’s strength, once he activates that Blood God Armor, even if he was to face against a

person at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, he would still be able to put up a fight.”

After hearing up to that point, Su Xuan and the rest’s expressions faintly change. Indeed, to actually possess such skills and hidden cards, this Xue Shi was undeniably a member of the Blood God Clan.

“Then, Mu Chen…” Su Xuan voiced out with some worry.

Contrary to her, looking at the thin figure in the square, Luo Li gave a faint smile. Confidence that was even more than Mu Chen could muster was present within those clear, limpid pupils of her as she replied, “He will not lose.”

Seeing Luo Li’s response, Su Xuan did not continue asking anymore. Indeed, although this Xue Shi was not easy to deal with, was Mu Chen ever a simple person? Ever since he entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there wasn't a single person that could truly really suppress this ferocious tiger that was starting to reveal its towering and outstanding ability…

Although this Xue Shi was formidable, within the eyes of Su Xuan and the rest, this still might not be enough!

Within the square, where countless gazes had converged, Mu Chen was also staring at the blood armor-clad Xue Shi floating in the air, while a minute trace of astonishment flashed similarly within his eyes. Obviously, he had also detected the unusualness of that blood armor.

“This Blood God Clan… They truly do have some unique aspects…”

“Being able to force me to summon this Blood God's Armor out, you’re not considerably bad.” Within the air, Xue Shi lowered his head while sending his cold and sinister gaze at Mu Chen. As his low and deep voice rang out, a stench that reeked of blood pervaded out.

“Once the Blood God's Armor is summoned, it needs to be soak in the enemy’s blood...” Saying that, Xue Shi slowly clenched his fist tightly. Waves of blood gushed out from his body, causing the sky to be incomparably stained in a bloody aura.

“Therefore, I’ll use your blood to honor it!”

Bang!

Just as Xue Shi’s last word rang out, a chilling light erupted abruptly from within his blood-red eyes. Taking a step forward, a tearing sound rang out from his body as he shattered through space. In a flash, he appeared before Mu Chen as his fist went rumbling out.

Fresh blood seemed to wriggle and squirm on his malevolent fist, while a frightening fluctuation rippled as it was condensed.

Roar!

However, in the instant when Xue Shi’s fist rumbled out, a light erupted similarly out of Mu Chen’s body, while the shadow of a dragon seemingly took form. As a dragon roar resounded, a remnant shadow had already appeared at his original position.

Bang!

As Xue Shi’s fist descended, a bloody light gushed out, smashing the remnant shadow directly into bits. The ground below it had also collapsed, causing gigantic fissures to rapidly branch out.

At this moment, Mu Chen’s figure appeared tens of metres away. Looking at the rapidly extending fissures on the ground, his expression froze for an instant. After summoning that Blood God's Armor, Xue Shi’s power had truly risen by a notch.

“You think you can run away!”

As Xue Shi’s fist landed on thin air, a ridiculing smile flashed within his eyes. Being bestowed with the Blood God's Armor, not only did it increase his strength, his speed had similarly increased.

Mu Chen was simply dreaming trying to escape using his movement technique.

Humm.

A bloody light blossomed from Xue Shi's body. In the next instant, Xue Shi's figure disappeared from where he was at. Like a spectre, the next time he reappeared was right in front of Mu Chen. Bringing along a bloody light, an incomparably vicious fist if wind rumbled out once again.

A faint light flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Continuing his decision to not confront the current Xue Shi head-on, he activated the "Dragon Soaring Art". As his speed explosively increased, he swiftly retreated, closely evading the gale that was sufficient to cause serious injuries to a person on the same level as He Yao.

Swish!

However, just as he retreated, Xue Shi's figure followed suit and stuck to him. Fists of wind permeated by bloody lights smashed through the air, causing even space to be shaken to the point of slightly distorting.

Swish! Swish!

Within the expansive square, the two figures had seemingly pushed their speeds to the utmost limit, as remnant shadows appeared one after another. The speed that the two displayed caused countless students to feel dumbfounded.

"So fast." Su Xuan and the rest sighed in admiration. Following the high-speed evasion and pursuit by the two, even they were only able to faintly discern two indistinct figures. Their speed was too fast.

"However, Mu Chen's evading all the way..."

As Su Xuan and the rest focused their gazes towards the square, anyone would be able to tell that the current Mu Chen was being completely suppressed. After summoning the Blood God's Armor,

Xue Shi's strength had increased by quite a bit. With such sharp attacks coming from him, even Mu Chen did not dare to casually confront them, with the only thing he could do was to evade.

However, this was not a long term solution...

Furthermore, this would help ignite the flames within those fellows from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy. As of now, their eyes were already radiating with light, waiting for the instant Mu Chen would make a mistake.

Luo Li was also staring at the square tightly. However, she wasn't as anxious and worried as Su Xuan and the rest. Contrary to them, she was able to sense that although Mu Chen was continuously evading, his movement's weren't frantic and disordered. During his evasions, there was also quite a pause between them. Obviously, he should be planning something, instead of frantically evading at all directions after being suppressed by Xue Shi.

Although she wasn't too clear as to what Mu Chen was doing, since the latter had decided to do such a thing, naturally, there should be a reason. Being extremely familiar with Mu Chen, she knew that Mu Chen would never do anything that had absolutely no meaning.

At the northern square, countless students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were staring tightly at the middle of the square, while a cold sweat covered their palms. The escape and pursuit happening within the square was too astonishing, to the point of shaking their souls. As long as the two made the slightest bit of contact, the result might be earth-shattering.

Right now, everyone was looking at the two figures flashing and darting around like spectres with bated breath.

Bang!

The moment Xue Shi's fist rumbled out, a bloody light smeared across Mu Chen's chest as it headed towards its target. Relying on

the impact, the latter retreated explosively once again. However, Xue Shi was able to sense that the Spiritual Energy around Mu Chen had fluctuated for an instant. Obviously, it had been shaken by the aftermath of his blow.

This caused a sinister and cold shadow to flash within Xue Shi's eyes.

Boom!

Boundless blood waves violently gushed out from within Xue Shi's body, before transforming into a pair illusionary blood wings that were faintly discernable. With a flap, his speed dramatically increased once again.

Chi!

Seemingly transforming into a streak of blood-red light, he appeared before Mu Chen in a blink of an eye. From his speed, one could tell that it had risen much, much higher.

"Although your movement technique is mysterious, it's a pity that I've already seen through it!"

As the black pair of eyes interlocked with the blood-red ones, a malevolent smile rose from the corner of Xue Shi's mouth. Previously, although he managed to entangle Mu Chen, he discovered that the latter had learnt a mysterious movement technique. Therefore, he had restrained himself from going all out in an attempt to identify the underlying patterns and key points. After breaking all the mysteries, it was time for him to unleash an all out killing move.

It had to be said that Xue Shi's combat experience was extremely rich. It's no wonder why he could become the person at the apex within the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy.

A chillingly cold expression was present in Mu Chen's eyes as he looked towards Xue Shi, who had gotten very close to him. The latter's aura that reek of blood had already lunged forward.

However, there wasn’t any anxiousness or frantism expected to be present in the latter’s eyes.

“How long are you going to keep up the act in front of me?”

A cold smile flashed within Xue Shi’s heart, while a killing intent surged within his eyes. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, he tightly clenched his right hand. As a bloody light encased his fist, a clear and distinct spike that reeked of blood surfaced. It obviously looked like it had sufficient killing power.

The malevolence within Xue Shi’s eyes became increasingly thick. With a low and sinister laugh, he sent his fist rumbling out. As the bloody light that’s attached to it extended out, a blood seal could be faintly discerned as it formed, while a torrential bloody aura permeated from it.

“Blood God's Armor, Blood God’s Spiritual Seal of Destruction!”

Bang!

As a bloody aura gushed out of it, a fist of wind covered in a bloody light that looked akin to a pillar of blood shattered through the air. Under the countless shocked gazes below, it violently rumbled down towards Mu Chen’s head.

From the looks of it, it was sufficient to cause Mu Chen’s head to explode.

“Our game has come to an end!” roared Xue Shi as a bloody light radiated from his eyes, while a malevolent and vicious expression covered his entire face.

This fist of his would definitely kill Mu Chen.

As the bloody light rapidly grew bigger in Mu Chen’s vision, a cold and sinister arc started to climb at the corner of his mouth. In the next instant, Xue Shi seemed to see a black-coloured lightning bolt crazily flash within the former’s eyes.

In fact, black-coloured lightning started to arc across the surface

of Mu Chen’s body, while seemingly radiating with a destructive flavor.

Bang! Rumble!

A peal of thunder suddenly resounded across the world as black lightning arcs appeared exceeding sudden around Mu Chen’s body. Bolts of black lightning twined across his body, while the originally jet-black pair of eyes appeared even more deep and unfathomable.

At this moment, his body seemed to have expanded in size, causing his clothing to rip. Within the ripped seams of his clothing, one could slowly and faintly discern something akin to a lightning mark appearing...

“Your Blood God's Armor... has also been seen through by me...”

“Therefore, it should end right now!”

As the mocking arc grew increasingly higher at the corner of his mouth, Mu Chen clenched his fingers tightly together. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, black lightning bolts arced and danced across his fist, before crazily condensing together. In the next instant, they formed a black-coloured lightning sun within Mu Chen’s fist.

Boom!

As Mu Chen’s fist rumbled out, under the countless gazes and bated breaths of everyone, the black lightning sun rumbled violent towards the fist condensed with Xue Shi’s full power.

At the next instant, the black lightning and the fist covered in blood smashed violently against each other!

Bang!

An enormous sound resounded as the earth that both of them stood on instantly shattered and exploded.

# Chapter 348 – A Fist Shattering the Armor

The black lightning and the bloody light shattered the air apart, bring along incomparably rampant fluctuations as they violently collided like two meteors above the square.

Boom!

At the instant of the collision, even the earth seemed to shake intensely for a moment, while the ground within the square immediately collapsed. The black lightning light, as well as the extremely scarlet waves of blood, crazily erupted from within the centre of the square, corroding and trying to obliterate each other.

The ground under the feet of Mu Chen and Xue Shi turned into dust, layer by layer. The hard rock within the ground had seemingly turned into tofu, causing their feet to leave deep gouges within them.

The fist wrapped with a lightning bolt and the fistprint pervaded with blood were deadlocked in the air, while radiating with terrifying fluctuations, causing even the surrounding space to be shaken to the point of forming distortions.

Seeing this, Xue Shi's face turned dark and overcast. The fist that he assumed would end this fight had unexpectedly been completely blocked by Mu Chen with his fleshly body. Furthermore, from the head-on impact of their fists, the latter's black-coloured lightning bolts had actually dissipated some of the bloody aura enveloping his fist.

A considerably frightening power was contained within that black lightning.

"Die for me!"

With a roar, a Bloody Aura torrentially gushed out from within Xue Shi's body. In an instant, his entire arm seemed to be condensed with blood, reeking of blood and was eye-catching,

while radiating a thick and intense flavor of blood.

Across him, black lightning seemed to flash within Mu Chen's black pupils. At this moment, destructive fluctuations started to spread out from his body, while the clothing around his upper body seemed to tear and disintegrate.

Following the disintegration of some of his clothing, one could see a black lightning rune surfacing on his chest.

At this moment, the black lightning rune was sparkling with bits of lightning light, before suddenly lighting up completely.

Thunder God Physique, Mono Rune Lightning Physique!

Relying on his month-plus training, while adding the supplementary effects of the Lightning God's Lotus, Mu Chen's Thunder God Physique had finally reached the true realm of the First Rune!

At the instant when the Lightning Rune lit up completely, Mu Chen's body seemed to become thick and sturdy. Encased in black lightning, he appeared to be a god of lightning that had descended onto the world.

Boom!

As the rumble of thunder intensely shook the air, a lightning bolt erupted from within Mu Chen's eyes as he sent his fist rumbling out.

"Scram!"

Accompanied by a clap of thunder, his explosive roar resounded out. In the next instant, churning with black lightning and radiating within unblockable grandeur, Mu Chen's fist violently rumbled towards the blood-armored fist of Xue Shi.

At the instant of contact, Xue Shi's face finally contorted as he became overwhelmed with shock. He was finally able to sense a frightening amount of power pouring out akin to an avalanche

from Mu Chen's fist.

Under that absolute power, his boundless blood-filled Spiritual Energy was smashed back in an instant.

This is bad!

Those words rang out involuntarily within Xue Shi's heart. However, before he was able to even try to think about how Mu Chen's sudden attack became so frightening, with a move, he had already explosively retreated.

However, why would Mu Chen, having a similarly rich combat experience, give him such a chance? Having endured for quite a long time, and having even activated his Thunder God Physique, he condensed his strongest power and sent blow after blow smashing down on Xue Shi!

Bang!

Therefore, at the instant when Xue Shi had just started to retreat, the power coming from Mu Chen had already smashed against him without any restraint.

Boom!

In the next instant, everyone was able to see black lightning rapidly spreading out all of a sudden at an astonishing speed. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy permeated by the bloody light was completely suppressed by it.

As a fist went rumbling across, black lightning surged forth.

Crack!

The armor covering Xue Shi's fist seemingly shattered in an instant. Those malevolent spikes on it were also completely destroyed by the impact of the black lightning.

The black lightning was akin to a furious dragon that was planning to destroy the heavens and earth, brandishing its claws and opening its mouth, rampaging about without an ounce of fear.

Bang!

The blood armor covering Xue Shi's entire arm was completely shattered, while a mouthful of blood was crazily spurted out by him. Like a stone that was being slapped, he shot backwards, before finally gouging a deep hundred metre long track on the ground.

At this moment, the sudden clap of thunder ringing in the square rapidly disappeared.

Following that, the black lightning and the bloody light had also started to slowly vanish, bit by bit. Nevertheless, the surroundings of the northern square were unexpectedly still in absolute silence, since everyone one was staring blankly at the square, eyes brimming with shock and terror.

In the square, Mu Chen was still maintaining his position with his fist extended out. The ground in front of him had a fissure running hundreds of metres long, with a stretch of ruins present at its end.

He had actually managed to send Xue Shi flying with a single fist!

Not only were the people from the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy dumbfounded, even those students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, whom had faith and confidence in Mu Chen, had their jaws hanging wide open. The previous scene where Mu Chen had sent Xue Shi flying with his fist truly possessed too much of a shock to their eyes...

"How could that fist be that formidable?!" Su Xuan and the rest had shock similarly present within their eyes. That fist Mu Chen had sent out was absolutely enough to cause serious injuries to even a person of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

"That fellow's strength has increased again..." The faces of the people who had some disputed with Mu Chen, Zhao Qingshan and He Yao, appeared slightly pale. As of now, the gazes they sent

towards the former were now filled with a sliver of dread. The current Mu Chen had become even stronger than a month ago.

Unknowingly, this former Freshman, had already gradually surpassed them, and was even leaving them far, far behind.

Within the silence-filled square, gaze after gaze started to turn to the opposite direction of Mu Chen. The ground there had already collapsed. Within the giant pit, a figure was present. Staggering and stumbling, it appeared somewhat miserable as it stood up.

That was Xue Shi. As of now, his body was covered in blood, while his right arm hung lifelessly down, as though its bones were shattered by Mu Chen's fist.

More than half of the Blood God's Armor on Xue Shi's body had already shattered, appearing extremely dim, as though it could dissipate at any time.

Obviously, the frightening attack from Mu Chen had caused considerably serious injuries to him.

"How's this possible...?"

Xue Shi looked in disbelief at his lifeless right arm. His Blood God's Armor was actually destroyed by Mu Chen...that was the Blood God's Armor that was capable of enduring the furious attacks of a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert...This Mu Chen was only at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase! How could the latter break apart his Blood God's Armor?

"You've lost."

An indifferent expression filled Mu Chen's eyes as he stared at Xue Shi. At this moment, the latter had already landed outside of the square. According to the rules, he had already lost this fight.

Hearing Mu Chen's words, Xue Shi's face instantly contorted, while fury erupted from his eyes. He was a member of the majestic Blood God's Royal Clan! How could he lose to such a youth of no status and reputation?

“I’ll kill you, bastard!”

With a furious clench of his hand, a long spear that appeared to be condensed from blood appeared within his hand. In the next instant, he had unexpectedly shot it out. A cold glint slightly appeared as the long spear within his hand was thrusted straight at Mu Chen’s throat.

Whoosh!

Upon seeing that Xue Shi, who had already lost the right to continue battling, had unexpectedly attacked without abiding to the rules, everyone in the surroundings of the square instantly started clamoring, before furiously shouting and cursing out.

Indifference remained in Mu Chen’s eyes as he looked at Xue Shi shooting over to him. With his Blood God’s Armor broken, the latter’s speed had become slower. Added with his serious injuries, he was not insufficient to be a threat.

Swish!

As Mu Chen slightly moved his body, the eyes of Xue Shi contracted abruptly, as the former’s figure had already appeared right beside him.

“I’ve said that since you’ve hurt her, you’ll have to pay the price…now that you’ve broken the rules first, you can’t blame me…”

Now being very close to him, a swift and fierce expression akin to a blade erupted from Mu Chen’s handsome face, while a cold and sinister arc rising from the corner of his mouth. Obviously, the intent to kill had surfaced towards the fellow that had injured Luo Li with such despicable methods.

Furthermore, he wasn’t person of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, Mu Chen would not show a shred of mercy.

Feeling the deep killing intent harbored in Mu Chen’s words, Xue

Shi finally regained his clarity. Shock and terror instantly flashed within his eyes as he thought, This Mu Chen was actually deliberately waiting for me to break the rules?

Only when he broke the rules would Mu Chen be able to unscrupulously attack. Even if the latter truly killed him, Mu Chen would still have an excuse.

“This bastard!”

Chilling intent erupted for Xue Shi’s heart as he involuntarily cursed out. In the next moment, he saw Mu Chen’s palm print, encased in black lightning, violently descend towards his chest.

The ferocity of that attack was extreme.

“Stop!”

However, just as Mu Chen was about to land his palm on Xue Shi’s chest, an explosive roar abruptly resounded across the horizon. In the next instant, Mu Chen felt an indescribable pressure sweeping out. Under this pressure, his body started to become sluggish.

“Haha, Dean Fei. You’ve broken the rules by interfering in an exchange between students.” However, just as the pressure had enveloped him, a calm and faint sound of laughter rang out, causing the pressure on Mu Chen’s body to dissipate completely.

Mu Chen’s body had recovered to his usual condition.

As a cold glint flashed within his eyes, his palm landed without any hesitation on Xue Shi’s chest. As a clap of thunder resounded out, a slender finger of his suddenly turned into a deep jet-black colour as it silently stabbed out.

Successfully landing his strike, a sensation of danger suddenly erupted out from Mu Chen’s heart, causing him to react immediately and shot back out. At that instant, he was able to see a fat figure appearing beside Xue Shi, before grabbing the latter within his hand.

“Such a vicious brat!”

The figure was naturally the Dean of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy, Fei Qingsong. Looking at Xue Shi, whose aura was faint, his chest collapsed and close to death, his face instantly contorted, before fiercely glaring at Mu Chen.

The Spiritual Energy of the world seemingly condensed into something substantial at this moment, before pressing towards Mu Chen in an attempt to crush him.

Mu Chen instantly felt as though his body had entered into a swamp, while being unable to move. This caused a huge change to his expression. This force was something that he absolutely couldn’t offer any resistance against.

However, just as the Spiritual Energy of the world was pressing down on Mu Chen, a majestic and imposing figure appeared before him. With a wave of his sleeve, the pressure that blotted the skies instantly dissipated like smoke in thin air.

Dean Tai Cang appeared before Mu Chen, while looking calmly at Fei Qingsong in front of him. At this moment, akin to the rumbling of heavenly lightning, his indifferent voice rang out across this stretch of the world, immediately causing even the Spiritual Energy of the world to churn and boil erratically.

“Dean Fei, just because our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would treat people with respect, do you truly assume that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is easily bullied?”

# Chapter 349 – Untitled

As though carrying the prestige of the heavens and earth, Dean Tai Cang's firm and forceful voice spread out across the entire northern square. Every other sound was being suppressed at this moment. Even the Spiritual Energy fluttering about the world was churning and flaring up.

Out of fear, countless students maintained their silence, while shock and terror filled their faces. At this moment, they were able to feel as though they had lost the control of their bodies, while the Spiritual Energy within their bodies had traces that seemed as though they would rebel at any moment.

If Dean Tai Cang was to slightly release his killing intent, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies might instantly rebel. At that time, without even needing him to take action, they would be tossed around and killed by their own Spiritual Energy.

Therefore, as the students looked at one another, they were able to see the unconcealable shock present in each other's eyes. Was this the strength of Dean Tai Cang? Indeed, it was frightening...

Across from him, a faint change was also present on Fei Qingsong's face. The majority of the strength of Dean Tai Cang's roar had headed straight towards him. While others viewed it as a roar, within his eyes, it was akin to a roar from a furious dragon, brimming within frightening fluctuations.

This sound wave attack that was unable to be detected by others caused even him to feel a heart full of graveness.

The fatty flesh on Fei Qingsong's face shook, before his gaze turned sharp and fierce. With a wave of his sleeve, the space fluctuations caused the sound waves coming from the roar to be completely blocked. Lowering his head, he shot a look at Xue Shi, whom he had grabbed in his hand. At this moment, the latter had already fainted from his serious injuries. Those injuries were

serious to the point of sending a shiver across his face. Obviously, the injuries that Xue Shi had received were extremely serious. That Mu Chen had clearly wanted to take his life.

“Dean Tai Cang, we’ve come from afar to your place. However, this student of your academy is so vicious. Won’t he lose the face of your great academy?” Fei Qingsong questioned in a deep voice. All in all, he did not dare to shed all pretense of cordiality with Dean Tai Cang at this place. Firstly, this was the territory of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Secondly, being able to become one of the Deans of the Five Great Academies, how could Dean Tai Cang have an undeserved reputation?

Although their Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy could be considered to have some hidden cards up their sleeves, it was obvious that they were incomparable to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Regardless of the question, Dean Tai Cang’s face still maintained his previous calm, gentle and indifferent expression. With a faint smile, he replied, “The previous Exchange should have already ended. However, that Xue Shi had still continued to break the rules and attacked. Mu Chen attacking in self defense is a reasonable reaction.”

“If you really want to discuss this matter, you’d have to start from Xue Shi breaking the rules. Mu Chen isn’t to blame.”

Hearing his reply, the face of Fei Qingsong twitched uncontrollably for a few times. From the looks of it, this Dean Tai Cang did not plan to let Mu Chen give him an account... this showed that he wanted to shelter Mu Chen.

Although this Dean Tai Cang appeared good-natured and gentle, he was, in fact, extremely overbearing.

This ignited the flames within Fei Qingsong’s heart, causing his face to instantly appear somewhat dark and overcast.

“Dean Fei, this Exchange can be considered to have already ended. Both sides have their victories, and we’re unable to differentiate a final victor. However, your Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy truly has numerous talents. In the next Great Academy Competition, your academy should have a pretty good performance.” Clearly ignoring the dark expression on Fei Qingsong’s face, Dean Tai Cang’s voice and his faint smile already indicated his intent of wanting to send them off.

Fei Qingsong’s face instantly turned ugly. Nevertheless, there would be no face to gain, even if he was to stay behind. With a wave of his sleeve, he coldly snorted, “Since that's the case, I’ll have to thank the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for the reception. After the Great Academy Competition, our Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy would seek guidance again for this matter.”

In response, Dean Tai Cang gave a faint smile.

In the next instant, Fei Qingsong shot a fierce glare towards Mu Chen, who was standing behind Dean Tai Cang. However, the latter shot a smile back towards him in response, causing his anger to reach a level where his fat started to shake.

Snort!

With a quiet snort, Fei Qingshong grabbed the heavily injured Xue Shi and descended towards the location of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy students, before waving his sleeve.

“Let’s go!”

Boundless Spiritual Energy light swept out from Fei Qingsong’s sleeve, before completely enveloping all of those students. In the next instant, they transformed into a streak of light, and shot out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at lightning speed.

Whoosh!

Following the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy’s crestfallen

departure, the northern square instantly erupted with astonishing and earth shaking cheers. Countless scorching gazes were focused on the slender youth in the middle of the square. Compared to before, a trace of genuine worship and respect was present within them.

The absolutely breathtaking scene of the latter sending Xue Shi flying off the square, was still imprinted in their minds.

Hearing the deafening cheers and roars from the students, Mu Chen started to smile, before staring at the direction where Fei Qingsong and the rest of the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy people had left with slightly narrowed eyes. That Xue Shi was quite a problematic guy. However, it was a pity he wasn't able to kill the latter.

Regardless of being unable to kill him, that Xue Shi was still in deep shit. Previously, when Mu Chen had landed his palm on him, he had activated his "Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger", sending a trace of lightning poison into the latter's body. Although it wasn't lethal, it might lead to sufferings when the latter trained and cultivated in the future.

"Although they're not big, you're methods are quite vicious." Suddenly turning around, Dean Tai Cang spoke towards Mu Chen in a faint tone.

Mu Chen's heart immediately gave a slight jump. Although his poison finger was veiled by his pat, with Dean Tai Cang's strength, he might not be able to mask it from the latter...

Looking at Dean Tai Cang's face, which was unable to show whether he was happy or angry, Mu Chen was also unable to know what this great Dean was thinking, with the only option he had being to remain silent.

"However...at times, when you're not vicious, you'll get eaten by others."

Seeing Mu chen's nervous and tense state, Dean Tai Cang finally let out a laugh. Sounding a little delightful, he said, "Not bad. Facing a fellow that dared to ridicule the honor and dignity of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it's best to either kill or waste him. If anything happens, I'll always be able to handle it for you."

Hearing Dean Tai Cang's words, Mu Chen became dumbfounded. Unexpectedly, this Dean that had always appeared to be an exceedingly capable and outstanding person had spoken such words. However, while feeling stunned, he had also quietly sighed in relief. From the looks of it, Dean Tai Cang didn't mind the methods that he had used.

"In reality, this kind of Exchange didn't have any benefit to us. If they won, they would proclaim their success wantonly without restraint, and use this to smear the name of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

With a smile, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking, "In the past, we didn't really care much about it. However, these fellows had come just at the moment when Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had left the academy. If not for you, we might have truly let them escape with it. Therefore, you can be considered to have made a contribution to our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Don't worry about me thinking about punishing you."

"Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong have left the academy?" Mu Chen asked in shock.

"Yes. They've teamed up and taken the Bounty Mission to kill Mo Longzi," replied Dean Tai Cang as he faintly nodded his head.

"Mo Longzi..." muttered Mu Chen as his eyes faintly contracted. Previously, he had also met up with that fellow. If not for Shen Cangsheng managing to rush over in time, he might have been in considerable danger. However, as of now, his strength was much more intrepid compared to a few months ago. If he met with Mo

Longzi now, it’s also not necessary for the latter to be able to take his life.

“As of now, your experience is, after all, still shallow. In the future, if you wish, you can take this level of a Bounty Mission,” said Dean Tai Cang with a smile. Although Mu Chen’s current strength was already at a considerably intrepid level, he did not plan to allow the latter to undergo an overly dangerous mission. If anything were to happen to him by any chance, it would be quite a big loss for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, compared to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mu Chen was still just a youth.

“Therefore, what you should do now is strive hard and train. I know about some of your matters in the Spiritual Road. That opponent of yours isn’t simple...” said Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile.

Hearing those words, Mu Chen’s eyes instantly contracted. That opponent of his...was he talking about Ji Xuan?

“That Ji Xuan was personally received by the Dean of the Saint Spiritual Academy. Therefore, the Saint Spiritual Academy would naturally put in great effort to nurture him. Added with his absolutely peak talent, with his Heaven Grade Spiritual Pulse, his future achievements would be quite high. The most outstanding student from the Saint Spiritual Academy in the coming Great Academy Competition might even be him,” replied Dean Tai Cang.

Mu Chen gently nodded his head. He naturally didn't doubt Ji Xuan’s talent. At that time, people like Jie Ao and Yang Hong were all his loyal followers. This was sufficient to prove the capability and methods of the latter.

In the year within the Spiritual Road, other than Luo Li, who had previously caused a headache for Mu Chen, the only one who was of quite a high threat to him as Ji Xuan. In the end, he had even schemed to have Mu Chen forced out of the Spiritual Road. Those

methods and schemes utilised by him were extremely deep and concealed.

As of now, Ji Xuan had already entered the Saint Spiritual Academy, one of the five Great Academies. As of now, compared to his achievements in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, exactly who among the two of them had the upper hand?

Although Mu Chen wasn't a person that would seek revenge for the smallest grievances, grudges and gratitude were things that he remembered very clearly. That Ji Xuan was his true enemy, and was even the kind that would send his enemy to death once a chance presented itself to him. Therefore, once they met during the Great Academy Competition, it would definitely be a life-or-death fight.

Once he had the chance, Ji Xuan would definitely not show any mercy. Similarly, Mu Chen would not have the slightest bit of hesitation.

"I know." Mu Chen replied and nodded his head. He was very clear on how formidable Ji Xuan was. Therefore, he would naturally not relax his vigilance. Against this enemy of his, no one understood him better than Mu Chen.

"The Saint Spiritual Academy would give huge support to Ji Xuan. Since you're a student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, we'll naturally not do nothing about it."

With a beaming smile, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking, "I know that you've gotten quite a few benefits from Northern Sea, and have a substantial increase in strength. However, it seems that you're also a Spiritual Array Master, am I right? As of now, you should still be hovering and stagnating at this aspect, right?"

Dean Tai Cang's eyes were that sharp and acute. With a single look, he could tell that it was seemingly hard for Mu Chen to advance further in this aspect. After all, he was lacking guidance from people.

A faint light flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he hastily nodded his head.

"Northern Sea doesn't even understand a bit about Spiritual Arrays. Therefore, he's unable to offer any help to you."

Dean Tai Cang retrieved a jade slip from within his robes, with the words "Tai Cang" seemingly etched onto it. Handing it to Mu Chen, he said, "Tomorrow, you'll take this jade slip and find Elder Ling Xi. She's the person with the highest attainments in Spiritual Arrays within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and should be able to provide some help to you."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen was filled with joy. As of now, what he needed most was the guidance of a great Spiritual Array Master. This move by Dean Tai Cang was simply assistance at a timely moment.

"Dean, thank you very much."

Mu Chen hastily took the jade slip over and voiced his gratitude.

Waving his hand, Dean Tai Cang replied, "There's no need for thanks. What I need isn't that, but a Freshman of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy by the name of Mu Chen that is able to suppress the most monstrous talent of the Saint Spiritual Academy during the Great Academy Competition."

Faintly smiling while looking at Mu Chen, he asked, "So, what do you think? Can you achieve that?"

Clenching the jade slip and giving it a soft rub, an unruly arrogance and the sharpness of a youth rose from the corner of his mouth.

"Please feel relaxed, Dean. During the Great Academy Competition, just leave that Ji Xuan to me."

# Chapter 350 – Ling Xi

As the night grew darker, the clear and cold moonlight enveloped the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, even though it was already well into the night, the gigantic spiritual academy was still filled with vitality as figures shot across ceaselessly.

The Exchange that had ended today had undoubtedly caused the emotions within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to flare up and boil. The scene of the final reversal caused many students to boil and turn restless. Originally, all of them had assumed that they had let the Ancient Cauldron Spiritual Academy get the long end of the stick. Although a loss like that would not let people assume that their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was no longer capable, those slanderous rumors would always raise the ire of people.

Mu Chen had returned and defeated the strongest student from the opposite side with an immensely strong attack. This kind of reversal caused many students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to feel exceedingly elated and inspired. Naturally, relying on this fight, Mu Chen’s 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings had already become impossible to shake. There were even some students that estimated, and were shocked to discover, that the current Mu Chen had already started to gradually catch up to Li Xuantong.

According to the rate of Mu Chen’s increased strength, perhaps it wouldn't take too long before the 3rd Rank on the Heavenly Rankings to take a shift forward. This might even happen before a year’s worth of time… There was even the possibly of him rushing towards the Overlord’s Rank within the Heavenly Rankings that was guarded by Shen Cangsheng after so many years.

At that time, there would definitely be an incomparably spectacular fight between tigers and dragons.

...

Within the little building in the Freshmen Area, a young girl was standing elegantly. Clasping the black longsword in her jade-like hands, Luo Li's gaze was focused on it, while one could notice the absent-mindedness present within her eyes. After quite a long time, she gave a faint sigh.

"What's the matter?" A low and gentle voice rang out behind her as Mu Chen extended his arm around the young girl's slender waist.

"Looks like the news about me leaving the Luo God Clan is already spreading." replied Luo Li as she gently leaned within Mu Chen's bosom, while her eyebrows started to faintly knit together. If her grandfather, Luo Tianshen, was to know about this matter, the time of their agreement might be immediately brought forward.

She was the Queen of the Luo God Clan, and was the only person within the Luo God Clan that could shoulder them. If some mishap was to even occur to her, the Luo God Clan would truly collapse and be wiped out.

At that time, the millions of citizens within the Luo God Clan would suffer the ruthless massacre from the other three Great God Clans.

To the Luo God Clan, she was truly too important.

Therefore, once that Xue Shi wakes up, he would definitely report this news back to the Blood God Clan. At that time, the Luo God Clan would definitely catch wind of it. Therefore, even if she wanted to conceal this matter, she was unable to conceal it for long.

Hearing her words, the arm wrapped around Luo Li's slender waisted tightened, while fury quietly rose within his eyes. If he had known this earlier, he would have truly killed that fellow.

Although, he also knew that wanting to kill Xue Shi in front of Fei Qingsong seemed to be an impossible task.

As Luo Li nestled in Mu Chen's embrace, her fine and exquisite little face rested against his chest, rubbing her face up and down like a little kitten. She was very clear about the immense pressure that she would have to bear if she were to return to the Luo God Clan once again. This kind of pressure was sufficient to cause an ordinary person to immediately break down and collapse.

However, the lives and deaths of millions of her citizens were all under her control.

Furthermore, at that time, she would no longer have such a heartwarming embrace for her to rely on. At that time, the only person she could rely on was herself. At that time, there would no longer be anyone that would feel heartache to the point of feeling more hurt and infuriated whenever she gets bullied.

Mu Chen looked towards the delicate and porcelain-like face within his embrace, before starting to turn silent. He knew that the day where they had to part would come. Furthermore, this separation might be for a very long time, with her not having another chance to slip out to find him.

Before possessing sufficient strength, he was also unable to find her. If he did, not only would he not be able to provide any help to her, he would even become a burden. Although she wouldn't mind that, obviously, Mu Chen would absolutely not want to see that scene.

"I'll accompany you for this period of time."

Mu Chen let his hand flow through Luo Li's long silvery-like hair, enjoying the perfect feeling in his palms. Looking up into the sky, he exhaled a long breath of air. Luo Li, I'm already doing everything I can to run along the path of an unrivalled expert. I'll continue to run like that, all the way to the point where I can truly stand in front of you and shatter anything that blocks you with a

single palm of mine!

...

The next day, after accompanying Luo Li in the Freshmen area for over half a day. This continued till the young girl became slightly angry, and said that he was being too annoying and making her unable to train. Only then did he leave her alone, while feeling hurt that he was actually being ignored and avoided.

After leaving the Freshmen area, Mu Chen found his bearings and started heading towards the northern side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. According to Dean Tai Cang, that Elder Ling Xi should be living around there.

Mu Chen already knew about some information regarding Elder Ling Xi from his conversation with Dean Tai Cang and the others yesterday, the majority coming from Ye Qingling. That's due to the fact that the Elder that had taken Su'er under her wing was the exact same Elder Ling Xi.

That Elder stayed deep within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and rarely went out, and it was extremely rare for students to catch a glimpse of her, with the number of people being able to obtain her guidance on Spiritual Arrays being even less. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, if anyone wanted to obtain some guidance from the Elders, one would need extremely high amounts of Spiritual Values. However, this Elder Ling Xi had a completely firm personality. She didn't even care if one had Spiritual Values, causing countless students to be unable to shed tears, and were helpless without any other alternative.

In view of this, Mu Chen felt slightly apprehensive about this. This Elder had an overly excessive personality. He didn't know if the Dean's words would have any effect...

Holding onto this apprehension, and after approximately ten minutes, Mu Chen started to descend towards the peak of a cloud-covered mountain. An elegant courtyard stood erect on the summit

of the mountain. Clouds lingered around it, giving it an extremely quiet and serene feeling.

As Mu Chen descended before the courtyard, he noticed that the main doors were tightly shut, while there was nobody around to greet him. Making a bitter laugh, he retrieved the jade slip given to him by the Dean yesterday, before saying in a respectful voice, “This student’s name is Mu Chen, and I’ve come on the behest Dean Tai to meet with Elder Ling Xi.”

Wrapped with Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen’s voice rang out within the quiet and serene courtyard. Nevertheless, there was still no activity present within. Regardless of that, he didn’t get anxious over it. Standing outside of the door, without moving an inch, he held the jade slip out, appearing extremely respectful.

Within his respectful stance, he waited for nearly half an hour’s worth of time.

Just as the half an hour mark gradually went by, a ray of light shot out from within the depths of the courtyard. Immediately enveloping the jade slip within Mu Chen’s hands, it retrieved it before heading back. At the same time, the tightly shut courtyard doors started to slowly open, bit by bit.

Huuu.

Seeing the courtyard doors open, Mu Chen quietly breathed a sigh of relief. Looks like the Dean’s jade slip has a bit of use. If it didn’t, even if I stood here for an entire day and night, this eccentric Elder wouldn’t even bother with me.

Mu Chen strode forward, crossing over the courtyard doors before walking into the depths.

Past the courtyard was a secluded and winding small path made of broken stones, with a clear lake by its side. Taking a look at his surroundings, Mu Chen proceeded to follow along this small rocky path.

And this walk became one that was nearing half an hour's of time.

This small rocky path seemed to continue forever without end. Regardless of how Mu Chen walked, he was unable to walk out of it. At this moment, his expression had turned completely solemn. Obviously, he was able to feel the strangeness of this place.

As his stopped his footsteps and wrinkled his brows tightly, he thought, Is this... to test me?

Taking a look at his surroundings, he gave a flick of his finger, and explosively sent Spiritual Energy shooting out towards every direction. However, without shooting out far into the distance, all of them dissipated in the air. From the looks of it, this region seemed to an isolated space.

"Is this a Spiritual Array?"

Mu Chen muttered to himself, as he scanned the surroundings around him acutely. Nevertheless, he was unable to discover any fluctuations caused by Spiritual Seals permeating within the air. In this place, there weren't any traces of Spiritual Arrays.

After thinking deeply for quite a while, he made a sudden step back.

Following his step back, the surrounding scene turned slightly illusionary. In the next instant, he discovered that he had appeared at the location where he was right after stepping past the main doors, with the little rocky path in front of him. At his back, the doors of the courtyard were still open, seemingly telling him that if he wasn't able to head forward, he should immediately turn around and leave.

He couldn't walk forward, and he wasn't willing to turn around and leave.

Was there a third way for him to walk?

This place was definitely strange. However, it's just that Mu

Chen had yet to discover it.

As he thought about it, his eyes faintly narrowed. After a while, his gaze suddenly turned towards the clear lake beside the little rocky path. As his eyes sparkled, he took a step forward, and heavily landed within the lake.

As his feet descended, there wasn't any water splashing out. At this instant, Mu Chen's taut body finally relaxed. Indeed, it's like that...

Without stopping in his tracks, he walked straight into the lake, causing the lake water to slowly submerge him, bit by bit.

At the moment when Mu Chen was completely submerged by the lake water, his surroundings seemed to faintly ripple and fluctuate. In the next moment, he started to feel them turn illusionary, with the little rocky path and the lake already dissipating away.

What appeared before him was an elegant and refined bamboo building, with the words "Ling Xi's Courtyard" being displayed.

Elation filled Mu Chen as he could tell that he had passed the slightly strange place.

Suddenly, Mu Chen's gaze turned towards the front of the bamboo building, only to see a beautiful girl dressed in white sitting quietly there. The girl was extremely youthful, with her skin akin to snow, twirling eyebrows with a serene and quiet gaze, while radiating with an icy and indifferent aura that would repel people to a thousand miles away.

Upon seeing her, Mu Chen instantly gawked, before cupping his hands and saying, "This student..."

Before he could finish his words, the girl dressed in white gave him an icy glare. With a wave of her jade-like hand, the bamboo door instantly closed shut.

Mu Chen was stunned.

“Eh, Big Brother Mu Chen?” while Mu Chen was still stunned, a young and happy voice suddenly rang out from behind.

Turning his head around, the first thing he saw was Su’er, dressed in white, standing right behind him, who currently had her eyes wide open with happiness and surprise as she looked at him.

“Big Brother Mu Chen, why are you here?” asked Su’er happily in surprise.

Feeling helpless, Mu Chen replied, “I’m here to find Elder Ling Xi to teach me about Spiritual Arrays... however, I didn’t see anyone...”

“Hasn’t Elder Sister Ling Xi been here all along?” replied Su’er in confusion, as she pointed towards the bamboo building.

“This place? Elder Sister Ling Xi?”

Mu Chen immediately gawked, before an incredulous feeling erupted out from his eyes as this moment. Staring blankly at the tightly closed bamboo doors, he thought, That beautiful girl in white is that Elder Ling Xi?

# Chapter 351 – Guidance

Within the quiet and elegant bamboo house, Mu Chen looked with some awkwardness at the girl dressed in white that was in a seiza position behind the tea table. The latter wore a white dress, with her black hair draped over her shoulders. Coupled with her beautiful face and the lovably pointed jaw, she radiated with a faint icy and indifferent aura, letting people know that it was not easy to get close to her.

The girl in front of him was really quite beautiful, with not a bit inferior to Su Xuan. The only gripe was that icy indifference, which was the greatest among all of the beautiful girls that Mu Chen had ever seen.

He never imagined that this eccentric Elder Ling Xi would actually be this young and beautiful.

Su'er, who had also adopted the seiza position beside Ling Xi, secretly laughed as she looked at Mu Chen's awkward-looking face.

Regardless of that, the girl in white did not care about the Mu Chen in front of her and was minding her own business as she extended her slender white hand. Picking up the teapot, she gently poured the tea out, bringing along a clear and melodious sound within the quiet room as the tea entered the cup.

Giving a dry cough, Mu Chen cupped his hands and said, "This student, Mu Chen, has seen Elder Ling Xi. I apologize for my earlier conduct..."

"Why did you come here?" asked the white girl in a calm voice, with no presence of any fluctuations.

"The Dean has asked me to come here to find Elder...Ling Xi for guidance on cultivation in Spiritual Arrays," replied Mu Chen, with the word 'Elder' being said with slight difficulty, as he had never seen such a young and beautiful Elder.

“I don’t teach people.” Holding the jade tea cup in her white hands, the girl in white took a light sip before giving her reply.

Hearing her reply, Mu Chen immediately glared at Su’er sitting beside her.

“I don’t teach males.” Seemingly knowing what Mu Chen was referring to, the girl in white added a casual response.

Feeling helpless, the only thing Mu Chen could do was forsake his shame and replied, “It’s the Dean who asked me to come here.”

Hearing those words, the beautiful eyes of the girl in white rotated up slightly. Shooting a look at Mu Chen, she replied, “I’m not a person of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The only reason I’m here is due to owing a favor to Dean Tai Cang. Therefore, I’ve only agreed to help him construct some Spiritual Arrays for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As long as I want to, I can leave at any time. Therefore, don’t use his name and try to pressure me.”

Mu Chen was immediately speechless. This Elder Ling Xi’s character truly was eccentric. She didn’t even give face to Dean Tai Cang. This turn of events truly made Mu Chen feel slightly at a loss on how to proceed.

The girl in white proceeded to ignore the helplessly feeling Mu Chen and started to play with her elaborately designed jade cup with her usual indifferent expression.

Do to this, the atmosphere within the room quickly became silent and slightly stifling.

Seeing Mu Chen starting to shrivel up, Su’er could not help, laughing up her sleeve, before saying quietly, “Elder Sister Ling Xi, Big Brother Mu Chen’s talent in Spiritual Arrays is very good, and is even better than me.”

“There are too many people with good talent. If I were to teach every single one I see, wouldn’t that tire me to death?” asked Ling

Xi as she glared at Su'er.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, can you please help Big Brother Mu Chen, please? He treats me very well," begged Su'er as she started to act like a spoilt kid.

Nevertheless, Ling XI did not budge.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, if you don't agree, I'll not do work anymore," said Su'er as she pouted her small mouth.

"Then, I'll just have to lock you up in the Spiritual Array House." replied Ling Xi in a soft voice as a smile seemed to rise from the corner of her mouth.

Upon hearing the three words "Spiritual Array House", Su'er immediately turned quiet in fear, her little face quickly showed a bitter expression as she did not dare to continue speaking.

Seeing that Su'er did not dare to continue speaking, Ling Xi turned quietly for a slight moment before looking at Mu Chen. With an indifferent tone, she asked, "So, you're a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master now?"

"Yes," replied Mu Chen while nodding his head.

"What problem do you have?" asked Ling Xi.

"I would like to know how to control the Heart's Eye state." Mu Chen immediately replied. To him, the Heart's Eye state was extremely important. Once he was truly able to able to control the Heart's Eye state, he would be able to rely on his strength of a Rank 4 Spiritual Array Master to arrange Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays.

Although it could be said that he had managed to faintly make contact with the Heart's Eye state, the entirety of this state was extremely complicated. If he only relied on his probing and feelings, he truly did not know when he would achieve the level of full control.

"Heart's Eye?" muttered Ling Xi, as a trace of astonishment

revealed itself within her eyes. She truly didn't imagine that Mu Chen was actually able to make contact with the Heart's Eye state at his current level. It looked like what Su'er said was true, that he possessed an extremely high talent for Spiritual Arrays.

"The Heart's Eye state is a rather high and deep state within the path of a Spiritual Array Master. It's known in two forms, the Void Heart's Eye state, and the Real Heart's Eye state. However, from the looks of it, you aren't even at the level of full control over the Void Heart's Eye state."

Hearing her explanation, Mu Chen faintly gawked. Obviously, he never thought that the Heart's Eye state would actually have such a differentiation within it.

"What's the difference between the two?"

"The Void Heart's Eye state is an illusionary feeling and comprehension. If a Spiritual Array was arranged by two Spiritual Array Masters, one with control over the Void Heart's Eye state, while the other doesn't, not only will the amount of Spiritual Energy consumed by the one with control be less, its might would be even stronger, with even the chances of failure being drastically lowered. An extremely significant reason why some outstanding Spiritual Array Masters were able to arrange boundary-breaking Spiritual Arrays is due to their control over this state."

"As for the Real Heart's Eye state..." Ling Xi's voice paused slightly at this moment, before continuing, "Spiritual Array Masters that have such a degree of control over the Heart's Eye state would feel a good deal of Spiritual Arrays become incomparably simple in their eyes. This is due to them already being able to see through a lot of their complicated structures and peer into their cores. If you were to meet an enemy of such caliber, they would be able to see the weakest point of the Spiritual Arrays that you've arranged with a single look, and break them easily..."

"In addition, once one trains their control over the Real Heart's

Eye state to an extremely deep and high level, it would no longer continue to be an illusionary feeling. It would turn substantial, akin to an existence of a genuine eye. That's the true Heart's Eye state."

"Under the gaze of the Heart's Eye state, no Spiritual Arrays would exist. If you come face-to-face with such a Spiritual Array Master, it's best that you don't arrange any Spiritual Arrays in front of that person. That's because he would be able to see through your constructs in a single look. Perhaps, in an instant, he would be able to arrange a Spiritual Array identical to the one you've arranged."

Hearing her complete explanation, Mu Chen was completely dumbfounded. Reproducing an opponent's Spiritual Array with a single look? Wasn't that too perverted and abnormal? He never imagined that this Heart's Eye state would actually be that formidable. However, it seemed too far away from him. To him, what he wanted now was not the other benefits that it would provide, but only the little bit of allowing him to arrange boundary-breaking Spiritual Arrays...

"Exactly when would one be able to control this state?" Mu Chen posed his question cautiously.

"That's very simple. You just have to train and practice more," replied Ling Xi with a downplaying tone.

Mu Chen instantly felt sweat dripping down from his forehead. Isn't this making it sound too simple?

"What should I do?" asked Mu chen helplessly.

"Do you really want to control it?" asked Ling Xi as her intelligent and bright eyes focused on Mu Chen, while the icy indifferentness within them seemingly weaker than before. However, what replaced them was an indifferent laughing intent, which made Mu Chen feel a little uneasy.

However, at this time, regardless of his unease, the only thing he could do was steel himself. It was not easy to get this eccentric lady to guide him, If he showed the slightest bit of hesitation, he might be sent flying out once again.

“Yes.” replied Mu Chen with a nod.

Hearing his reply, Su’er used a sympathizing gaze as she looked at Mu Chen, she was already able to picture the unlucky look that would soon appear on his face.

“Follow me,” said Ling Xi and she stood up, revealing her slender and exquisite physique wrapped within the white clothing, Bringing along a slight trace of fragrance, she walked directly out of the house, leaving Mu Chen looking at her graceful and slender back figure.

The three of them headed out of the bamboo house and entered a bamboo forest, before stopping at a spacious clearing within its depths.

“In general, although Spiritual Arrays are complicated,to a Spiritual Array Master, the most important part of it would be the Array Core. Once the core is broken, even the most powerful Spiritual Array would dissipate into thin air. However, wanting to identify the Array Core of an incomparably complex Spiritual Array in operation would be an extremely difficult task.”

Looking towards Mu Chen, Ling Xi extended her slender jade-like finger and gave the space a tap. In the next instant, ripples seemed to undulate out from the touched space, as Mu Chen was able to feel the Spiritual Energy in this stretch of the world seemingly becoming disordered and chaotic.

Spiritual Energy akin to a storm condensed within the spacious clearing within the bamboo forest, as a scarlet-red glowing array started to form in the air. In the next instant, a strong Spiritual Energy fluctuation started to spread out, while radiating with a scorching-hot aura.

Looking at the scarlet-red Spiritual Array that had taken shape in an instant around him, Mu Chen's expression changed uncontrollably. This Spiritual Array should be a Fourth Grade one. If he was the one arranging it, it would require ample preparation before attempting to arrange it. However, with a single tap of her jade-like finger, this Ling Xi was able to form a Fourth Grade Spiritual Array. Furthermore, Mu Chen did not even see her condense a single Spiritual Seal...

She had directly controlled the Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth to arrange a Spiritual Array. This way made it even harder for people to guard against it.

One had to know that when a Spiritual Array Master arranges a Spiritual Array, the first thing that needed to be done was to condense the Spiritual Seals. However, it would give a clear indication to one's enemy what one's actions were. However, from what Ling Xi had done, she had directly omitted this step.

Shock quietly flooded Mu Chen's heart as he thought, A Great Spiritual Array Master, she truly is worthy of that title. She's on a completely different level from me.

However, just as Mu Chen was secretly feeling shocked, Ling Xi wasn't done with what she was doing. With another tap of her jade-like finger, one could see two similarly gigantic and complicated Spiritual Arrays surfacing in the air, enveloping the scarlet-red glowing array within them.

Three complete Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. Furthermore, they were arranged simultaneously.

Unable to bear it any more, the corner of Mu Chen's mouth started to twitch.

The three Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays enveloped the entire clearing with Mu Chen at their very most centre location. Currently, he did not even dare to make the slightest movement, since a single movement from him would cause the three Spiritual Arrays to

launch erratic attacks at him.

“Elder Ling Xi…”

With a dry laugh, Mu Chen asked, “May I know what this is for?”

“Before being killed by them, you’ll have to find the Array Cores of these three Spiritual Arrays, before breaking them to escape. Remember, you’re not allowed to use your Spiritual Energy to forcefully break them. You’re only allowed to break the Array Cores,” replied Ling Xi in an indifferent tone.

Mu Chen immediately opened his mouth wide. What the hell is this hellish form of training? Immediately asking me to deal with three Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays, can’t we stick to the norm? This truly can kill me!

“I’ll give you an hour. If you can’t break them, there’s no need for you to continue staying here, and just return to where you’ve come from. I won’t teach such stupid people.” Nevertheless, Ling Xi completely ignored the feelings of Mu Chen. After speaking her words in an indifferent tone, with a wave of her sleeve, she turned around and left.

“Su’er, make sure to watch him. If he dares to forcefully break the arrays, you’ll be the next one that enters.”

As Ling Xi’s beautiful figure headed into the distance, her clear and cold voice fluttered over, causing Su’er’s little face to turn bitter. In the next moment, she looked towards Mu Chen, currently in the middle of the arrays with an extremely pitiful expression.

“Big Brother Mu Chen, you have to listen to Elder Sister Ling Xi’s words… Su’er doesn’t want to go in there…”

# Chapter 352 – Breaking the Array

Bang!

At the very moment when Ling Xi left the bamboo forest, the three gigantic Spiritual Arrays immediately activated. The Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth instantly boiled and churned as boundless radiance permeated out, enveloping this entire area.

Mu Chen's expression turned grave as Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from his body. Looking towards the complicated Spiritual Arrays radiating with brilliance that enveloped him, he could faintly make out traces of Spiritual Energy light chains that formed extremely complicated array diagrams.

Due to the extremely close proximity of the three Spiritual Arrays to one another, it caused the level of complexity to increase by quite a bit. When combined, three Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays were able to erupt with the force of a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phrase. With Mu Chen's strength, if he used force with any qualm, he should be able to shatter and split these three Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays apart and break out of them. However, the last words that Ling Xi said to him had firmly obstructed him from heading down this path.

Since he was unable to use the forceful way, the only thing he could do was to decipher the Array Cores. If not, that Ling Xi might immediately expel him.

Whoosh!

Just as Mu Chen was carefully observing and studying the Spiritual Arrays, the latter started blossoming with radiance. In the next moment, three gigantic rays of light swept over. Carrying along churning Spiritual Energy, they slammed against Mu Chen's body at lightning speed.

Bang!

As the rays of light shattered, Mu Chen was forced a step back. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames that curled around his body grew dimmer, before turning into a raging inferno again.

“It’s painful,” muttered Mu Chen as he rubbed his chest. Although, with Mu Chen’s current tyrannical fleshly body, enduring three Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase attacks would not lead to any injuries, but the pain was still present.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

However, it was obvious that Elder Ling Xi would not let Mu Chen be so relaxed. Just as the three Spiritual Light beams had shot out, the three Spiritual Arrays started to rumble and revolve. In the next moment, as his face started to faintly change, beam after beam of lights hid the skies and covered the earth as they shot out, rumbling towards him before raining down like a storm.

Such a terrifying amount of attacks; even Mu Chen started to feel his scalp turning slightly numb. Not daring to rely on his fleshy body to endure them anymore, a dragon’s shadow erupted from Mu Chen’s body as he activated the Dragon Soaring Art and fled away.

A remnant shadow appeared where Mu Chen previously stood, before immediately being shattered into pieces by the incoming Spiritual Energy beams.

Bang! Bang!

Unfortunately, there wasn’t much room within this region of space enveloped by the gigantic Spiritual Array, thus Mu Chen could not completely escape from it. Even relying on the Dragon Soaring Art, he was still struck dozens of times, causing tremors to shake within his body.

At that moment, Mu Chen’s face had truly turned ugly. According to normal reasoning, the Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays

arranged by him would at most be able to erupt with a single barrage of attacks, before gradually dissipating away. However, the three before him had continued launching barrage after barrage, with no end to them.

“I have to hurry up and break these arrays,” muttered Mu Chen as his gaze turned solemn. He did not dare to drag this on any longer, because if this continued, even with his small accomplishment in his Thunder God Physique, he might still be consumed to death in this place.

In the next instant, brilliance erupted from within his eyes as he locked onto the revolving Spiritual Arrays. The complicated array diagrams that were stretched by lines and lines of glowing Spiritual Energy line started to be continuously etched within his mind.

Bang!

However, just as Mu Chen had managed to probe into a little bit of the locus of the array diagrams, a wave of rampaging attacks came heading his way, forcing him to retreat tens of steps. As his blood and Qi rolled and churned over, the locus of the array diagrams that he had just managed to obtain were changed by the revolving Spiritual Arrays.

A wasted effort.

This was akin to a person trying to fumble around a moving maze, and needed to follow those orbital tracks. However, once that probe was being disrupted and interfered with, the orbital tracks would be messed up by the revolutions. If one wanted to escape the maze using conventional means, the only thing one could do was to try again from the start.

Unable bear it, Mu Chen let out a curse. Only now did he truly understand how difficult it was to break an array using this method. Naturally, he also knew that if it was that easy to find the Array Core of a revolving Spiritual Array and destroy it in one fell

swoop, then being a Spiritual Array Master would not be as popular as it was.

Clenching his teeth, Mu Chen told himself to not get flustered. Upon getting flustered and anxious, he would no longer be able to find those Array Cores, with the only way left being for him to force his way out. If not, he would truly be consumed to death.

Hu.

As Mu Chen forcefully instructed himself to calm down, black lightning started to erupt on the surface of his body as the Lightning Rune on his chest grew brighter. He had already activated his Thunder God Physique. With that, he would be able to reduce the disturbance caused by the periodic attacks towards him.

Within the clearing in the bamboo forest, Mu Chen's figure continued to flutter about as he retreated, evading those Spiritual Arrays that hid the skies and covered the earth as they headed his way. From time-to-time, some of those Spiritual Energy light beams would sweep across him, causing a faint bout of trembling to spread within his body.

Standing outside of the Spiritual Arrays, Su'er covered her eyes with her hands, not daring to take a look at Mu Chen, who was now trapped in a spectacle that was too horrible to endure. If it was her that was within those Spiritual Arrays, she might have long lost her little life.

As time slowly elapsed, the boundless Spiritual Energy within the depths of the bamboo forest grew increasingly erratic. Ray after ray of Spiritual Energy light beams swept out, causing the sky to be suffused by a brilliant rainbow of colours.

Bang!

Within the Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen's body was struck by tens of Spiritual Energy light beams. Black lightning sparkled on the

surface of his body, forcibly resisting the incoming impact, while a flash abruptly appeared within Mu Chen's gaze as he stared towards the revolving Spiritual Arrays.

He had already managed to get an approximate feel of the array diagram of one of the Spiritual Arrays. However, he was still unable to find its Array Core. The Spiritual Arrays arranged by that Ling Xi were extremely formidable. As the three Spiritual Arrays overlapped with each other, and jointly revolved, there was completely no pattern that they followed.

Due to the superimposition by the three Spiritual Arrays, wanting to find their Array Cores was too difficult a task.

And, the common way of dealing with them was completely unable to be used.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, half of the time has already past. You can do it." Su'er's slightly worried reminder rang out from the distance. She was very clear about Ling Xi's character. If Mu Chen truly was unable to break out of the arrays within the stipulated time, there would truly be nothing that could be said.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly, before slowly closing his eyes.

As he did so, he immediately entered the Heart's Array State. Although the higher and more profound Heart's Eye State was something that he was still unable to control, the Heart's Array State was, after all, an elementary state. This, at his current level, he was able to exhibit a high level of control over it.

Within the darkness, points of brilliance started to light up, which seemed to be countless points of Spiritual Energy light. Those rays of light howling across were the attacks sent out by the Spiritual Arrays, The outside was a bright and intense radiance. Within that radiance should be the location of the Spiritual Arrays.

Upon seeing all of these, Mu Chen's state of mind grew

increasingly concentrated and decisive. Extended his mind out, he slowly started to send a feedback of the orbital tracks of those Spiritual Arrays back into his mind, before slowly linking them and continuing this process...

The disturbance occurring in the outside world had seemingly been completely shut out at this moment.

The complete orbital track of the Spiritual Array started to gradually take form within Mu Chen's mind.

Bang!

Within the Spiritual Arrays, the footsteps of Mu Chen, whose eyes were tightly shut, started to move much slower. On his body, the light from the black lightning sparked as dozens of rays of Spiritual Energy light beams surged over. Like a furious dragon, they violently impacted against his body.

The low and deep sounds that rang out caused a shiver in Su'er's little heart.

As the Spiritual Energy light beams exploded against Mu Chen's body, his body was forced back by about ten steps. The clothes on his body were tattered, while shallow traces of bloody wounds appeared. Mu Chen was the only person able to endure such attacks with his fleshly body. If it was any other person at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, they might have long been smashed into pulp.

While Mu Chen was being forced back, his eyes still remained tightly shut. In the next instant, he sent a fist furiously rumbling out. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames swept out, before violently impacting a certain location within that bright and resplendent Spiritual Arrays.

Bang!

Instantly, the Spiritual Arrays seemed to intensely tremble, before the Spiritual Array and the innermost location started to

violently shudder. Cracks started to rapidly extend across the surface, before finally exploding with a bang.

The first Spiritual Array's Array Core was finally found by Mu Chen, before being easily destroyed by a fist from him.

"You did it!"

Cheers immediately rang out from Su'er as her big and vivid eyes were filled with worship. Big Brother Mu Chen's too awesome! He could actually find the Array Core just like that...

Even though he smashed an Array Core with his fist, Mu Chen's eyes still remained tightly shut. There were still two more Spiritual Arrays. Fortunately, it was much easier to find their Array Cores, compared to before. After all, one of the three superimposing Spiritual Arrays was broken. Therefore, it would not require the same amount of consumption and concentration as before.

Therefore, within a short span of a number of minutes, two more fists rumbled out from Mu Chen. Two streaks of glowing Spiritual Energy violently impacted a corner of those two Spiritual Arrays, causing them to instantly shudder. With a humm and a buzz, both of them completely came to a stop, before rapidly dissipating away.

The three Spiritual Arrays were all broken.

After breaking the three Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen was still deep within his previous state. He seemed to be able to faintly feel something, as though a fantastic feeling had flashed with the depths of his spirit.

This feeling was extremely fantastic. However, even though he wished to capture it, he was unable to make contact with it. Regardless of that, he was able to feel that he had faintly started to make contact with the thing that he yearned for in his dreams.

As the Spiritual Arrays dissipated, Mu Chen stood erect at his original position for a long time, before slowly opening his eyes.

Instantly, a weak feeling spread throughout his legs as intense pain started to ring out from his body. Lowering his head to take a look, he discovered that his entire body was filled with wounds. Although they weren't life threatening, they had brought along waves of intense pain.

Mu Chen sucked in a cold breath of air. It as fortunate that he had managed to reach a small accomplishment in his Thunder God Physique. If not, the current him would already have shattered meridians and broken bones, and pain that would far exceed the pain radiating from his muscles.

"Big Brother Mu Chen, you too awesome!" exclaimed Su'er in excitement as she rushed over. However, upon seeing Mu Chen's bare upper torso, caused by his tattered clothes, the little girl quickly started to blush as she turned her little red face away.

With difficulty, Mu Chen gave a smile, retrieving and wearing a new set of clothes. In the next moment, he felt the exhaustion radiating from within his body. That was the feeling of his mental energy being overly depleted. The earlier fight to break those Spiritual Arrays was simply even more tiring than his fight with Xue Shi.

"Elder Ling Xi."

Mu Chen spoke out as he raised his head to look at his surroundings, knowing that Ling Xi would definitely be paying attention to him.

"It's almost an hour. You're barely able to pass."

Ling Xi's clear and cold voice rang slowly in the air, "Go back, for now, and we'll continue tomorrow. It'll be the same as today, but there'll be one more Spiritual Array."

A faint shiver spread within Mu Chen's body. However, he did not let any sounds of anguish out. Contrary to that, a blazing fire seemed to erupt from within his eyes. Although Ling Xi's methods

were cruel and barbaric, it had to be said that the results were extremely tempting. If the fantastic feeling that he had felt earlier continued to appear, he would definitely be able to give birth to the true Heart's Eye!

"Thank you very much, Elder Ling Xi."

Cupping his hands, Mu Chen gave a pat of Su'er's small head, before walking off by himself. This was Ling Xi's residence. Other than Su'er, he didn't see anyone else. Thus, it wasn't convenient for him to stay.

As Mu Chen disappeared into the distance, the lady dressed in white, Ling Xi, finally appeared beside Su'er as her beautiful eyes stared at the direction where Mu Chen had broken the Spiritual Arrays.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi, isn't Big Brother Mu Chen very awesome?" asked Su'er in satisfaction.

Extending her slender and jade-like finger, Ling Xi gave a soft tap on Su'er's bright and radiant forehead. However, she did not give a reply, with the only thing she did was look at the direction where Mu Chen had left, before giving a faint nod.

That Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Arrays truly has some aspects that are worth commending.

# Chapter 353 – The Mysterious Ling Xi

In the following days to come, Mu Chen came almost every day to undergo Ling Xi's demonic training. Upon completion, he would leave, completely covered in wounds. His tattered and miserable appearance gave Luo Li a fright. However, after knowing the entirety of the matter, she could only shake her head in helplessness. This Elder Ling Xi was truly vicious in her actions.

However, although Mu Chen had paid an extremely disastrous price to undergo this demonic training, it had to be said that the results were truly not small. Within a short span of a few days, Mu Chen's rate of improvement was quite good. On the first day of this demonic training, when he had broken the three Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays, he was already totally consumed. Furthermore, it had led to him ending up in an extremely miserable state.

However, at the end of the tenth day, he had already increased the number of superimposing Spiritual Arrays to a terrifying amount of 20...

20 Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays activated simultaneously. The threat coming from them would even cause a Heavenly Completion Stage expert to feel his skin crawl. However, it was fortunate that those Spiritual Arrays weren't used for slaughter; thus, could not be compared to the ones that were used in real fights. Therefore, relying on his Thunder God Physique, coupled with the increasing familiarity in his training, he was barely able to scrape past it every time. Naturally, the price he had to pay was even more disastrous. After completing the training every day, he wouldn't be able to move the next day, and could only take the day off to rest.

As this cycle of rest for a day and break arrays for a day, Mu Chen could feel that the rate of the appearance of the fantastic feeling was becoming higher and higher. This made Mu Chen extremely elated.

Although this fantastic feeling did not mean that he had already come into true contact with the Heart's Eye State, it was able to tell him that he was getting closer and closer to it.

As long as he continued this, he would finally be able to brush aside the mysterious fog and truly comprehend the Heart's Eye State!

...

Bang!

Spiritual Energy that blotted the skies erupted from within the depths of the bamboo forest as Spiritual Arrays started to envelope the surrounding sky. With their numerous amount, they formed layer after layer. With their revolutions, Spiritual Energy that hid the skies and covered the earth gushed and erupted out, roaring with terrifying prestige.

At this moment, within the dense layers of Spiritual Arrays and countless howling light beams, a figure sparkled as it dashed around at lightning speed. Black lightning bolts sparked on its body, resisting the attacks from those Spiritual Energy light beams that couldn't be evaded.

Bang! Bang!

While dodging, the figure rapidly launched its furious attacks as vigorous exploding fists swept out, descending towards the numerous layers of Spiritual Arrays.

Every time it launched an attack, a Spiritual Array layer would shudder, before emitting faint cracking sounds. A moment after that, the Spiritual Array would collapse, before transforming into dots of light that blotted the skies, before dissipating away.

On the outskirts of the bamboo forest, Su'er exclaimed in astonishment at the spectacle before her. In a short span of time that hadn't even reached half a month, Mu Chen had already broken away from the miserable state he was in during the

beginning of the training. Obviously, he had also managed to grasp some concepts and understandings. Furthermore, even Su'er could see that Mu Chen's ability to find and identify the Array Cores was getting increasingly formidable.

Although Ling Xi did not use any methods to conceal the Spiritual Arrays' Array Cores, wanting to find and identify them in such a situation was, by itself, an extremely difficult task. Let's not mention a Fourth Grade Spiritual Array Master, even a Fifth Grade Spiritual Array Master would be hard pressed to accomplish that feat. However, Mu Chen was able to improve to such a level in a short span of ten plus days; this was already an extremely difficult feat to pull off.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

While Su'er was gasping in astonishment, following the howls of exploding fists, the layers of Spiritual Arrays within the depths of the bamboo forest were completely broken. As the dots of light that blotted the skies surfaced, they presented an exceptionally spectacular scene.

Whoosh!

As the final Spiritual Array shattered apart, a figure swept out and landed beside Su'er. As the brilliance faded, it revealed the naked upper torso of Mu Chen, with some blood stains present.

"Here, Big Brother Mu Chen," said Su'er as she intimately handed him a set of clothes. The little lady was no longer embarrassed, since she had seen too much for the past few days, thus becoming used to it.

Putting on the new set of clothes, Mu Chen wiped away the few blood stains on his body. Although intense pain still radiated from his body, he had already gotten used to it after a few days. Therefore, Mu Chen didn't end up in the same unbearable state as the first day, where he had almost collapsed due to a depletion of mental and physical strength.

“Big Brother Mu Chen, how’s your comprehension on your Heart’s Eye State?” asked Su’er curiously .

“I’m still lacking a bit,” replied Mu Chen helplessly with a smile. He had felt that fantastic feeling once again just now. However, he didn’t know why he felt as thought there was something slightly lacking. This feeling was akin to a little bird trapped within an egg and was trying to break the shell and escape, only to find that the shell was too hard. Unable to escape even after struggling, it appeared extremely distorted.

However, Mu chen was not overly greedy. Having such an improvement over these past few days was already considered a pretty good result. Although he was very confident of his talent, the Heart’s Eye State was, after all, one that was much deeper and profound. It wasn’t that easy to control it.

“Then, Big Brother Mu Chen, you have to work harder. Yesterday, Elder Sister Ling Xi said that your improvement is too slow. If she was impatient, she would immediately chase you away,” said Su’er.

Mu Chen immediately became speechless. After interacting for ten days, it could be considered that he managed to gain some understanding about Ling Xi. This lady truly had a strong character, and would do anything she wanted to do. Although Mu Chen believed that he did not dare to offend her, there truly was a possibility that, someday, she would become unhappy, and drive him out for no apparent reason.

“Su’er, do you know exactly how old she is?”

Taking a stealthy look at his surroundings, Mu Chen quietly posed this question to Su’er. He was extremely anxious and curious about this question. Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it was the first time he had seen such a youthful Elder. Her age seemed to be not much older than his own. However, he did not dare to say this definitively, the possibility existed for some

experts with unfathomable strength to change their appearances, just like Elder Zhu Tian with his youthful appearance. However, with a single look, Mu Chen was able to see that his youthful appearance was just a façade. The ancient aura filled with vicissitude was unable to be concealed.

However, Mu Chen was unable to sense such an aura coming from Ling Xi. Although the latter was cold and indifferent, she did not have an ancient aura coming from her.

“Hmm, Elder Sister Ling Xi never talked about this before. However, she only allows me to call her Elder Sister. I think that her age shouldn’t be big...” Hearing Mu Chen’s question, Su’er immediately suppressed her voice. Her big eyes were now filled with excitement. From the looks of it, her gossipy heart was no weaker than Mu Chen’s.

Mu Chen nodded his head in agreement. If the disparity between their ages was truly large, there shouldn’t be the matter of her asking Su’er to call her Elder Sister...

However, if that was truly the case. This truly would be a bit frightening. Just how old was she? She actually possessed such terrifying strength. This would simply cause Shen Cangsheng and the rest of the elite students to die of a heart attack.

“In fact, I think that even Elder Sister Ling Xi isn’t too clear about her age, since she seems to have forgotten a lot of things...” said Su’er as she tilted her head from side-to-side, looking somewhat puzzled.

Mu Chen immediately gawked. Forgotten? His brows started to faintly wrinkle up. The feeling this Ling Xi gave people was that she was slightly too mysterious, with no one knowing exactly where she came from. This world truly had lots of mysterious and unfathomable things.

Just as he wanted to probe further, a familiar figure dressed in white appeared in the distance, causing him to hastily shut his

mouth. Similarly, Su'er stuck her little tongue out, while giving a pretentious act of helping Mu Chen with cleaning his blood stains.

As Ling Xi slowly walked over, her clear and icy pupils shot a look at Mu Chen as she said, "Looks like you've some spare energy left today."

One could hear the faint chilling intent within her voice.

Mu Chen gave a dry laugh.

"Since you're done with your training, why are you still here, instead of going back?"

Immediately following her question, Ling Xi gave her next order, "From tomorrow onwards, the number of Spiritual Arrays will increase to 30. After five days, you'll enter the Spiritual Array House. If you're still unable to open your Heart's Eye State, you can go fumble around by yourself. I won't teach such a stupid person."

In response, Mu Chen gave a smile, without any bitterness shown on his face. He was, in fact, extremely curious to the point of anxiousness towards the so-called 'Spiritual Array House'. From Su'er's words, it seemed to be a place that was quite frightening. However, from Ling Xi's words, didn't it seem as though that place had some use towards opening his Heart's Eye?

As this harbored this thought within his heart, he gave Su'er's little head a rub, before saying his goodbyes and leaving.

Upon seeing Mu Chen leave, Ling Xi glared at Su'er while saying, "Do you want to see what I'll do to you if you dare to say nonsense about me?"

"Su'er won't dare to do it anymore," replied Su'er hastily as she shook her head. Elder Sister Ling Xi is so scary. She really did hear us.

"Why are you not cleaning the bamboo forest?"

“Mhm Mhm...” Su’er nodded her head repeatedly, before hugging the large broom that was taller than her and proceeding to sweep the bamboo forest that had turned into a mess by Mu Chen.

As Ling Xi looked towards the little figure of Su’er, a faint smile surfaced at the corner of her mouth. In the next moment, she seemed to think about something as a somewhat blank expression presented itself slightly in her eyes. Giving a soft sigh, she turned around and headed back to the bamboo house, before entering its depths. Presently, there was a little bamboo house with tightly shut doors.

Opening the doors of the bamboo house, one could not see a single speck of dust within, with everything within being considerably simple and organised. A praying mat was present within the house, while a painting hung on the wall in front of it. The painting seemed to be of a black-coloured pagoda. A vague and indistinct figure of a lady sitting down was present on top of the pagoda. The figure was extremely blurry and indistinct. However, it gave people a feeling of peace and tranquility.

Ling Xi proceeded to kneel and sat down on the praying mat, before staring blankly at the painting. A blank and vacant expression fluctuated within her beautiful eyes, as if she was trying hard to remember something. However, after exhaling a breath of air with some pain, she clutched her forehead with her white hands as her black hair spilt all over the floor, causing her slender figure to appear exceedingly frail and miserable.

.....

This was a desolated area of mountains and fields. On the summit of a lone peak stood a youth dressed in black with his hands behind his back. A black sword was carried on his back, while a black dragon mark sat within his forehead. An aura of extreme chill radiated from the dragon mark, giving people a terrifying feeling that would make them tremble in fear.

That familiar appearance was Mo Longzi.

Faintly panning his head, he looked at a distance far away in the north as a cruel and frosty smile surfaced at the corner of his mouth.

“Chasing me for so long… you two really have perseverance… However, this time, I’m afraid that you two won’t be able to return…this is the grand feast that I’ve specially prepared for you two…”

“Ha ha…if I’m able to kill the 1st and 2nd place of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, would I be able to exceed him on their Bounty List?”

“I truly look forward to it…”

A soft and chilling laughter slowly rang out from the mountain peak as the figure dressed in black started to slowly dissipate in the air.

# Chapter 354 – Spiritual Array House

Due to a single statement by Ling Xi, for the next five days, it was very clear that Mu Chen's life was unbearably tough and painful. With thirty Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays grinding him to the point between life and death, he was left battered and exhausted.

However, it was fortunate that after enduring a period of the demonic training, Mu Chen could be said to have developed some resistance to it. Therefore, after successively failing in completing his training of breaking the thirty Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen finally successfully accomplished it with extreme difficulty on the fourth day. However, the price he paid was an immediate loss of consciousness due to being totally drained upon exiting the Spiritual Arrays, which result in him being dragged back to the Freshmen area by Su'er.

For the fifth day, Mu Chen took the entire day's worth of time to recuperate, which resulted in him finally recovering. However, there was still a slight lingering fear within him. thirty Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays; even though it was of the training Grade, it was sufficient to make a huge percentage of people at the Heavenly Completion Stage to completely lose the colour on their faces.

Naturally, having completed this training did not equate to Mu Chen being able to confront thirty Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays when engaging in battle against others. Training and real life combat were, after all, not the same. The enemies faced during combat would not immediately arrange their Spiritual Arrays like that and leave them without any further control to let anyone search and probe their patterns.

However, this did not mean that the training did not have any effect. As of now, Mu Chen believed that if he met one or two Fourth Grade Spiritual Arrays, he would absolutely be able to effortlessly dispel them, without any kind of consumption of his strength.

His understanding and familiarity towards Spiritual Arrays had undoubtedly become much more refined after this half a month.

The fifth day was being used completely by Mu Chen to recuperate. Only on the next day did he continue to head back to Ling Xi's small courtyard.

As Mu Chen walked into the small courtyard, a girl dressed in a skirt as white as snow was sitting near the bamboo ledge within the green and verdant bamboo house. Propping her lovely cheek with her white hand, her beautiful eyes gazed onto the ground, with no focal point within her sight, while a faint expression was present on her beautiful face. That vacantness masked her original icy and indifferent expression, causing her to give people an additional beautiful feeling of frailness upon seeing her.

Ling Xi's appearance was already extremely beautiful, with only her icy indifference that forced people a thousand miles away, making Mu Chen not daring to say much in front of her. However, spotting the former with such a rare expression caused him to go into a daze upon seeing her.

While Mu Chen was in a daze, Ling Xi had also discovered his arrival, causing those beautiful eyes to immediately refocus, becoming the usual iciness and indifferentness once again.

"Hmm, you've arrived, Big Brother Mu Chen! Are your injuries healed?" Su'er's small head extended from the bamboo house at this moment. Upon seeing Mu Chen, happiness filled her little face.

Sending a smile towards her, Mu Chen cupped his hands and greeted Ling Xi, "Elder Ling Xi."

Ling Xi shot a look at him, before saying in her usual indifferent tone, "Before everything, I have to tell you that the Spiritual Array House is extremely dangerous. Although you've gotten seriously injured during your usual training here, that is, after all, within the boundaries of your limits. However, the inside of the Spiritual

Array House is different from your training. Once you make a slip, your little life will be lost in there. Furthermore, at that time, I'll not save you, as this is your own decision. Your life and death is of no concern to me."

Mu Chen's expression turned faintly solemn as he asked, "After entering the Spiritual Array House, would I then be able to open my Heart's Eye?"

With the slightest bit of mercy, Ling Xi destroyed Mu Chen's hopes with a single reply, "Do you think you're capable of doing that?"

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh.

"You've already managed to touch the Heart's Eye State, with the only thing stopping you is your inability to open it. However, the final step you're lacking in might only be broken through during a life-or-death situation. Although the usual training is dangerous, it hasn't reached such a degree of danger," replied Ling Xi with her usual clear and cold voice.

"Naturally, you can choose a different method from this. However, I'll only give you, at most, half a month of time. If you're still unable to open your Heart's Eye at that time, my guidance will also end right there." Ling Xi's voice didn't present many fluctuations within, and same with her emotions and feelings.

She was naturally icy and indifferent, and didn't have a single shred of a relationship with Mu Chen. If not for Dean Tai Cang and Su'er, she would simply ignore him. As of now, helping him for half a month was, to her, already considered as doing her best.

Already clear about her character and temperament, Mu Chen didn't feel any anger or frustration. After a moment of deep thought, he nodded his head firmly.

"I choose to enter the Spiritual Array House."

He was similarly able to feel that he was somewhat lacking just

one step. However, regardless of how much more training he did, that one step was difficult to stride over. Perhaps it truly was like what Ling Xi had said, that he need the stimulation present in a life-or-death situation to be able to truly open his Heart's Eye.

Although he knew that this would be extremely dangerous, courage and bravery were things that Mu Chen never lacked. If he was overly cautious, Mu Chen felt that he would have already died long ago during the days within the Spiritual Road, even more so to walk to the step he was at now.

Mu Chen's decision caused Ling Xi to take another look at him, before giving a calm and faint nod with her beautiful face as she turned and walked off.

"Follow me."

Mu Chen immediately followed suited, with Su'er hastily following along. At this moment, worry and concern flooded her tiny face. She was very clear about how frightening the Spiritual Array House was. Once a problem arose while one was inside, even one's life might have no guarantees.

The three of them passed through the quiet and serene courtyard to the deepest part of the area. This place appeared extremely spacious, with only a dilapidated stone house present in front of them. The stone house was covered in moss, giving people an ancient feeling filled with vicissitudes upon seeing it.

Ling Xi came to a stop before the stone house. Forming a seal with her jade-like hands, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot out, before enveloping the dilapidated stone house.

Humm! Humm!

Following the enveloping brilliance, the stone house started to shudder, before rapidly expanding within Mu Chen's astonished gaze. In a short span of a few breaths, the stone house had transformed into a gigantic stone hall. Within the surroundings of

the stone hall, one could faintly discern the mysterious runic lines flickering with a dim brilliance.

“This is…” Staring at the stone hall, a faint flash appeared within Mu Chen’s gaze as thick astonishment erupted from within his eyes as he asked, “Is this a Spiritual Artifact?”

From the stone hall, Mu Chen was able to to feel the unique fluctuations possessed only by a Spiritual Artifact.

“Hehe. This Spiritual Array House isn’t any ordinary Spiritual Artifact. According to Elder Sister Ling Xi, it was previously a Quasi-Divine Artifact. However, due to it being broken, its grade had dropped. Now, it’s a Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact. However, even if that was the case, due to extremely strong Spiritual Arrays concealed within it , even a Sovereign would be trapped and find it hard to escape from within if he ever landed within it,” replied Su’er with a cheeky smile.

“Quasi-Divine Artifact?” Mu Chen involuntarily sucked in a breath of cold air as he looked at Ling Xi’s beautiful figure with strange gaze. Exactly what was her background? She was actually able to possess a Quasi-Divine Artifact that would even shake the heart of Sovereign Realm experts. Out of all the many Elders within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, even the Heavenly Seat Elders, like Mo You and Zhu Tian, might not even possess a Quasi-Divine Artifact.

Furthermore, what kind of frightening person or thing was able to cause this previously Quasi-Divine Artifact to drop a Rank to become an Peerless Rank Spiritual Artifact?

Mu Chen quietly clicked his tongue. This Ling Xi was truly getting more and more mysterious.

Ignoring the two behind her, Ling Xi stared at the dilapidated stone hall, while going into a daze as a vacant expression flash within her beautiful eyes. Only after quite a while later did she give a faint sigh. With a wave of her white hand, rumbling sounds rang

out of the tightly shut stone doors as they slowly started to open, bit by bit. Instantly after this, boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out from within.

“Prepare to go in. I can only open the first level of the Spiritual Array House. However, even though that's the case, it’s sufficient to kill you. Therefore, you better focus all of your concentration. It’s the same statement I’ve said earlier. Even if you are at death’s door, I’ll not take any action to save you. In all, you can only rely on your own strength.” Ling Xi reminded in an indifferent tone.

Mu Chen took a deep breath, before his expression turned firm and solemn. Facing a frightening thing that was even able to trap a Sovereign expert within, if he just lost even a slight amount of concentration, he might be killed, spick and span.

However, in such a moment, even if there were mountains of daggers or seas of flames in front of him, he would still give it a go.

Mu Chen resolutely stepped forward, before walking straight into the opened stone door. Glowing Spiritual Energy erupted from within, slowly submerging and devouring him.

Bang! Rumble.

As Mu Chen entered through the doors, low rumbling sounds rang out as the stone doors slowly started to close, bit by bit, before restraining the brilliance that blotted the skies back.

Su’er’s little hands were clenched tightly as she looked towards the tightly shut stone doors. Stealing a glance at the beautiful face of Ling Xi, which was filled with an indifferent expression, she asked in a small voice, “Elder Sister Ling Xi, what if Big Brother Mu Chen really can’t hold on any longer. You would save him, right?”

Glancing at Su’er, Ling Xi replied with a tone that was almost devoid of emotion. “That’s his decision, so he has to take responsibility for himself. If this was just due to a spur of hot-

headedness, it serves him right if he dies. If he was only of such a level, regardless of what kind of results he ends up in, I won't feel any pity."

Hearing Ling Xi's cold and detached words and tone, Su'er's big eyes started to uncontrollably turn red as she spoke out, "Elder sister Ling Xi, you're clearly very good hearted...why do you have to act like that? You've scared me."

Looking over towards Su'er's reddening eyes, Ling Xi's expression become much more complicated. Hugging the little girl, she muttered, "Perhaps because I was previously like that. Therefore, the current me would reject such a feeling. Being more cold, being more heartless, that seems to be the only way to better protect myself..."

.....

When Mu Chen's body was enveloped by the Spiritual Light that erupted out, he was able to clearly sense that the surrounding space had started to change. Upon sobering up, he discovered that he was now in a place that seemed to be a world of unending starry skies.

Within the starry skies were boundless rivers of stars, causing people to feel a sense of dread surfacing within their hearts.

As Mu Chen stood within the starry skies, he could gradually feel a sense of danger erupting from within his heart. Raising his head, he discovered that the surrounding starry skies were starting to transform at this moment. As the stars roared, they proceeded to condense and form a shape within the sky. Layer by layer it formed, as if the starlight was permeated out, before forming something akin to a gigantic Spiritual Array.

Boundless Spiritual Energy was present in that Spiritual Array formed from the stars, while the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out of it were even more tyrannical than the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array" form from the two lotuses that Mu

Chen had arranged before.

This caused Mu Chen's expression to faintly change. This Spiritual Array was already at the Fifth Grade. Even people with that had reached the Heavenly Completion Stage would not dare to meet it head-on.

This Spiritual Array House truly was extremely dangerous!

Could he truly crash his way through?

Mu Chen's expression grew grave, as uncertainty surfaced within his heart.

# Chapter 355 – Pursuit of Life and Death

Hum. Hum.

Boundless and erratic Spiritual Energy started to sweep out from the starry skies. In the next instant, the gigantic Spiritual Array that was seemingly formed from the stars started to immediately revolve, causing starlight to condense, while fluctuations that caused people to shutter started to spread out.

Mu Chen's expression was now grave and solemn, and did not dare to show the slightest moment of neglect. If he made the slightest mistake under a Spiritual Array of such a rank, he might truly be unable to walk out of this Spiritual Array House.

His gaze swept acutely over the complicated Spiritual Array in an attempt to find the pattern of its orbital tracks. However, very quickly, he gave up this idea. The Spiritual Array here was no longer those simple ones that he had faced during his training, true killing intent was permeating from it.

Furthermore, this Spiritual Array was clearly being controlled externally, and it wasn't by Ling Xi. This was due to this "Spiritual Array House". Being a Spiritual Artifact of such a degree, it had already formed a basic level of consciousness. Without needing any control from Ling Xi, it was already able to display the might of this Spiritual Artifact.

Therefore, Mu Chen wanting to find the Array Core of the Spiritual Array formed by it with ease and break it was obviously impossible.

Bang!

The Spiritual Array furiously revolved, condensing the ray of starlight. Unexpectedly, it immediately transformed into a giant meteor. At an extremely astonishing speed, it split apart the horizon, instantly enveloping a hundred metre radius around Mu

Chen.

This incoming pressure caused Mu chen's clothes to start ripping and tearing. With a grave expression on his face, he swiftly retreated, while forming a seal with his hands. Boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from him, before transforming into a similar stretch of starry sky behind him, where a white tiger came bounding over.

Roar!

As the white tiger roared, it strode over the starry sky. Transforming into starlight, he violently smashed head-on against the incoming meteor.

Boom!

At the instant of impact, the entire stretch of the starry sky seemed to shuddered. Erratic Spiritual Energy shock waves wreaked havoc as they spread out, before shattering the resisting white tiger starlight into bits.

Receiving such a heavy strike, Mu Chen's body was miserably forced back. A sweet taste erupted from the back of his mouth, but was forcefully swallowed back down. At this moment, his gaze grew increasingly grave as he thought, This Spiritual Array truly is not easy to deal with.

Bang! Rumble!

As the attack started to open the heavy curtains, the Spiritual Array had completely erupted out. As it revolved, it fluctuated with thousands of brilliant rays, before the starlight started to condense one after another, forming shapes of meteors once again.

Mu Chen's forehead started to wrinkled as he thought, I have to get break and get rid of that Spiritual Array as fast as possible. If not, I might be consumed to death by it, sooner or later.

"Since I can't see through you, I'll just have to forcefully break you!"

A cold glint erupted within Mu Chen's eyes. In the previous training, due to Ling Xi's instruction for him not to forcefully break the Spiritual Arrays, Mu Chen could only rely on another way. However, if he continued using that method, he might not even be able to hold onto his little life.

If the Spiritual Array was to truly revolve, its might could be comparable to a true Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert, even stronger than Xue Shi by a sliver. Therefore, Mu Chen had to break it as fast as possible.

With that intent in his head, Mu Chen did not continue to hesitate. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames pervaded out, before transforming into a starry sky behind him. However, this time, the starry sky was exceedingly vast, while three gigantic beastial figures rapidly took shape within it.

"Four Gods Constellation Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger!"

"Divine Seal of the Black Tortoise!"

"Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird!"

At this instant, Mu Chen launched his attack. Without the slightest bit of hesitation, the three great Divine Seals simultaneously flew out. As torrential Spiritual Energy pervaded the sky, the three giant beasts raised their heads and roared towards the sky. At this instant, their might had already reach a considerably terrifying level.

Swish! Swish!

Within the Spiritual Array, the numerous meteors were already formed. Hiding the skies and covering the earth, they rumbled straight at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's expression turned icy cold. Bringing his hands together, he formed a seal, before sending a fist rumbling out.

Roar!

Instantly, bringing along incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations, three gigantic beastial figures roared and shot out from the starry sky behind him. Akin to the exceptionally savage beasts, they violently smashed head-on towards the meteors that blotted the sky.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Meteor after meteor rapidly shattered as they impacted against the three beastial figures, while the three beastial figures appeared to be smashing through twigs, before finally smashing into the gigantic Spiritual Array. The astonishing Spiritual Energy wrecked havoc as the Spiritual Array violently shook, before finally breaking apart.

As the points of light that blotted the sky started to descend, Mu Chen looked towards the collapsed Spiritual Array, before heaving a huge sigh of relief, as if a heavy load had come off his shoulders. All things considered, he had broken the Spiritual Array.

However, a number of breaths after he had started to relax, his expression slowly started to turn ugly, bit by bit.

This was due to what he was seeing before him; boundless Spiritual Energy was condensing once again at the place where the Spiritual Array had collapsed. As brilliant rays of light rippled out, a Spiritual Array surfaced once again. Although this Spiritual Array was different from the previous one, the fluctuations that radiated from it were just as strong.

Furthermore, Mu Chen was able to see what seemed like an even bigger Spiritual Array condensing and taking shape at the outskirts of this completed Spiritual Array.

Hiss.

This scene before him caused Mu Chen to suck in a breath of cold air as his expression started to turn slightly pale. This Spiritual Array House was actually able to arrange other Spiritual Arrays!

What kind of Spiritual Artifact was this?! This was simply akin to facing a Spiritual Array Master with a considerably rich experience in arranging Spiritual Arrays!

Furthermore, it was a Spiritual Array Master that was of a higher rank than him. Maybe, it had already reached the realm of a rank.

“Such a terrifying Spiritual Artifact,” muttered Mu Chen, as his heart started to tremble. This Spiritual Array House was really too powerful. Anyone that possessed it would basically possess the most obedient Great Spiritual Array Master. Furthermore, there would never be any emotional qualms with its actions. It would do what you asked it to do, with the greatest strength possible.

No wonder why Su’er said that it possessed the capability to trap a Sovereign within it. Previously, Mu Chen still had a little bit of doubt. However, as of now, he did not dare to have a single shred of doubt about that anymore.

“Look’s like this way simply doesn’t work.”

Mu Chen’s expression was extremely serious and solemn. Although, according to the words of Ling Xi, this was seemingly just the first level of the Spiritual Array House. However to deal with him, it appeared that this was more than enough. To put it bluntly, he was clearly not this Spiritual Array House’s match.

Since using the brute force method wouldn’t work, the only way was to search for a way to truly dispel it.

Mu Chen’s forehead tightly scrunched up. After quite a long while, he took a deep breath. From the looks of it, the only way for him to walk out from this Spiritual Array House would be to open his Heart’s Eye.

Furthermore, the time he could endure in there wasn’t long. Within this period of time, if he was unable to open his Heart’s Eye, what might lie for him, would be death.

“There truly isn’t any other road to walk.”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. However, there wasn't a single shred of dread within his eyes. Instead, present within them was the brilliance, sharp and incisive gaze. Staring at the gigantic revolving Spiritual Array, he proceeded to slowly close his eyes.

He had entered into the Heart Array State once again, in order to find the mystery behind all of this.

Bang! Bang!

While Mu Chen was closing his eyes, the Spiritual Array was already revolving. Like a giant dragon's roar, surges of Spiritual Energy flooded out, crushing down against Mu Chen.

At this moment, Mu Chen had already activated his Dragon Soaring Art to his maximum ability to evade the incoming floods. As for those attacks that he was unable to evade, the only thing he could do would be to forcefully receive them with his body. Therefore, within a short span of half a minute, blood had started to flow out of his black lightning-encased body. From the looks of it, he appeared extremely miserable.

Ignoring the gradually intensifying injuries appearing on his body, Mu Chen's state-of-mind was akin to an endless abyss; without the slightest ripple, while the outside world was totally shut off. At this moment, his state-of-mind had seemingly sunk slowly down to the deepest part of his consciousness.

From the outside, Su'er's face turned pale as she saw the scene unfolding within the light screen in front of her. Surges of frightening Spiritual Energy howled from within the light screen, while Mu Chen's figure appeared extremely small. Every single time an attack landed on him, the latter's body would violently tremble, before spurting out blood. As of now, he appeared as if he was made from blood.

By his side, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes were also focused on the light screen. The only difference being that her gaze was clearly much more calm as she quietly stared at the figure of the youth

surrounded by the perils of boundless Spiritual Energy surges. Her present feelings were as if nothing that happened in the world would able to cause an overly strong emotional reaction in her.

Bang!

Mu Chen's body was struck by a Spiritual Energy surge. A gruesome-looking wound appeared as the muscles on his chest were slashed apart. His bones were visible within it as blood bubbled and poured out. While this happened, black lightning flashed erratically, trying to reduce the damage caused by the injury.

The Spiritual Energy surrounding Mu Chen's body had already become weak, similar to his vitality at this moment.

Mu Chen's consciousness had similarly discovered this faintly lethargic and weak feeling that had a faint taste of death.

That fantastic feeling had already appeared. However, he was still unable to truly open his Heart's Eye.

Just a bit more!

Furious roars seemed to ring out within Mu Chen's heart. Just that little bit more! However, his Heart's Eye located within the depths of his consciousness was still unable to be opened!

It's not enough! The threat from death isn't enough!

Mu Chen's eyes opened furiously, as some craziness surged within his eyes. Although he had already suffered heavy injuries on his body, it was still not enough!

With a hard clench of his teeth, he shot out in a perfectly straight line, heading towards a Spiritual Energy surge sweeping towards him.

Upon seeing such a crazy action by him, Su'er was frightened to the point of screaming out.

Ling Xi's gaze was still calm and serene. However, her beautiful

eyes had started to narrow.

Bang!

As the Spiritual Energy surge swept across Mu Chen's body, blood spurted out, akin to a fountain. His body instantly shot back, while appearing to have somewhat caved in. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy fluctuations erupting from his body had started to slowly grow dim.

Almost as if it was about to dissipate.

Mu Chen's consciousness had similarly started to slowly grow dim and dark, while a thick flavor of death erupted from his heart. Under the embrace of death, his mind and consciousness seemed to start sinking into the unending darkness.

As this darkness continued on without end, there seemed to be something trembling within it. Finally, something akin to a newly born eye slowly opened up.

As Mu Chen's mind descended into the darkness of death, the Spiritual Array House did not stop due to that. Spiritual Energy surges howled out, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they rumbled towards the floating Mu Chen.

"Please save him quickly, Elder Sister Ling Xi!" Su'er cried out anxiously as she frantically grabbed onto Ling Xi's arm.

With a soft sigh, Ling Xi faintly raised her jade-like hand.

However, just as she was able to take action, within the light screen, humongous rays of black light suddenly erupted of Mu Chen's body. In the next moment, after enveloping him within, they rapidly condensed together, forming a gigantic black pagoda, protecting him within it.

Bang! Bang!

The Spiritual Energy surges violently impacted against the black pagoda, causing resplendent rays of brilliance to instantly erupt

out.

“Eh?” Su’er gawked in response to the changes happening before her, before breathing a huge sigh of relief. Looks like Big Brother Mu Chen was prepared for this.

“Elder Sister Ling Xi.”

Raising her head, Su’er looked towards Ling Xi, only to be astonished by what she saw. At this moment, the latter was staring blankly towards the black pagoda, within the light screen, that had enveloped Mu Chen as her delicate figure was faintly trembling. Her expression and current appearance were things that Su’er had never seen before.

# Chapter 356 – Painting

Bang!

Within the Spiritual Array House, a gigantic black-coloured glowing pagoda appeared, protecting Mu Chen within it, while blocking all of the frightening Spiritual Energy streams heading towards him.

As the erratic Spiritual Energy smashed against the glowing black pagoda, the body of the pagoda started to shake and hum.

Bang! Rumble!

After the wave of attacks were blocked, the interior of the Spiritual Array started to change, and the gigantic Spiritual Array at the outermost boundary started to slowly revolve. In the next instant, Spiritual Energy fluctuations that would make even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert change face started to radiate out.

The Spiritual Array House had felt the tyrannical power of the glowing black pagoda, and was attempting to use an even greater force to destroy it.

The glowing black pagoda had also sensed the incoming danger, since its body instantly started to faintly tremble. Black halos started to spread out in its surroundings, forming a defense as it attempted to forcefully block the incoming attack.

Bang! Rumble!

The gigantic Spiritual Array started to take shape at an extreme speed. After resolving, a streak of light, akin to a giant dragon, brandished its fangs and claws as it rushed out. As it shot out, even the space around it started to distort.

Under the giant dragon-like streak of light, even the glowing black pagoda appeared somewhat minute and insignificant.

Just as the giant dragon-like streak of light swept over and was able to smash into the black pagoda, Mu Chen, who was within the pagoda, furiously opened his eyes. At that instant, his eyes appeared transparent, almost as if they were made of crystals. They looked as if they were able to see through the myriad of things within the world, appearing extremely bizarre and mysterious.

Passing through the black pagoda, his gaze locked onto the giant dragon-like streak of light sweeping towards him. The power contained within it was simply not something that any ordinary Heavenly Completion Stage expert could endure.

If it freely impacted against the black pagoda, even it might shatter into pieces.

Rays of brilliance erupted from Mu Chen's transparent-like eyes, before furiously standing up. As he stood up, the gigantic black pagoda started to rapidly shrink, before re-entering his body.

As a result, Mu Chen was completely exposed to the giant dragon-like streak of light.

At this moment, the degree of transparency of his eyes grew increasingly clear. Locking onto the giant dragon-like streak of light, within his eyes, it appeared akin to a sea of Spiritual Energy, with countless Spiritual Energy streams coming together within it...

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes crazily flashed, before Spiritual Energy erupted from his body without a shred of restraint. In the next instant, transforming into a streak of light, he smashed head-on against the giant dragon-like streak of light.

As Su'er observed this spectacle happening, her little face instantly turned pale. She was able to recognise that this Spiritual Array was the strongest one within the first level of the Spiritual Array House. Even a Heavenly Completion Stage expert would definitely turn into ashes under its attack, with no trace of one's

corpse.

“Elder Sister Ling Xi, please save...” Su’er spoke out urgently, while continuously tugging and shaking Ling Xi’s jade-like hand.

Still in a daze, Ling Xi finally regained her clarity due to Su’er’s shaking. Resisting the trembling within her heart, she frantically looked towards the light screen, before noticing the scene of Mu Chen rushing straight towards the giant dragon-like streak of light. Instantly, her beautiful face intensely contorted. With a raise of her jade-like hand, a streak of light shot towards the Spiritual Array House as she roared, “Stop for me!”

Humm.

Following her furious roar, the boundless Spiritual Light within the Spiritual Array House instantly dissipated. At the same instant, the gigantic revolving Spiritual Array within had started to slowly dissipate, bit by bit.

Within the light screen, the boundless and vast Spiritual Energy fluctuations dissipated, leaving everything empty and devoid. At this moment, Mu Chen’s figure had also disappeared, almost as if he had been turned into ashes.

Losing all colour to her face, Su’er looked towards the interior of the light screen as her little body continued to shiver.

At this moment, a vacant expression filled Ling Xi’s eyes as an indescribable feeling erupted from her heart. She had now discovered that she seemed to have made a mistake in something that was very important to her.

That black pagoda that had previously protected Mu Chen... wasn’t that the same black pagoda within that painting? Why did he possess it? Although she had lost a lot of her memories, she still knew about that black pagoda, and it was very important to her...

Clenching her jade-like hands, her fingernails pierced her palms, bringing about intense pain. However, at this moment, she had yet

to take notice of it, and continued to stare absentmindedly into the distance, almost as if she had lost her soul.

An adult and a child stood before the Spiritual Array House that had already transformed into its previous dilapidated stone house look. Not speaking a single word, a gentle breeze blew through, bringing about a bone-piercing chilling intent.

Crack!

Just as their bodies and hearts had started to turn into ice, the stone doors of the dilapidated stone house started to be slowly pushed open. In the next moment, a miserable-looking figure covered in blood walked out from it.

Slightly at a loss, both of them raised their heads and looked towards Mu Chen standing before the stone doors, covered in blood and deathly pale, before gawking out.

“Big Brother Mu Chen, you’re still alive!”

Su’er was the first to regain clarity, and instantly shot forward in elation upon doing so. In the next instant, the little girl had already leaped and lunged towards him. Upon seeing this, Mu Chen hastily blocked her slender waist. As a wave of force came over, it caused the seriously injured him to spurt out a sliver of blood from his mouth. Making a bitter laugh, he thought, I’m truly slightly unlucky this time.

“Ah! Big brother Mu Chen! I’m sorry, I’m sorry! Are you alright?” Upon discovering how heavy the injuries were on Mu Chen, Su’er frantically retreated, before exclaiming in panic.

Mu Chen weakly gestured with his hand. It was fortunate that he had refined his Lightning God’s Physique; if not, he might truly be unable to withstand that lunge from her.

Whoosh!

Like a specter, Ling Xi’s beautiful figure appeared before Mu Chen. At that moment, the usually cold and detached eyes that

were far from any human emotion were filled with flood-like fluctuations as she stared tightly at Mu Chen.

“Please don’t play with me like that, Elder Ling Xi…”

Seeing her actions, Mu Chen was frightened to the point of retreating two steps back, while his face grew increasingly pale. It could be considered that he was slightly afraid of this Ling Xi. Previously, he had truly almost died within the Spiritual Array House. If not for him opening his Heart’s Eye at the critical moment, everything would point to disaster for him.

When Ling Xi noticed Mu Chen increasingly pale face, she felt slightly awkward. After hesitating awhile, she extended her jade-like hand and grabbed onto Mu Chen’s arm, sending gentle and mild Spiritual Energy into Mu Chen’s body to aid in the recovery of his wounds.

Mu Chen was now truly frightened by Ling Xi’s action as his startled gaze looked towards the beautiful lady in a dress that’s as white as snow. For close to a month, this was the first time that he had seen her unlike her usual cold and detached self.

This had made him feel extremely uneasy.

At this moment, Su’er was also staring at Ling Xi in astonishment. After all, she was much more familiar towards Ling Xi than Mu Chen, and clearly understood that she was, in fact, having a strong obsession with cleanliness. Let’s not talk about touching a male’s hand, there were even times where she wouldn’t even wish to speak any words to a male. In the past, when Mu Chen was here for training, she would immediately chase him away the moment it end, refusing to allow him to even stay for an additional moment.

Furthermore, during the times when Mu Chen was too fatigued and had fainted, she would order Su’er to bring him back.

However, as the current moment, Ling Xi had actually taken the

initiative and helped Mu Chen treat his injuries. This truly was too inconceivable.

Just like this, the atmosphere within the three of them bizarrely calmed down, with only Mu Chen feeling uneasy about enjoying such an extremely rare gentleness shown to him. After quite a while later, when the intense pain within his body had slightly lessened, he gave a dry cough while saying, “That’s more or less okay, Elder Ling Xi.”

Only upon hearing his words did Ling Xi relax her jade-like hand. Retreating a step, she stared at Mu Chen while asking, “You’ve opened your Heart’s Eye?”

Nodding his head, Mu Chen replied, “I’ve managed to open it at the final moment.”

While saying those words, a smile that contained happiness from relieving a burden surfaced on his face. After this period of training, he finally had some returns. As of now, he had already truly opened the Heart’s Eye State.

This would result in an extremely huge increase in his cultivation of Spiritual Arrays.

Ling Xi faintly nodded her head, while continuing to stare at Mu Chen. This caused the latter to feel a shiver in his heart, who gave a dry laugh and said, “Sorry for the inconvenience caused during this period of time, Elder Ling Xi. Mu Chen gives his thanks. My injuries today aren’t light, so I’ll be heading back to recover.”

Completing his sentence, he was prepared to leave. However, just as he had moved his body, Ling Xi’s beautiful body appeared before him. Staring tightly at him, the fluctuations present within her eyes weren’t the usual frosty and indifference fluctuations.

“I want to ask you a question.” Ling Xi’s voice sounded somewhat impatient; however, it still remained clear and pleasing.

“Leave awhile, Su’er.” said Ling Xi towards Su’er, who was

staring at them with a strange look in her eyes.

In doubt, Su'er nodding her head, before rolling her big eyes and reminding her quietly, "Elder Sister Ling Xi, Big Brother Mu Chen has a girl that he likes..."

Before completing her sentence, she hastily slipped away, afraid of infuriating Ling Xi.

Ling Xi started to gawk due to her words, before a pinkish hue blossomed on her snow-like skin. Feeling exceptionally embarrassed, she naturally knew what Su'er was thinking about.

Mu Chen also felt slightly awkward, but fortunately he was very clear about his limitations. He absolutely didn't assume that Ling Xi, who had treated him in such a cold and detached manner up to the point of causing huge confusion for him, would actually start to like him.

In actual fact, even having a favourable impression wasn't possible.

"Elder Ling Xi...may I know what you want to ask?" asked Mu Chen as he turned to look at Ling Xi. At this moment, the latter's beautiful and glittering eyes were still locked tightly onto him, almost as she didn't have the slightest intention of turning her gaze away.

As she continued to stare at Mu Chen, Ling Xi hesitated for quite a while, before a somewhat shivering voice rang out from her, "I want ask you, why is there that black pagoda within your body?"

"Black Pagoda?"

Mu Chen immediately gawked, before coming to an understanding. Ling Xi was talking about the Nine-layered Pagoda. However, this had made him feel slightly vigilant. The Nine-layered Pagoda was something that would appear after cultivating the Great Pagoda Art, while the Great Pagoda Art was left to him by his mother. This should also concern his mother, and according

to what his father had said, his mother should be a very extraordinary person. Furthermore, she seemed to also possess an extremely formidable background. Therefore, being ever vigilant, he would not casually reveal such information to others.

“That’s just a defensive Spiritual Artifact. There’s nothing special about it,” Mu Chen slowly replied, while similarly staring back at Ling Xi.

As Ling Xi continued to stare at Mu Chen, the expression within her eyes informed Mu Chen that she didn’t believe what he had said.

Totally ignoring as to whether she believed it or not, Mu Chen smiled and said, “Can I go now, Elder Ling Xi?”

Ling Xi’s beautiful eyes started to slightly waver. In the next moment, with a clench of her teeth, she extended her jade-like hand and grabbed Mu Chen’s palm in a single go. Afterwards, she started to drag Mu Chen towards the depths of her courtyard.

Mu Chen attempted to struggled, but discovered that he was simply unable to escape from Ling Xi’s grasp. Thus, he could only give up in helplessness. Now, he truly wanted to find out exactly what this Ling Xi wanted to do today!

In the distance, as Su’er, who had hidden away, observed Mu Chen being forcefully dragged away by Ling Xi, the expression on her little face instantly became surprised. Pressing her little hands on her cheeks, a bitter expression started to form on her little face.

“Oh, no…Should I go and inform Big Sister Luo Li…?”

Creak.

As the bamboo doors were pushed open, the speckless bamboo house came into Mu Chen’s view. Ling Xi continued dragging him in, and with a wave of her jade-like hand, causing the doors to shut tightly. Only then did she relax her grip on Mu Chen’s hand. Walking up to the praying mat, she proceeded to sit on it, before

raising her charming face to look at the painting hanging on the wall.

While rubbing his hand, which had a red imprint on it now, Mu Chen's gaze was sizing up his surroundings, before finally resting on the painting hanging on the wall.

The rubbing hand slowly froze, bit by bit, as the expression on Mu Chen's face similarly did the same.

His eyes were frozen on that painting.

Within the ancient paint was a black pagoda. There were nine levels present on it, and it seemed as if it could encompass the heavens and earth. However, Mu Chen did not pay too much attention to it as his gaze was firmly locked onto the top of the pagoda. Present there was a figure of a sitting lady.

The figure wasn't distinct, and one could faintly discern her long hair fluttering in the wind, while a startlingly peaceful aura could seemingly be felt radiating from her.

Despite that, when Mu Chen saw the blurry figure of this lady, it seemed as though he was struck by lightning. An indescribable feeling gushed out from the deepest part of his heart. It was the deep, deep feeling of fondness that had stayed hidden for over ten years...

Within the deepest part of those blurry memories was an extremely gentle beautiful figure that seemed to be present. Holding the hands of a little infant, leaving behind a gentle smile.

That gentle figure had stayed within the deepest part of his heart for over ten years...

At this moment, Mu Chen's eyes had seemingly turned moist and blurry, while faint tremors shook his body. A hoarse voice, that had been suppressed for over ten years, rang out uncontrollably from the deepest part of his heart.

"Mom..."

# Chapter 357 – Relation

“Mother…”

Mu Chen’s exceedingly hoarse voice rang out within this speckless bamboo house, before causing the two people within the bamboo house to suddenly turn quiet.

With extreme astonishment, Ling Xi tilted her head and stared at Mu Chen, as if she was still doubtful as to what she had heard. The figure of the lady within the painting, she was actually Mu Chen’s mother?

An extremely complicated feeling started to unknowingly rise within her heart. This feeling was unable to be explained using words; however, it made her feel somewhat stifled within her heart.

“Are you saying that she’s your mother?” slightly raising her eyebrows, she asked while pointing towards the paint with her slender and jade-like finger.

A surge went through Mu Chen’s gaze as he stared at Ling Xi. At this moment, unconcealable emotions surged within his eyes as he replied, “Elder Ling Xi, where did you get this painting from? Do you recognise the lady in this painting?”

For the last few years, this was the first time he had managed to obtain any information regarding his mother. Although the figure in the painting was extremely blurry, there was an unquestionable feeling that she was definitely his mother.

Upon hearing his questions, her beautiful gaze turned slightly blank and vacant. Shaking her head, she replied, “I, too, don’t know about it…I only know that she’s extremely important to me. However, a problem seems to have appeared within my memories, because I’ve forgotten about a lot of things. I’ve also forgotten about her…”

“Furthermore… how could she be your mother?”

Although there were problems with her memory, an unknown feeling that stemmed from the deepest part of her heart made her feel inconceivable as she stared at Mu Chen.

“Although I’ve never seen my Mother before, I can confirm that I’ve definitely not made a mistake.” replied Mu Chen resolutely and decisively. That was a feeling that stemmed from the closeness of their bloodline. This was something that was absolutely correct, even though he had never seen his mother since he was young. The only thing left was a remnant shadow of a gentle figure within the deepest parts of his memory.

“You’ve never seen her before?”

For some unknown reason, Ling Xi quietly breathed a sigh of relief. However, in the next instant, her expression became complicated, since she felt as if she was one of two kids fighting over who their most favourite sweet would belong to.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before replying in a soft voice, “She had left when I was very young.”

He didn't go into the details; after all, this was considered to be a family matter, and it was not needed for other people to know.

“Elder Ling Xi, do you truly not have even the slightest bit of information about her?” Mu Chen could not help asking as he looked towards Ling Xi. After finally obtaining some news after so much difficulty, he wouldn’t let it easily slip out of his grasp.

Sitting on the praying mat, Ling Xi continued to look towards the figure of the lady within the black pagoda and replied, “My memories came to a halt to five years ago. After that, it becomes extremely blurry. I think it should be the handiwork if someone…”

Speaking until there, Ling Xi’s voice became extremely cold and frosty, while hatred filled her words. If she knew the person who had done this to her, she would definitely kill that person!

“However, I can occasionally feel some fragments of my memories. Many, many years ago, I should have been together with her... I also know that she’s a very important person to me. Therefore, regardless of anything, I want to recover my memories...” Ling Xi muttered to herself while looking at the lady within the picture in a daze.

Hearing her muttering, Mu Chen gawked, before staring at Ling Xi. Unexpectedly, she’s been together with Mother in the past? Exactly what relationship does she have with Mother?

While Mu Chen was still in a daze, Ling Xi had turned her head around, sending a slightly odd gaze towards him.

Seeing this, Mu Chen gave a dry laugh. In the next moment, his face turned somewhat green as he spoke out, “You really better not tell me that you’re my long-lost sister or whatever...Me and my dad might not be able to endure such shocking news.”

However, upon hearing his words, Ling Xi had truly thought about it, before asking, “Should we test it by dripping blood?”

Black lines instantly covered Mu Chen’s face as he replied, “Don’t fool around. That’s useless.”

Upon seeing the sweat-filled appearance of Mu Chen, Ling Xi could not help letting off a gentle laugh. At this moment, the cold and detached expression on her beautiful face had completely disappeared, causing her to appear exceedingly alluring.

“Okay, I’ll not tease you.” replied Ling Xi, “As of now, we’re both not clear of the precise situation of this matter. However, I think that there would definitely be a chance to completely solve this mystery.”

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head, although there was still some unease within his heart. If what Ling Xi said was true, that she was at his mother’s side in the past, why did she suddenly leave? Furthermore, why did Ling Xi’s memories get wiped? Could it be

that they were met with some very big trouble, and was his mother still well, as of now?

“Now, can you tell me about the black pagoda within your body? If I’m right, she also possessed it…”said Ling Xi as she pointed towards the painting.

Remaining silent for a while longer, Mu Chen finally nodded his head. There was an unknown feeling telling him that the Ling Xi before him was worthy to be trusted. Although this feeling might be related to his mother, it was a simple decision for him to make the selection to trust her.

“The cultivation technique that I’m practising is called the Great Pagoda Art. This was something that was left to me by my Mother, before she left. As for this black pagoda, it should be something that appears after cultivating in this technique.”

Tilting his head, Mu Chen continued, “However, its might isn’t as strong as I’ve imagine. Although, its defense is very strong, and is able to protect me.”

“Great Pagoda Art?”

Hearing those three words, a flash of brilliance appeared within Ling Xi’s eyes. Standing up, fluctuations appeared within her expression as this name gave an unknown feeling of familiarity within her.

Taking two steps forward, she appeared before Mu Chen. Extending her icy-cold jade-like hands, she grasped his hands, before linking their palms and ten fingers together.

Her lands appeared slender and fair, and was smaller than Mu Chen’s by a size, which was just nice for Mu Chen to turn around and grasp hers. Naturally, as of now, Mu Chen would obviously not dare to do such a thing, with the only thing he could do was to suit her wishes.

“Don’t resist.”

When Ling Xi's palms were touching Mu Chen's, she spoke out in a soft voice. In the next instant, a wave of boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from her palms. Conveniently flowing through Mu Chen's palms, it entered his meridians, before unexpectedly making contact with Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen was instantly shocked, since this was an extremely dangerous thing to do. The Spiritual Energy produced from various forms of cultivations were all different. Once they made contact with one another, intense repulsion would erupt from them, causing extremely serious damage towards both parties.

However, just as Mu Chen was hesitating to break the contact off, the two Spiritual Energies came into contact. In the next instant, something that caused Mu Chen's heart and mind to tremble started to happen...

As the two Spiritual Energies made contact, the repulsion that he had imagined did not appear. Instead, the two Spiritual Energies had actually started to fuse together.

As the fused Spiritual Energy surged within Mu Chen's body, he discovered, with a shock, that the heavy injuries that he had suffered earlier were actually starting to recover at an astonishing speed.

After a short span of less than ten minutes, the injuries within Mu Chen's body were completely healed... the rate of recovery caused Mu Chen to turn dumbfounded by the sight before him. Even with his small accomplishment to his Thunder God Physique, he would need to rest and recuperate for at least an entire day to recover from the injuries that he had previously suffered.

In shock, Mu Chen raised his head, and looked in disbelief towards the Ling Xi in front of him. At this moment, the bafflement within his heart was getting increasingly thicker. Why would this happen?

Only when all the injuries on Mu Chen's body had completely

recovered did the fused Spiritual Energy start to slowly dissociate, bit by bit. After that, the wave of Spiritual Energy travelled through his meridians, before reentering Ling Xi's body.

As the Spiritual Energy returned to Ling Xi's body, her delicate figure faintly shivered, before a faint reddish hue surfaced on her skin. Withdrawing her jade-like hands, her long eyelashes started to faintly flutter.

"How could it do that?" Unable to hold it back, Mu Chen asked aloud. After his Spiritual Energy had fused with Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy, why would it possess such strong regenerative power?

In a soft voice, Ling Xi replied, "It's because I've previously cultivated the Great Pagoda Art..."

A faint shudder went through Mu Chen's heart and mind as he thought, Ling Xi has actually cultivated the Great Pagoda Art? From the looks of it now, those words that she had previously said were definitely true.

However, could it be that people that have cultivated the Great Pagoda Art would be able to fuse their Spiritual Energies? This should be impossible! Even considering both parties had cultivated the same kind of Spiritual Art, the Spiritual Energy cultivated by everyone would have differences present within. Thus, they wouldn't be able to achieve such a perfect degree of fusion.

However, why would they be able to fuse their Spiritual Energies to such a degree?

After thinking for a long time, he was still unable to get the slightest clue about it, and could only give up in helplessness. The bodies of the two of them seemed to be hiding some secrets, and these secrets should have ties to Mu Chen's mother.

Raising his head, Mu Chen gazed towards the figure of the lady within the painting that made people feel calm and peaceful, before gently sighing in his heart. Mother, exactly what is this all

about...?

“Let it be, don’t get frustrated over this. All secrets will be revealed at one point. Although my memories have been tampered by someone, following the increase of my strength, I’ll one day be able to retrieve all of my memories back. At that time, I’ll be able to know exactly what had happened to me in the past.” Seeing Mu Chen frowning and pondering in deep thought, Ling Xi consoled him in a soft voice.

Mu Chen nodded his head, before feeling slightly unnatural. In the past few periods of time, he had already gotten used to Ling Xi’s cold and detached treatment towards him. However, with the sudden gentleness, he truly wasn’t used to it.

“In addition, the Great Pagoda Art isn’t as simple as you think. That black pagoda isn’t as weak as you imagined. The only thing resulting in that is due to you still being unable to touch on that marvelous point.”

Ling Xi started her warning, “Also, its best to reveal the black pagoda as little as possible. Although I’ve lost quite a lot of my memories, I’m able to feel that this thing would lure some very dangerous things if it’s exposed. Therefore, if it’s been discovered...you might end up with a lot of trouble.”

Mu Chen pulled his head back. The consideration and care shown by Ling Xi truly made him feel slightly terrified.

“Okay.”

However, at this moment, he could only nodded his head.

“Let’s go. Let’s head out of here first.” Looking once again at the painting on the wall, Ling Xi spoke out.

Hearing her instructions, Mu Chen nodded his head. Looking fondly at the blurry figure of the lady within the painting, he truly wished to take that painting away. However, it was obviously something that was extremely important to Ling Xi. Therefore, it

would not be good for him to hog everything for himself.

“Mother, I’ve promised Dad that I’ll definitely find you.”

Looking towards the figure of the lady once again, Mu Chen took a deep breath of air, before turning and leaving the bamboo house.

As the two left the bamboo house, the atmosphere around them turned silent. In a short span of less than half a day, they had suffered an extremely huge emotional impact. From being originally having not the slightest bit of relationship, to a relationship so deep it was even binding...

Although they didn’t talk about it, when their Spiritual Energies had perfectly fused, the two of them already knew that their relationship wasn’t that simple after all.

“Ling Xi...Elder Ling Xi.”

Mu Chen finally broke the silence, before saying her name with some unnaturalness.

“Just call me Ling Xi.” Ling Xi replied after a moment of hesitation.

Hearing her words, Mu Chen also faintly hesitated. Nodding his head, his said, “I’ll come back tomorrow.”

Ling Xi nodded her small head.

Looking at the current situation, Mu Chen didn’t continue talking anymore. Just as he had turned around to leave, something went into his mind as he raised his head. He looked towards the northern position of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. There, in the middle of a giant hall, a scarlet red pillar of light suddenly rushed towards the sky. At the same time, an ear-piercing and urgent bell rang out, resounding across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Such an urgent bell ring caused Mu Chen to gawk. Casting his gaze towards the direction of the sounds origin, it seemed to be the

location of the Missions Hall. Exactly what had happened?

# Chapter 358 – Blood Toll Bell

As the scarlet pillar of light rushed towards the sky, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could clearly see it. As for the ear-piercing and urgent bell sounds, they had also resounded across the heavens and earth, continuing for a long, long time.

Seemingly all of the students within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had noticed this spectacle. Countless shocked gazes turned upwards, facing towards the direction where the scarlet pillar of light had shot towards the sky with bewilderment brimming within their eyes.

“What is that…?”

On the peak of the mountain, Mu Chen was also looking at the spectacle before him in shock.

“That's the Blood Toll Bell…” Looking at the spectacle before her, Ling Xi’s eyebrows knitted together awhile before speaking out.

“Blood Toll Bell?”

Mu Chen gawked.

“That’s a special Spiritual Artifact of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. It can be purchased within the Spiritual Values Hall. However, not only is it expensive, normal students don’t have the qualifications to even purchase it. This Spiritual Artifact possesses the effect of an alarm toll. Once its wielder falls into a life-threatening situation, it would shatter. When that happens, its accompanying subordinate bell within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would shatter and produce such a spectacle, allowing for rescue or reinforcements to be called,” replied Ling Xi.

“Rescue?” asked Mu Chen with some astonishment. Could it be that someone who was training in the Northern Heavens Continent had met with a life-threatening problem?

“This Blood Toll Bell can only be purchased by students placed

within the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings. From the looks of it, someone from the top ten ranks of the Heavenly Rankings has met with great trouble in the Northern Heavens Continent." replied Ling Xi.

"Top ten ranks in the Heavenly Ranking?" Mu Chen muttered while his forehead started to faintly wrinkle up. In the next instant, he seemed to have thought about something, and his expression immediately contorted.

"It's Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong!"

As of now, of the top ten ranks in the Heavenly Rankings, the majority of them were within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, with the only exceptions being Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. The two of them had already formed a team and were pursuing and hunting Mo Longzi. However, it had already been a month since their last-known contact. Could it be that they'd met with trouble?

Mu Chen's expression started to turn grave as he thought, That Mo Longzi is unexpectedly that formidable? Even the collaboration between Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong isn't enough to deal with him?

"This will be troublesome."

Mu Chen said in a deep voice. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were the two most outstanding people within the current batch of Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy students. If anything were to happen to them, not only would it cause a huge impact towards the fame and reputation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it would even cause all the students to feel terror and dread. After all, the two were being used as benchmarks by them.

As Mu Chen stared at the gigantic pillar of light, he could already feel a panicky atmosphere spreading throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Whooshing sounds were present within entire stretch of the world as countless students

shot towards the sky, looking with panic-stricken gazes towards the scarlet pillar of light.

This panic and dread had started to envelope over everything.

This panicky spectacle had similarly shocked the various higher-ups with immediate effect, as Elders appeared in the sky, one after another. Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out from them, pacifying the panicky atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

At the same time, the atmosphere within a great hall at the centremost position of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was exceptionally solemn, with Dean Tai Cang sitting in the centre seat, surrounded by various other Elders below.

“Dean, what’s the matter?” asked the Punishment Hallmaster, Mo You in a deep voice.

“Did something happen to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong? Although Mo Longzi is formidable, with the strength of them two, he’s absolutely unable to present too much of a threat to them. Could it be that the Elders of the Demonic Dragon Palace have taken action? If that’s the case, are they forcing us to go to war with them?” asked another Elder in a deep voice. As he continued speaking, killing intent started to surface within his words.

On the centre seat, Dean Tai Cang’s face was sunken to its lowest possible state as he replied, “From the little bit of news relayed by the ringing of the Blood Toll Bell, it shouldn’t be that the Elders of the Demonic Dragon Palace had taken action. Although they’re getting increasingly rampant and wild as of lately, they still wouldn’t dare to engage in a head-on war with our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.”

“So, what’s the matter?” asked Mo You with a frown. With Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong collaborating together, they could be considered as first-rate team within the Northern Heavens Continent. If it weren’t people of Elder status, who was able pose a

threat to them?

"It's Mo Longzi..."

Dean Tai Cang explained in an indifferent tone, "This time, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had collaborated to hunt and kill Mo Longzi. However, who would have known that that guy would have such a deep plan hiding within his heart? He acted weak on the surface, but had secretly gathered all of the people from our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty from the third place to the tenth place. Afterward, after manipulating the situation, he had trapped Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong within his encirclement. As of now, their situation isn't clear."

Upon hearing the news, the faces of many Elders faintly changed. That Mo Longzi had truly used a vicious method. Furthermore, he was actually able to gather the top ten places on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty list, with the exception of Mo Xingtian, together. From the looks of it, he seemed to have planned to execute this scheme of his long ago.

The top ten people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's bounty list were not easy to deal with. Due to various reasons, they had ascended onto that bounty list. Placed within the Northern Heavens Continent, they could all be considered as figures that would resound across a region.

As of now, they gathered together. This lineup could be rated as luxurious. No wonder even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be forced to the point of shattering the Blood Toll Bell and calling for help.

"Dean, what should we do now? Absolutely nothing must happen to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. If not, during the Great Academy Competition half a year from now, the strength of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would definitely have a steep decline. At that time, I'm afraid that there will be people eyeing and coveting our place within the Five Great Academies." said an

Elder in a deep voice.

“Why not send some Elders out to provide help and rescue them?” Some people suggested.

“That’s not possible. There’re crouching tigers and hidden dragons within the Northern Heavens Continent. Although there’s no one that could shake the position of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there’re those peak level influences that have always been staring at us. Previously, we still had some agreements with the Demonic Dragon Palace, where both parties aren’t allowed to call upon Elder-level people. The grudges and grievances of the younger generation should be be settled through their own abilities. If we Elders take action, I’m afraid that the Demonic Dragon Palace would also take action. From the looks of things, they definitely know about this. Maybe, they might even be waiting for us to get flustered and act in confusion,” some people refuted.

“How should we deal with this matter? Could it be that we’re to stare with our eyes and see matters happen to them?”

“Exactly. This matter needs to be settled as quickly as possible. Since Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were forced to the point of shattering the Blood Toll Bell, their situation would definitely be extremely dangerous and desperate…”

“……”

Seeing the Elders engaging in their discussions, Dean Tai Cang finally waved his hand. Suppressing the numerous voices within the hall, he looked towards Punishment Hallmaster Mo You, before asking, “How would the Hallmaster look at this matter?”

After pondering awhile, Mo You replied, “We definitely cannot send out the Elders to take action for this matter. If we do, I’m afraid that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would be gossipped by others for using our age to bully the young. Therefore, we can only let the youths settle it by themselves.

Naturally, that's also the best solution."

"Are the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall within the academy?" asked Dean Tai Cang slowly.

"Lin Zheng and the other two are all here." replied Mo You while nodding his head, before continuing, "However, with this matter being so urgent and rushed, we need to send out the most extraordinary team to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. However, within the younger generation of the Punishment Hall, we might not have enough manpower. Afterall, as of now, Mo Longzi has gathered together nine of the top ten names on our bounty list..."

"What are you trying to say?"

After hesitating awhile, Mo You replied, "Perhaps we can pick some amongst the students. However, the number of people needn't be too many, and must have adequate strength."

"Amongst the students?"

Dean Tai Cang suddenly gave a faint smile before nodding his head while saying, "We definitely have quite a good selection of people. I've originally wanted him to peacefully cultivate for a period of time. However, from the looks of things, we can only send him out."

"Go. I'll leave this matter to the Punishment Hall. We have to bring Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong back. I'll go and stare at the Demonic Dragon Palace...if they truly interfere in this matter, I'll go and prevent them."

"Since that Mo Longzi wants to play, we'll let the youths of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy accompany him and play, and see exactly who's stronger than who."

"Yes!"

Mo You immediately accepted the order respectfully.

…

The entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still within the panic-stricken mode. Figures were present everywhere as people were discussing with one another. Within such a short span of time, a large number of students had already guessed the approximate reason behind this matter.

Afterall, the number of people within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that possessed the qualifications to possess the Blood Toll Bell weren't many. As for those that have left the academy, there were only two people.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

Mu Chen could also feel the current atmosphere within the academy. Therefore, not continuing to remain at Ling Xi's place for long, he immediately planned to leave.

"Wait." Ling Xi suddenly spoke out.

Feeling puzzled, Mu Chen turned around and looked towards Ling Xi, who was currently in hesitation over something. With a toss, an old, yellowish-coloured scroll flew towards him, before the latter said, "This is a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, and possesses power comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage. If you've opened your Heart's Eye, you should be able to arrange it."

Mu Chen felt slightly confused as to why Ling Xi would suddenly hand him a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. However, regardless of that, he didn't reject her offer, and easily caught it as it flew over. A power that was comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage. This was simply more formidable than the double lotus form of the Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array. As of right now, he truly needed a Spiritual Array of such a rank.

"Thank you," said Mu Chen with gratitude. Without continuing to stay behind, he rapidly turned around and left.

Looking at the back figure of the leaving Mu Chen, Ling Xi gave a

faint sigh, while a complicated expression flashed within the depths of those beautiful eyes.

When Mu Chen arrived back in the Freshmen Area, the entire public square was seemingly filled with figures. All of them were gathered together as they looked towards the blood-red pillar of light that seemed to pass through the heavens with solemn expressions.

Ye Qingling, Zhou Ling and the rest were all present, with even Luo Li being startled to the point of appearing. Sending a smile towards them, Mu Chen walked towards the side of Luo Li.

“Mu Chen, do you know what has happened?” upon spotting Mu Chen, Ye Qingling and the rest immediately shot their question over frantically.

Mu Chen shook his head in reply. Just as he was able to speak, he suddenly sensed something and turned his head towards a stretch of sky not far away. A ray of light suddenly shot over from there, before appearing in the air above this public square.

“It’s Hallmaster Mo You.”

Upon seeing the figure, Mu Chen instantly gawked.

In the air, Mo You revealed himself. Looking at the public square below him, his gaze instantly locked onto Mu Chen, before speaking out in a deep voice, “Mu Chen, as of now, you’ve been temporarily assigned to the Punishment Hall. Follow Lin Zheng and the rest and immediately leave the academy to complete your mission!”

Clamoring noises immediately broke out in the public square below as countless students had faces full of astonishment and shock. What did it mean to be temporarily assigned to the Punishment Hall? Wasn’t the Punishment Hall a place that only graduated students had the qualifications to enter?

However, there were many students who were quick with their

thinking and guessed the reason in a short moment. After all, just after the Blood Toll Bell rung, the level of activity from the Punishment Hall had ramped up. Due to that, people could not help associating the two events together.

Mu Chen had also put these two pieces of the puzzle together and understood what was going on. The so-called ‘mission’ would most likely be to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

“Yes!”

There wasn’t a single bit of hesitation within him as he immediately responded in a deep voice. He had a very favourable impression towards Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. As of now, since they’re in trouble, he would naturally take action to help them. Although, he also knew that this mission would most likely be exceedingly dangerous.

“I’ll go as well.”

Just as Mu Chen’s voice had rang out, a clear and melodious voice rang out beside him, only to see that Luo Li had walked up and stood beside him. Tossing her head up, she looked towards Mo You floating in the air.

Upon seeing this, Mo You slightly pondered, before nodding his head. As of now, Luo Li’s strength was no weaker than Mu Chen’s. With her going along with him, it would increase their team’s strength by quite a bit. After all, the lineup of their opponent was also extremely luxurious.

With a wave of his sleeve, Mo You shot towards the distance, with his roaring voice ringing over.

“The two of you, immediately head to the Punishment Hall, and set off with Lin Zheng and the rest.”

# Chapter 359 – Rescue Party

Due to the urgency of the situation, after receiving the order, Mu Chen and Luo Li did not dare to spend much time mingling around. After saying goodbyes to everyone present, the two shot straight towards the location of the Punishment Hall.

Shooting across the skies above the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen and Luo Li were able to see the panic-stricken faces of quite a few students. The scarlet-red pillar of light in the distance was overly blood-red, causing uneasiness to radiate within the hearts of the people.

There were crouching tigers and hidden dragons within the Northern Heavenly Continent, whose danger levels were of extreme levels. Even something as strong as the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn't dare to proclaim to possess itself as the overlord. Naturally, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy have no intention of doing such a thing.

However, even without thinking about it, just possessing such strength would naturally make the other peak powers and influences dread and guard against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Those influences might normally not dare to do anything towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy; however, if an opportunity truly presented itself, hitting a person who was down would be something that they would do.

Therefore, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wasn't as invincible within in the Northern Heavens Continent as people thought it would be.

After all, this Great Thousand World was too boundless, too vast and too expansive. Even the five Great Academies were just a drop in the ocean.

If this matter was not settled properly, it might become quite a big blow to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

A grave expression appeared on Mu Chen's face. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was the place the he had started on his path. He had obtained nurturing at this place, and naturally felt gratitude towards the academy. Therefore, he didn't wish to see the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy suffer such a blow like that.

Seeing the grave expression on Mu Chen's face, Luo Li extended her icy-cool jade-like hand and grasp onto his. With a faint smile on her face, she spoke out in a soft voice, "Relax, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are not normal people. Wanting to deal with them won't be an easy matter."

Flipping his hand and grabbing onto her's, Mu Chen replied, "I'm afraid that this matter might be dangerous..."

During the previous time, he had only followed Su Xuan and the rest to complete a Spiritual Treasure mission, and had almost lost his little life. As of now, the mission this time clearly had a level of danger far exceeding the previous one. Compared to a person like Mo Longzi, Bai Xuan was simply not worth a mention.

Therefore, the mission this time might be even more dangerous.

"I've followed along just because it'll be dangerous. If not, do you think I would come here for no reason? If you're afraid that something might happen to me, just protect me properly." replied Luo Li with a faint laugh.

"Relax. As long as you're beside me, regardless of any danger, even if we die, I'll die before you." grasping Luo Li's small hand, Mu Chen gave his reply. Although his voice was very soft, one could hear the unmovable resolution contained within them.

Luo Li's beautiful eyes gazed towards the youth by her side. With a faint smile present on her face, a water-like intent rippled within those clear and limpid eyes, causing her to look soul-stirringly beautiful. However, it was a pity that other people would forever be unable to see this, the most beautiful scene in the world.

When Mu Chen and Luo Li arrived at the Punishment Hall, they discovered that quite a few people from the Punishment Hall were already present. At the frontmost position of their group was, impressively, Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan.

At this moment, grave and solemn expressions were present on the faces of the three. Obviously, they had also received the news about this matter.

“Senior Brother Lin Zheng.”

As Mu Chen and Luo Li, descended, both of them cupped their fists while saying, “Hallmaster Mo You has requested for us to participate in this mission.”

Lin Zheng nodded his head and replied with a smile, “ With Junior Brother Mu Chen’s help, we’ll be able to be more relaxed.”

Beside him, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan were looking at Mu Chen with kind gazes. The Punishment Hall members in the surroundings were also looking at Mu Chen, albeit with curiosity. They didn’t show any contempt towards the latter due to his strength, which was at the level of Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. This was because they had long known that the Freshman before them was able to fight with Gu Tianyan without determining a winner while he was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Initial Phase. As of now, his strength had greatly improved. That meant that his combat abilities would definitely have become stronger.

Not long after Mu Chen and Luo Li had arrived, whooshing sounds rang out from sky, only for everyone to see three streaks of light shooting over. Finally descending onto the gathering square, they revealed themselves to be He Yao, Su Xuan and Xu Huang.

Obviously, the three of them should have also received the same mission.

Upon seeing Mu Chen and Luo Li, Su Xuan and the other two

didn't feel surprised. After all, as of now, if one were to remove the absent Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, the strongest people among the students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might be the pair of young lovers in front of them.

Seeing Su Xuan and other two arrive, Lin Zheng nodded his head, before proceeding to say in a deep voice, " Everyone, our mission this time will be extremely dangerous. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were in the process of chasing and dealing with that Mo Longzi, and were ambushed by the former, who had secretly gathered all the vicious people on the Bounty Board from the tenth to second rank. Since the two were heavily outnumber, they fell into an encirclement, before fleeing while suffering heavy injuries. As of now, their current situation is critical."

"Second to tenth rank on the Bounty Board..."

Upon hearing those words, even Mu Chen could not bear breathing in a mouthful of cold air. Every single person on the top ten ranks of the Bounty Board were all violent and vicious characters. Just dealing with one would, normally, already be extremely hard. They never imagined that nine of them would actually take action together.

This lineup was overly luxurious. No wonder why even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be defeated and forced to retreat, and even fall into a crisis.

Grave expressions filled the faces of Su Xuan and the rest. The strength of their enemy's lineup was already considered to be very strong, and was sufficient to wipe a first-rate powerhouse off the Northern Heavens Continent.

"This mission will be headed by me, with Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan providing support to me. The five of you will follow us, while two Punishment Hall members of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase and three Punishment Hall members of half-step Heavenly Completion Stage would also follow along. The

time's tight, and this is the strength that the Punishment Hall can immediately mobilise. The rest are either in closed-door training or are on other missions. Therefore, we need your help this time," said Lin Zheng in a deep voice.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. Looked like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was treating this matter with deep regard. Their lineup was rather tyrannical. After all, their opponents were super vicious people on the top ten ranks on the Bounty Board. If the strength of their group wasn't sufficient, they would just become a burden if they were to head over. Therefore, the minimum requirement of strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage.

Even Su Xuan and Xu Huang had great increases to their strength after experiencing the Spiritual Light Empowerment, both reaching half-step into Heavenly Completion Stage. As for He Yao, he had broken through to truly reach Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

Therefore, within their group, from the looks alone, Mu Chen, with his strength at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, appeared to be the weakest.

"This is some information about Mo Longzi and his group of people. You guys, take a look and know your enemy, so that we can reduce some dangers, at the very least." With a flick of his finger, numerous streaks of light shot towards Mu Chen and the rest.

With a grab, the streak of light became a scroll within Mu Chen's hand. Tearing it open, he saw detailed information about Mo Longzi and his group written on it.

Mo Longzi, Rank 2 on the Bounty Board. Comes from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Vicious and Merciless; absolutely stunning talent; It's said that his strength was about Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, and might even be close to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Extremely Dangerous.

Mu Gu, Rank 3 of the Bounty Board. Comes from the Divine Bone Hall. Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Gui Xiong, Rank 4 of the Bounty Board. No known school or sect. Obtained the inheritance of an ancient sect. Has a very vicious character. Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Wu Jia, Rank 5 of the Bounty Board. Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Is also a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master.

Dum Dum...

As Mu Chen and the rest looked over the information given to them, their expressions grew increasingly grave. This lineup was truly tyrannical. Even if Mo Longzi was considered a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, there were three other Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phases, as well as five Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phases and even a 4th grade Spiritual Array Master...

No wonder why even Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be forced into such a miserable situation. Their enemy's lineup was too tyrannical.

"Leave Mo Longzi, Mu Gu and Gui Xiong to us three to deal with. As for the others, we'll leave them to you guys. As long as we rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong from their encirclement, dealing with them shouldn't be difficult," said Lin Zheng in a deep voice.

Shooting a look at Lin Zheng and the other two, Mu Chen could sense from the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out from their bodies that they seemed to be much stronger than before. Clearly, their strength had also increased during this period of time, reaching the level of Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Stage. No wonder why they dared to obstruct the three strongest people in the enemy's lineup.

"Yes."

Mu Chen and the rest also nodded their heads.

“Since there’s no other questions, let’s immediately make our move. Our time’s tight, and we have to rescue them as quickly as possible.”

With a wave of his hand, Lin Zheng didn’t continue speaking, taking the lead and shooting off. Zhou Qingshan and and Gu Tianyan immediately followed suit, with the other Punishment Hall members also sweeping out.

“Let’s go.”

Nodding his head towards Su Xuan and the rest in indication, Mu Chen followed suit and shot out.

Their group quickly shot out of the inner region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In the next moment, they noticed countless students standing in the air above the academy’s outer region, with their gazes all locked onto their group.

Within a short span of a moment, the news about Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong asking for help in a life-or-death situation had already spread across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, upon seeing Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and the rest in a group, all of them knew what their mission was about.

Upon seeing this horde of students, Mu Chen and the rest faintly lowered their speed.

“Senior Brother Lin Zheng, Junior Brother Mu Chen, slaughter that Mo Longzi and rescue Senior Brother Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong back!” Some students started roaring in loud voices.

After all, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were ranked first and second on the current Heavenly Rankings. They’re a kind of benchmark of struggle for many students. If the two were to lose their lives in Mo Longzi’s hands, this would result in an extremely huge impact on the morale of those students.

Looking towards those students who were looking at their group with hopes and anticipation present within their eyes, Mu Chen and the group shot a look at each other, before their expressions all turned grave. They knew that if they were to fail in their mission, when they returned, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might totally sink into a period of darkness. Wanting to recover that vitality from before would take an unknown amount of time.

Lin Zheng took a deep breath of air. Not choosing to reply, he only slowly cupped his hands towards the countless students before him. Behind him, Mu Chen, Zhou Qingshan, Gu Tianyan and the rest had also silently cupped their hands.

“Let’s go!”

With a low roar, Lin Zheng waved his hand, before proceeding to shoot off. The group transformed into ten streaks of light, rushing out of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Before the Great Hall at the peak of a mountain, Dean Tai Cang, as well as numerous other Elders, was presently standing there. Looking towards Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and the rest of the figures in the distance, chilling intent flashed within their eyes.

“Make sure to stare at the Demonic Dragon Palace. Once their Elder-level characters take action…”

The deep and abstruse eyes of Dean Tai Cang’s eyes turned abnormally cold at this moment. A slight pause presented itself within his words as his hands slowly clenched together.

“Kill them all without any mercy!”

# Chapter 360 – Western Desolate Territory

White clouds fluttered around the azure horizon, appearing exceedingly languid. Sunlight pierced through the cloud layers, illuminating the earth, leaving behind dim gigantic shadows all around.

Whoosh!

On the horizon totally devoid of sound, hurried whooshing sounds suddenly resounded. In the next moment, ten streaks of light explosively shot over from the far side of the sky. Their speed was extremely fast. Howling over in a split second. Due to the wind pressure created by such high-speed movements, huge scars were ripped apart from the layers of clouds in the sky.

This group of people was, naturally, Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and the rest that had come from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Due to the urgency of the situation, they had seemingly not taken any sort of breaks, traveling at their utmost speed for the entire journey.

“Senior Brother Lin Zheng, how much further do we have left?” Mu Chen asked while following closely behind Lin Zheng. Looking in front of him, his voice, wrapped in Spiritual Energy, rang within the latter’s ear.

“From the fluctuations radiating from the Blood Toll Bell, they should be at the Western Desolate Territory, towards the northwest of the Northern Heavens Continent. With our speed, we would need a day and a night of time, at the very least, to reach there,” replied Lin Zheng.

“That long, huh…?” muttered Mu Chen as his forehead started to faintly wrinkle. A day and a night. He was just afraid that there might be some unforeseen changes. After all, since the beginning, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong’s situation was not that good.

“Relax. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong aren’t people that can be easily pinched to death. Even with Mo Longzi and his lineup, wanting to kill the two of them won’t be an easy thing to do.” Lin Zheng understood Mu Chen’s worry, and thus, said some consoling words.

“I hope so.”

Mu Chen nodded his head. Looking at the distance, the skies over there seemed to be covered in black clouds. This mission wouldn’t be easy at all.

...

Western Desolate Territory

When Mu Chen and the rest had rushed over, it was already a day later.

Mu Chen and the group descended towards the edge of the Western Desolate Territory. Looking at the region before them, it was in a state of complete disorder. Gigantic deep gulches akin to being created from meteors descending from the sky were present, with gigantic cracks tens of thousands of metres long extending from them.

There were a few mountains originally present here. As of now, all of them had completely collapsed, with gigantic stones scattered everywhere across the area.

Obviously, an extremely intense battle had taken place at this territory.

Staring at the totally chaotic and disordered region, Lin Zheng slowly said, “Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had met an ambush at this place.”

The group swept their gazes across the region, before their expressions slowly turned slightly grave. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had fought against nine vicious people from the top ten ranks on the bounty list. It was hard to imagine exactly how bitter

and desperate this battle was.

“After this fight, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong should have already suffered injuries. After fleeing deep into the Western Desolate Territory, Mo Longzi and his group should’ve been relentlessly pursuing them, with no thoughts of giving up.”

Lin Zheng’s eyes turned frosty as he looked towards the depths of the Western Desolate Territory while saying, “We should get closer to them as fast as possible.”

“Everyone, be more careful. Our enemies this time aren’t simple people.” Lin Zheng reminded. In the next moment, with a wave of his hand, he shot towards the depth of the Western Desolate Territory, with Mu Chen and the rest immediately following closely behind.

However, this time, everyone had tensed their bodies up. They knew that not too long from now, they would land in a head-on confrontation with a luxurious lineup fully comprised of vicious people.

The depths of the Western Desolate Territory. This place was covered all year-round by thick Spiritual Mist. The Spiritual Mist hadn’t dissipated nor scattered for many, many years, causing any senses to be greatly reduced within it.

Living within the Spiritual Mist were numerous kinds of special and unique Spiritual Beasts. These Spiritual Beasts relied on the cover of the Spiritual Mist to appear and disappear like ghosts. This made them extremely hard to deal with. Therefore, there would be very little experts from the Northern Heavens Continent who would come over here in search of treasure.

At this moment, at the stone peak within the depths, were ten figures. A thick baleful aura covered the bodies of these ten figures. From a single look, people would be able to know that they weren’t any kind-hearted or good-natured folks.

At the very front of the group was a male dressed in black robes. A longsword strapped across his back, while the malevolent marking of a black dragon was present on his forehead, displaying his identity. He was the target that Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and their group was looking for, Mo Longzi.

“Tsk, tsk, Mo Longzi, we’ve already investigated. That Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are treating their injuries while hiding in that misty valley. This time, they’ll definitely have nowhere left to go!” A male in grey robes standing behind Mo Longzi gave a high-pitched laugh before speaking out. Those deep pair of eyes were sparkling with an ominous and cunning glint, while dark and extremely tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from his body, causing the Spiritual Mist to be unable to enter a radius of ten metres around him.

This vicious person was the 7th Rank on the Bounty Board, Wang Yingui. His strength had reached Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase.

Upon hearing his, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile and replied, “I think that the rescue squad from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be arriving very soon.”

“To be in such a hurry, their manpower shouldn’t be much. However, it can be assumed that they would be their best ones. The three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall will definitely come,” said a person dressed in greyish-white robes. The body of this person appeared to be as thin as a matchstick, with only a layer of skin covering his bones, making him look akin to a skeleton. At this moment, a thick fog appeared within his skeleton-like eyes as he spoke out with an indifferent voice.

“Hehe, what’s the matter? Could it be that you, Mu Gu are afraid?” said a male whose physique was sturdy and strong, like a bear, with a giant blood-red axe on his back, making a droning laugh.

“Gui Xiong, caution is the parent of safety. That time, your head was almost obtained by Lin Zheng. Could it be that you’ve still not learnt your lesson?” replied Mu Gu indifferently.

“Previously, I’ve only been too complacent. If I see that Lin Zheng today, I, your father, will cleave him into two halves!” roared Gui Xiong, his eyes opened wide as a baleful aura gushed from him.

“That’s enough. Don’t argue at this place.”

Mo Longzi spoke out while wrinkling his forehead. Waving his hand, he looked towards a male in green who had yet to speak. The latter’s eyes appeared normal. However, chilling rays of light erupted and sparkled from within, as if a poisonous snake was lurking within their depths.

“Wu Jia, are the preparations complete?”

This person was, unexpectedly, Wu Jia, 5th Rank of the Bounty Board, and was the only 5th Grade Spiritual Array Master amongst their ranks.

Hearing Mo Longzi’s words, that Wu Jia smiled, and nodded his head while replying, “I’ve long completed my preparations, with the only thing left is for the fish to enter the net.”

An extremely sinister smile appeared at the corner of Mo Longzi’s mouth as he said, “That’s good.”

“Why don’t we just capture Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong first?” asked Mu Gu with a frown.

“Just relax. They’re unable to run away,” replied Mo Longzi with a gentle and chilling smile. Looking towards the deepest part of the thick mist, he replied, “Do you think that I was truly unable to capture them over these last few days?”

Mu Gu’s eyes narrowed before saying, “Are you purposefully luring the rescue squad from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy over here?”

The smile at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth grew even more bloodthirsty and crazy. Licking his lips, he replied, "Do you think that just a Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would be enough to satisfy me?"

"Haha, they aren't enough..."

"I also want to eat this rescue squad!"

"Haha. I truly don't know how big of an upheaval this would cause within the Northern Heavens Continent. I think that the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be very nice to watch then, right? I'm truly anticipating it..."

Mu Gu and the rest shot a look at each other as a faint tremble shook their hearts. This Mo Longzi was truly very vicious and merciless. If this elite rescue squad was to be completely defeated, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might truly explode.

...

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Ten figures shot across the desolated plains at lightning speed. Spiritual Energy erupted from their bodies, with some people even clenching Spiritual Weapons in their hands. Their bodies were taut and tense, ready to enter their combat states at any time.

This group of people was, naturally, Lin Zheng, Mu Chen and their group who had entered the depths of the Western Desolate Territory.

Along the way, they had increased their speed, and had also tried their utmost to restrain their Spiritual Energy fluctuations to avoid being detected. Any Spiritual Beasts met along the way by them would be avoided to their greatest possible extent.

Under this full speed, it took them only a measly half an hour to enter the depths of the Western Desolate Territory.

Mu Chen's gaze swept across his surroundings, before faintly

narrowing his eyes. This stretch of the world seemed to be permeated by a thick mist, of which Spiritual Energy fluctuations could be felt within.

“The depths of the Western Desolate Territory are covered by a Spiritual Mist throughout the year. Once one enters it, one’s senses would drop. Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong must have known about this, and have, therefore, fled towards this direction.” Lin Zheng spoke out.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head before saying in a soft voice. “However, it’s extremely easy to get lost in such an environment.”

Lin Zheng nodded his head in approval. After gently making a hand sigh, everyone nodded their heads slightly, before increasingly their vigilance.

Moving close to Luo Li, Mu Chen said in a low voice. “ Follow me tightly at all times. Regardless of the situation, don’t ever leave my sight.”

As they entered the depths, he was faintly able to sense some slight unease, but was unable to put them into words. However, regardless of that, being more careful was a must.

Luo Li nodded her small head.

Just as Mu Chen was talking to her, the surrounding Spiritual Mist grew increasingly thick. At that moment, their vision had become extremely impaired, so had their senses.

Ten figures skimmed over the land as they shot over, furiously rushing into the thick Spiritual Mist.

However, a split second when they rushed into the Spiritual Mist, Mu Chen’s expression furiously changed. He could feel strange fluctuations radiating from within the Spiritual Mist that appeared to be similar to Spiritual Arrays.

“Careful!”

Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. With an explosive roar, he wrapped Luo Li within his bosom.

At the same time, the Spiritual Mist started to crazily squirm about, causing distortions to seemingly form in the surrounding space. Transforming into something akin to giant mouths of evil demons, they devoured Mu Chen and their group completely. As the Spiritual Mist pervaded over, everyone had disappeared without a trace.

Within the extreme depths, on the top of the stone peak, Wu Jia's eyes sprung open as a malevolent smile flashed across his eyes.

"The fish have entered the net."

A smile surfaced at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth. Taking a step forward, he disappeared within the thick mist.

"It's time."

As he disappeared, a sinister voice brimming with cruel killing intent rang out within the thick mist.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

On the stone peak, eight figures stood up. Laughing malevolently, they shot out simultaneously.

The most elite rescue lineup from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

This time, we'll kill every single one of your people! Let's see if there's anyone else that dares to offer a bounty for us!

# Chapter 361 – Chi Yu and Mao Jiang

When the spatial fluctuations erupted out, Mu Chen was to first to react. Spiritual Energy erupted from his body, immediately protecting him and Luo Li, whom was in his bosom. However, the expected attack didn't arrive. After lasting for a few breaths, the spatial fluctuations completely dissipated.

Embracing the slender waist of the girl within his bosom, Mu Chen descended on a mountain peak. Their surroundings were still pervaded by the thick spiritual mist. However, there wasn't any movement coming from it.

Obviously, they were still within the depths of the Western Desolated Territory. Those spatial fluctuations earlier were only meant to split them apart.

"Looks like we've been discovered long ago," said Luo Li, her clear and limpid eyes sizing up their surroundings.

Mu Chen nodded his head, while his eyes were brimming with vigilance. The unforeseen circumstance that happened had caused him to feel slight uneasy, since he didn't know the exact motive his enemy had in doing so.

"The previous spatial fluctuations were too weak, and only would've been able to separate us by a huge distance. However, it's already enough to allow our enemies to defeat us one by one," said Luo Li in a soft voice.

"Let's group up with them as fast as possible," said Mu Chen after frowning and pondering awhile.

Their mission this time was extremely dangerous. Furthermore, all of them were exposed, while their enemies were hidden. They were even separated by them. To Mu Chen's group, this was an extremely disadvantageous situation.

Luo Li faintly nodded. It was fortunate that Mu Chen's reaction

was fast, resulting in the two of them not being separated. If not, she would've truly been worried to death.

As Mu Chen proceeded to walk forward, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames started to rise from his body. Walking in front of Luo Li, his gaze vigilantly swept the thick spiritual mist in their surroundings.

Whoosh!

However, just as he had started walking, his eyes furiously contacted. Explosively retreating a number of steps back, a rampaging streak of light suddenly split the thick spiritual mist apart, before shooting towards the position he was in at lightning speed. The ground over there instantly collapsed as cracks extended from there.

As Mu Chen looked towards his front, he saw a black pike that pierced deep into the earth. Only leaving less than half of its body above the ground, it hummed as it intensely vibrated. The strength put into this pike was rather astonishing.

"Tsk! Tsk!"

Just as Mu Chen had evaded the sudden black pike attack that had come from nowhere, the thick mist at another position split apart, only to see scarlet streaks of light hiding the skies and covering the earth as they explosively shot over.

Luo Li strode over, her jade-like hand tightly grasping her longsword. Instantly, Sword Aura swept across horizontally. Dinging sounds rang out as the Sword Aura blocked all of the incoming scarlet streaks of light.

"Clap! Clap!"

Clapping sounds seemed to ring out from the thick mist. His gaze turning frosty, Mu Chen stared at the location where the scarlet streaks of light had appeared. As the thick mist slowly parted, bit by bit, two figures slowly appeared within his line-of-sight.

In front of him was a giant towering cliff with two figures, one sitting and one standing, at its peak. The person sitting was dressed in scarlet robes, while a malevolent scar was present on his face. Roughly ten scarlet rays of light were floating within his palms at this moment. They were fiery red daggers, twisting and twining above his palms akin to swimming fish.

As for the person standing, it was an extremely skinny male. However, although he was small in size, eight large black pikes were carried on his back. They were even taller than him, which gave people a strange impact to their sight upon seeing him.

At this moment, these two people were sending a smile filled with amusement as they stared at Mu Chen and Luo Li.

“Aiyahyah, our luck truly is great. We’re actually able to meet a girl of such quality...” the eyes of the scarlet-robed male swept across Mu Chen and Luo Li, before finally resting on Luo Li’s body. Instantly, his eyes lit up, before speaking out in a grin.

“The faces of these two people seem very...could it be that they’re Freshmen? Haha, looks like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly is in a tough spot now! They’ve actually dared to even send such a squad out,” said the thin male while licking his lips.

“Exactly. They even dared to send Heavenly Transformation Stage students...the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is truly getting more and more useless,” said the male in scarlet robes as he shot a weird look at Mu Chen. Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase? He dared to come rescue people with that strength? He truly was trying to seek death.

The male in scarlet robes gave a gentle flick of his finger, causing the ten scarlet rays of light to revolve increasingly fast. Grinning while staring at Mu Chen, he said, “I’ll give you a chance, brat. Just run away, and leave that girl to us. You might have a bit of chance to survive.”

Mu Chen glared at the male in scarlet robes and the thin male. With a voice that was totally devoid of emotion, he replied, “So, you two are the 7th and 8th Rank on the bounty list rankings, Chi Yu and Mao Jiang, huh…?”

“Looks like the information you have about us isn’t little,” replied the male in scarlet robes by the name of Chi Yu. Extending his hand to grab a dagger, he extended his blood red tongue and gave it a lick, while a baleful aura radiated from his eyes.

“Okay, brat. Stop talking any more nonsense and quickly scram. This is the first time over these past few years that I’ve seen a girl of such quality…”

Riiiinng!

The clear and melodious ring of a sword furiously resounded as an incomparably sharp Sword Aura swept out. With an indescribable speed, it split about the earth, before cleaving down on Chi Yu’s face.

Ding!

A black pike was furiously thrusted forward, heavily impacting against the Sword Aura. As Spiritual Energy erupted out, the earth was chopped apart, while the black pike was sent shooting backwards.

Chi!

Numerous sharp Sword Auras slashed across Chi Yu’s face, bringing about some streaks of blood.

Chi Yu’s face instantly changed as he explosively retreated. With an incomparably dark look, he glared at the young girl standing beside Mu Chen with a black longsword in her hand, who was staring at him with eyes that seemed to have seen a maggot.

“Truly delicious.”

Chi Yu clenched his teeth and wiped away the blood stains on his

face as a dark and sinister shadow erupted from his eyes.

“Leave him to me?” asked Luo Li as she faintly tilted her head over, seeking for Mu Chen’s approval. Towards this disgusting fellow that was staring at her with those unclean eyes, she really wanted to stab her sword into him.

“Cut off his hands and leave his life,” replied Mu Chen, while gently nodding his head. As he was speaking, Luo Li could hear the thick killing intent present within his words.

Giving a beautiful and gentle smile that appeared sweet, Luo Li replied, “Ok.”

“Attack! Kill them both!” Chi Yu roared, his gaze became extremely dark as of now. Of the two people, other than that girl in black, whose strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, made it harder to be dealt with, that Mu Chen seemed to be a burden.

Just based on that, and yet they dared to act in such a manner in front of them?!

A sinister smile appeared at the corner of Mao Jiang’s mouth as he grasped a black pike from his back. With a shiver of his arm, the black pike erupted with a bright and resplendent black light, appearing akin to a black dragon. Splitting apart the air, even the earth started splitting to form a gigantic fissure as it explosively shot towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen took a step forward. Without any intention of retreating, he tightly clenched his fingers. Black lightning encased his body, before furiously sending a fist rumbling out.

Bang!

Black lightning gushed out as Mu Chen’s fist smashed head-on against the black pike that was shot straight at him.

“Scram!”

Mu Chen's gaze turned frosty as lightning crazily overflowed from his fist. In the next instant, that black pike was, unexpectedly, repelled by Mu Chen's fist.

"What?!"

The faces of Chi Yu and Mao Jiang seemingly changed at that very instant as shock flashed within their eyes. Even Chi Yu, whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, didn't dare to use his bare fist to smash against Mao Jiang's pike. However, this brat, whose strength appeared to be at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, was actually able to accomplish it?

"Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. And yet you dare to bounce and jump around here. Seems like you do not know death."

Chilling and murderous intent erupted from Mu Chen's handsome face. With regards to these two rude fellows, Mu Chen would absolutely not let them off today.

"Swish!"

As his voice rang out, a dragon's shadow rose from his body. In the next instant, akin to lightning, he rushed straight towards Mao Jiang.

"Shameless boasting!"

Chilling intent appeared in Mao Jiang's eyes as he, too, shot forward. With a clench of his hands, two black pikes appeared within. Spiritual Energy erupted and swept out as Mao Jiang's body shook. In the next instant, shadow pikes hid the skies and covered the earth as they shrouded over Mu Chen.

However, facing this incoming attack, Mu Chen still didn't show any signs of evading them. Black lightning sparkled on his body, unexpectedly allowing those shadow pikes to violently descend on his body.

Ding! Ding!

Metallic sounds rang out as sparks shot out everywhere. However, those shadow pikes were, unexpectedly, unable to cause the slightest bit of harm to Mu Chen.

Bang!

A fist rumbled out from him, piercing through those shadow pikes. As Spiritual Energy gushed from him, his fist carried along frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations as it headed straight for Mao Jiang's chest.

Mao Jiang was immediately scared shitless by the violent and vicious attack of Mu Chen. Pulling back his two pikes, he placed them in front of his chest, guarding him.

Ding!

Mu Chen's fist violently slammed against the two pikes. Even though they were made from iron essence, unexpectedly, those two pikes were pressed into extremely eye-catching arcs, and had seemingly stuck to Mao Jiang's chest.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Black lightning erupted from his fist, causing his power to drastically rise.

Crack!

The two iron essence pikes had broken completely. Akin to lightning, Mu Chen's fist violently slammed against Mao Jiang's chest. The latter instantly sported a mouthful of blood as his body flew back hundreds of metres, before finally stabilising himself miserably.

While waiting for himself to stabilise, Mao Jiang's eyes were overwhelmed with shock and horror. He never dreamt that this youth, who appeared to be the easiest to deal with, whose strength was only at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, would actually possess such terrifying strength!

Due to this unforeseen spectacle, even Chi Yu's face turned grave. Looking at the youth, who was now clad in black lightning, unease

had, unknowingly, started to erupt from his heart.

Screech!

As a chilling glint flashed within his eyes, Chi Yu gave a flick of his finger. In the next instant, numerous scarlet rays of light that carried along an extremely sharp Aura explosively stabbed towards Mu Chen's back at lightning speed.

However, just as those scarlet rays of light shot out, a slender and beautiful figure appeared behind Mu Chen. Sword Aura swept out, slicing apart all those incoming scarlet rays of light.

Luo Li stood in the air. A black skirt wrapped her exquisite and lovable figure. Her long hair draped down from her head, appearing as bright and resplendent as a river of silver. However, at this moment, an apathetic light surfaced from those clear, glass-like eyes of hers.

"Leave your arms behind. If not, I'll get scolded." Staring quietly at Chi Yu, the young girl spoke out in a soft voice.

Clenching and grinding his teeth, Chi Yu replied with a sneer, "Just based on you?"

The jade-like hand of Luo Li that was tightly grasping the longsword slowly rose into the air. Pointing towards Chi Yu in the distance. An extremely astonishing Sword Aura rushed to the skies. At this moment, the spiritual mist within a radius of a thousand metres was scattered by that Sword Aura.

"Just based on me."

An apathetic smile seemed to surface on her delicate and exquisite face. Within her beauty, faint killing intent flowed out. With a shake of her jade-like hand, boundless Sword Aura condensed into a river of Sword Aura in the air above her head.

Extremely frightening fluctuations started to radiate from within the river of Sword Aura, causing Chi Yu's face to slowly turn grim, bit by bit.

No one could have guessed that the youth and the young girl in front of their eyes, whom appeared to be the easiest to deal with, were actually that troublesome and intractable.

This time, they truly had kicked an iron board.

# Chapter 362 – Ferocious Couple

The spiritual mist prevaded across this stretch of the world. However, on top of a mountain peak, the spiritual mist had dissipated within a radius of thousands of metres. Four figures were standing in the air within it, with boundless Spiritual Energy radiating from them, causing the spiritual mist that permeated this stretch of the world to be unable to get close to them.

The faces of Mao Jiang and Chi Yu had become extremely dark at this moment. Originally, they assumed that they had gotten their hands on some easy targets. However, all of a sudden, the lambs had turned into vicious wolves, and it was them that was forced to a slightly miserable state.

“If you’re starting to regret it, I’m afraid it's slightly too late.”

Mu Chen stared chillingly towards Mao Jiang as black lightning flashed around his body. Under his clothing, a lightning rune started to slowly surface, while an erratic, strong and powerful energy rose within his body like a furious dragon.

“Regret? A Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase dares to say such words to us? When we were running amok in the Northern Heavens Continent, your hair hadn’t even grown out yet!” Mao Jiang roared as he laughed in fury.

“Oh really?”

The smile at the corner of Mu Chen’s mouth grew increasingly sinister and cold as black lightning surfaced within his eyes. Taking a step forward, he appeared before Mao Jiang like a spectre. A fist of wind howled out, covered by Spiritual Energy that was burning with black flames, while encased with bits of black lightning. In an incomparably rampaging fashion, it violently rumbled out.

Mao Jiang’s gaze was sinister and dark as Spiritual Energy

erupted from his body without a shred of restraint. Transforming into shadow pikes, they explosively shot out. He truly didn't believe that he, with his strength at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, would actually be unable to suppress that Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase brat!

Bang! Bang!

The two people confronted each other across the horizon. Spiritual Energy crazily wrecked havoc in their surroundings, causing even the surrounding space to faintly distort. The violent storm that swept out caused the Spiritual Energy to completely split apart and dissipate.

While Mu Chen and Mao Jiang were confronting each other, Luo Li pointed with her sword tip. In the next instant, the river of Sword Aura gushed out. Carrying along the extremely sharp Sword Aura, it enveloped over the dark-faced Chi Yu.

"Hmph."

Chi Yu's gaze grew increasingly dark and cold as scarlet-red Spiritual Energy swept out of his body akin to flames. Forming a hand seal, the scarlet-red Spiritual Energy condensed together, transforming into countless scarlet-red daggers.

These daggers sparkled with a chilling glint that caused people's hearts to palpitate. In the next moment, bringing his hand down, they transformed into a light rain that blotted the skies, hiding the skies and covering the earth as they rumbled towards the river of Sword Aura.

Scree! Scree!

As they collided in the air, the countless scarlet-red light rain dissipated the moment they made contact with the river of Sword Aura. The swiftness and fierceness of the Sword Aura had far exceeded the expectations of Chi Yu.

After completely shattering the scarlet-red light rain apart, the

remnant river of Sword Aura swept across the Chi Yu.

Chi Yu was forced to miserably retreat. Regardless of that, his waist and abdomen had been swept across by the river of sword Aura. A malevolent-looking bloody wound surfaced as blood dripped from it.

“You bitch! You’re looking to die!”

Chi Yu’s fury had reached its peak. With a clench of his hand, ten scarlet streaks of light shot from within him, before transforming into ten short swords that seemed as if they were condensed from lava.

These ten short swords continuously dripped with lava, while extremely scorching-hot fluctuations radiated from them, appearing rather astonishing.

Obviously, these ten short swords were all Spiritual Weapons. Furthermore, they were a complete set of Spiritual Weapons. Although, when alone, they were considered to be Middle-grade Spiritual Weapons, when converged together, their might was comparable to High-grade Spiritual Weapons.

“Scarlet Dragon Entangling Death!”

As Chi Yu flicked his ten fingers in succession, the ten short swords instantly transformed into ten scarlet pythons, howling as they shout out. Moving craftily, they shot across the horizon. Bringing about vicious trajectories, they bit down towards Luo Li.

Facing the incoming bites from the scarlet pythons, Luo Li remained calm and collected. Sword Aura rippled from her body, before forming a Sword Aura defense around it, completely receiving all of the rampaging attacks against her.

The two battlegrounds in the sky had erupted into intense fights at this moment.

However, as time continued to elapse, Chi Yu and Mao Jiang’s gazes grew increasingly dark as they gradually felt the pressure

building up on them. The youth and the young girl in front of them were releasing strength that caused even their hearts to palpitate.

They were starting to feel unease erupting, bit by bit, within their hearts. If this continued, they might gradually end up in a disadvantage.

They had to deal with these two people as fast as possible. If this dragged on, it might be extremely unfavorable for them.

In the next instant, an ominous glint flashed within the eyes of Chi Yu and Mao Jiang.

Bang!

The long pike in Mao Jiang's hand violently collided against Mu Chen's fist of wind, causing gales to sweep out. Taking advantage of this, Mao Jiang explosively retreated. While doing so, his eyes started become reeked in a blood-red colour.

Boom!

Erratic Spiritual Energy erupted from him like a storm, undulating in this stretch of the world. As his hand seals started to rapidly change, the torrential Spiritual Energy condensed in the sky. Faintly, it appeared akin to a black stone pike that seemed to bridge the gap between heaven and earth.

The stone pike was very simple and unadorned, while strange vein-like patterns covered its entire surface. In the next moment, boundless and ancient fluctuations radiated from it, causing it to appear as if it could pierce through the heavens and earth.

Upon seeing this spectacle unfolding in front of him, Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. This Mao Jing was obviously displaying an extremely formidable offensive Deity Tier Spiritual Art.

"Die, brat!"

A mouthful of blood essence spurted out from Mao Jiang's

mouth, before landing on the surface of the stone pike. Instantly, the colour of the stone pike became dark, while a baleful aura was faintly discernable as it started to pervade out.

“Blood God’s Heavenly Fighting Pike!”

An explosive roar rang out from Mao Jiang as the gigantic pike rushed towards the sky. Transforming into torrential rays of bloody light, they dived down from the sky. The ground below instantly collapsed, while a fissure even formed in the surrounding space.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the descending stone pike that contained a frightening power. In the next instant, his hand suddenly turned illusionary as a starry sky condensed behind him. Along with ancient roars, three gigantic beastial figures condensed from it.

The three great divine seals of the Four Gods Constellation Scripture had once again been displayed by Mu Chen.

Following his increase in strength, the might of the three great divine seals was even more so than a month ago.

Roar!

Three gigantic beastial figures roared as they flew across the sky. Transforming into three different coloured streaks of light, they intertwined as they explosively shot out. In the next instant, carrying along torrential amounts of Spiritual Energy, they furiously smashed against the gigantic stone pike pressing down from above!

Boom!

An incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy storm spread out, causing the mountain peaks below to shatter and collapse as it swept through them, leading to gigantic cracks spreading in all directions.

Mao Jiang tightly stared at the origin of the erratic Spiritual

Energy storm. After quite a while, the storm gradually came to a stop. However, Mu Chen's figure had disappeared without a trace.

"He's been shattered into pieces?"

As Mao Jiang swept his gaze around, happiness erupted within his eyes. This move of his was a killing one, and that Mu Chen had actually dared to meet it head-on. This goes to show how reckless he truly was.

"It hasn't end, yet. What are you so happy about?!"

Nevertheless, just as happiness had appeared within his eyes, a ridiculing voice filled with cold laughter suddenly rang out in the air. The expression on Mao Jiang's face instantly changed as he hastily looked up, only to see that Mu Chen's figure had unknowingly appeared high up in the sky. At this moment, a gigantic black pagoda had appeared behind Mu Chen. It had nine levels on its body, while boundless energy radiated from it.

"Let's see who will be the one that suppresses the other!"

Mu Chen sneered, while the nine-layered pagoda instantly erupted with thousands of brilliant rays of light. The surface of the pagoda, level by level, started to sparkle and, very quickly, brilliant rays of light had already permeated the fourth level.

Roar!

Golden runes surfaced on the body of the pagoda, before four golden dragons roared as they separated from the pagoda, twisting and twining as they circled the pagoda. In the past, when Mu Chen activated the Nine-layered pagoda, he could only activate two of its levels. However, with the increase of his strength, now, he was already able to activate four levels.

"Suppress for me!"

Mu Chen patted down with his large hand. Instantly, carrying along the four golden dragons twisting and roaring around it, the Nine-layered pagoda brought along its gigantic shadow as it

pressed down on Mao Jiang, whose expression had instantaneously changed.

“Ten Thousand Pike Divine Art!”

Mao Jiang explosively roared, only to have ten thousand black glowing pikes surface in the air. In the next instant, hiding the skies and covering the earth, they shot straight towards the black pagoda.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

However, the Nine-Layered pagoda didn't give a single care towards the incoming attacks. In an overbearing manner, it pressed down, while countless glowing pikes shattered, simply unable to create any obstruction to it.

Bang!

Within a few breaths, the Nine-Layered pagoda had shattered all the glowing pikes that blotted the skies apart. Under the aghast and horror-filled gaze of Mao Jiang, it violently smashed against the boundless Spiritual Energy defenses around his body.

Crack!

Mao Jiang’s face instantly turned pale as a mouthful of blood crazily spurted out. His body rapidly descended, smashing through the mountain peak below, causing it to sink in.

Whoosh!

However, just as Mao Jiang was about to get buried by the countless rocks formed around him, he fled out of there in an extremely miserable state. At this moment, his body was covered in blood, his face deathly pale, while his eyes were overwhelmed with shock.

The previous attack by Mu Chen had caused serious injuries to him. Furthermore, he was able to sense that when the black pagoda had pressed down on him, the Spiritual Energy within his

body had turned sluggish, as if it had been sealed up.

“This brat’s very strange!”

An intense tremble shook Mao Jiang’s mind as he already had the intent to flee. At this moment, if he didn’t leave, he might truly be killed by Mu Chen at this place.

Whoosh!

Just as this thought flashed within his mind, his figure had already shot out at lightning speed. As long as he could enter the area of the spiritual mist, it would be very easy for him to escape.

In the air, upon spotting Mao Jiang, who was explosively shooting out, a sneer flashed within Mu Chen’s eyes as his hand seal changed.

Mao Jiang was now only a hundred feet away from the spiritual mist. However, at the instant when he was able to rush into it, the spiritual mist in front of him suddenly started to intensely fluctuate. As the spiritual mist dissipated away, two gigantic Spiritual Arrays came into view.

As the Spiritual Arrays revolved, Spiritual Energy swept out. Two streaks of light explosively shot out, violently impacting against Mao Jiang, who was totally caught unprepared.

Bang!

His body flew out, once again, with shock and horror completely filling his eyes. Those Spiritual Arrays, exactly when were they arranged within the spiritual mist?

His body heavily shot into the mountain, while his aura was instantly depressed. Crazily spurting blood, his chest had already caved in as he looked incredulously at Mu Chen, who was slowly descending from the sky. With a wave of the latter’s sleeve, the Spiritual Arrays in the distance started to dissipate.

Mu Chen looked with an apathetic gaze at Mao Jiang, who was

now in a seriously-injured state. With a clench of his hand, a black pike dropped within. Breaking it into four pieces, with a flick of his finger, four black rays of light violently shot towards the Mao Jiang's four limbs, viciously pinning him to the mountain, causing him to be unable to move or free himself.

"Arghhhh!"

Miserable shrieks rang out from Mao Jiang due to the intense pain coming from his four limbs, while thick dread and terror erupted from his eyes. The youth in front of him was too vicious and cruel in his actions.

In the sky, after hearing the miserable shriek, a shiver went through Chi Yu's heart, who was entangled with Luo Li. He hastily looked over, only to see Mao Jiang pinned to the mountain by Mu Chen. Instantly, horror and dread erupted from his eyes.

How could that brat be so formidable?!

"Hurry up and flee!"

Chi Yu's fighting spirit was instantly doused. He already knew that their hunt had failed. If he didn't flee now, he would have the same ending as Mao Jiang.

Swish!

Making a prompt decision, his body abruptly retreated. At the same time, the the lava-like short swords transformed into scarlet pythons, once again, crazily sending their attacks towards Luo Li in an attempt to restrain her.

A chilling glint appeared in Luo Li's clear and limpid eyes as she stared at the retreating Chi Yu. As her jade-like hand slowly clenched the longsword within, her slender finger made a flick. Instantly, her sword scabbard flew out, causing chilling light to appear. Due to this, the temperature of this stretch of the world had also suddenly dropped down.

Holding the longsword in her hand, slowed her sleep down,

while gently slashing downwards.

Scree! Scree!

At the instant when her sword edge slashed down, the space in front of her was split apart. The ten scarlet pythons heading towards her instantly froze as a sword light flashed past their bodies, causing them the split into two halves.

Crack!

The ten lava-like short swords that were chopped apart dropped down from the sky, their Spiritual Energy totally dissipated. This set of High-grade Spiritual Artifacts were unexpectedly destroyed with a single slash from Luo Li.

Spurt Pfft.

With his Spiritual Weapons destroyed, Chi Yu had received the backlash from Luo Li's attack. Causing him to spurt a mouthful of blood. The horror and shock within his eye instantly became thicker. However, just as he was about to increase his speed of retreat, the space behind him shattered. Two rays of sword light swept out, piercing into his shoulders.

Just like that, his body, which was speeding away, instantly froze.

Standing in the air, Luo Li extended her jade-like hands. The sword scabbard rushing towards the sky descended down, before her longsword slowly entered her scabbard, emitting a gentle cry.

Ring!

At the instant when her longsword entered her scabbard, a mouthful of blood spurted out from Chi Yu. At the same time, his arms slowly slid down from his shoulders, before dropping down; the area sliced by her was as smooth as a mirror.

# Chapter 363 – Rescue

As Chi Yu's arms slid off from his shoulders, a miserable shriek instantly rang out. His body rapidly dropped down, violently smashing against a mountain peak. This fall caused him to crazily spurt yet another mouthful of blood out, his aura was decreasing rapidly.

Fluttering as she descended, a chilling intent surfaced within Luo Li's beautiful eyes. Pressing the edge of her sword against Chi Yu's throat, a Sword Aura that was bone chillingly cold radiated from it, which caused the latter's face to instantly turn deathly pale, not daring to move a single inch.

Not far away, upon seeing this spectacle, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. With a clench of his hand, he pulled Mao Jiang towards him, before tossing him beside Chi Yu. The two vicious people from the Bounty Board that were previously showing off their awe-inspiring presence had now been turned exceedingly miserable, and that awe-inspiring presence was no longer present.

"This ending seems to have exceeded the expectations of the two of you...right?" said Mu Chen with a faint smile as he looked towards the two men, both showing deathly-pale faces while looking extremely dejected and depressed.

With his arms chopped off, Chi Yu was now glaring venomously at Mu Chen. Next to him, Mao Jiang clenched his teeth while growling, " Don't get cocky, you two! This time, none of you will be able to escape!"

Hearing his threat, Mu Chen continued to smile, before asking, "Please tell me about your plans, the two of you."

"In your dreams!" Chi Yu sneered back.

With a flick of his finger, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot out from Mu Chen. When it violently smashed against Chi Yu's chest, the

latter was shot hundreds of metres back. Totally ignoring the latter's fate, Mu Chen turned and look towards Mao Jiang and said, " If you wish to become like him, I will grant it to you."

Looking at the handsome youth, whose eyes were filled with a chilling indifference, a shiver shook through Mao Jiang's heart. The former's actions caused even him to feel fearful and apprehensive. How could something like that be done by a student from an ivory tower like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

"You guys have no hope. Mo Longzi isn't someone you can contend against."

Clenching his teeth, Mao Jiang growled, "Release us now, and you'll still be able to leave this place. Once you fall into Mo Longzi's hands, none of you will live to tell the tale!"

"What is he planning to do?" asked Mu Chen as his forehead started to slightly wrinkle up.

"Do? Hehe. He, naturally, wants to eat every last one of you guys up. This way, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would receive a very heavy blow. At that time, his status within the Demonic Dragon Palace would rise as a result," replied Mao Jiang with a sneer.

"Can he even digest us? All of the Punishment Hall's three Great Generals have taken action this time. Is Mo Longzi's appetite that big?" Mu Chen spoke out with a sneer. Lin Zheng and the other two were all at Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, and weren't weaker than Shen Cangsheng. Although Mo Longzi and his lineup was strong, this didn't mean that they could eat them up. Furthermore, once they successfully rescued Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, their strength would be able to immediately suppress their enemies.

"You guy are underestimating Mo Longzi too much," replied Mao Jiang in ridiculement. "As of now, he should've already found Lin

Zheng. If I'm correct, Lin Zheng has already been defeated."

"As for the other two of the Great Generals, Gu Tianyan and Zhou Aurangshan, they'll get restrained by Mu Gu and Gui Xiong. After getting his hands free, Mo Longzi would naturally deal with them, too. At that point, what else can the other people do?"

Mu Chen's eyes faintly contracted as he heard Mao Jiang's words. Unexpectedly, Mo Longzi was strong to such a level? He could even deal with Lin Zheng?

"Don't assume that your strength will greatly increase once you rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. The two of them have been poisoned by Mo Longzi's Demonic Dragon Poison. As of now, they are helpless. Even if you save them, they'll be close to useless." Mao Jiang continued to rain verbal blows towards Mu Chen, while his face was filled with a ridiculing smile. Those fellows still wanted to fight with Mo Longzi? They were truly looking to die.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Mo Longzi was truly worthy of his title as a super vicious person that was ranked second on the Bounty Board. He was actually that formidable.

"What do we do now?"asked Luo Li in a soft voice and she walked towards Mu Chen. The current situation was indeed rather reassuring to them. Their enemies had split them up and were attempting to defeat them one by one. At that time, once Lin Zheng and the other two great generals were dealt with, it would be extremely difficult for them to confront their enemies anymore.

Mu Chen's eyes sparkled as he pondered about it. After a while, he looked towards Mao Jiang and asked, " You should know the locations of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, right?"

"You're still trying to rescue them? They're poisoned! There's no use even if you save them" Mao Jiang replied with a sneer.

"There's no need for you to care about that. You just need to lead

the way.” replied Mu Chen with a faint smile. Since their enemies wanted to deal with them one by one, he could also rely on this time to find Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. At that time, he could think of a way to dispel the poison in their bodies, allowing their strength to drastically rise. With that, doing a roundabout intercept and killing their enemies, they might be able to reverse this entire situation.

Naturally, he would need to seize the opportunity and rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong and recover their fighting strength before everyone of them gets captured.

“I’ll find Chi Yu and ask him also for the way. If I discover that your route is wrong, don’t blame be for skinning you alive before throwing you here.” added Mu Chen as he sent a faint smile towards Mao Jiang. Merely, that smile appeared exceedingly cold and apathetic.

Looking at the smile on Mu Chen’s face, Mao Jiang started to tremble as a chill spread over his body. Mu Chen’s cruelty and viciousness was without a doubt. This youth in front of him was more cruel and vicious then even them.

“You show me the way, and you’ll spare my life.” Mao Jiang was also a decisive person. At this moment, he clearly didn’t have much choices left. Thus he could only clench his teeth and reply to Mu Chen’s demand.

“That will depend on your performance.”

Mu Chen did not express his opinion, before shooting out and retrieving that Chi Yu back. From a distance, it seemed as though their exchange took quite a while. Finally, he retrieved Chi Yu, who was already sunk into unconsciousness back.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Chen looked towards Luo Li, who nodded her head.

Mu Chen lifted Mao Jiang up, who was seriously injured, before

rushing rapidly towards the centre of the dense spiritual mist, sweeping across towards the direction that Mao Jiang had provided.

However, just as Mu Chen and his group had shot in the depths, at another Rank within the depths of the Western Desolated Territory, on a giant stone that appeared akin to a small hill, a figure sitting on it started to faintly wrinkle its forehead.

Raising its head to look towards the direction of Mu Chen and his group, it muttered, “That direction should be where Chi Yu and Mao Jiang had went, right? From the looks of it, they’ve actually been captured, and are heading towards the depths in an attempt to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong?”

This person had a normal appearance. However, his eyes appeared exceedingly dark and cold, akin to a venomous snake. He was precisely the only Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master within the Bounty Board, Wu Jia.

As his eyes flashed faintly, he looked towards his front. In the region before him was a gigantic Spiritual Array that was currently revolving around. Within the Spiritual Array were three figures trapped in it.

If one were to take a careful look, one would be able to precisely identify He Yao, Su Xuan and Xu Huang. The three of them didn’t get separated very far from one another. Thus, they had met up on the way, before meeting Wu Jia, who had come over to deal with them.

However, facing against a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master that had long prepared against them, even with the three of them collaborating, they were still unable to gain the slightest bit of superiority. On the contrary, they were trapped by their enemy’s Spiritual Array, and were simply unable to break it.

Fortunately, by relying on their collaboration, they were barely able to protect their lives.

As Wu Jia stared at the three people within the Spiritual Array, his forehead started to faintly wrinkled, before suddenly standing up. Compared to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, these three students didn't mean anything. Furthermore, it could be said that both sides were being impeded, and as of now, he couldn't allow the people from that side get close to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

"I'll let you guys go first."

Staring at He Yao and the other two, Wu Jia gave a sneer. In the next moment, with a move of his body, he disappeared into the spiritual mist.

With the lost of Wu Jia's control, the Spiritual Array that had trapped He Yao and the other two started to slow its revolutions down. This allowed for He Yao and the other two to breath a sigh of relief. Before hurriedly using their full strength to break the Spiritual Array.

...

Whoosh!

Within the dense spiritual mist, Mu Chen and Luo Li shot swiftly across. Spiritual Energy swept out from him, causing the spiritual mist to be unable to get close to him.

They had already traveled at full speed, as both of them knew that they were in a race against time. Once Mo Longzi successfully deals with Lin Zheng and the other two, they might truly have lost.

Mao Jiang who was being carried in Mu Chen's hand, was continuously leading the way, while the depths of his eyes were quietly sparkling.

Whoosh!

Their figures shot out explosively. However, just as they were about to rush into another stretch of spiritual mist, Mu Chen's eyes furiously contracted. With a grab, he held onto Luo Li's

slender waist before explosively retreating.

Bang!

The spiritual mist in front of them shattered apart, as countless streaks of gigantic Spiritual Energy swept out. Like a furious dragon, they rumbling explosively towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Luo Li's beautiful eyes grew faintly chilly, as her jade like hand grasped her long sword tightly. In the next instant, boundless Sword Aura shot out, slashing apart the incoming streaks of Spiritual Energy.

"Never would I have imagined that Chi Yu and Mao Jiang would actually fall into the hands of two students..."a strang voice rang out from within the spiritual mist. As the spiritual mist fluctuated, a figure surfaced from within. It was precisely Wu Jia.

At the back of Wu Jia was a gigantic Spiritual Array that was currently revolving slowly, ready to launch attacks out at anytime.

"That's Wu Jia, Rank 5 on the Bounty Board?" looking at the person that appeared, Mu Chen spoke out while faintly wrinkling his forehead.

"Please stop here first, the two of you. Don't continue moving forward. I will stop you two." said Wu Jia while sending a faint smile towards Mu Chen and Luo Li.

Staring chillingly at Wu Jia, killing intent erupted within Mu Chen's eyes.

However, just as he had planned to take action, Luo Li gracefully walked forward. Sending a gentle smile towards Mu Chen, she said, "Let me stop him. Go and rescue the two first."

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen was instantly startled for a bit, while slightly hesitating.

"Have a bit of confidence in me, okay?" said Luo Li in an annoyed tone. Mu Chen had always wanted to stand the front and protect

her. However, wasn't he seriously underestimating this future queen of the Luo God Clan?

Hearing her tone, Mu Chen gave a helpless smile, before gently nodding his head while replying, "Please be careful."

He wasn't especially worried about her, as Luo Li's hidden cards were something that even he was not clear about. The only reason why Mu Chen hesitated was due to her extremely little times of truly fighting with people. Mu Chen didn't belief that Luo Tianshen would let Luo Li leave the Luo God Clan and come to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without the slightest bit of trump card

As his voice rang out, he didn't continue wasting any more time. With a move of his body, he shot forward into the spiritual mist.

"Where are you going?"

Upon seeing his, Wu Jia's gaze instantly turned frosty. As the Spiritual Array behind revolved, a stream came gushing out, sweeping towards Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

A stream of Sword Aura had also swept out, colliding against the Spiritual Energy stream heading towards Mu Chen. In the next moment, Sword Aura prevaded out, rumbling towards that Wu Jia and enveloping him within.

Taking advantage of this, Mu Chen's figure had rushed into the spiritual mist, disappearing within in a blink of an eye. As of now, he needed to rescue Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong before Mo Longzi successfully dealt with Lin Zheng and the rest.

If not, their situation would become extremely disadvantageous.

# Chapter 364 – Searching for Fire

Whoosh!

Mu Chen's figure shot through the spiritual mist. He was able to sense intense Spiritual Energy radiating from a far distance behind him. Obviously, Luo Li had already truly started crossing hands with Wu Jia.

Retracting his gaze, Mu Chen proceeded to coldly stare at Mao Jiang, who he had captive in his hands. With a sneer, he said, "Looks like you didn't tell me some things, huh?"

Mao Jiang's expression faintly changed as he repeatedly shook his head.

"How did that Wu Jia know which direction we were at?" asked Mu Chen chillingly. "Was it you that informed him?"

Hearing Mu Chen's question, Mao Jiang hastily replied, "There's Spiritual Arrays arranged by Wu Jia within the spiritual mist in the depths of the Western Desolate Territory. Therefore, he's able to sense all of the fluctuations within it."

Mu Chen shot a cold glare at Mao Jiang, before shooting a ray of Spiritual Energy out from his finger. Shooting into the spiritual mist, he spread his senses out. Indeed, Mu Chen was able to sense some extremely faint and strange fluctuations radiating from within. Those were the sensory threads from those Spiritual Arrays.

This Wu Jia truly had some ability.

A faint flash appeared in Mu Chen's eyes. In the next instant, with a wave of his sleeve, dozen's of Spiritual Seals condensed, before dissipating around his body. Glowing threads interweaved around his body, seemingly forming a small-sized Spiritual Array, enveloping him within.

This Spiritual Array wasn't large. However, it possessed the

capability to isolate one's sensory abilities. Mu Chen didn't want every move and every action he made to be collected in Wu Jia's hands.

After arranging the array, Mu Chen turned his apathetic gaze towards Mao Jiang, before saying in a indifferent voice, "Continue leading the way."

A shiver went through Mao Jiang's heart due to the gaze coming from Mu Chen, causing him to immediately continue guiding the way.

In the continuing journey, Mu Chen didn't receive any more obstructions. After throwing off Wu Jia's means of perception, that fellow shouldn't be able to sense his position anymore.

This continued for dozens of minutes, before Mu Chen's speed was slowly reduced. A gigantic mountain cave appeared in front of him. At the end of the mountain cave was a deep valley pervaded by spiritual mist.

"Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong should be inside of that deep valley. However, the spiritual mist present there is too dense, making it extremely difficult to search for them," said Mao Jiang as he point towards the deep valley.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. Flicking his finger, a ray of Spiritual Energy shot out, before violently knock Mao Jiang unconscious. Hoisting him up, Mu Chen proceeded to shoot forward, rushing into the deep valley.

Upon entering the deep valley, Mu Chen's vision received even more impedance. After pondering deeply awhile, Mu Chen shot towards the air as Spiritual Energy erupted from his body. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose to the sky akin to a smoke signal, causing much of the surrounding spiritual mist to dissipate.

The terrain within the deep valley was complicated. Coupled

with the obstruction of the spiritual mist, it was too difficult to search for the two that were hidden within. Therefore, Mu Chen chose to directly release his Spiritual Energy. His Spiritual Energy fluctuations should be very familiar to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. If the two were to sense it, they would definitely give a signal in response.

This action by Mu Chen had achieved quite a good result. As his Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated out, within a short span of less than a minute, a ray of Spiritual Energy erupted from a place within the deep valley.

This Spiritual Energy fluctuation was rather familiar, it's actually Shen Cangsheng's.

Slight happiness erupted within Mu Chen's heart, before shoot straight at the origin of the fluctuations. After a dozen breaths, his speed slowed down as his gaze faintly concentrated in his forward direction. Within the cliff present in his sight was a mountain cave. Present outside of the mountain cave was a figure standing tall and upright.

"Shen Cangsheng."

Upon spotting that familiar figure, Mu Chen instantly breathed a sigh of relief, as if a heavy burden had been lifted from him. As he moved closer and noticed Shen Cangsheng's appearance, he could not help feeling shock and astonishment.

At this moment, black blotches covered Shen Cangsheng's skin. These black blotches seemed to be squirming, while a sinister and poisonous aura radiated from them, causing Shen Cangsheng to appear exceedingly pallid and haggard. However, even though his condition was extremely miserable and poor, a smile was still present on Shen Cangsheng's face and the disdainful aura not reduced the slightest bit.

"Hey. Never expected that you'd be the first to arrive here. You truly surprised me." Looking at Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng

couldn’t help smiling as he spoke out.

Landing at the entrance of the cave, Mu chen casually tossed Chi Yu and Mao Jiang, whom he was holding in his hands, towards the ground.

“That’s Chi Yu and Mao Jiang? You’ve actually dealt with them.” Seeing the two people, Shen Cangsheng felt slightly surprised. Although Chi Yu and Mao Jiang were ranked 7th and 8th, they were, after all, at the Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Stage, and could be considered formidable. He never expected that they would fall into Mu Chen’s hands.

“Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the rest had also rushed over here. However, the current situation doesn’t seem especially good.”

Mu Chen looked at Shen Cangsheng and asked, “How are the two of you?”

“Look’s like the situation isn’t too good,” replied Shen Cangsheng as he helpless shrugged his shoulders, before walking into the cave. As Mu Chen walked in, he noticed Li Xuantong, who was in a worse condition that Shen Cangsheng. The former’s black blotches were denser than the latter’s, while his entire body was permeated by those sinister and poisonous fluctuations.

As Li Xuantong raised his eyes, Mu Chen could also see a black blotch on his face. This made the former’s handsome-looking face appear somewhat strange. Noticing Mu Chen, he revealed a bitter smile at the corner of his mouth. Obviously, he also didn’t expect that the first person to find them would actually be the latter.

“What’s this all about?” Mu Chen somewhat didn’t understand this whole situation. With Shen Cangsheng’s and Li Xuantong’s strength, even if there were more enemies, they shouldn’t have ended up in such a miserable state.

“Mo Longzi had long prepared for us. His strength had already

reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. He had always kept this hidden in our previous exchanges. Only at the end, when we were encircled by them, did that fellow expose his strength. Furthermore, he had brought out the Demonic Dragon Poison from the Demonic Dragon Palace. That's an extremely toxic poison refined by a Sovereign, and extremely formidable. We're not afraid of getting poisoned, but it's just that our strength still can't be restore," replied Li Xuantong in a dull manner.

"Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase..."

Mu Chen's eyes contracted. This Mo Longzi had truly reached that level. That meant to say that even Senior Brother Lin Zheng might not be able to match up with him head-on.

"The cultivation of those in the Demonic Dragon Palace is extremely sinister. Although there's a limit in their future, one's early stages would have leaps and bounds in their cultivation. I've truly neglected to take this aspect into consideration, since I've never imagined that Mo Longzi would break through that quickly," said Shen Cangsheng with a frown. In reality, he had also come into contact with that phase. If he was able to recover after all of this, he would definitely be able to break through into Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. However, it was a pity that due to this Demonic Dragon Poison, they were unable to extract themselves from Mo Longzi's pursuit.

"The most important thing now is to get rid of this Demonic Dragon Poison. If Mo Longzi truly promoted into Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, I'm afraid that Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the rest will not be able to hold out for too long. We have to help them as fast as possible," muttered Mu Chen to himself.

Sitting on the floor, Shen Cangsheng said in a helpless manner, "This Demonic Dragon Poison can only be forcefully dispelled by a Sovereign Stage expert. We've no other way..."

Mu Chen slightly frowned, Sovereign Stage expert? If they could find a Sovereign Stage expert, where would that Mo Longzi dare to bounce around? He had definitely bet that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wouldn't dispatch any Sovereign Stage experts to deal with him. Therefore, he would dare to be that rampant and aggressive.

"Let me try. My Spiritual Energy is somewhat special. Let's see if it will have any effect," muttered Mu Chen. After speaking out, his Spiritual Energy started to fuse with the Nine Netherflame. This fire should have some restrictive effect against a sinister poison like the Demonic Dragon Poison.

Hearing his words, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong both nodded their heads. As of now, in such a desperate situation, they could only try anything presented to them.

Mu Chen arrived before Shen Cangsheng. With a clench of his fist, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from his fist, radiating a high temperature heat wave as it appeared.

Placing his palm over Shen Cangsheng's crown, Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy gushed into the former's body. Not the slightest bit of resistance was put up by the former, letting the latter's Spiritual Energy enter his body.

As Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy entered Shen Cangsheng's body, he could feel the messed-up state within the latter's body. That Demonic Dragon Poison was akin to several dragons, travelling around within his body. As the strands of poison travelled about, the Spiritual Energy along their paths was corroded and even dissipated. From the looks of this, the Spiritual Energy within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong would forever be unable to recover if nothing was done.

After muttering incomprehensibly to himself, Mu Chen controlled his Spiritual Energy to shoot forward, before wrapping around a strand of Demonic Dragon Poison. Black flames instantly

rose as Mu Chen prepared to refine and dispel it.

Chi. Chi.

Following the encirclement by the black flames, the Demonic Dragon Poison seemed to have discovered this danger, and it immediately emitted an ear-piercing sound. A black poisonous aura radiated from it, defending it from the black flames.

As the black flames rose and the poisonous aura extended out, the two started to intertwine. However, what made Mu Chen feel slightly depressed was that this Demonic Dragon Poison was very tenacious and resilient. Even when faced with the refinement of the Nine Netherflame, it would entrench itself until the very last of it dissipates. Although he was definitely able to dissipate it, bit by bit, this speed was too slow, much too slow.

A sigh shook through Mu Chen's heart, before withdrawing his Spiritual Energy. At this moment, his face started to turn dark. According to this speed, when he had completely refined and eradicated all of the Demonic Dragon Poison within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, a number of days might have passed.

However, at this very moment, they clearly didn't possess that kind of time.

Upon noticing Mu Chen's expression, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong gave a soft sigh. Although they truly didn't hold much hope about this, all in all, they felt slightly disappointed.

Mu Chen started to faintly wrinkle his forehead. Although the Nine Netherflames were able to refine and eradicate the Demonic Dragon Poison, it clearly didn't possess enough strength. If he had even greater and more powerful flames, he might be able to rapidly deal with the Demonic Dragon Poison.

However, where would he be able to obtain a flame that was more powerful than the Nine Netherflames?

As Mu Chen started to sink deep into his thoughts, a quiet and stifling atmosphere started to envelop the mountain cave, causing others to find it harder to breath.

“An even stronger flame…”

Mu Chen muttered those words to himself. After quite a while, a flash of insight furiously appeared within his head. A flame that’s stronger than the Nine Netherflame?

After successfully transforming, doesn’t the flames of the Nine Netherbird also evolve? From the Nine Netherflame, to the Undying Flame?

A flash of brilliance erupted in Mu Chen’s eyes, before faintly narrowing them. In the next moment, his mind started to enter his Universe Bracelet, finding the Nine Netherbird who had transformed into a giant egg after successfully passing through her tribulation.

Within the Universe bracelet, Mu Chen quickly found the giant egg that was in a mysterious black colour. Faint purplish runic patterns sparkled on its surface, while a strong consciousness radiated from it.

Mu Chen’s mind quietly started to call out to the giant egg. He didn’t possess the qualifications to control the Undying Fire. Therefore, he could only hope for Nine Nether, who’s undergoing her transformation to be able to hear his summons, and give a strand of Undying Fire to him…

“Nine Nether…hurry…”

As he continued to urge her, Mu Chen muttered to himself within his heart.

…

As Mu Chen attempted to retrieve some Undying Fire to help refine the Demonic Dragon Poison for Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, something was happening somewhere else within the

depths of the Western Desolate Territory.

The earth here showed signs of collapse, and gigantic fissures extended out from the ground, while all the mountain peaks had shattered and collapsed.

Bang!

On a shattered mountain peak, a figure shot down. He sent a fist down to explode the giant rocks that littered the floor, before extending his palm into the deep pit, retrieving a figure drenched in blood.

Sending an apathetic gaze towards Lin Zheng, who had fainted from his heavy injuries, Mo Longzi carried him over his shoulder, before turning around and walking to another direction.

“I should deal with the second one now…”

# Chapter 365 – Curing Poison

Within the quiet mountain cave, Mu Chen tightly shut his eyes as his mind continued to call out. Nine Nether had entered a dormant state during her transformation, making him totally unable to communicate with her. Thus, he could only attempt this kind of summoning to see if he could get just a little bit of a result from it.

Although this method was slightly stupid, as of now, this was the only thing that Mu Chen could do. If not, by the time he had used the Nine Netherflame to refine the Demonic Dragon Poison within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mo Longzi might have long dealt with Lin Zheng and the rest.

Seeing Mu Chen sinking deep into his consciousness, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong didn't dare to make a single noise in fear of disturbing the former. Although the expressions displayed on their faces were still alright, due to the Demonic Dragon Poison within their bodies, they were feeling somewhat fretful and impatient within their hearts. If Mu Chen could really find a way to quickly refine and eradicate the Demonic Dragon Poison within their bodies, that would be truly good news to the two of them.

Although they didn't dare to raise their hopes too much over the success rate of this, having hope was still better than none...

As time slowly went by, cold sweat started to surface on Mu Chen's forehead, since his emotions started to turn impatient and irritated. From the start till now, his summons were still not getting any replies.

"At this time, you can't let go of this connection, Nine Nether!" shouted Mu Chen impatiently within his heart.

Within the Universe Bracelet, the giant black egg started to faintly tremble at this moment, before the golden purplish runic patterns started to appear on its surface.

Discovering this activity happening to the giant egg, Mu Chen instantly felt elated.

As the golden purplish runic patterns grew increasingly dense, slivers of flames seemingly fluttered out from them. Those flames weren't of the colour black, but appeared purplish in colour.

Gently floating and fluttering around, they appeared to be weak and easily extinguishable. Nevertheless, they gave people a mysterious sensation of being eternal, and immortal.

Undying Flames!

Unconcealable ecstasy erupted within Mu Chen's heart as his eyes abruptly snapped open. With a slight clench of his hand, a clump of purplish flames appeared within his palm.

Creak! Creak!

As the clump of purplish flames appeared, the space around it started to distort. Indescribable fluctuations started to radiate from it, causing the Spiritual Energy in the surroundings to turn scorching hot, making the entire mountain cave seem like an oven.

As Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stared at this tiny clump of purplish flames, a shiver went up both of their spines. They were able to sense the frightening power contained within that tiny and small clump of flames.

"What flame is this?" Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong looked at each other, with shock and astonishment erupting in both of their eyes.

"Hu."

As if a heavy weight had been lifted off his shoulders, Mu Chen breathed out a sigh in relief. Although this clump of flame was extremely small, it was much, much more powerful than the Nine Netherflames. After all, these two were simply not on the same level.

With the Undying Flames, wanting to refine and eradicate the Demonic Dragon Poison within the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong should be very simple now.

“I’m beginning. There shouldn’t be a problem now,” said Mu Chen as he turned to look and smile at Shen Cangsheng.

Shen Cangsheng firmly nodded his head, his gaze turning solemn.

Mu Chen took a deep breath of air. With a point of his finger, the clump of purplish flames fluttered out, before starting to slowly spread out. Transforming into something like a fiery membrane, it enveloped Shen Cangsheng within it.

Whoosh!

Just as the fiery membrane took shape, Shen Cangsheng’s skin instantly turned boiling hot. As beads of perspiration flowed continuously out, they instantly transformed into nothingness. Shen Cangsheng soon started to clench his teeth, obviously enduring the immense amount of pain caused towards him.

“Endure a bit,” said Mu Chen. Although this Undying Flame wasn’t that strong, he was completely unable to control it. Therefore, he didn’t dare to let it enter Shen Chansheng’s body. If not, once it lost control, Shen Cangsheng might end up turning into a pile of ash.

Clenching his teeth, Shen Cangsheng nodded his head. As his body trembled, green veins squirmed about on his skin akin to snakes, appearing extremely frightening when seen.

Faint flames fluttered around the surface of the fiery membrane. Under the scorchingly-high temperature, the black blotches on the surface of Shen Cangsheng’s skin appeared to start boiling. In the next moment, to Mu Chen’s surprise and elation, a black poisonous aura was starting to slowly be forced out from Shen Cangsheng’s body by the scorchingly-high heat.

Argh!

As Shen Cangsheng furiously clenched his teeth, a low beastial roar escaped from his throat. At this moment, his eyes had already turned scarlet red. As more and more of the black poisonous aura permeated out of him, the poisonous blotches on his skin started to slowly shrink.

This torture continued for approximately ten minutes, before the poisonous blotches on his skin were completely forced out.

With a move of Mu Chen's palm, the purplish fiery membrane instantly withdrew, transforming back into the tiny clump of flames fluttering on his finger. Merely, it appeared somewhat dimmer, with some of it obviously being consumed earlier.

As the fiery membrane returned, Shen Cangsheng's originally dim eyes seemingly turned brilliant in an instant. The Spiritual Energy of the surroundings churned and surged, gushing into his body like an endless stream, causing the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his body to grow rapidly stronger.

After losing the inhibition of the Demonic Dragon Poison, his strength had started to quickly recover.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen breathed another sigh of relief, before turning his gaze towards Li Xuantong, who was feeling slightly emotional as of now. With a smile, he said, "It's your turn."

Li Xuantong nodded his head, before closing his eyes shut, in preparation for the incoming pain and torture.

As Li Xuantong's poisoned state was worse off than Shen Cangsheng, the time needed to eradicate all of the poison from him took nearly 20 minutes, before finally forcing the last bit of poisonous aura from his body.

Hu.

As the poisonous aura left his body, Li Xuantong quickly recovered the sharpness of his expression. Completely turning a

blind eye towards the intense pain radiating out from his skin, he immediately proceeded to enter a training state, wanting to recover his Spiritual Energy at the shortest time possible.

Seeing the Demonic Dragon Poison being completely eradicated from the bodies of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mu Chen could finally feel completely relaxed. Wiping away the cold sweat present of his forehead, the Undying Flame on his fingertip appeared exceedingly weak.

Staring at that Undying Flame, a thought faintly shook his heart. This flame was exceedingly formidable. Although it was just a tiny wisp, it was undeniably a divine tool to him.

“Let’s try to see if it can be kept in my body.”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Although other people would definitely not dare to attempt what he was about to do, he was different from the others. His Spiritual Energy had fused with the Nine Netherflame. Although there was a disparity between the Nine NetherFlame to the Undying Flame, it was, after all, the next evolution of the Nine NetherFlame. Thinking along that line, this wisp of Undying Flame shouldn’t start rejecting him.

After thinking until this point, Mu Chen didn’t continue hesitating anymore. With a thought, black flaming Spiritual Energy encased the wisp of Undying Flame, before absorbing it into his body.

Just as Mu Chen had thought, upon entering his body, this wisp of Undying Flame didn’t show any signs of rebelling, making him feel extremely elated. With extreme care, he slowly kept it within his Spiritual Sea.

Within his Spiritual Sea, his Divine Soul’s little mouth took in a deep breath, sucking the Spiritual Energy within its body. As the tiny wisp of Undying Flame fluttered in, it descended on the little hand of the Divine Soul. Not a single rejection appeared between the two.

Upon seeing this, unable to hold it in, Mu Chen started to laugh with happiness. He never thought that he would actually be able to pick up a benefit here...

As his eyes sprung open, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong were still in the process of recovering. With a move of his gaze, he looked towards the air in front of him, where a clump of black liquid was present, squirming and wriggling about.

That was the Demonic Dragon Poison forced out from Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong's body.

Mu Chen stared at the Demonic Dragon Poison. A faint flash appeared in his gaze as he extended his palm. At this moment, his index finger started slowly to turn jet black, before black lightning started to faintly surface on it.

The Divine Black Lightning Poison was sealed within this middle finger. That was a poisonous aura that was even more overbearing than the Demonic Dragon Poison.

"If I seal that Demonic Dragon Poison within here, it should become even more terrifying, right?" Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed. In the next moment, without much hesitation, he summoned that clump of Demonic Dragon Poison over, before extending his slim finger towards it.

Although the Demonic Dragon Poison had caused extreme misery to Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, Mu Chen truly didn't have the slightest bit of dread towards it. Not to mention the Undying Flame within his body, even this Divine Black Lightning Poison would be able to suppress it. This Demonic Dragon Poison truly wouldn't be able to flip the sky within his body.

Black rays of brilliance sparkled on Mu Chen's finger, before proceeding to directly absorb the Demonic Dragon Poison within it. Instantly, the jet black colour of his finger become an even deep and abstruse colour, causing even a shiver to travel through his body when he looked at it.

Mu Chen took a closer look, before gently tapping forward with that finger. At this moment, he was able to see an extremely faint black brilliance flashing out. After that, he noticed a hole that wasn't large, but whose end was unable to been seen, appearing on the hard and sturdy mountain cliff in front of him. The fringes of that hole were covered in corrosive fluctuations.

A rather astonishing corrosive effect.

Shock flashed past Mu Chen's eyes, before causing the colour of that finger to regain normalcy after a thought. It's fortunate that the Northern Sea Dragon had arranged a seal on his finger. If not, he truly wouldn't be able to subdue such a frightening poison.

Bang!

As Mu Chen's finger regained its normalcy, boundless Spiritual Energy abruptly erupted from within the mountain cave. The entire mountain peak seemed to intensely shudder at this moment, causing gigantic cracks to spread out and extend.

Mu Chen cast his gaze over, only to see Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong opening their eyes within the centre of the boundless Spiritual Energy. Brilliant rays of vitality that seemed substantial flashed and sparkled within their eyes.

At this moment, they had finally recovered their strength completely. Furthermore, they seemed to have even some improvement. Looked like this event had become yet another training experience for the two of them.

"Congratulations," said Mu Chen with a smile.

As Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong stood up in succession, boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from them. The vigor within their eyes was once again present. The 1st and 2nd rank of the Heavenly Rankings that showed disdain towards the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had clearly returned.

As the two felt the boundless energy within their bodies, elation

and ecstasy erupted within their eyes, before proceeding to look at Mu Chen.

“Thanks for this matter.”

With a smile, both of them said their thanks to Mu Chen. Although their tones appeared casual, with one being unable to detect much gratitude in them, Mu Chen knew that if he were meet with any difficulty in the future, the two of them would definitely come and help him, even if it meant risking their lives.

Mu Chen sent a smile back in return, without saying any type of courteous words. After all, there wasn’t any point in saying those, since that would, in turn, make him appear unreasonable and arrogant.

“Since you two have recovered, we should make a move, right?” said Mu Chen as he looked out of the mountain cave. At this time, he didn’t know exactly what Lin Zheng and the rest were doing.

Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong firmly nodded their heads in reply, while chilling intent erupted from their eyes.

Mo Longzi, this time, let us continue fighting for another round!

# Chapter 366 – Gathering

This was a gigantic basin, whose air was filled with dense spiritual mist. Within it, one could seemingly not be able to see the sky and the horizon. At this moment, extremely erratic Spiritual Energy fluctuations swept out from the centre of this basin, causing the spiritual mist in the surrounding air to be shakened to the point of being unable to spread closer.

Bang! Bang!

Spiritual Energy gushed out from the centre of the basin, while a Sword Aura howled about. Under this confrontation, the ground below started to collapse as gigantic fissures continued to endlessly form and extend out.

If one were to turn their gaze towards the origin of this spectacle, one would see two figures flashing about like lightning as they crossed hands with each other. Every single exchange would cause astonishingly loud sounds to ring out.

If one looked closely, one would notice that one of the figures was slim and graceful, with a set of black clothes wrapped around her slender and exquisite figure. A long black sword carried along an exceptionally swift and sharp Sword Aura that swept out.

This familiar figure was, naturally, Luo Li.

However, at this moment, her current opponent wasn't Wu Jia, whom she had fought against previously. The figure opposite of her was a skinny male that appeared akin to a bag of bones. This person, was Mu Gu, the 3rd Rank on the Bounty Board's rankings.

The surface of that Mu Gu's body sparkled in a lustrous white awe as if it was radiating from his bones. At this moment, his seemingly thin and withered body appear to contain an extremely tyrannical power.

A bone knife was wielded in his hands as he fought against Luo

Li. The two would erupt with rather astonishing attacks as they clashed, causing even the surrounding air to get split apart by them.

A number of figures were present behind Mu Gu as they stood on a mountain peak. Observing the battle taking place before them, astonishment was present in their eyes. Obviously, they never expected that Mu Gu would actually be obstructed by such a beautiful young girl.

“Haha. I never imagined that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would produce yet another outstanding student. This youth is able to possess such strength at such an age. She truly isn’t simple,” said a male carrying a long spear with a smile as he looked in astonishment at the battle before him.

“Teng Long, I’m afraid that even you will not be able to deal with this girl,” said Wu Jia with a faint smile. From his previous exchange with Luo Li, he could determine that the latter truly was extremely formidable. He had arranged numerous Spiritual Arrays against her, which were dealt with by the latter in a single slash.

Although his words didn’t sound nice, the male by the name of Teng Long shrugged his shoulders in indifference. Although Wu Jia was only rank fifth on the Bounty Board’s rankings, he was, after all, a Fifth grade Spiritual Array Master. If one were to truly talk about the degree of difficulty to be subdued, from a certain perspective, he was even more formidable than those two vicious people of Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, Mu Gu and Gui Xiong.

“I’ve heard that Mao Jiang and Chi Yu were defeated?”

Wu Jia nodding his head, replying, “They were defeated by a student named Mu Chen. Furthermore, that person should have gone to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.”

“What’s the use of saving them? The two were poisoned by the Demonic Dragon Poison. If they were rescued now, they would

only be a burden for them." On the other side, a male covered in tiger-head marks spoke out while curling his lip.

This person was Wang Hu, 9th Rank on the Bounty Board's rankings.

"Mo Longzi isn't back yet? Looks like defeating Lin Zheng and the other two should consume quite a bit of his time." Teng Long spoke out while looking at his surroundings.

"The three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall are also exceptional characters. Even Mo Longzi would have to consume some time in taking them down one by one."

With a faint smile, Wu Jia replied, "However, that's alright. Regardless of how they struggle, the result would still be the same. The only thing we have to do is stare at those people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. When Mo Longzi appears, be prepared to keep all of them here."

As his spoke those words, his sinister gaze stared towards the distance like a venomous snake. At a mountain peak situated there, there were similarly a few standing figures, which were He Yao, Su Xuan and the rest of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy members.

At this moment, however, their faces were brimming with graveness. They were similarly able to sense that Wu Jia and his group were currently staring at them. Having already crossed hands with that group of people, He Yao and the rest knew that every one of them in that group was vicious and cruel. If Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals were around, they would not feel afraid. However, as of now, everyone had already gathered, but Lin Zheng and the other two had yet to appear. Causing them to feel some unease.

Previously, their enemies had already decided to capture all of them. The only thing that prevented them from doing so was Luo Li's arrival and her subsequent obstruction of the extremely strong

Mu Gu, causing their enemies to quietly restrain their actions. However, they knew that this non-aggression couldn't last for too long, as they couldn't rely on a sole person, Luo Li, to obstruct the group of vicious people staring down at them.

"Exactly where did that fellow Mu Chen go?"

In the current situation, they urgently needed people of strength comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase to shock and intimidate their opponents. Within their group of people, other than Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals, the only people at that level would be Mu Chen and Luo Li.

However, Luo Li was now being tangled up by Mu Gu, and Mu Chen had yet to show himself since the start...

Thinking about that, Su Xuan and the rest all shook their heads in helplessness. Upon entering the Western Desolate Territory, they'd been immediately separated. Therefore, they were unclear as to where, exactly, Mu Chen had gone off to.

"There's a possibility that something might have happened to Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals," said an expert from the Punishment Hall with a slightly dark expression. Clenching his teeth, he continued, "That Mo Longzi has yet to show himself since the beginning. I suspect that he's gone off to deal with them."

Hearing his words, Su Xuan and the rest turned silent. Naturally, they had also thought about this. However, their current situation was already far from good. As of now, the only thing they could do was to hope that Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals would be able to deal with Mo Longzi. In that way, the current situation would be completely reversed by them.

That was what they were clearly waiting for now.

Bang!

While both side were quietly waiting for the results between Mo

Longzi and Lin Zheng and the other two, the confrontation happening in the sky became increasingly intense. Boundless Sword Aura howled, appearing akin to a river of Sword Aura, forcing Mu Gu to retreat.

As the Sword Aura swept across his body, it brought along bloodied wounds. Nevertheless, Mu Gu didn't seem to care the slightest bit. The skin that was slashed apart revealed dense white bones beneath. Sparking with luster and light, they appeared to be as strong and resilient as steel.

This Mu Gu had clearly cultivated some Body Refining Divine Art that was exceedingly strong; therefore, being able to endure the engulfment of Luo Li's Sword Aura.

"Truly a troublesome girl to deal with..." Looking at his blood-covered body, Mu Gu started to laugh out. His laughing sounds were withered and hoarse, sounding exceedingly ear-piercing.

"Anyways, why are you enduring so persistently? I know that you guys are waiting for the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. However, they would definitely be dealt with by Mo Longzi. When he arrives, your ends would already be guaranteed."

Facing his cawing, Luo Li didn't gave the slightest bit of care. Instead, her attacks grew increasingly cruel and vicious as boundless Sword Aura hid the skies and covered the earth while sweeping towards Mu Gu.

Whoosh!

Just as Luo Li had increased the ferocity of her attacks, whooshing sounds seemed to ring over from the distance.

A shiver instantly shook through everyone's minds, before instantly turning their gazes towards the origin of the sound. There, layers of dense spiritual mist were being scattered apart, before a figure swiftly shot out from within. Like a fiend, he

appeared in the sky of the basin.

That figure was covered in black robes, with a black sword on his back. An apathetic expression hung on his face, while a malevolent black dragon mark surfaced on the centre of his forehead, causing a baleful and tyrannical aura to appear around his body.

That's Mo Longzi!

Upon spotting the demon god-like figure, the bodies of Su Xuan and the rest turned cold and clammy, and when they looked behind Mo Longzi, their faces instantly turned deathly pale.

Three figures covered in blood floated at the back of Mo Longzi. Their auras were depressed, while appearing to be in an injury-induced coma.

"It's Senior Lin Zheng and the other two!"

Their entire bodies turned cold and clammy, while uncontrollable shivers shook through their spines. With eyes overwhelmed with shock and horror, they stared at the three people behind Mo Longzi.

Mo Longzi was actually that frightening? Even Lin Zheng and the other two were unable to defeat him?

"Haha. You've finally dealt with them?" On the other mountain peak, upon spotting the three figures behind Mo Longzi's back, the corner of Gui Xiong's eyes jumped and twitched, before speaking out with a hearty laugh.

Mo Longzi nodded his head with indifference. With a wave of his hands, he flung the heavily-injured Lin Zheng and the other two towards the mountain peak, before replying in an apathetic voice, "They're worthy of being the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall. Even I had to waste some time to deal with them one by one."

Turning his gaze towards the battle between Luo Li and Mu Gu, Mo Longzi faintly narrowed his eyes, while a sliver of shock

flashed within them. “Other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, as well as the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall, I neer thought that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would produce yet another outstanding student.”

“There’s one more brat that has some ability. He broke through my obstruction and blocked off my Spiritual Array sensors that I’ve arranged within the spiritual mist. He should have headed off to save Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong,” replied Wu Jia with a faint smile.

“He’s gone to save them?” muttered Mo Longzi with faint jump of his eyebrows, before proceeding to laugh apathetically out loud, “Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong are close to becoming handicapped by my Demonic Dragon Poison. Even if they’re saved, they’ll turn into burdens. Let him do what he wants. We just have to capture him later, and that’s about it.”

While giving his reply, he shot a look at Su Xuan and their group standing in the distance. After judging their relative strength, he withdrew his gaze without giving the slightest care about them. Till this stage, the entire situation was basically within the palm of his hands.

“Gui Xiong, help Mu Gu finish her off. Don’t waste any more time,” said Mo Longzi with a wave of his hand.

“Haha, using a numerical advantage to bully others doesn’t seem too good, right?”

Gui Xiong spoke out with a beaming smile. However, regardless of what words he said, he had already pulled his giant axe out. With a stomp, his figure shot out. In the next instant, with strength that could cleave a mountain, and the incomparably overbearing awe of an axe, roared crazily as it cleaved towards Luo Li.

Bang!

Seeing this, the bone blade in Mu Gu's hand furiously slashed out, sending a gigantic hundred foot long glowing arced blade violently chopping down towards Luo Li.

Two Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase were attacking simultaneously, causing the resulting attack to drastically rise in might.

As their attacks headed towards Luo Li, her beautiful face turned grave. Grasping her longsword tightly with her jade-like hand, the river of Sword Aura swept out, protecting her entire body.

Whoosh!

As the attacks collided, the sky appeared to instantaneously split apart. With a shutter, Luo Li's delicate figure shot back, descending on a mountain peak. A flushed shadow flashed across her beautiful face while the blood and Spiritual Energy within her body churned and rolled over.

Seeing the spectacle before them, the faces of Su Xuan and the group changed. Their enemies had decided to start finishing them off?

With their strength, how could they contend against their enemies? After all, even the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall had been captured...

Ice cold intent erupted from Luo Li's exquisite and beautiful face. As her cheeks extended out to form seemingly perfect contours, her jade-like hand tightly grasped the Luo Shen Sword. As it lightly trembled, ripples started to fluctuate on its surface, while an obscure fluctuation rippled on the surface, as if something frightening was able to break its seal.

However, just as the ripples on the body of her sword increased in frequency, swift and sharp whooshing sounds rang out from within the spiritual mist from a distance.

The sudden whooshing sounds caused a shiver through

everyone’s minds.

As the spiritual mist scattered apart, three glowing figures shot out from within like lightning, before descending on a mountain peak. Boundless Spiritual Energy rushed to the skies, even a sneer resounded across the basin.

“The people on the Bounty Board’s rankings truly are shameless maggots. Don’t you guys feel ashamed of yourselves for besieging a girl?”

Instantly, upon hearing that voice, elation erupted from the faces of Su Xuan and the group.

Mu Chen!

That fellow had finally arrived!

# Chapter 367 – Short Exchange

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy swept out as three figures appeared on top of the mountain peak. As the astonishing Spiritual Energy fluctuations rippled out, they converged to form enormous waves of pressure. Akin to black clouds looming over in the sky, they pressed down on Mu Gui and and his group in the distance.

“That’s Mu Chen! Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong too!”

Surprise and elation instantly erupted on the faces of Su Xuan and the rest as they noticed the three figures that appeared. Originally, they had assumed that Mu Chen would appear by himself. However, they never imagined that he had actually found Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong.

“Shen Cangsheng? Li Xuantong? They’ve recovered their strength?!”

On the other side, upon noticing Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who were erupting within astonishingly imposing auras, while appearing even stronger than before, the faces of Mu Gui, Gui Xiong and the rest could not help changing.

Weren’t those two fellows poisoned by the Demonic Dragon Poison? How could they have recovered their strength? That poison required a Sovereign Stage expert to dispel it! Could it be that they had a Sovereign Stage expert to secretly helping them?

As their emotions fluctuated, all of them became vigilant and on guard. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly sent a Sovereign Stage expert, they were simply unable to even run away.

“Although the Demonic Dragon Poison requires a Sovereign Stage expert to dispel it. If one has some special methods, one could similarly dispel that poison. If the Sovereign Stage experts of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy dared to take action, the

Sovereigns of our Demonic Dragon Palace would have naturally noticed it." Mo Longzi spoke out in an indifferent tone, causing the shock within the hearts of their group to stabilize and calm down.

His apathetic eyes turned towards Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and Mu Chen. Filled with a sinister shadow, he spoke towards them, "However, you guys being able to dispel the Demonic Dragon Poison truly exceeded my expectations."

Sending a similarly sinister gaze that locked onto Mo Longzi, Shen Cangsheng replied with a sneer, "I'm afraid that there're a lot things that exceeds your expectations."

As a chilling intent erupted from his eyes, Shen Cangsheng took a step forward, causing the Spiritual Energy erupting from him to drastically rise. The degree of Spiritual Energy was much more tyrannical than a normal Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase, it had already come endlessly close to a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

He was about to make a breakthrough!

Feeling the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating out of him, the faces of Mu Gui and their group slightly changed. Truly worthy of being Shen Cangsheng. After suffering such a huge blow, not only did he not feel depressed, he was even able to improve his strength. If they were to allow him to rush back from here, he might truly be able to make a breakthrough to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Staring at Shen Cangsheng, Mo Longzi's eyes had also narrowed. This Shen Cangsheng truly was very formidable. Him being able to promote to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase was completely due to the cultivation method of their Demonic Dragon Palace, coupled with him obtaining a vast amount of resources. However, this was considered a kind of overdraft, as cultivating like that had lead to a drop in his life span. Therefore, he could be considered to have paid an extremely great price. However, before his eyes, time

after time, this Shen Cangsheng was still able to catch up to him, leading to some frustration and fury to rise within his heart.

“Although you’re about to break through, you’ve still not reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Just like that, you still dare to fight with me?!” roared Mo Longzi in a dark voice.

“Whether or not I’ll win will be known when we fight!”

Shen Cangsheng replied in a joyful manner, no fear present in his voice, and disdain showing in his eyes. He was the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Rankings, and represented the prestige of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy! Therefore, regardless of the opponent he was faced against, he would absolutely not cower or retreat!

He knew that the Mo Longzi before him was a formidable foe. However, that was not a reason for him to feel fear and dread.

As dark glint flashed within Mo Longzi’s eyes, he gave a wave of his sleeve. In the next instant, Lin Zheng and the other two, who had fainted due to their serious injuries, started to float up from the mountain peak into the air.

Seeing this happen, the faces of Mu Chen, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong all sunk. Lin Zheng and the other two had already landed in the hands of their enemies?

“Haha. Although the two of you were rescued, they have landed in my hands,” said Mo Longzi with a ruminating smile. “Do you think this exchange is worth it?”

“I also have two of your people in my hands.” replied Mu Chen with a sneer. With a bend of his palm, a suction force erupted out before two figures came shooting over from a place not far away. Those two figures were Chi Yu and Mao Jiang.

Shooting an indifferent glare at the two, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile and said, “They’re just wastes, nothing of any importance. Do whatever you want with them.”

His words and tone appeared exceedingly emotionless, not showing the slightest bit of care towards his previous companions. Perhaps, he didn't treat Chi Yu and Mao Jiang as his companions in the first place.

"Haha. Worthy of Mo Longzi. Looks like they were just tools being used by you, just like those people behind you, right?" replied Mu Chen with a faint smile.

Instantly, Mu Gui, Gui Xiong and the rest started to slightly wrinkle their foreheads. They had also discovered the provocation within Mu Chen's words. However, it was hard to avoid feeling a little uncomfortable within their hearts.

"You sharp-tongued brat!"

Mo Longzi looked with a slightly chilling glare towards Mu Chen, before replying with dark voice, "You're that fellow that had killed Bai Xuan and was almost killed by me? Never though that you're actually able to reach such a stage in less than a year. If I'd known earlier, I would have killed you then and there."

He had already guessed that the Demonic Dragon Poison within Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had more or less been dealt with by Mu Chen. If not, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong wouldn't have taken that long if they were to had any ways to deal with the poison.

"It's a pity that you won't get a second chance," replied Mu Chen with a smile.

"As if a Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase has the qualifications to say such stuff in front of me. Why do I need something like a chance? With your strength, I can kill all I want!" A sinister shadow flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes as he took a step forward. In an instant, only a remnant shadow remained at his original position as he appeared right behind Mu Chen. Sending a palm patting forward, greyish-black Spiritual Energy swept out, transforming into a roaring demonic dragon as it rumbled towards

Mu Chen.

Humm!

However, just as that roaring demonic dragon rumbled out, a long spear sparkling with golden light created a golden streak of light as it swept out. Shattering the air apart, it pierced right towards that demonic dragon.

“I really want to see how you plan to kill other people in front of me!” Spiritual Energy erupted out from Shen Cangsheng’s body without the slightest bit of restraint, while a chilling intent gushed out from his eyes. With a shudder of his golden long spear, spear shadows that blotted the sky, hiding the skies and covered the earth as they enveloped Mo Longzi’s body, aiming towards his vitals.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

Flicking his ten fingers, greyish-black streaks of light explosively shot out from Mo Longzi, shattering all of the spear shadows that had come over to engulf him, while his body fluttered and retreated.

“Mo Longzi, do you dare to fight a duel with me?!”

Fighting intent erupted from Shen Cangsheng’s eyes as his figure explosively rushed forward. During this period of time, he had pursued Mo Longzi in an attempt to kill him. However, the latter had kept on avoiding and running away since the beginning, causing his guard to gradually slip away. At the end, the latter had used the means of an encirclement to cause injury to him and Li Xuantong. Between the two of them, they never had a true duel from the beginning till now. This was something that Shen Cangsheng was extremely unresigned about; he thirsted for a true fight with the latter.

In an extremely fast speed, he chased after to Mo Longzi in a flash. Golden light erupted from his eyes as he hoisted his golden

spear up, while bright and resplendent rays of brilliance, akin to that of gold, shot out from the body of his spear.

Humm!

The golden long spear shook, seemingly erupting with astonishing humming noises. Fighting intent erupted from it as boundless Spiritual Energy transformed into a golden lotus at the front of the golden long spear. On the surface of the golden lotus, extremely swift and fierce spear shadows swept from it.

“War God’s Golden Lotus!”

As fighting intent erupted from Shen Cangsheng’s eyes, his spear pierced straight out. In the next instant, the golden lotus at the tip of his spear crazily revolved. Like a golden scorching sun, it caused golden light to illuminate everywhere, piercing through the dense spiritual mist in the surroundings.

That spear from Shen Cangsheng was akin to the horns hanging from a deer, akin to being made by the heavens. The formidable might of it caused even space to start distorting, showing its extreme power.

Upon seeing this spectacle, the faces of Mu Gui and his group in the distance slightly changed. If it was one of them, they might simply not be able to receive such a spear. This Shen Cangsheng was truly worthy of of being the most outstanding Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student within his batch.

Looking at the golden light that had erupted out, a chilling glint surfaced within Mo Longzi’s eyes. With a cold snort, he clasped his palms together, before abruptly separating them. At this instant, a black dragon mark seemed to have surfaced within one of his palms.

“Demonic Dragon Heaven Shattering Palm!”

He sent his palm patting out, causing churning Spiritual Energy to gush out. In the next instant, a gigantic demonic dragon a

hundred feet long roared as it exited. Carrying along dragon roars that shook the sky, it brought along astonishing might as it smashed head-on against the golden lotus.

Bang!

As the two powerful attacks collided, everyone heard an enormous sound ring out. Boundless rays of brilliance swept out, with the golden and black light filling their halves in the horizon.

Boom!

Devastating Spiritual Energy storms swept out, forcing the two figures in the sky to retreat upon making contact, shooting back from where they started.

Heavily hammering his golden spear down, Shen Cangsheng forcefully stabilised himself, before looking gravely at the distance. The one present there was Mo Longzi, whom had fluttered and landed, his hands behind his back as he stood upright.

Such a tyrannical spear from him was still unable to deal with Mo Longzi. The latter's strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase truly was very strong.

"Prepare to move."

Shen Cangsheng spoke out in a deep voice. As of now, although they had lost Lin Zheng and the other two Great Generals, their lineup wasn't considered weaker than their opponents. As long as they could entangle Mo Longzi, with Mu Chen's, Li Xuantong's and Luo Li's strength, they were capable of defeating their enemies.

However, just as they were prepared to revolve their Spiritual Energy and take action, Mo Longzi gave a soft laugh. With a wave of his sleeve, Lin Zheng and the other two landed in front of Mu Gui and his group, before being grabbed by them.

"Shen Cangsheng, since you want to truly fight with me that much, I'll give you a chance. However..."

Mo Longzi's tone changed, before continuing with a smile. "It'll not be in this place. I'll wait for you all at the Western Desolated City outside of the Western Desolated Territory. If you want to save them, come to the Western Desolated City!"

"Haha, I want to kill all the so-called prideful sons of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in front of the countless people present there! At that time, the name of me, Mo Longzi, will resound across the Northern Heavens Continent!"

"I'll let everyone know that the students taught by your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will always be inferior to our Demonic Dragon Palace!"

With a hearty chuckle, Mo Longzi fluttered as he retreated, with his group of vicious people rapidly following suit.

"If you want to save these three people, I'll wait for you at the Western Desolated City. Noon, Tomorrow!"

"Where do you think you're going?!"

Shen Cangsheng gave a cold roar. With a move of his body, he explosively rushed forward to give pursuit.

Upon seeing this, the person at the rear, Wu Jia gave a faint smile. Clapping his hands together, spiritual mist instantly swept forth from the surrounding area, completely covering the basin up. As this happened, their figures rapidly disappeared within the spiritual mist.

As their figures disappeared, the only thing remaining of them was Mo Longzi's sinister laughter, resounding back at Shen Cangsheng and the group.

"Shen Cangsheng, if you don't want to see the bodies of those three being hung on the Western Desolated City, be prepared to keep our appointment!"

# Chapter 368 – Western Desolated City

Western Desolated City, the biggest city within the entire Western Desolated Territory. Countless experts from various places that come to the depths of the Western Desolated Territory to cultivate would stop and rest at this place, as well as to prepare various cultivation-related items. Therefore, the vitality and liveliness was the greatest within the entire Western Desolated Territory.

This city was under the jurisdiction of the West Pole Hall. This Western Pole was a peak level influence within the Northern Heavens Continent, and was extremely powerful. Speaking about it, it could be considered an Overlord of a region within the Northern Heavens Continent.

Therefore, although there were crouching tigers and hidden dragons mixed within the Western Desolated City, cases of people causing trouble over here were extremely rare. After all, with such an enormously powerful influence like the West Pole Hall sitting there, it wasn't an existence that was good to provoke.

However, today, the Western Desolated City had become somewhat more lively due to some external influences, with some perceptive people being able to sense the surge and roars within the darkness.

The origin of all of these was due to Mo Longzi and his group of people.

After arriving at the Western Desolated City, they immediately occupied the most eye-catching location within the city, the Western Desolated Terrace.

The Western Desolated Terrace sat at the highest point within the Western Desolated Territory. Standing tall within the city like a mountain, it overlooked the entire city. In most cases, only when major events happened within the Western Desolated City would

the Western Desolate Terrace be opened. However, this time, Mo Longzi and his group of people had directly occupied it.

This group of uninvited guests had undeniably roused the attention of countless people within the entire city.

This was especially true after seeing three gigantic metal cages being hoisted up in the Western Desolated Terrace, which even caused doubt and bewilderment. However, their doubts were quickly erased, before shock and astonishment swept through the entire Western Desolated City.

That's because the three people locked within those metal cages were, unexpectedly, the three Great Generals of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!

With Mo Longzi's ties with the Demonic Dragon Palace also being exposed, countless people felt shock erupt within their hearts. This was a gigantic influence that had almost become the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Continent in the past. Even after suffering a decrease in fame and reputation after the astonishing war with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that year and hiding away for all these years, people knew that this previous Overlord still possessed frightening power that would make people quake in fear.

Facing a previous Overlord like the Demonic Dragon Palace, even those peak influences within the Northern Heavens Continent, like the West Pole Hall, would still have much dread and fear within them, and would not dare to provoke it too much.

From the looks of it, Mo Longzi had actually captured the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall; moreover, he had used such a method to hang them within the Western Desolated Terrace. Was this a demonstration of might towards the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Those were the two greatest influences within the Northern Heavens Continent. Were they planning to launch a war again?

This might become a big matter that would rock and shake the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

As the entire Western Desolated City was still reeling in shock, Mo Longzi didn't show any other signs of movement. He continued sitting within the Western Desolated Terrace, with an indifferent expression within his eyes, as if he was waiting for something.

At his back, Mu Gu, Gui Xiong, Wu Jia and the rest were standing while facing the wind. Baleful auras radiated from them, pervading the air and letting everyone know their viciousness and strength.

Their entire group of seven people all possessed strength at the realm of Heavenly Completion Stage. Placed within any influences, they would be classified as elites. Although there were numerous experts within the Western Desolated Territory, the amount of people whose strengths were able to exceed that of Mo Longzi and his group of people were rather small.

"Worthy of being the genius that came from the Demonic Dragon Palace. Being able to reach Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase at such an age...that's truly frightening." After sensing the astonishing fluctuations radiating from Mo Longzi, some people within the city couldn't help sighing in admiration.

"Exactly. Furthermore, it's said that this Mo Longzi's not considered the peak within the younger generation in the Demonic Dragon Palace. That Mo Xingtian's the truly terrifying one. However, that person rarely takes action. Previously, the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was completely suppressed by the fame and reputation of Mo Xingtian."

"Looks like the ability of the Demonic Dragon Palace to nurture people isn't weaker than the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"You can't say words like that. The Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy is, after all, an academy, and doesn't have the cruelty imbued in it like the Demonic Dragon Palace. Furthermore, students have a limited amount of time to cultivate within an academy. Compared to the Demonic Dragon Palace, which has unlimited amounts of resources under its belt, and had geniuses nurtured painstakingly from birth, there will always be a slight disparity. Therefore, if you look from afar, the Demonic Dragon Palace isn't comparable to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, after so many years, there are quite a few graduates from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that had already stepped into the Sovereign Stage, and had spread their great names within the Great Thousand World."

"That's true. Every peak influence would concentrate and pool their resources together, thus allowing for outstanding people to continuously appear. Not only Mo Xingtian from the Demonic Dragon Palace, Xi Qinghai from the West Pole Hall, Xia Yingran from the Nine Summers Merchant Group, Su Buxiu from the Heavenly Furnace Saint Sect. These people are the truly outstanding ones within the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent."

"……"

The entire city was rifled with whispers of discussion, causing an extreme surge of liveliness within the city. Furthermore, everyone also felt curious towards Mo Longzi's appearance, which clearly portrayed him waiting for something…

Although they were not too clear of the exact situation, those perceptive ones were faintly able to discern the feeling of the calm before a storm. A storm was about to brew within this Western Desolated City.

Uproars and some unrest were felt due to the actions of Mo Longzi and his group. Within a large hall in the centre of the Western Desolated City, a male in green robes stood with his hands behind his back. Raising his head, he looked towards the scene

present within the Western Desolated Terrance as a faint smile surfaced on his face.

“Ah, Mo Longzi… you’ve actually come to the place of our West Pole Hall to raise a storm.”

A figure respectfully spoke out behind the male in green robes, “ Young Hallmaster, do we have to do anything? I’ve already investigated that the three people Mo Longzi had caught were the three Great Generals of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Punishment Hall. Furthermore, Mo Longzi should be planning to wait for the reinforcements coming from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, before completely killing all of them. In that way, his reputation and prestige within the Demonic Dragon Palace would greatly increase, with the possibly of even getting rewards for his actions.”

“This Mo Longzi looks like he has already promoted into Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. If not, he wouldn’t be able to deal with the three Great Generals of the Punishment Hall.”

The male in green robes gave a faint smile, before gesturing with his hand and saying, “The matter between the Demonic Dragon Palace and the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn’t concern nor involve us. Just treat it as if we can’t see it. If they want to fight it out, let them be.”

“Yes!”

The gaze of the green-robed male condensed on the figure within the Western Desolated Terrace that was radiating a baleful aura. This Mo Longzi truly was formidable. However, compared to Mo Xingtian, he was still weaker by a sliver.

“Mo Xingtian…”

Thinking about that person, the eyes of the green-robed male couldn’t help faintly narrowing as he started to count the dates. Isn’t the “Holy Spiritual Mountain” that will cause extreme waves

of shock to propagate throughout the Northern Heavens Continent about to open? This time, that Mo Xingtian might become one of my enemies.

…

The atmosphere within the Western Desolated City had grown increasingly scorching hot as time went by. As news of this matter continued to spread out, anyone that had heard of it had all rushed over the Western Desolated City.

The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the Demonic Dragon Palace were, after all, too famous within the Northern Heavens Continent. Any small matter involving them would be able to shake the entire continent.

Sitting within the Western Desolated Terrace, Mo Longzi looked at the gigantic city flourishing with vitality below him, while an apathetic smile surfaced on his face. If he defeated all of the elite students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy under the attention of this many people, wouldn't the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy be completely squashed to the ground?

At that time, his status within the Demonic Dragon Palace would greatly rise as a result, with the possibility of even threatening that Mo Xingtian. At that time, the regards he would get wouldn't be weaker than that of the latter.

Thinking about that person, a dark shadow flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes. He possessed absolutely shocking talent. Originally, he should've been the most outstanding person within the Demonic Dragon Palace. However, who would have thought that Mo Xingtian had firmly sat on top of his head for the last couple of years? Within the Demonic Dragon Palace, anyone who talked about him would place him behind Mo Xingtian. This was, in reality, quite a blow towards Mo Longzi, whose inner arrogance had reached an an incomparable level.

"Hmph! When this matter's over, my reputation will greatly

increase. At that time, there will definitely be my quota for the upcoming opening of the 'Holy Spiritual Mountain'. During that time, if I obtained the 'Holy Spiritual Baptism', I'll be able to obtain a good foundation in my path to promoting into Sovereign Stage. Then, Mo Xingtian will be squashed beneath my feet!"

"At that moment, only I, Mo Longzi, will truly become the strongest within the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent!"

A sinister expression surfaced on Mo Longzi's face as his ambitiousness erupted within his eyes. Raising his head, he looked towards the far distance out of the Western Desolated City, while a cold smirk rose from the corner of his mouth.

"Shen Cangsheng, you guys must definitely come. If not, all of my plans will be for naught...My reputation still needs you people to become stepping stones for me!"

...

Time quickly elapsed within the Western Desolated City, whose atmosphere had turned scorching hot. Whooshing sounds continuously resounded outside of the city as people descended within the city, akin to a swarm of locusts.

Countless gazes endlessly swept towards the Western Desolated Terrance, while simultaneously looking out of the city. All of them really wanted to know; facing this solemn waiting by Mo Longzi and his lineup, exactly which of younger generations within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would dare to come here and save their people?

As countless people raised their heads and looked around, the scorching sun across the horizon inched slowly up, before finally reaching its peak in the sky.

At this moment, a faint movement was seen within Mo Longzi's indifferent expression, before slowly raising his head. A sneer

surfaced within his eyes as he looked towards to horizon, where hurried whooshing sounds suddenly rang out from there.

Those sounds appeared extremely rapid and furious, causing everyone's gaze to immediately turn their way. As they looked over, ten figures shot over akin to lightning bolts, before transforming into rainbow-like streaks, appearing in the air above the city.

As the glow around them faded, their figures surfaced for everyone to see.

A youth stood stanch and straight at the front-most position of the group. A gold-coloured long spear grasped within his hand, boundless Spiritual Energy radiated out. A disdainful look was present within his eyes, while everyone could sense the exceptionally imposing aura radiating from him.

"That's the First Rank on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng!"

Similar to Mo Longzi, Shen Cangsheng possessed quite a bit of reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Upon his arrival, he was immediately recognised, causing waves of outcry to ring out within the city.

"The person beside him should be the Second Rank on the Heavenly Rankings, Li Xuantong..."

"Tsk. Tsk. He Yao, Su Xuan, Xu Huang...they're all in the top ten ranks within the Heavenly Rankings. Their lineup is quite strong."

"Who are those two people? Why do they look younger than Shen Cangsheng and the rest of their group? Their age, seems to be Freshmen, right? They actually dared to come to this place? Could it be that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy doesn't have anymore people that it could be sent here?"

"Oh, a very interesting show is coming. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings against their Bounty

Board's Rankings..."

As the group of people in the sky had just revealed themselves, waves of clamoring noises instantly sprung up within the entire city as countless whispers of discussion erupted out.

However, not the slightest bit of care was given by the people in the sky as they cast their sinister gazes towards Mo Longzi and his group of people within the Western Desolated Terrace.

"Haha...you've finally arrived."

Under their sinister gazes, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile. Standing up, he gave an apathetic look towards Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen and their group.

"Congratulations for being punctual. If you guys want to rescue those three from my hands today, that would have to depend on how much ability you guys exactly have!"

# Chapter 369 – Four-Sided Confrontation

Due to the appearance of the group of people in the sky, the atmosphere within the entire Western Desolated City had flared up and boiled. Curiosity was present within the eyes of countless people, since all of them clearly wanted to know exactly who would be able to achieve the final victory in this head-on confrontation between the two lineups.

This battle would undeniably concern various aspects and faces of the Demonic Dragon Palace, as well as the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Both sides had Sovereigns present within them. Due to various reason, they weren't able to directly intervene and fight, and could only observe this confrontation in the dark. Therefore, the lineups present before everyone's eyes were the sharpest and greatest elite forces that both sides could send out.

As Shen Cangsheng stood haughtily within the sky, his gaze locked onto Mo Longzi, which was akin to the edge of a blade. Shifting slightly up, he noticed the three gigantic metal cages that had the unconscious and heavily injured Lin Zheng, Zhou Qingshan and Gu Tianyan within them.

Upon seeing the three who were caged up, the faces of Mu Chen and the group turned frosty, while killing intent erupted from their eyes.

All of them had respect and even some reverence for Lin Zheng and the other two; after all, they were their Senior Brothers. Currently, they were being humiliated in such a manner, causing them the be rather infuriated.

"Haha. Looks like you all are very furious."

Mo Longzi looked at the expressions filled with killing intent present on the faces of Shen Cangsheng, Mu Chen and the group. Showing an apathetic smile, he said, "You guys should be rejoicing

that I've locked them up here. If not, I'd have finished them off long ago."

"I'll return what you did to them a hundred times over." Gripping the long spear tightly in his hand, green veins started to squirm and wriggle on his hand. Speaking out, Shen Cangsheng's low and deep voice was brimming with malevolence.

"I do know that you truly have that capability," replied Mo Longzi with a beaming smile.

"So what the hell are you going to do now? Send out any move you've got, and we'll return all of them back to you!" roared Shen Cangsheng in a cold voice. In any case, Lin Zheng and the other two were in the hands of their enemies. Thus, they were still a little worried about acting against Mo Longzi in fear of him hurting Lin Zheng and the other two. After all, they weren't able to be that merciless and completely show the slightest bit of detachment to their compatriots like Mo Longzi.

"Worthy of being the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings. You truly have charisma and the guts to say such words."

Mo Longzi laughed while sticking his thumb out. A sinister shadow filled his face as a smile appeared from a split of his mouth, revealing two rows of glistening white teeth, before speaking out, "It's really very simple. We've set up four arenas over here. You just have send four people up to fight and that's it."

"However, there's no such thing as a fair matchup. Once these four people have dealt with their opponents, they have to right to decide to withdraw, or continue cooperating with others..."

"As for the type of fight, it's naturally to the death."

Speaking till the very end, the smile at the corners of Mo Longzi's mouth turned cruel and malevolent.

Mu Chen faintly narrowed his eyes when he heard Mo Longzi words. From what the latter had said, he had made it clear that he

wanted solo fights, which allowed him to quickly finish off his opponent before helping the rest. In that way, he wouldn't have to worry about being besieged by Mu Chen's group. After all, he would face against Shen Cangsheng, who had promoted to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. If there was another person attacking him, it would become two against one. In that situation, even he would no longer have an advantage.

Previously, the reason why he could deal with Lin Zheng and the other two was due to breaking them one by one. If not, when the three of them joined hands to fight with him, it would be nigh impossible to completely capture all of them.

As this moment, Mo Longzi was also banking on this same concept. He assumed that in a solo fight, no one from Mu Chen's side would be able to be his match. In that way, he would quickly achieve victory and turn around to deal with the rest.

This truly would help him avoid being besieged. However, that would have to depend on whether Mo Longzi was truly able to achieve victory so quickly and get his hands free to attack other people.

From the looks of it, he possessed extremely great confidence in his own strength.

The eyes of Shen Cangsheng and the group faintly flashed, having clearly seen through Mo Longzi's intention. In the current situation, they had the numerical advantage, and swarming around Mo Longzi and his group had some advantages for them. However, since Lin Zheng and the other two were within the latter's hands, they didn't have much of a say.

"Look's like the confidence you have for yourself is truly quite big."

Taking a step out, the golden long spear within Shen Cangsheng's hands erupted with a bright and resplendent golden light. As the golden light blossomed and filled the skies, Shen

Cangsheng appeared akin to a god of war. Chilling intent filled his eyes as he stared at Mo Longzi while saying, “We’ll accept this fight!”

“Haha, that’s some courage!”

Mo Longzi roared with laughter that had endless chilling intent present in his voice. With a wave of his hand, he fluttered as he retreated back. Shooting across the sky, three other people from his group followed suit and shot out into the sky. In all, they occupied four separate regions within the sky.

The three people that shot out was Mu Gu, 3rd rank on the Bounty Board, Gui Xiong, 4th rank and the 5th rank Wu Jia.

Of these three people, two of them possessed strength at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, while the remaining one was a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, an even more mysterious and hard person to deal with. All fourth of them weren’t people that Mu Chen and his group could easily deal with.

Haha! Who dares to fight with me?!”

Gui Xiong flung his head up, roaring with laughter as astonishingly baleful aura pervaded his entire body. Looking malevolently towards Mu Chen and his group , the giant axe within his hand appeared as if he wanted to split up and shatter the heavens and earth.

Mu Gu also had an apathetic smile on his face, while his skinny and withered body sparkled. The bones underneath his skin became faintly discernable under his skin. Locking his gaze onto Luo Li, it appeared as if the fight that occurred yesterday had yet to reach a desirable level of satisfaction.

Compared to the other three, Wu Jia was the most quiet and solemn. Calmly sitting in the sky, the air around his body faintly rippled, while mysterious fluctuations radiated from him.

This person appeared akin to a venomous snake. He made no

noise and no detectable movements, but was able to give a death-inducing attack within the silence.

Within the largest hall in the Western Desolated City, the green-robed male was also looking with interest at the confrontation happening in the skies above the city.

“Haha. Young Hallmaster. Looks like that Mo Longzi’s truly crafty. His strength should be considered the strongest amongst the individual people on the two sides. In a solo fight, the only person that can put up a fight against him might only be Shen Cangsheng. However, the latter will not be able to last for long. Therefore, once he finishes his fight, this entire situation can be considered to be over,” explained a figure standing behind the green-robed male.

Hearing those words, the green-robed male smiled and nodded his head while saying, “However, if the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy achieves victory in the other three fights before that happens, things would be different...”

“That Mu Gu and Gui Xiong are both at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase. Within the group of people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, only Li Xuantong can cope with one of them, with him even being able to obtain the superiority. However, even though that’s the case, he doesn’t have any way to quickly finish off either one of the formers.”

“Other than Li Xuantong and Shen Cangsheng, the other people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are on the weaker side. Of those remaining, the strongest is that He Yao. However, he’s only at Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase... There’s a beautiful girl, and she is someone that is slightly unable to be seen through by me. Perhaps, she might become the variable in this confrontation...”

Sweeping his gaze across Mu Chen and his group in the distance, the gaze of the green-robed male finally landed on Mu Chen’s body

for an instant, while a mysterious shadow flashed within his eyes. Faintly wrinkling his forehead, he proceeded to say, “Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase...could it be that the current batch of students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are that useless?”

“Furthermore...”

Turning his gaze towards Wu Jia, who was still being exceptionally quiet in another region of the sky, the green-robed male spoke out in a soft voice, “Of these four people, other than Mo Longzi, Wu Jia, who’s the lowest rank amongst them, is the person that’ll be the most difficult to deal with...”

Hearing his words, the figure standing behind him nodded his head. Although he didn’t have widespread fame, when a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master truly takes action, he might even be harder to deal with than Mu Gu and Gui Xiong.

Mo Longzi and the three people were all dreadful opponents. Although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy held a minute advantage in numerical superiority, they were deprived of that in this fight...

From the looks of it, they were truly forced to the end of their roads.

“Haha, what’s the matter? Have you decided already?” asked Mo Longzi with a grin as he looked towards Shen Cangsheng and his group.

All the eyes within the Western Desolated City had also looked towards Shen Cangsheng and this group. Everyone was very curiously as to how Shen Cangsheng and his group would split up in this present situation.

“I’ll deal with Mo Longzi.” Shen Cangsheng said in a low and deep voice. Within their group, his strength was considered the strongest. The duty of stalling and obstructing Mo Longzi could

only be accomplished by him.

With regards to this point, there was no one that objected to this.

“Let me deal with that Mu Gu. I’ll finish him off as fast as possible.” Luo Li said as her jade-like hand tightly gripped her scabbard, while a coldness erupted from within her glass-like eyes.

“So, that Wu Jia’s left for me?” Li Xuantong suddenly asked.

Although Wu Jia was ranked the lowest amongst the four, everyone knew how much frightening capability a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master possessed. Once he was able to arrange his Spiritual Arrays, even people at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase would end up in extremely miserable states in front of him.

Li Xuantong knew about this point, and, therefore, chose to take responsibility and deal with Wu Jia.

Shen Cangsheng looked towards Mu Chen. At this moment, the latter’s eyes appeared to slightly narrow as he started at Wu Jia, who was sitting quietly in the sky. Gently shaking his head, Mu Chen said, “Let me deal with him. I’m also a Spiritual Array Master.”

Mu Chen didn’t doubt Li Xuantong’s strength. However, that Wu Jia’s actions and methods were strange and bizarre. Even if the latter was unable to finish off Li Xuantong in an instant, once he completed the arrangements of his Spiritual Arrays, wanting to tie Li Xuantong down would become an extremely easy task to accomplish.

The goal of their enemies was to buy enough time for Mo Longzi. Therefore, the group from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could absolutely not be tied down by the other three, and needed to finish the other three fights as fast as possible.

Therefore, on the aspect of dealing with him, Mu Chen, who was also a Spiritual Array Master, was the most ideal choice.

Hearing Mu Chen’s words, Li Xuantong remained silent for a

short period of time, before gently nodding his head while replying, “You be careful.”

“Since we’ve already decided, let’s move out!”

Tightly clenching the Golden Lotus War God Spear within his hands, with a low roar, Shen Cangsheng suddenly shot out, appearing right in front of Mo Longzi.

Facing this matchup, everyone had clearly guessed it happening. Thus, everyone didn’t feel surprised about this.

Li Xuantong had also shot out, and appeared before Gu Xiong.

Clenching her longsword with her jade-like hand, Luo Li spoke towards Mu Chen in a soft voice, “ Be careful. I’ll finish him off as fast as possible and come help you.”

As she spoke those words, she shot out, her goal being the distant Mu Gu.

Her actions instant caused some clamoring noises to erupt within the Western Desolated City. The beautiful young girl that appeared as if she was a Freshman had actually become the opponent of Mu Gu, ranked third on the Bounty Board.

Across the horizon, only Wu Jia was left being unselected. At this moment, his face still had the same indifferent expression on it as his eyes sparkled, akin to a venomous snake tasting the air with its tongue.

Everyone stared at the remaining group of people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Faced against that lowest rank, yet being harder to deal with than Mu Gu and Gui Xiong, Wu Jia, exactly who amongst them would take action?

Within the great hall, the green-robed male was similarly filled with interest as he stared towards the sky.

Under the countless guessing gazes within the Western Desolated City, Mu Chen slowly exhaled a clump of white air, before walking

out of the group.

Ah!

Countless gazes immediately converged together. After identifying Mu Chen's strength, incredulous expressions immediately erupted on each and every one of their faces.

This youth, whose strength had only reached Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, actually dared to take action?

Within the great hall, the green-robed male had also faintly gawked, before he faintly narrowed his eyes. Gently tapping his finger, he muttered to himself, "A Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase against a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master...Haha. This truly is interesting...I don't know if he's looking to die, or if he truly has some astonishing abilities or methods..."

# Chapter 370 – Spiritual Array Competition with Wu Jia

As Mu Chen walked out, not only did it cause countless clamoring noises to ring out within the Western Desolated City, it also caused the expression of the indifferent-looking Wu Jia to faintly tremble as his dark and cold gaze locked onto the former.

Nevertheless, Mu Chen cast a blind eye towards all those gazes. Shooting out, he slowly came to a stop a couple hundred metres away from Wu Jia. Cupping his fists, he spoke out with a faint smile. “Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Freshman Mu Chen, came forward to seek guidance.”

“This fellow…truly is only a Freshman…” Mu Chen’s words instantly caused shocked and astonished cries to ring out, before everyone turned and looked at each other. This batch of Freshmen from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was actually that tyrannical? Having just arrived in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they actually dared to act so rampant in the Northern Heavens Continent?

Wu Jia stared straight at Mu Chen, while not much of the so-called disdain and contempt was present. He knew that the so-called “Freshman” before him was, in fact, not a simple character. If not, Chi Yu and Mao Jiong wouldn’t have lost their lives in his hands.

The reason why the current situation would progress to such a stage was all due to the youth in front of him that had appeared out of thin air… If not for him suddenly breaking through their blockade to find Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, and even dispelling the Demonic Dragon Poison within their bodies, the people locked within those metal cages might not only be Lin Zheng and the other two.

If not for this youth, this four-on-four battle would not exist, and

the only thing they needed to do was to carefreely enjoy the process of stomping on the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Shooting a deep look at Mu Chen, Spiritual Energy started to ripple around Wu Jia's body, appearing as if he was standing within a surging lake.

Bang!

In the far distance, boundless Spiritual Energy erupted akin to a storm from Shen Cangsheng. Hoisting his Golden Lotus War God Spear, a chilling glow erupted from his eyes as he shot forward. Shadow spears blotted the skies, bringing forth frightening Spiritual Energy as they surrounded Mo Longzi.

"Haha, Shen Cangsheng! Since you truly want to have a fight with me, I'll grant your wish today!"

Mo Longzi raised his head with a long arrogant roar filled with laughter. Greyish-black Spiritual Energy erupted from him, before transforming into demonic dragons, twisting and twining around him. At this moment, the sky started to turn dark and gloomy.

"This time, I'll let you know, the true disparity between us!"

With a clench of his fist, two demonic dragons condensed within his hand. Grabbing them, he shot out, clashing head-on against the incoming Shen Cangsheng without a hint of retreat.

Bang! Bang!

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy swept out as the two men confronted each other in the air. Under the shock waves produced by their attacks, even the cloud layers in the sky were completely separated.

Their fight was astonishing and soul-stirring.

After seeing Shen Cangsheng commencing the fight, Luo Li and Li Xuantong didn't continue hesitating and swiftly rushed out

towards their respective enemies. Upon launching their attacks, they didn't do any such thing as warming up, since what they needed the most now was time.

They needed to defeat their enemies before Shen Cangsheng fell!

Only when that happened would they be able to reverse the situation before them around.

Bang!

Within the endless confines of the horizon, three fights instantly took place. Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled and swept out, seemingly filling the entire sky above the Western Desolated City, causing shocked expressions to fill the faces of countless people.

Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. People of this strength could already be considered as top ranking within the entire Northern Heavens Continent. There were even some powers and influences who were completely led by characters of this level of strength. Therefore, the confrontation happening in the sky was clearly extremely spectacular to the people in the city.

Feeling the Spiritual Energy storms sweeping out within the horizon, Mu Chen took a deep breath of air, before his black eyes gradually turned frosty. Locking his gaze on Wu Jia, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames rose from his body.

Humm.

An apathetic expression still remained on Wu Jia's face and not a single word was spoken from him. With a formation of a hand seal, the air around his body started to churn and flare up. As rays of brilliance radiated out, two gigantic Spiritual Arrays immediately surfaced behind his back.

Obviously, he had long-made his preparations.

Those two gigantic Spiritual Arrays started to rapidly revolve as they radiated with overbearing Spiritual Energy fluctuations. Those were two Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. However, they were

arranged by Wu Jia with a casual move of his hands. Him being a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master was not an unjustified reputation.

Bang!

As the two Spiritual Arrays revolved, boundless Spiritual Energy condensed forth, before transforming into two large Spiritual Energy-made hands. Shooting out explosively, they immediately patted furiously down towards Mu Chen's location.

Mu Chen raised his head, his black pupils reflecting the image of the large Spiritual Energy-made hands head towards him. With the formation of a hand seal, rays of brilliance erupted out from the air behind him, before two gigantic Spiritual Arrays surfaced.

As the two Spiritual Arrays appeared behind Mu Chen, clamoring noises seemed to ring out within the entire city.

"That Mu Chen's actually a Spiritual Array Master?!"

"No wonder why he was so confident. However, he can't possibly have greater attainments than Wu Jia on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays, right?"

"That's hard to say. Since this time, it's a battle between Spiritual Array Masters, there'll be quite a good show to watch..."

"..."

Mu Chen didn't give the slightest care towards those countless whispers of discussions floating in the air. With a flick of his finger, golden lights erupted from the two Spiritual Arrays at his back. In the next instant, two gigantic golden teeth wheels explosively shot out. Carving two lines across the horizon, they smashed head-on against the descending giant Spiritual Energy-made hands.

Boom!

Spiritual Energy instantly exploded outwards as both attacks gradually dissolved in mutual destruction.

“So, you’re a Spiritual Array Master.”

Traces of emotion finally appeared within Wu Jia’s eyes.

In response, Mu Chen sent a smile back at him, brimming with chilling intent. In the next instant, he shot out, boundless Spiritual Energy was condensing on his fists. Being a Spiritual Array Master, he naturally knew that one should never give too much time for a Spiritual Array Master to prepare when faced against one.

Seeing Mu Chen rushing straight towards him, Wu Jia had similarly sensed the intent of the former. Displaying a faint smile, he spoke out, “If you’re thinking you’re able to impede a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master just like that, you’re truly looking down on me.”

With a wave of his sleeve, more Spiritual Arrays started taking form behind him, with all of them being Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays. However, they were all arranged by a casual flick of his hand.

Bang! Bang!

Erratic Spiritual Energy erupted from each of the Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays, before violently rumbling towards Mu Chen. However, facing against attacks of such degrees, not the slightest change was present on his expression before black lightning arcs appeared on his body, completely eradicating the incoming attacks.

Bang! Bang!

Wu Jia’s attacks exploded on Mu Chen’s body as he pierced through the barrage of erratic Spiritual Energy without a single scratch appearing on his body. Within the toughness of his fleshly body, those Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays simply weren't a threat to him.

“You’ve actually refined your physique…”

Looking at Mu Chen, who had shot through all the attacks he had launched, Wu Jia’s eyes slightly narrowed, before shaking his head. Looks like Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays simply weren’t able to

obstruct that Mu Chen the slightest bit.

With a clench of his hand, a golden metallic ball covered in abstruse runic patterns appeared within. With a flick, it shot out, before a thousand rays of brilliance blossomed from it.

Unexpectedly, that was a Spiritual Array Seed!

As the golden light erupted, it instantly transformed into an incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array. Spiritual Energy crazily condensed within the centre of the Spiritual Array, before finally transforming into a gigantic golden clock. Upon its complete formation, humming sounds instantly enveloped Mu Chen within it.

Radiating with powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations, this golden clock was much more tyrannical that those Rank 4 Spiritual Arrays that were arranged earlier by him. Obviously, this golden clock had already encroached on the boundary of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

Just as the golden clock had enveloped Mu Chen, intense vibrations started to spread through it. Clear and melodious ringing sounds continued to spread from it, while getting more hurried one after the other. Obviously, Mu Chen, who was within it, was rapidly breaking the array that had surrounded him.

An indifferent expression still filled Wu Jia's face as his figure fluttered back. His hands came together to form a seal, and Spiritual Seals started to sparkle akin to stars in a night sky as they condensed at an astonishing speed.

This number had already arrived in the hundreds. Obviously, this Wu Jia had finally prepared to use his true killing move.

Whoosh!

Hundreds of Spiritual Seals explosively shot out, before fusing together in the air. In the next instant, everyone within the city was able to something akin to a storm taking shape within this

stretch of the sky.

Grave expressions filled the faces of countless people within the entire city as they were able to feel how formidable the Spiritual Array being arranged by Wu Jia this time was. This was definitely considered to be a rather strong one within all the Rank 5 Spiritual Arrays.

Boom! Boom!

Crack after crack started to appear and extend over the surface of the giant golden clock. With a finally bang, an arm encased in black lightning shot out from within. In the next instant, the entire giant clock completely exploded apart, transforming into glowing dots that blotted sky, before dissipating into thin air.

After smashing the giant golden clock apart, Mu Chen raised his head to look at the sky, which had already turned dim and dark. A gigantic Spiritual Array, approximately a few hundred feet wide, was spread across the sky, enveloping around him.

“This Spiritual Array…”

As Mu Chen looked at the gigantic Spiritual Array, his eyes faintly contracted, since he could discover some dangerous fluctuations emanating from it.

As boundless Spiritual Energy howled from it, the stretch of the sky that Mu Chen was in appeared as if it had been disconnected from the world. At the same time, all of the gazes within the entire city were blocked from seeing it. In everyone’s eyes, they could only see an incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array, while being unable to see the two people that were confronting each other within it.

However, although they were unable to see within it, everyone one knew that it would be the determining moment for the victor and loser when either one of the two walked out from the Spiritual Array.

As the Spiritual Energy light screen surrounded him, Mu Chen looked into the distance, to the place where Wu Jia was seated in the air. The latter's chest was faintly heaving, while a grave expression filled his eyes. Obviously, arranging such a large array had led to quite a large consumption of his strength.

"Till this point in time, my Nine Layered Mountain and River Array has already trapped thirteen Heavenly Completion Stage experts within it to death..."

With malevolent and chilling intent like a venomous snake, Wu Jia stared at Mu Chen, while the smile present at the corner of his mouth appeared exceptionally eerie and sinister. Speaking out, he said, "You can be sufficiently proud of yourself for being able to force me to bring it out with your Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase..."

"However... your outcome will be no different from those thirteen people."

As his voice rang out, his hands abruptly came together to form a seal. In the next instant, the incomparably gigantic Spiritual Array erupted with dazzling brightness, transforming this place into something akin to a small world. Within the small world of the Spiritual Array were nine mountains glowing with golden light, appearing akin to nine divine mountains. Bright and resplendent golden brilliance slowly appeared as they radiated from the nine mountains.

At the same time, frightening Spiritual Energy pressure started to pervade out.

Seeing the nine mountains and feeling the incoming pressure, Mu Chen's expression started to slowly turn solemn.

# Chapter 371 – Nine Heavy Mountain Array

Bang! Rumble!

Nine gold-coloured divine mountains towered within this Spiritual Light world. Golden light gushed and flowed out of them, causing them to appear akin to the residences of gods, while radiating with Spiritual Energy pressure that caused people's hearts to tremble.

Mu Chen's expression turned grave, since the Spiritual Array that Wu Jia had arranged might be no weaker than the double lotus formation of his Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array. This Wu Jia really had some ability.

Far across the horizon, Wu Jia continued sending an indifferent gaze out towards Mu Chen. Within saying anymore words, he waved his sleeves, causing the nine gold-coloured divine mountains to instantly vibrate as a gold-coloured wave of air swept out from them.

Bang!

A gold-coloured divine mountain rushed to the skies. Carrying along a shadow that hid the skies and covered the earth, with an indescribably overbearing attitude, it brought along its golden glow as it pressed straight down towards Mu Chen.

The air under the gold-coloured divine mountain instantly exploded, while distortions appeared in the surrounding space.

Facing such an attack, even people whose strength had reached Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase might not dare to show to slightest bit of contempt.

As the gold-coloured divine mountain grew larger within Mu Chen's eyes, he exhaled a long breath of air. In the next instant, his gaze turned sharp and fierce. Tightly clenching his hands into fists, he sent a fist rumbling out.

Boundless Spiritual Energy transformed into a starry sky behind him as a white tiger condensed together, roaring towards the sky. Transforming into a streak of light, it accompanied Mu Chen's fist, howling through the sky as they violently slammed against the descending divine mountain.

Boom!

Incomparably erratic Spiritual Energy storms were instantly whipped up as they expanded out. Although the gold-coloured divine mountain was sent flying back, the white tiger was shattered apart by the its frightening power, transforming into glowing dots that blotted the sky.

Upon seeing this, a sneer appeared at the corner of Wu Jia's mouth. With a change of his hand seal, the divine mountains came howling out, radiating with astonishing pressure.

A frosty expression filled Mu Chen's eyes as three gigantic figures condensed once again in the starry sky behind him. However, this time, the imposing aura radiating from them had become much, much stronger. Shooting out, the three figures immediately proceeded to obstruct and resist the three incoming divine mountains.

Swish!

After blocking the divine mountains, Mu Chen shot out. Black lightning started to arc and dance around his body, while a black lightning mark started to surface on his chest.

Mono Rune Lightning Physique!

Mu Chen's speed dramatically increased, shooting straight under a divine mountain. Spiritual Energy burning with black flames explosively shot out from his body in the form of a streak of light. Tightly clenching his hand, his veins squirmed and wriggled on the top of his fist. In the next instant, his fist with lightning arcing and dancing around it, rumbled out, slamming head-on against the

bottom of the divine mountain.

Boom!

As his fist made contact, the sky within this stretch of the world seemed to intensely vibrate. Gigantic cracks started to suddenly extend rapidly from the point of impact of his fist. In a short span of a few breaths, they had completely covered the divine mountain!

Bang!

Under this single punch by Mu Chen, this lofty mountain that towered in the sky had completely shattered into pieces.

After shattering the divine mountain with a single punch, a shadow of a dragon surfaced on his body. In a flash, he retreated a couple hundred feet away, where a divine mountain had violently pressed down on the location he was previously at.

“You’ve some ability.”

Seeing Mu Chen destroying a divine mountain with a single punch, a cold glint flashed within Wu Jia’s eyes. This fellow seems to have cultivated a rather strong body-refinement Deity Tier Spiritual Art. If not, he wouldn’t have been able to destroy my divine mountain with his Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase strength.

“However, do you truly think that my Nine Heavy Mountain Array would be that simple?”

With a sneer, Wu Jia changed his hand seal. In the next instant, Mu Chen saw the golden divine mountain, which he had shattered into glowing bits that blotted the sky, started to condense together once again. Within a short span of a few breaths, a majestic divine mountain reappeared in his sight.

“My nine divine mountains will endlessly form. No matter how many of them you shatter, they’ll condense back again, all till you’ve exhausted your strength and emptied all of your Spiritual

Energy!” Bringing along ridiculement and contempt, Wu Jia’s cold voice resounded within this world.

Hearing his words, Mu Chen shot out once again. Transforming into a bolt of black lightning, he violent smashed against a divine mountain.

Bang!

Yet another divine mountain was forcibly destroyed by Mu Chen.

However, the glowing dots that filled the sky quickly converged together, before transforming back into the divine mountain, completely void of damage.

Seeing Mu Chen’s futile attempts, Wu Jia gave a soft smile, containing his ridiculement and contempt towards the former. This Mu Chen truly wasn’t going to give up. After being trapped within his Nine Heavy Mountain Array, regardless of how many methods the former possessed, regardless of how remarkable he was, Mu Chen would never be able to escape from here.

After destroying three divine mountains in rapid succession and saw them recondense, Mu Chen stopped continuing to waste his energy in doing pointless actions. With a sneer, he replied, “Although you have some ability, this is, after all, only a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. Furthermore, do you truly think that you’re Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master?”

The Nine Heavy Mountain Array truly was somewhat formidable. However, Mu Chen didn’t believe in what Wu Jia had said. A Spiritual Array of that degree was simply not something that Wu Jia, with his qualifications, could successfully arrange.

Furthermore, if what he said was true, it would have exceeded the boundaries of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array.

Raising his head, he looked towards the nine divine mountains that had encircled him. Golden light gushed and radiated out, causing them to appear as if they were cast from gold.

As his black pupils reflected the images of the divine mountains, his eyes sparkled with brilliance. After a moment, he muttered out in a soft voice, “Is it real, or is it fake?”

Hearing those soft words, Wu Jia’s eyes furiously contracted, before sending a dark stare towards Mu Chen. At this moment, dense killing intent erupted from his heart as he thought, This fellow truly isn’t easy.

“Of the nine divine mountains, only one should be real, right? After breaking that, your Spiritual Array shouldn’t have any more points worth commending, right?” Locking his gaze onto the dark-faced Wu Jia, Mu Chen spoke out with a faint smile.

“That’ll have to depend on whether you have the ability to do so.”

A faint shiver shook through Wu Jia’s heart, while his expression grew increasingly dark. Changing his hand seal, the nine divine mountains instantly revolved, causing golden light to blossom across the entire sky. The golden light concealed the nine divine mountains within, causing Mu Chen to be unable to see their tracks.

Bang! Bang!

Under the golden light, divine mountains came pressuring down one after another, attempting to squash Mu Chen to death.

Activating the Dragon Soaring Art, Mu Chen’s figure appeared akin to a dragon’s shadow, evading the divine mountains that were attempting to suppress him from above. For those attacks that weren’t dodgeable, a fist would fiercely rumble, causing anything that was in its path to smash and shatter apart.

“I have to find the real divine mountain.”

Looking at the bright and eye-blinding sea of golden light, this thought ran through Mu Chen’s mind. After faintly pondering about it, he started to slowly close his eyes.

Looking at Mu Chen, who had closed his eyes all of a sudden, a feeling of unease sprouted from Wu Jia's heart for some unknown reason.

...

Bang!

Across the horizon far away from the Western Desolated Territory, two figures with the most tyrannical Spiritual Energy fluctuations, were currently exchanging furious blows with one another. Wave after wave of Spiritual Energy shock waves swept out akin to hundred foot large waves, causing the countless gazes from the entire city to be tightly lock onto them.

This was the fighting ground between Shen Cangsheng and Mo Longzi.

Bang!

Bringing along overbearing intent, a golden stream shattered apart the horizon as it pierced out.

Roar!

As a dragon roar seemed to resound out, a demonic dragon howled as it appeared, its baleful aura pervading throughout the sky. Baring its fangs and brandishing its claws, it collided head-on against the golden stream.

A violent shudder seemed to spread across the sky as Spiritual Energy storms immediately followed suit.

The golden glowing figure was sent flying back as the golden long spear within Shen Cangsheng's hand heavily smashed the space below him, stabilising his body. At this moment, a few wounds had already appeared on his body. Obviously, the intense battle with Mo Longzi had resulted in him getting some light injuries.

In the front of him, greyish-black Spiritual Energy pervaded with a baleful aura expanded out. At this moment, the Spiritual Energy

appeared akin to a gigantic demonic dragon, with Mo Longzi floating in the air above it.

Looking apathetically at Shen Cangsheng, Mo Longzi slowly pulled out the black sword hoisted on his back. This sword was somewhat broad, while bloody patterns covered the entirety of its surface. With its dark and sinister colour, it appeared akin to being formed from countless amounts of blood.

“This ends here.”

Mo Longzi spoke out, his voice sounding exceptionally cold and detached. Shen Cangsheng’s tenacity and toughness had exceeded his expectations. Although he knew that the latter had already touched the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, if they had an opportunity to meet again, the latter would have already broken through. Furthermore, at that time, Mo Longzi would truly not have any assurance that he could grasp victory within his hands.

Against the Overlord of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Rankings, dread was similarly present within Mo Longzi’s heart. This kind of opponent would become a big cancerous tumor within his heart if he were to let him go.

Humm! Humm!

As Mo Longzi grasped the black heavy sword within his hands, a bloodthirsty humm seemed to ring out from the body of the sword. As this continued, one could seemingly hear a demonic dragon roaring across the heavens and earth.

Within the large hall in the city, upon seeing the black heavy sword in Mo Longzi’s hands, the eyes of the green-robed male slightly contracted as he muttered, “That’s the Dragon Breaking Sword of the Demonic Dragon Palace…”

Shen Cangsheng had similarly felt the extremely dangerous fluctuations radiating from it as his expression turned grave. Clenching the Golden Lotus War God Spear tightly within his

hands, Spiritual Energy gushed out of his body without the slightest restraint.

He knew that Mo Longzi had already planned to forsake everything to get rid of him.

Roar!

The black heavy sword rushed towards the sky as black rays of brilliance blossomed from it. Appearing akin to a demonic dragon that had broken the fetters of mortality, it proceeded to plant itself in the middle of the sky.

Mo Longzi's hands suddenly came together to form a seal as Spiritual Energy swelled and burst forth from his body. Like a thousand foot wide waterfall, it hid the skies and covered the earth as it rushed towards to sky, before completely being absorbed by the black heavy sword.

Roar!

As the heavy black sword continued absorbing Mo Longzi's Spiritual Energy, the greyish-black Spiritual Energy quickly condensed together, while layer after layer of dragon scales started surfacing on it. After a short span of a few breaths, the black heavy sword unexpectedly transformed into a genuine demonic dragon approximately a thousand feet long.

At this moment, Mo Longzi opened his gigantic blood-red eyes, with endless bloodthirsty intent pervaded within them. A baleful aura pervaded throughout the world, causing the surrounding temperature to drastically drop.

The demonic dragon sat in the sky, its gigantic body appeared icy-cold, as if it was cast in metal. Power and vigor radiated from it, appearing as if it could shatter the world apart. A ferocious beast of this level was enough to cause fear and terror in people on first sight.

That seemed like a genuine demonic dragon!

Looking at the exceptionally ferocious beast sitting in the sky, Shen Cangsheng's face turned slightly pale. Taking a deep breath, he tightly clenched his Golden Lotus War God Spear. At this moment, he absolutely could not retreat!

If he did, the other three battles would get implicated as a result.

"I'll have to risk it for this fight!"

Golden light burst forth and swept out from his body, pervading throughout the world.

At this moment, under the gigantic Spiritual Array that had replaced the sky, a shiver suddenly shook through Mu Chen, who was trapped within the Nine Heavy Mountain Array. Within the depths of his spirit, a single eye seemed to slowly open at this moment.

# Chapter 372 – Hearts Eye Breaks Spiritual Array

There was a mysterious eye that seemed to have opened from the depths of Mu Chen's spirit. Looking illusionary, and yet wasn't, looking real, and yet wasn't, while seemingly able to see through all the mist that veiled the world.

At this moment, Mu Chen's eyes slowly sprung open. However, at this moment, those jet-black pupils had transformed into transparent crystal-like appearances. Under those crystal-like eyes, everything in this world seemed to be able to be seen through.

Every change within the world in front of him was no longer that clear and distinct. The boundless Spiritual Energy was dissected as it appeared within his eyes, returning back into its most basic form as Spiritual Energy of the heavens and earth.

Looking at the nine divine mountains that were hidden within the eye-dazzling golden light world, the golden light present could no long mask Mu Chen's vision. Under his crystalline eyes, every single one of the nine divine mountains became transparent, with only the leftmost one still remaining clear and bright. Furthermore, countless glowing Spiritual Energy threads extended from it. These glowing threads were locked on to the other eight divine mountains, while mysterious fluctuations radiated from them.

This divine mountain was clearly different from the other eight.

"I've finally found you."

A faint smile curled from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth.

In the distance, sensing the change that happened to Mu Chen, Wu Jia shot a look over. Upon seeing the eyes of the former, which had turned crystalline, an intense shiver shook through his body as an incredulous expression broke apart the darkness present on his

face. In the end, he involuntarily cried out, “Heart’s Eye?!”

Shock and horror filled Wu Jia’s heart. Regardless of anything, he never imagined that the Mu Chen in front of him was actually able to comprehend the Heart’s Eye State! That was a rather high and deep status, and was the yearning dreams of countless Spiritual Array Masters, which naturally included him.

However, as if the Heart’s Eye State was that easy to comprehend. Countless Spiritual Array Masters have tried their utmost and exhausted all efforts only to fail and be unable to open that mysterious Heart’s Eye. However, this state had somehow appeared on the body of the youth in front of him.

The shock and mental blow from this revelation caused Wu Jia’s face to turn exceedingly ugly. He had flaunted himself as having absolute talent on the cultivation of Spiritual Arrays. However, he was totally refuted by the Mu Chen present before his eyes.

Swish!

While Wu Jia was reeling with shock in his heart, Mu Chen had already furiously shot out, rushing straight towards the genuine divine mountain.

As long as he could destroy that divine mountain, this giant array would naturally break apart!

Bang!

Seeing Mu Chen’s action, the expression on Wu Jia’s face contorted. Changing his hand seal, he hastily urged the other eight divine mountains to rush and suppress Mu Chen.

Clenching his hand, black light erupted from Mu Chen as a black pagoda surfaced. In the next instant, gales whipped up as it dramatically swelled, becoming over a thousand feet long as it sat within the sky.

Bang!

The Nine-Layered Pagoda shot forward and violently collided against the eight divine mountains. As it did so, four golden dragons roar out of its body, myriads of golden rays were radiating from them.

As the Nine-Layered Pagoda blocked the assault from the eight divine mountains, a dragon's shadow surfaced on Mu Chen's body. This dragon's shadow appeared much more corporeal than before. In a supportive state, it carried Mu Chen as he instantly passed through the air, appearing right below the ninth divine mountain.

Stomping his feet, Mu Chen rushed upwards akin to a great roc. Black lightning crazily arced and danced across his body as he clenched his hand and formed a fist. At this moment, endless brilliance flashed within his crystalline eyes.

Bang!

His fist, encased with black lightning and boundless Spiritual Energy, violently rumbled out, before smashing directly against the bottom of the divine mountain.

"Break!"

A furious roar resounded across the world akin to a clap of thunder as black lightning spewed out. Gigantic cracks instantly extended out from the location where Mu Chen's fist struck as intense vibrations shook the majestic divine mountain. As the cracks extended, they finally covered the entire mountain.

At this moment, Wu Jia's face violently contorted.

Roar!

The malevolent and sinister demonic dragon sat within the sky across the horizon. The fiendish aura radiating from it made it appear as if it was a genuine demonic dragon from the ancient antiquity, causing the world the tremble from its presence.

The faces of countless experts within the Western Desolated City changed as a result as they thought, This Mo Longzi is actually

strong to such a degree.

At this moment, the eyes of the green-robed male in the large hall faintly contracted as a result.

“Shen Cangsheng, this farce will end right here!”

Standing arrogantly below the demonic dragon, Mo Longzi looked down towards Shen Cangsheng, while a cruel sneer surfaced at the corner of his mouth. Extending his finger out, he gave a tap towards towards Shen Cangsheng in the distance below.

Roar!

Raising its head to give a long roar, the demonic dragon turned into a black bolt of lightning as it swooped down in a flash. Under the terrifying rush, the space around it started to distort, with the air also exploding apart due to its force, while the Spiritual Energy of the world all scattered away.

This rushing force was sufficient to crush a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert into dust!

At this moment, the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest, who were observing the fight happening in the sky, all turned pale. Obviously, all of them had sensed the terrifying degree of Mo Longzi’s attack.

Raising his head, Shen Cangsheng looked towards the scene of the demonic dragon diving towards him. As the hands that held his Golden Lotus War God Spear faintly shivered, rampant and fanatical fighting intent erupted from his eyes.

Taking a step forward, a low roar seemed to ring out from his throat as bright and resplendent golden light erupted from his body, causing him to appear incomparably dazzling. With a shake of his golden spear, it pierced forward in an extremely slow manner.

Bang!

Creases seemed to appear in the space before it as a shadow of a golden spear hundreds of feet long surfaced behind Shen Cangsheng.

“Punishment Enforcer Deity Tier Spiritual Art, Punishment Enforcer’s Spear!”

A low and deep voice resounded as indescribable awe and might erupted from the golden spear’s shadow. The feeling one got from it was akin to a divine enforcer appearing in the sky, causing everyone’s hearts to tremble in fear.

Humm!

The gigantic golden spear’s shadow shot forward, shattering the horizon apart. Under the tight gazes of countless people, it brazenly collided head-on against the swooping demonic dragon!

Boom!

An astonishing clap of thunder reverberated across the entire stretch of the world as gigantic gold and black Spiritual Energy storms instantly swept out The bright sky instantly turned dim and dark as furious gales howled about, wreaking havoc and devastation.

Countless people tightly stared at the gigantic Spiritual Energy storms to were kicked up, while wondering, Is that Shen Cangsheng able to resist against that terrifying attack from Mo Longzi?

Within the large hall, the green-robed male faintly narrowed his eyes, while his gaze remained frozen at the spectacle before him.

Bang!

Just as his gaze was fluctuating with uncertainty, countless people looked with overwhelming shock and astonishment in their eyes as the Spiritual Energy storms before their eyes were split apart. At this moment, the gigantic spear’s shadow was being violently grasped in the claws of the demonic dragon, which

proceeded to give a ferocious clench.

Bang!

Under the overbearing grip of the demonic dragon, the golden spear's shadow shattered and broke into pieces. Shooting through the Spiritual Energy storms, the malevolent demonic dragon brought along its frightening shadow as it enveloped over Shen Cangsheng.

Boundless Spiritual Energy erupted from Shen Cangsheng's body as a last desperate attempt to protect himself. This was the only thing he could do at this moment.

Bang!

As Mo Longzi rushed forward, Shen Cangsheng appeared to have suffered a serious injury as blood instantly spewed out from his mouth. Due to the attack from the former, his chest appeared to have somewhat caved in. Rapidly shooting back, he appeared akin to a bird with broken wings, rapidly dropping out of the sky, before violently shooting straight into the ground below.

The entire earth instantly collapsed at this moment as the surrounding structures instantly crumbled into pieces while gigantic cracks extended from the location of his fall.

Due to the spectacle unfolding before their eyes, the entire city become much, much quieter at this moment.

Countless people shot into the sky to look at the area that had collapsed, with dense plumes of dust rising from the location.

In the distance, the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest had all been drained of blood as a chill shook through their bodies. This Mo Longzi was that terrifying? Even Shen Cangsheng wasn't able to stand against him.

Standing across the horizon, Mo Longzi stared with indifference at the collapsed ground. With a wave of his sleeve, gales whipped up, completely scattering the plumes of dust present.

As the dust scattered away, everyone could finally see the scene present within. A deep depression had formed on the ground, with Shen Cangsheng, now covered in blood, with his clothes in tatters, swaying and stumbling as he stood within it.

The long spear was still being grasped in his hands. However, its body appeared dim and dull at this moment, having clearly suffered serious damage.

Although Shen Cangsheng was still standing, anyone could tell that he shouldn't have the strength to continue fighting.

Without Shen Cangsheng restricting him, wouldn't Mo Longzi be able to immediately control the entire situation?

"Shen Cangsheng, is there anything left that you want to say?" As he stood in the air, Mo Longzi gave a faint smile, a flavor of victory hanging within. Although Shen Cangsheng was formidable, he hadn't truly reached the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, after all. Therefore, in a head-to-head confrontation with him, the latter simply didn't have the slightest bit of advantage.

Tightly staring at Mo Longzi, Shen Cangsheng attempted to revolve his Spiritual Energy, only to result in him spurting more blood out as he staggered and stumbled.

"Look's like this fight will ultimately end in the victory for our Demonic Dragon Palace. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is nothing more than this." Mo Longzi spoke out while shaking his head in pity. Clenching his hand, boundless Spiritual Energy condensed within, while killing intent surfaced within his eyes. Obviously, he had already intended to truly finish Shen Cangsheng at this place. With the latter's talent, as well as his growth-rate, even he was somewhat dreadful.

"In your next life, don't go to such a useless place like the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy again."

A ridiculing smile appeared on Mo Longzi's face as the boundless Spiritual Energy within his hand carried forth his killing intent and rushed out.

Bang!

However, right at that instant, the sky in the distance, which was covered by the gigantic Spiritual Array, suddenly emitted an astonishingly loud sound, causing countless people to look over in astonishment. Even Mo Longzi was no exception, since a shiver shook through his body.

The gigantic Spiritual Energy was intensely vibrating at this moment. With a final loud bang, it completely exploded and shattered apart.

Glowing dots that blotted the sky scattered and descended.

Countless gazes turned towards the place that had the densest quantity of glowing dots. At that place, the blurry figures of two people were faintly discernable as they came into view.

Within the giant hall, expression of the green-robed male started to change. Thick feelings of shock and astonishment erupted from his eyes as he muttered, "How is this possible?"

As the glowing dots gradually dissipated, the two figures finally appeared. However, as they appeared, the entire city turned deathly silent as everyone's eyes were filled with shock and amazement.

At this moment, the two figures were in close range of each other. However, one of them had a palm gripping around the throat of the other. At this moment, the latter's face was deathly pale, while not even daring to make the slightest movement.

Unable to contain their emotions, Su Xuan covered her mouth, while shocked expressions flooded the face of He Yao and the rest.

That was because, the one standing there was Mu Chen, while the one being grabbed by the throat, was Wu Jia.

They had won their fight over there, with the victor being Mu Chen!

# Chapter 373 – The Powerful Mo Longzi

The atmosphere across the entire Western Desolated City seemed to have frozen solid.

Bringing along thick feelings of shock, stupefied gazes looked towards the scene across the horizon. In the next moment, the corners of their mouths started to open uncontrollably. This ending was clearly something that was totally outside of their expectations.

Across the horizon, Mu Chen stood in the air, his clothes in tatters, with a few wounds showing on his body. Black lightning arced and danced around his body, while an exceptionally chilly expression was displayed on his face. With a gaze as sharp as knives, he stared towards Wu Jia, who was right in front of him, whose face was now flushed red.

Like a steel vice, his hand locked around the throat of the latter, while Spiritual Energy erupted from his palm. With just the slightest bit of movement, he would be able to instantly shatter Wu Jia's throat.

An ashen colour started to appear on Wu Jia's face.Within his eyes, the remnant of an incredulous expression was present, showing him having yet to return back to reality after Mu Chen barbarically smashed his array and caused him to suffer a complete collapse.

Wu Jia's current strength had already reached Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase. However, he never imagined that he would lose in such a short amount of time after his Spiritual Array was broken apart by Mu Chen.

The combat prowess displayed by Mu Chen had clearly far, far surpassed the strength perceived by his outer appearance.

Astonished clamouring noises erupted out, quickly breaking

apart the silence within the city. The current commotion was even being more intense than when Shen Cangsheng was defeated, since the scene that unfurled before them had far exceeded everyone's expectations.

Who would have thought that Wu Jia, a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master, would actually suffer defeat in the hands of Mu Chen, whose strength was merely at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase?

"He's truly interesting," muttered the green-robed male with a faint smile, while shooting a peculiar look at Mu Chen. This youth appeared to also have some hidden methods and tricks up his sleeves. It's no wonder why he dared to take action under such circumstances.

"However, even though Wu Jia's defeat. They have still not considered to have obtained victory." He proceeded to mutter. As of now, Shen Cangsheng had already been defeated, with Mo Longzi about to take action elsewhere. Facing against the super-fierce figure that even Shen Cangsheng couldn't stop, there seemed to be nobody from the side of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that could come out to contend.

In this current situation, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was already on the disadvantageous side. Even with Mu Chen's victory, it was hard to shake and reverse the situation. After all, Mo Longzi was someone that couldn't be compared to Wu Jia.

Due to Mu Chen's victory, Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy people were pleasantly surprised for an instant, before quickly reverting to grave expressions, which was accredited from the present dire situation. If Shen Cangsheng still had the strength to fight, with Mu Chen collaborating within him, the two of them would be able to contend with Mo Longzi. However, as of now, Shen Cangsheng had already suffered heavy injuries... As for the sides of Li

Xuantong and Luo Li, although they had gotten the upper hand, both of them were in a life-or-death entanglement, causing them to be unable to extricate themselves for the time being.

Within this time, Mo Longzi might be able to crush and defeat Mu Chen.

Across the horizon, Mu Chen sent an apathetic look towards Wu Jia, who he had already subdued. Turning his head around, he looked towards the distance. Upon seeing Shen Cangsheng, who was completely covered in blood, with a depressed aura, his heart instantly sank. Shen Cangsheng truly was not Mo Longzi's match.

"Haha, you're truly surprising." Mo Longzi's faintly astonished gaze rested on Mu Chen's body, before proceeding to show a faint smile as he continued his statement. "However, you still late by a bit."

Swish!

From the distance, Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest had shot over, descending before Shen Cangsheng, protecting him from the front as they vigilantly stared at Mo Longzi.

Mu Chen looked at the battlefields of Luo Li and Li Xuantong. At this moment, the two of them had already sensed the progress of the situation over at Mu Chen's side, and their attacks suddenly became fierce and violent in an attempt to rapidly end their battle to assist him.

However, Mu Gu and Gui Xiong weren't ordinary people, after all. At this moment, they had also become more vicious, sending attack after attack of all-out blows sweeping out, risking their lives to bring Luo Li and Li Xuantong down.

A faint flash spackled within Mu Chen's eyes, before sending a palm patting heavily down on Wu Jia's chest. Blood immediately spurted out from the latter as the Spiritual Energy surrounding his body instantly became dispirited, clear indications of having

suffered a serious blow.

After maiming the combat capabilities of this Wu Jia, Mu Chen flung him towards Su Xuan and the rest. He raised his head, and coldly stared at Mo Longzi as boundless Spiritual Energy fluctuations gushed out of him once again.

“You’re not my match.” Facing the gaze coming from Mu Chen, Mo Longzi just gave a faint smile as he spoke out.

Not a single expression hung on Mu Chen’s face, the same with his words, with only the glare coming from him still remaining chilly and cold.

“Truly, a detestable fellow.” Mo Longzi muttered under his breath, while malevolent killing intent surged and erupted from the depths of his eyes. For this entire matter, the youth in front of him had caused much divergence in his well-prepared plans, causing him to feel extreme ire and detestment towards Mu Chen.

“I really, really want to kill you right here, right now…”

Baleful and ominous aura that blotted the skies, accompanied by his boundless and tyrannical Spiritual Energy, hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept out from Mo Longzi, enveloping over Mu Chen. In the next instant, a tremble shook through his body as he explosively shot out.

‘“Mu Chen, be careful!”’ Su Xuan and the rest hastily cried out. That Mo Longzi’s was truly extremely vicious. He had immediately taken action.

Swish!

Mo Longzi’s speed was extremely fast, appearing before Mu Chen in a flash. Sending out a vicious pat, he noticed a dragon’s shadow that was unexpectedly surfacing around the latter’s body. As rays of brilliance flashed out, the latter explosively retreated, escaping Mo Longzi’s attack range.

“This is…the Dragon Soaring Art?”

Looking at the dragon shadow that appeared around Mu Chen's body in a flash, shock and astonishment erupted from Mo Longzi's eyes, before instantly being filled with a dark shadow as he spoke out, "Looks like you've gotten quite a good deal of benefits from the Spiritual Treasure room of the White Dragon Sovereign, huh? Even his Dragon Soaring Art was learnt by you."

The White Dragon Sovereign was once one of the highest ranking members of the Demonic Dragon Palace of the past. Therefore, Mo Longzi also knew about this consummate skill of his. This Dragon Soaring Art was a part of a rather formidable Deity Tier Spiritual Art. Once it was mastered to a great degree, one could seemingly transform into a divine dragon, while being able to pierce through space to evade and escape. Even a Sovereign Realm expert would find it difficult obstruct such a cultivator. During that year, when the White Dragon Sovereign had betrayed the Demonic Dragon Palace, the Demonic Dragon Palace had tried their best to contain him, but to no avail, since he escaped at the end. What he relied on was this Dragon Soaring Art.

Although the Dragon Soaring Art that Mu Chen had cultivated was still at the most elementary "dragon shadow" level, the increase in speed was already extremely quickly, making Mu Chen exceptionally hard to deal with.

As the dragon's shadow surfaced around Mu Chen's body, it made him appear as if he was a green wisp of smoke. Vigilance filled his heart as he glared at Mo Longzi. At this very moment, what he needed to do was to buy the most amount of time for Li Xuantong and Luo Li.

If he was able to drag his fight till Li Xuantong and Luo Li finished theirs, it would become much easier for him.

Nevertheless, Mo Longzi had clearly seen through his intent. He sneered as he said, "Although the Dragon Soaring Art is formidable, you're only mastered to such a small level. Do you really think that I can't deal with you?"

Taking a step forward, surging Spiritual Energy gushed out from him, seemingly blocking the sky, causing this entire stretch of the world to instantly turn dim.

“Demonic Dragon’s Shadow!”

Greyish-black Spiritual Energy hid the skies and covered the earth as it rushed towards him. Akin to a gigantic light screen, it enveloped an area of approximately thousands of feet long, with Mu Chen being unable to escape as he was covered by it.

Roar! Roar!

As the light screen came enveloping over, a malevolent dragon roar, filled with a strange demonic energy, rang out, causing Mu Chen to feel his body becoming heavy.

Intense chilling intent erupted from Mo Longzi’s eyes as he extended his hands. Furiously giving a pat down, a chillingly cold roar resounded across the world, “Demonic Dragon’s Claw!”

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy condensed across the horizon, immediately transforming into a gigantic palm a hundred feet wide. Black dragon scales densely filled the surface of the giant hand. Sparkling with a chilling glow, it appeared to be able to shatter and collapse mountains.

The giant hundred foot-wide hand patted furiously down towards Mu Chen, as ear-piercing sounds of the air exploding rang out.

Looking at the shadow that came enveloping over him, Spiritual Energy erupted from Mu Chen, before transforming into a starry sky behind him. Three gigantic figures condensed and formed within it, before carrying along boundless rays of starlight as they swept out.

Four Divine Constellations Scripture, Divine Seal of the White Tiger! Divine Seal of the Black Tortoise! Divine Seal of the

Vermillion Bird!

Beastial roars resounded acrossed the horizon! Three giant beasts howled as they shot out, immediately smashing head-on against the incoming greyish-black giant hand!

Bang!

Astonishing explosions resounded across the sky as incomparably erratic and rampaging Spiritual Energy waves swept out. Even Mu Chen was sent flying back thousands of feet, with the Spiritual Energy and blood within his body faintly churning around as a grave expression filled his face. Only after crossing hands with Mo Longzi was he truly able to understand how tyrannical the latter was. No wonder why even Shen Cangsheng was unable to resist his attacks.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards the Spiritual Energy waves sweeping out in the distance. Over there, Mo Longzi had his feet treading on the Spiritual Energy Waves, with his hands crossed behind his back. An expression of indifference covered his face as if the previous confrontation did not have the slightest bit of effect towards him.

“To block my strike while being at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, you truly have some ability.” Shooting a look at Mu Chen, whose chest was now heaving slightly, Mo Longzi spoke out with an apathetic tone.

Hearing those words by Mo Longzi, not a change happened to Mu Chen’s expression. Instead, the palms hidden within his sleeves started to faintly tremble, and the surrounding space started to fluctuation.

“The White Dragon Sovereign was, after all, a person from our Demonic Dragon Palace. Since you’ve learnt the Dragon Soaring Art, you can be considered to have some connection to our Demonic Dragon Palace. If you’re able to kill Shen Cangsheng and the rest, I might be able to allow you to join our Demonic Dragon

Palace. Compared to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, your future there might be much, much greater." Mo Longzi suddenly made an offer to Mu Chen with a smile. If he was able to drag Mu Chen into the Demonic Dragon Palace, the face of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might completely go down the drain. To him, this was an extremely good way to deal a blow to his enemies.

"A power that was ousted like a stray dog by the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy dares to speak such words?" Mu Chen replied with a mocking smile.

"Since you don't want to accept my good graces, you can follow all of them and die in this Western Desolated City!"

Chilling intent flashed within Mo Longzi eyes as he clenched his hands. Surging Spiritual Energy gushed forth and condensed, forming two gigantic dragons around his body. With a roar, they swept straight towards Mu Chen.

A dragon's shadow surfaced around Mu Chen as he explosively retreated. His black pupils started to turn crystalline once against as his hands came together to form a seal.

Bang!

At the instant when Mu Chen's hands came together, the entire stretch of the world shook and trembled. In the next instant, countless people noticed rays of brilliance blossoming in the sky as boundless Spiritual Energy hid the skies and covered the earth as they condensed together.

Within a short span of a few breaths, a gigantic Spiritual Array surfaced. Two incomparably gigantic black lotuses slowly revolved within its centre, while frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations that caused people's expressions to change radiated out.

"Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array!"

A low roar resounded within Mu Chen's heart as his eyes turned

frosty. Sending a palm patting out, under the countless shocked gazes below, the gigantic Spiritual Array started to revolve in the air.

At this moment, an expression of shock and astonishment was also present on the face of the green-robed male within the large hall. The degree of Spiritual Array arranged by Mu Chen had already reached the realm of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array. Could it be that this youth was actually a Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master?

A Rank 5 Spiritual Array Master at such an age...

His eyes started to slightly narrow as he thought, This youth is slightly unusual. However, exactly till what point will he be able hold on against Mo Longzi...?

# Chapter 374 – Trump Cards Revealing

Bang!

Brimming with boundless Spiritual Energy, the two gigantic black lotuses started to slowly revolve, radiating a powerful pressure that enveloped across the entire Western Desolated City.

The expressions of countless people faintly changed due to the two gigantic black lotuses, since they had sensed the formidability and might of Mu Chen's Spiritual Array. From the pressure and Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from it, even a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase expert would be left with the only option to temporarily retreat from it.

Indeed, this youth by the name of Mu Chen truly had some ability. It's no wonder why he's able to defeat Wu Jia. It looked like his attainments on the aspect of Spiritual Arrays wasn't lower than the latter. In fact, he might even be more tyrannical.

Roar!

While countless people were sighing in admiration towards Mu Chen's abilities, the two gigantic malevolent dragons had already howled over, their roars shaking the entire stretch of the world.

Humm!

The two gigantic black lotuses started to rapidly revolve. Under the cold and chilling gaze from Mu Chen, two gigantic rays of black light spewed out all of the sudden right from the centre of both lotuses. They intertwined together, appearing similar to two black dragons that had entangled with one another as indescribably overbearing and tyrannical energies radiated from them.

Bang!

Under the attentive gazes from everyone, the two rays of black light violently smashed against the bodies of the two demonic dragons. A black light instantly blossomed across the horizon,

covering and shrouding over the entire sky.

Roar!

Painful roars erupted from the two demonic dragons as they did everything they could to struggle and escape. Nevertheless, under the rays of the black light, which appeared to be as dense as ink, they started to corrode, before turning incorporeal.

Bang!

As a loud bang rang out, the two demonic dragons were pierced right through by the ink-like rays of black light. Furthermore, the rays of light continued on with their assault. Without appearing to have weakened, they violently shot over towards Mo Longzi as they enveloped over him.

A clamor rang out across the entire city.

A dark and cold expression appeared on Mo Longzi's face as he looked towards the black rays of light shooting over towards him. He was able to sense that the powerful energies contained within them were sufficient to smash and defeat a person at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

However, it was a pity that he, Mo Longzi, was much, much stronger than a Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

As a dark shadow erupted from Mo Longzi's eyes, he took a step out. Dense greyish-black Spiritual Energy erupted from his arms as layers of black scales surfaced on his skin.

"Scram off!"

A cold roar rang out from Mo Longzi as he sent two fists rumbling out. The air before him instantaneously exploded, while ripples undulated across the surrounding space. Without the slightest intent of evading, Mo Longzi's fists heavily impacted against the two black rays of light that were shooting towards him.

Boom!

Rings of rampaging Spiritual Energy ripples were seen spreading out by everyone as Mo Longzi was sent retreating a dozen steps back. The sleeves around his arms were torn into tatters. However, not a single injury was present on his arm. Furthermore, from the head-on confrontation, the black rays of light that seemed to be an irresistible force were immediately shattered into glowing dots that blotted the sky.

This Mo Longzi's strength was actually on the level that could easily resist a Fifth Grade Spiritual Array!

Shock erupted within the hearts of countless people as everyone thought, This Mo Longzi is indeed extremely formidable and powerful. Although Mu Chen had used the strength of a Fifth Grade Spiritual Array Master, the degree of the Spiritual Array arranged by him was unable to cope with Mo Longzi.

Grave expressions filled the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest. All of them had seen the might of Mu Chen's Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array. However, they never expected that a Spiritual Array of such might was, in all, only able to force Mo Longzi to retreat, nothing more than that.

"It seems like it's very difficult for Mu Chen to be Mo Longzi's match." Xu Huang whispered.

"As long as he can endure till Luo Li and Li Xuantong finish of their opponents, with the collaboration of the three of them, they'll have some chance of victory." He Yao chimed in while wrinkling his forehead. However, with Mo Longzi's level of intellect, he would clearly not give Mu Chen such a chance.

He would definitely end this fight as quickly as possible.

"This fellow..." Mu Chen's eyes had narrowed as a result of seeing the spectacle that had played before his eyes. This was truly the first time that his Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array was unable to have its desired effect. The strength of this Mo Longzi was truly very powerful and formidable.

Whoosh!

Raising his head, Mo Longzi sent a chillingly dark smile towards Mu Chen. In the next instant, in a flash, he appeared right before Mu Chen.

Having raised his vigilance against him, the dragon's shadow around Mu Chen's body sparkled as he explosively retreated hundreds of metres back. At the same time, with a change of his hand seal, the two giant black lotuses that had yet to dissipate started to revolve once again, sending two black rays of light violently shooting out.

Bang! Bang!

Mo Longzi's fists rumbled out again, smashing the two incoming rays of light apart while being forced to retreat a dozen steps back once again. However, this time, he gave a violent stomp with his feet, making his speed increase dramatically, causing remnant shadows to appear across the sky.

In the short span of a blink of an eye, he had appeared right before Mu Chen like a specter. As the chillingly dark sneer turned somewhat malevolent, he spoke out, " Do you truly thinking that you'll be able to avoid me with your small accomplishment in the Soaring Dragon Technique?"

Clenching his fingers tightly together, the black scales on his fist sparkled with a sinisterly cold light, appearing akin to a weapon of slaughter and carnage, while chilling and erratic fluctuations radiating out.

"Dragon Breaking Fist!"

A low roar rang out from Mo Longzi's mouth as he sent his fist rumbling out. The air in front instantly shattered and exploded as the fist went straight for Mu Chen.

At this distance, Mu Chen was already unable to attempt any form of evasion. A fierce expression flashed within his black pupils

as black lightning raced and erupted from his body, while a lightning rune surfaced on his chest.

Activating his Lightning God's Physique, Mu Chen turned his body, sending a fist violently rumbling out, and smashed it straight against the fist coming from Mo Longzi.

Bang!

Ripples visible the naked-eye extended out seemingly at the instant when the two fists smashed against each other. Vibrations shook the surrounding space as the Spiritual Energy surging forth from the two had seemingly transformed into violent storms.

A shudder went through Mu Chen as he went flying back hundreds of metres. A faintly sweet taste appeared in his mouth as a sliver of blood appeared as it flowed down from the corner of his mouth. After all, his strength was only at the level of Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Although he had the reinforcement from his Lightning God Physique, in such a head-on collision of strength, he obviously wasn't Mo Longzi's match.

Standing arrogantly in the air, Mo Longzi didn't move a single inch from the earlier collision, with only a tremble of his shoulder, which was dealt with by the energy within his body. Looking with ridicule and contempt at Mu Chen, he spoke towards the latter, "You're truly a crazily arrogant brat. You actually dared to fight head-on with me. Looks like you've no regards for your life."

Hearing those words and seeing Mo Longzi's reactions towards the earlier exchange, Mu Chen's expression sank like a brick in water. The disparity between Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase and Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase was truthfully far too large. Even with all the various methods he had used, he was struggling with much difficulty.

Wanting to truly become a threat to Mo Longzi using ordinary methods was simply impossible.

Mu Chen's eyes started to sparkle as he pondered on the methods and ways he could use.

Obviously, Mo Longzi wasn't going to foolishly wait for Mu Chen to complete his preparations. With a sneer, he shot out once again, yet again displaying that astonishing speed. Hiding the skies and covering the earth, a furious barrage of attacks swept towards Mu Chen.

In response, Mu Chen could only twist and turn his body to evade the incoming attacks. However, there were many instances where he was forced by Mo Longzi's absolutely tyrannical strength to meet in a head-on confrontation of power. Therefore, under this assault, Mu Chen quickly fell into a disadvantage.

Within the city, countless people sighed in admiration within their hearts, since Mo Longzi truly was the more formidable one. Although that Mu Chen had caused people to feel shock and astonishment by his combat prowess, the disparity between one full stage wasn't that easy to be supplemented.

The faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest were brimming with anxiousness, because once Mu Chen falls, they would no longer have the chance to reverse the entire situation around any more.

Bang! Bang!

Low and deep sounds continued to ring out across the sky. Following every sound, Mu Chen would be sent miserably flying back, while the blood dripping down from the corners of his mouth became increasingly prominent.

However, every single time when Mu Chen was miserably sent flying back, the palms within his sleeves would intensely tremble, before light would flow out of his finger tips. As this happened, the air would faintly ripple, before returning to its original, undisturbed state.

In the air, Mu Chen's situation became increasingly miserable

and dire. Being forced to flee in all directions by Mo Longzi, cries of pity and mocking laughter started to ring out within the city. However, after hearing those noises, frustration and unwillingness were surprisingly absent from the black eyes of the youth. On the contrary, a chilling calmness akin to the bottom of an ancient lake was present.

Seeing the blood flowing down from the corner of Mu Chen's mouth, Su Xuan couldn't help covering her mouth with her jade-like hands, while an impulsion to help him erupted within her heart. However, at this very moment, the other cruel people from the Bounty List Rankings were tightly staring at them.

From the looks of it, Mu Chen seemed to be unable to hold on for much longer.

Within the large hall, the green-robed male faintly narrowed his eyes as he stared at the scene of Mo Longzi seemingly dominating over Mu Chen. Faintly wrinkling his forehead, he seemed to have discovered that wasn't quite right.

Bang!

In the sky, Mo Longzi's spectre-like figure appeared before Mu Chen once again. With a face filled with gloom, he sent another fist rumbling towards Mu Chen's throat, causing the latter to cross his arms in front of his body in defense.

Bang!

Mo Longzi's fist violently slammed against Mu Chen arms, causing a mouthful of blood to spurt out from the latter as intense pain racked his arm. If not for him having cultivated his Lightning God's Physique, his arms would definitely be maimed after receiving that attack.

Relying on the force of the blow, Mu Chen explosively retreated, his fingertips still vibrating, while fluctuations radiated within the air.

The blood flowing down from the corner of his mouth was now clear and prominent, with only the chilling expression within those pair of black pupils growing increasingly thicker.

After stabilising his body after backing off a couple hundred feet, Mu Chen slowly cleaned away the blood from the corner of his mouth before proceeding to chillingly glare at Mo Longzi.

“You’re truly a tenacious brat. Looks like the body refinement divine art that you’ve cultivated is quite formidable.” said Mo Longzi with a sinister laugh. If he was replaced by an ordinary person, even someone whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase would have already long suffered heavy injuries after being smashed so many times by him. However, although the Mu Chen before his eyes appeared rather miserable, he clearly still possessed the capability to continue fighting.

“Nevertheless, I really want to see, exactly how many more punches you can take from me!”

A malevolent laugh rang out from Mo Longzi as he took a step out, wanting to continue his assault to finish Mu Chen off.

However, just as he was able to take another step forward, a chilling smile bursting within killing intent surfaced from the corner of Mu Chen’s mouth in the far distance. At this moment, those pair of black pupils had turned crystalline, seemingly able to see through the myriad of every living thing in the world, appearing exceedingly mysterious.

Rumble!

Astonishing fluctuations rang out across the world, shocking and astonishing countless people to raise their heads, only to see the Spiritual Energy in the sky above them seemingly starting to rampage about. Countless glowing lines started to come together within the air, before spreading out. From the looks of it, they appeared to form an incomparably gigantic furnace.

Mo Longzi's eyes instantly contracted faintly as he looked at the spectacle unfurling around him, causing his expression to slowly start sinking.

Raising his head, Mu Chen looked towards Mo Longzi, who had a sunken expression hanging on his face. In the next instant, an extremely chilling voice containing some ridiculement within resounded across the sky.

"Did you really think I was allowing you to freely hit me, you trash?"

# Chapter 375 – Divine Furnace Heavenly Array

Boundless Spiritual Energy blossomed across the sky akin to a tidal wave. As the countless glowing threads intertwined, an incomparably giant furnace started to faintly form within the sky.

Enveloping the ground below, the furnace started radiating with astonishing fluctuations.

A slight change happened to the expressions of countless people as they stared at the glowing furnace. If one took a closer look, one would be able to discover that it was a gigantic Spiritual Array. As for those complicated-looking glowing lines, they were what comprised of the array's formation.

This Spiritual Array seemed to be even stronger than the double lotus Spiritual Array from before!

Shock and astonishment erupted once again in the hearts of quite a few experts, while the gazes they sent towards Mu Chen had changed. This fellow was actually acting weak on purpose! Furthermore, he had even fused his Spiritual Seals within the air from god knows when! Only after completing the arrangement of the array's formation did he break his character and reveal such a powerful Spiritual Array.

Previously, he was being forced to such a miserable state. However, no one had expected that the sorry figure he appeared to be was just a method used by him to mask his arrangement of his Spiritual Array.

Furthermore, everyone had to admit that his concealment was extremely good, as even Mo Longzi was unable to discover and sense it.

This youth seemed to be quite young. Yet, not the slightest bit of the usual shallowness in one's mind was present with his thinking.

He was able to still remain calm and unflustered even in such a life-or-death situation, while relying on Mo Longzi's carelessness to arrange a Spiritual Array in secret.

"This new batch of Freshmen of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy appears to be slightly formidable," said the green-robed male with some shock and astonishment present within his eyes. Even he was only able to sense Mu Chen's spiritual Array right before he started to activate it. Before that, he was similarly unable to sense how Mu Chen had fused his Spiritual Seals into the air.

Obviously, this Freshman by the name of Mu Chen had rather high attainments on the aspects of Spiritual Arrays. If not, he wouldn't be able to fuse his Spiritual Seals so perfectly with the air to the point of not creating the slightest bit of visible presence, not allowing anyone to sense any of his intent.

"This Spiritual Array is powerful."

Looking at the incomparably gigantic furnace in the air, the green-robed man faintly narrowed his eyes. He was able to sense that this Spiritual Array possessed extremely powerful might. This power might be sufficient to truly pose a threat towards Mo Longzi.

Now, Mo Longzi might have to pay the price for his earlier carelessness.

Across the horizon, under the attention of countless gazes, Mo Longzi's expression had turned incomparably cold and dark as he looked towards the gigantic furnace that had enveloped him. Sending a dark and sunken look towards Mu Chen at the distance, a faint twitch could be seen within his eyes, causing him to appear exceedingly malevolent.

"This is unexpected. I've truly underestimated you." Mo Longzi spoke out with a slight growl with some teeth clenching and gnashing present within his words. He never expected that he would actually get a fast one pulled onto him by Mu Chen under

the attentive gazes of so many people.

Previously, it seemed as if he had completely gained the advantage. However, he had simply not discovered the moment when Mu Chen had arranged his Spiritual Array. It wasn't to say that he was lacking in his sensory capabilities. However, he truly was overly careless. He didn't believe that Mu Chen could pull off anything between the gaps of his teeth. Therefore, the gigantic furnace was akin to a violent slap to his face, causing rage and fury to erupt within his heart.

A faint expression of indifference hung on Mu Chen's handsome face, while blood still remained at the corner of his mouth. The Spiritual Array that he had arranged was naturally the one given to him by Ling Xi when he left Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although it was within the same boundaries of a Rank 5 Spiritual Array, like the Demonic Butchering Lotus Spiritual Array, it possessed might comparable to a Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. If it was before, Mu Chen would naturally not have the capability to arrange it. However, after opening his Heart's eye, he finally possessed the capability to do so.

Naturally, arranging this Spiritual Array would require some time. If he were to arrange such a Spiritual Array right in Mo Longzi's face, he would definitely be interfered with and stopped by the latter. Therefore, he chose to use a method that no one had expected. When Mo Longzi's attacks were at their craziest, while his body appeared to be in an extremely miserable state, relying on the concealment by those rampaging Spiritual Energy fluctuations, he had fused the Spiritual Seals, one after another, within the air.

Therefore, it had led to the scene of Mu Chen's reversal.

Shooting a look at Mo Longzi, Mu Chen didn't continue saying any useless words as he proceeded to cross his legs and sit down in the air. A hand seal was formed, causing the gigantic furnace Spiritual Array to rumble as it revolved. As it did so, the space surrounding the furnace started to seemingly churn and flare up.

“Do you really think that I’ll allow the situation to turn around?!”

A sinister and cold roar rang out of Mo Longzi as he took a step forward. Boundless greyish-black Spiritual Energy swept out from him. At this moment, anyone could see that this furnace Spiritual Array had caused some dread to surface within him.

“You love to spew quite a bit of nonsense.”

Mu Chen replied with a faint smile. Changing his hand seal, the air within the furnace turned scarlet-red, almost as if it was about to ignite and burn.

Bang!

Upon making contact the with boundless Spiritual Energy radiating out from Mo Longzi, Spiritual Energy started to fluctuate and radiate from the scarlet-red air. Traces of evaporation started to appear as a terrifying temperature started to radiate and spread out from within the furnace Spiritual Array.

“Divine Furnace Heavenly Array!”

A serene expression seemed to appear on Mu Chen’s face as a low and deep roar brought about some chilliness that slowly rang out from his mouth.

Rumble!

Following Mu Chen’s roar, the furnace Spiritual Array completely detonated. In the next instant, countless people saw scarlet-red flames forming within the furnace Spiritual Array. Akin to flaming clouds, they hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept straight at Mo Longzi.

The scale of the flaming clouds was simply unavoidable, it was impossible to escape!

Mo Longzi’s expression started to turn somewhat ugly at this moment. From the scarlet-red flames that blotted the skies as they

headed over, he could feel a feeling of danger from them.

“I don’t believe that your Rank 5 Spiritual Array will be able to cope with me!”

Clenching and gnashing his teeth, Mo Longzi formed a hand seal, causing the boundless Spiritual Energy around his body to howl and surge. As Spiritual Energy condensed, it transformed into a glowing Spiritual Energy screen as it enveloped him within.

A black demonic dragon swam around the surface of the light screen, while powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiated from it. From the looks of it, this appeared to be the strongest fortified defense Mo Longzi could put up.

Boom! Boom!

Scarlet-red flames continued on their path as they spread out. As they extended out, the boundless greyish-black Spiritual Energy that made contact with it rapidly evaporated away. Within the entire boundary of the furnace Spiritual Array, the defensive boundary created by Mo Longzi continued to be endlessly suppressed and burned away.

Bang!

Within a short span of a dozen breaths, the scarlet-red flames finally burnt all the greyish-black Spiritual Energy to nihility. As the sea of flames surged, they surrounded Mo Longzi’s glowing Spiritual Energy screen, the terrifying temperature coming from them caused ripples to its surface.

Looking coldly at Mo Longzi and his defensive attempt, Mu Chen’s hand seal suddenly changed.

Grrrr!

An ear-piercingly clear screech seemed to ring from within the scarlet-red sea of flames. In the next instant, as the flames surged, they transformed into the shape of a gigantic flaming bird.

Sitting within the sea of flames, the fiery bird flapped his fiery wings as it raised its head to give a long roar towards to sky. Hiding the sky and covering the earth, it violently smashed against the demonic dragon swimming on the surface of the glowing Spiritual Energy screen .

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Low and deep exploding sounds continued to ring out across the sky as the giant fiery bird burning with flames rushed forward. At this moment, the furious ripples started to surface on the seemingly indestructible glowing Spiritual Energy screen.

At this moment, the demonic dragon on the surface of the light screen was roaring as it defended against the attacks coming one after another.

Sitting within the light screen, Mo Longzi's face had turned ashen as Spiritual Energy continued to erupt from his body to strengthen his defenses. He knew that this Spiritual Array should be Mu Chen's final method. As long as he could endure it, he could pinch the latter to death at any time!

After being played and led around the nose by Mu Chen, he wished he could shatter all of his bones and split apart the latter into thousands of pieces!

Sensing the venomous gaze coming from Mo Longzi, Mu Chen gave a faint smile before proceeding to ignore him. Continuing to revolve his Spiritual Array, he wanted it to erupt with its most powerful strength, heavily damaging and refining the latter to death!

Bang! Bang!

Under the rampage of the fiery bird, the ripples spreading out from the glowing Spiritual Energy screen grew increasingly frequent. Furthermore, the demonic dragon swimming on it was much more incorporeal than before.

The scarlet-red sea of flames in his surroundings seized the opportunity to surge forward. Under the corrosion of the high temperature, even Mo Longzi, who was protected within, had beads of perspiration falling off of him like rain.

As time continued to slowly pass by, the glowing Spiritual Energy screen became increasingly thinner as the demonic dragon grew exceedingly close towards turning illusionary. This caused the hearts of quite a few people to skip a beat. This Spiritual Array was truly formidable. Even Mo longzi wasn't able to completely defend against it.

"Break for me!"

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's black eyes. With a change of his hand seal, a furious roar akin to the clap of thunder rang out from him.

Bang!

The furnace Spiritual Array furiously revolved, causing rumbling sounds to ring out. In response, the scarlet-red sea of flames started to rampage and grow erratic. Violently sweeping out, it smashed right against the glowing Spiritual Energy screen that was getting thinner as each second went by.

Crack!

Under the all-out pounding, the glowing Spiritual Energy screen finally reached it limit. With a faint sound resounding out, cracks started to extend on the surface of the light screen.

At this moment, inside, the face of Mo Longzi started to violently contort.

On the contrary, expressions of ecstasy and joy erupted on the faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest standing in the distance.

Swish!

Under the attentive gazes of the countless people in the city, the

glowing Spiritual Energy screen completely collapsed. Sensing this opportunity, the scarlet-red sea of flames swept in, instanting surrounding Mo Longzi, who now had nowhere else to evade or hide in.

At this moment, everyone could see that Mo Longzi's expression had turned incomparably ugly.

Chi. Chi.

As the scorchingly high temperatures swept out, Mo Longzi's clothes were instantly burnt into ashes, with even his skin turning scarlet-red. Under the intense temperatures from the scarlet-red sea of flames, even the latter's eyes had turned blood shot.

Puff. Spurt.

As the terrifying sea of flames advanced towards Mo Longzi, he violently spurted a mouthful of blood. Those pair of incomparably venomous eyes locked on towards Mu Chen in the far distance, before he was completely engulfed by the surging sea of flames.

Intense shock shook through the hearts of countless people.

Mo Longzi, had lost?

The entire city turned deathly silent at this moment as everyone's gazes were tightly locked at the area pervaded by the sea of flames. At this very instant, the atmosphere in that entire stretch of the world, seemed to have completely frozen solid.

The flames were still rising and flaring up.

After quite a while, due to the exhaustion of Spiritual Energy, the gigantic furnace Spiritual Array started to gradually dissipate. Simultaneously, the sea of flames that had pervaded that stretch of the sky started to slowly withdraw.

After completely withdrawing away from the area, Mo Longzi's figure had disappeared from within. However, cries of astonishment quickly rang out as people saw a strange object

appearing in the sky as the flames disappeared.

Mu Chen’s eyes furiously contracted upon seeing the scene as he tightly stared at the area.

Present within the sky was a ball of blood that was approximately a few feet in diameter. Appearing akin to a clump of meat dripping with blood, it floated mysteriously in the sky.

# Chapter 376 – Dragon Transformation Blood Art

The ball of blood floated in the sky as traces of a blood-red baleful Aura radiated from it. Following its minute up and down movements, it appeared akin to a hair-raising clump of meat from the distance.

This mysterious scene had undoubtedly caused the expressions of countless people to change as a chilling sensation rose within their hearts.

“This is…” faintly wrinkling his eyebrows, while looking at the scene in the sky, the green-robed male muttered to himself before continuing after a while later, “Could it be the secret skill of the Demonic Dragon Palace, the Dragon Transformation Blood Art?”

“Dragon Transformation Blood Art?” A figure spoke out in doubt behind the green-robed male.

“That’s a high-level secret skill within the Demonic Dragon Palace. Only some of their disciples with extremely high statuses would be able to learn and cultivate it. This skill is mysterious and cruel, as it’s said to requires one to dig out some of one’s flesh before implanting the flesh and blood of a demonic dragon within one’s body. After nourishing the demonic dragon’s flesh and blood with one’s own blood, one could activate it during desperate times, causing one’s strength to drastically increase.”

At this moment, the expression of the green-robed male grew solemn as his continued with his explanation. “However, the price to pay for this mysterious skill is very high. From what Mo Longzi has displayed, it would be hard for him to recover within half a year.”

“Never thought that a brat whose strength was only at the Heavenly Transformation Late Stage would be able to force Mo

Longzi to such a degree. He's truly surprising," replied the person at the back with a sigh of admiration.

Feeling the same way too, the green-robed male faintly nodded his head. This Freshman by the name of Mu Chen had truly caused people to be overwhelmed with shock and admiration for his abilities. However...forcing Mo Longzi to such a degree, it truly couldn't be said if this was exactly a fortunate or an unfortunate thing...

The faces of Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest also turned ugly at this moment. Although they didn't know exactly what that ball of blood was, it was clearly not any good news for them.

Beside them, Shen Cangsheng had managed to stabilise his breathing, with his deathly-pale face regaining slight normalcy. However, upon seeing the wriggling ball of blood in the sky, his eyes had also furiously contracted.

"Dragon Transformation Blood Art..." Shen Cangsheng forced the words out from his clenched mouth as his blood-soaked hands tightly gripped his long spear. After exhaling a long breath of air, his expression turned grave as he prepared to take action at any moment. Although his situation wasn't too good, he knew that the upcoming situation was not something that Mu Chen could deal with by himself.

Mu Chen forcing Mo Longzi to such a stage had clearly exceeded his expectations.

Within the peculiar atmosphere that had filled the entire city, Mu Chen was also tightly staring at the ball of blood that was slightly squirming and wriggling, while a chillingly dark expression fluctuated on his face. He never imagined that he was still unable to defeat Mo Longzi after displaying his hidden trump card. That Heavenly Refining Divine Cauldron array that he had arranged was sufficient to deal heavy damage towards experts of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

That fellow's too thorny.

Boom!

As Mu Chen's expression changed, the ball of blood floating in the distant sky started to quietly vibrate. Its surface started to squirm and wriggle, almost as if something was seemingly trying to break out of the ball.

A chilling glint flashed within Mu Chen's eyes. Clenching his fingers, he sent a fist rumbling out. Boundless Spiritual Energy surged and swept out, before violently slamming against the surface of the ball of blood.

Swish!

A low and deep voice rang out as blood blossomed in the sky. However, not a single jolt shook through the ball of blood. Instead, the wriggling and squirming grew increasingly rapid. At that moment, a crack started to quietly extend on its surface.

Mu Chen's pupils furiously contracted.

Bang!

The ball of blood violently squirmed and wriggled. With a pop, an arm covered entirely by blood-red scales furiously pierced out from within. The arm wasn't the shape of a human's arm, the fingers were sharp and pointed, akin to the claws of a wild beast. As it pierced out, an indescribable aura of slaughter and massacre radiated, causing the faces of countless people to faintly change.

As the arm extended out, it shattered the ball of blood apart, causing flakes of blood to spread out as a blood-red figure slowly walked out from within.

As everyone's line-of-sight converged together, countless people sucked in a breath of cold air.

Mo Longzi had reappeared, standing in the air. However, at this moment, his body had appeared to have grown much taller. Blood-

red scales covered his entire body, while a blood-red dragon tail, approximately a few feet long, continuously wagged to and fro from his back. Akin to two dragon claws, his arms and palms radiated with a chilling glint.

At this time, Mo Longzi appeared just like a terrifying beast of slaughter and carnage. The gaze and aura coming from him were exceedingly dreadful and terrifying.

Roar!

Mo Longzi faced the sky and gave a long roar, sounding extremely sharp and ear-piercing, causing the faces of countless people to turn pale. The surrounding air shook due to the roar as shock waves radiated towards the distance, appearing exceedingly spectacular.

“Jie. Jie.”

As his long roar rang out, Mo Longzi’s blood-red eyes locked onto distant Mu Chen. An extremely cruel and sinister smile surfaced from the corner of his mouth as a scarlet-red tongue licked his lips, appearing extremely terrifying.

Mu Chen’s eyes were filled with caution and vigilance as boundless Spiritual Energy radiated from his body. At this moment, he could feel an extremely dangerous flavor from Mo Longzi. The latter was now much more frightening than before.

“Being able to force to this step... Mu Chen...I have to congratulate you.”

Mo Longzi smiled malevolently, while the baleful aura and killing intent within his eyes were seemingly about to turn corporeal. In the next instant, he took a furious step forward. With a wave of his blood-red dragon tall, his body disappeared from everyone’s view.

Mu Chen’s face instant changed as a dragon’s shadow surfaced around his body. Pushing his speed to his utmost limit, he

instantly retreated explosively thousands of feet back.

Swish!

However, just as he had appeared thousands of feet away, the air behind him exploded apart as a blurry blood-red figure appeared behind him. As it did, a malevolent and cruel laughing voice followed the wind as it rang out.

“Isn’t your speed very fast, Mu Chen? Why are you unable to bear it now, huh?!”

Bang!

As the malevolent laughter rang out, sharp and incisive whooshing sounds resounded behind Mu Chen’s body. The gales created, were swift and sharp to the point of wanting to shatter his body.

Black lightning coursed and arced across his body, turning around while his arms crossed in front, defending his body.

Bang!

The dragon fist covered by blood-red scales, violently slammed against Mu Chen’s arms. A low and deep sound rang out, and a sweet taste erupting in Mu Chen’s throat as he immediately spurted a mouthful of blood. Miserably shooting back, intense pain racked his arms, almost as if they were broken and shattered apart.

The strength of the current Mo Longzi had already reached a rather frightening stage.

“Tsk! tsk! Relax, I’ll make sure to break every single bone within your body!” The smile on Mo Longzi’s face grew increasingly malevolent and sinister as he uttered those words. With a flick of his dragon tail, his figure disappeared, reappearing right behind Mu Chen. The blood-red scales on his arm turned increasingly radiant and brightly coloured, almost as if blood was about to drip from them.

Bang!

A fist rumbled out, causing the surrounding air to immediately explode apart.

With a clench of his hand, a black pagoda appeared. Expanding outwards, it protected Mu Chen from the front.

Ding!

Mo Longzi's punch slammed violently on the surface of the black pagoda, causing a clear metallic sound to reverberate out. Sparks blossomed as the black pagoda was sent flying back, with Mu Chen also being sent shooting back for quite a distance.

"Truly an interesting fellow. You're actually still able to resist." A malevolent and sinister laugh rang out from Mo Longzi as he rapidly shot forward akin to a red bolt of lightning.

"However, let me see how long more you can continue to endure!"

Whoosh! Whoosh!

In the sky, Mo Longzi's speed had reached an astonishing level, appearing akin to a red bolt of lightning that was piercing through the air. At this moment, Mu Chen was completely on the disadvantageous side. If not for the black pagoda protecting his body, he would have already suffered heavy injuries from the fierce and cruel attacks of the former.

However, even with the black pagoda, his situation was extremely dire. Blood continued to flow out throughout his body. From the looks of it, it was clear that he was unable to endure for much longer.

Fear and trepidation shook the hearts of Su Xuan and the rest, since it was clear that Mu Chen and Mo Longzi were already not on the same level of strength. Regardless of how many methods and trump cards Mu Chen pulled out, he could no longer turn the situation around.

“I’ll go and help him.”

Clenching and gnashing his teeth, regardless of his injuries, Shen Cangsheng wanted to take action. With the current progress of the situation, Mu Chen would be stuck in an extremely undesirable position very soon. How could he sit and watch as Mu Chen gets killed by Mo Longzi?!

Su Xuan and the rest instantly felt anxious and worried. With his current state, if Shen Cangsheng were to offer his help, he wouldn’t be able to provide much help for Mu Chen.

Ding!

In the sky, Mo Longzi’s fist fiercely landed once again on the surface of the black pagoda. Intensely vibrating, the black pagoda grew dim at this instant, before transforming into a black light that rushed into Mu Chen’s body.

Clearly, after enduring the numerous rampaging attacks unleashed by Mo Longzi, the pagoda had already reached its limit.

“Tsk. tsk. Do you have any more things left to show?”

A strange laugh rang out from Mo Longzi as his malevolent and sinister gaze appeared extremely frightening. “If not, you can go and die now!”

With a step, he appeared right in front of Mu Chen. The sharp-pointed blood-red claws were thrust straight towards the latter’s chest akin to a bolt of red lightning.

Mu Chen’s eyes had turned blood shot as he prepared to crazily fight with all he had against this Mo Longzi.

Ring!

However, just at this instant, a sword ring that shook the skies furiously reverberated across the horizon! Turning their heads towards the sound, countless people saw a river of Sword Aura rush forth and violently slammed against Mo Longzi’s body.

Bang!

As the Sword Aura swept across Mo Longzi's body, sparks instantly blossomed and shot out, while he was sent flying back.

Whoosh!

Clamoring sounds rang out from countless people as their gazes turned towards the sky in the far distance, where a young girl with a black longsword in her hand stood in the sky. Her eyes were as calm and cold as an icy lake, while chilling intent erupted from them as they locked onto Mo Longzi.

Behind her, a figure covered in blood dropped down from the sky, his aura depressed. Impressively, that was the Rank 3 on the Bounty Board, Mu Gu!

"Luo Li defeated Mu Gu!"

Upon seeing this, astonishment and joyous voices of surprise rang out from Su Xuan and the rest. Luo Li had truly arrived at too good a timing!

Unrestrainable cries of shock and astonishment rang out from within the city as everyone thought, This batch of Freshmen from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy are too formidable! Firstly, there was Mu Chen, who was able to force Mo Longzi to use his final trump card. Now, there was this young girl, whose beauty was stunning and breathtaking, who was able to use such swift and fierce attacks to deal with Mu Gu, whose strength was at the Heavenly Completion Stage Middle Phase.

Bang!

While everyone was overwhelmed with shock and astonishment, rampaging Spiritual Energy swept out from another area of the horizon. As countless people turned their heads over, a chill shook through their minds and hearts.

Over there, Li Xuantong stood in the air, the longsword in his hand pierced right through Gui Xiong's throat. At the same time,

the giant axe in the latter's hand had landed on the former's shoulder, causing blood to flow out.

A situation of taking a life while risking one's own.

However, it was clear that Li Xuantong had managed to gain a sliver of superiority in the end.

Having his throat pierced through, Gui Xiong opened his mouth, causing blood to gush out from within. He was still in shock and disbelief as he stared at the Li Xuantong before him, whose chest was slightly heaving. He appeared as if he wanted to say something, but the gushing blood prevented the words from coming out. After slumping slightly forward, he dropped down from the sky like a brick in water.

Pulling out the axe stuck in his shoulder, Li Xuantong casually stemmed to flow of blood from the wound. Holding his sword in one hand, he shot straight towards the location where Mu Chen was. Looking at the blood and wounds that covered the latter before looking at the malevolent looking Mo Longzi, he spoke out in a soft voice, "Thanks for your hard work."

At this moment, Luo Li had also hurriedly arrived beside him. Supporting him by his side, she looked towards the blood and wounds that covered his entire body. Feeling pain within her heart, she asked, "Are you alright?"

Shaking his head, Mu Chen continued to stare at Mo Longzi, who was similarly staring back at them with an incomparably cold and and dark look on his face. At this moment, of the three of them, other that Luo Li, whose condition was much better off, both Mu Chen and Li Xuantong had suffered quite some serious injuries. In such conditions, would they be able to deal with Mo Longzi, whose strength had explosively increased?

Sending a venomous gaze towards the three, the malevolent smile at the corner of Mo Longzi's mouth grew even wider. Gentling wagging the blood-coloured dragon tail behind his back, a

voice drenched with killing intent slowly rang out across the sky.

“Those two fellows truly are wastes. They can’t even do the job of holding people back. However…since everyone has gathered, I’ll just have to deal with all of you together.”

# Chapter 377 – Borrowing the Ominous

Within the Western Desolated City, countless gazes locked onto the confrontation happening in the sky. Although Mu Chen, Luo Li and Li Xuantong had the numerical advantage, anyone would be able to see that the side with the true superiority was still being held by Mo Longzi.

At this time, after displaying some sort of secret technique, the latter's strength had clearly grown increasingly tyrannical. From the looks of it, even if Mu Chen and the other two were to collaborate, they still might not be able to endure against Mo Longzi.

Su Xuan, He Yao and the rest had also thought about this point, since a stretch of graveness was still present on their faces. Much joy and happiness from Luo Li and Li Xuantong defeating their opponents had dissipated away as a result.

Wanting to break and reverse the progress of this situation was truly too difficult.

Within the sky, pervaded by the attentive gazes of the myriad of people around, Mu Chen deeply frowned as he looked towards the distant Mo Longzi, The latter's entire body was radiating with a baleful aura, and wanting to deal with him would be extremely thorny.

"That fellow's strength has increased yet again." said Li Xuantong as he deeply frowned, while an ugly expression appeared on his face. Naturally, he was able to feel that the current Mo Longzi had become stronger, compared to before.

"Are you still able to fight?' asked Li Xuantong after looking at Mu Chen's injuries.

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head. Clenching his fists, his black pupils faintly sparkled, almost as if he was thinking about

something.

“Why not hand him to me?” Luo Li spoke out in a soft voice.

This gave a shock to both Mu Chen and Li Xuantong, causing Mu Chen to faintly wrinkle his eyebrows, while cold and frosty streams of light seemed to surface within his black eyes. Furiously clenching his hands tightly, he lightly shooking his head and replied, “It’s better for me to do it.”

“Can you?” asked Li Xuantong with slight doubt. He was clear about Luo Li’s background. Therefore, her daring to say that she was able to deal with Mo Longzi didn’t cause him to feel shocked and make a fuss. However, it was different for Mu Chen. After all, there was still some disparity between him and Luo Li. Being able to force Mo Longzi to such a step was already a rather outstanding matter in Li Xuantong’s eyes.

If he was to go a step further, Mu Chen might have to pay an extremely disastrous price.

Luo Li’s clear, big eyes stared towards Mu Chen. Looking at the wounds and injuries that covered the latter’s body, pain erupted in her heart once again, while bits of resentment and frustration started to rise within her heart. Although she knew that Mu Chen really wanted to to stand before her and protect her, could it really be that he loved for her to stand at the side while seeing him fighting till he was completely covered in cuts and bruises?

Didn’t he know that this would only make her feel even more pain within her heart?

Luo Li bit her lips with her pearly white teeth. She wasn’t willing to refute Mu Chen in front of people. Therefore, she only tilted her lovable face sideways, without saying any more words. However, her appearance and posture only had the effect of clearly showing her current feelings. She was angry.

Shrugging his shoulders, faint jealousy erupted within Li

Xuantong's heart as he was able to spot her emotions hidden under her actions. Being able to cause Luo Li, who was usually quiet and independent, without having any fondness for material objects, as well as showing any sadness and grief, to reveal such an angry emotion, it was already a matter that would cause jealousy and envy in people.

At least, she would only get angry when it involved people that truly held a place within her heart.

Looking at the beautiful face of Luo Li, which was as exquisite as porcelain, Mu Chen couldn't help laughing out. This was the first time that he had seen her being angry towards him. Extending his hand to grasp the slender and jade-like hand of the young girl, the latter originally wanted to retreat her hand. However, seeing the wounds and injuries that covered all of Mu Chen's body, she was unable to rouse this little temper of hers. Giving up, she allowed him to hold her hand. Through her little red mouth gently poured out in a fit of pique.

"I know that you've some hidden trump cards up your sleeves. And, once you use them, you'll definitely be stronger than me..." Mu Chen spoke out softly and slowly. "However, I think that you should know the consequences that would result if you use those trump cards."

Hearing his words, Luo Li faintly gawked, before proceeding to bite her lips as she thought, Mu Chen's intuition is very sharp. Although there are some matters that I haven't spoken to him about, he was able to sense them. Indeed, she had some strong and powerful trump cards. However, once they were used, her grandfather, Luo Tianshen, might be able to sense them.

After all, she was the next Empress of the Luo God Clan. The Luo God Clan couldn't possibly let her leave the clan without having the slightest bit of self-protection. Furthermore, once she used some of those trump cards, that would indicate that she had met with danger. These kinds of matters weren't things that Luo

Tianshen was willing to see.

Therefore, if those trump cards were used, Luo Tianshen might be resorted to take action and bring Luo Li back to the Luo God Clan. If that happened, the time when Luo Li and Mu Chen would separate would be pushed forward.

Mu Chen really treasured the times that he was spending together with Luo Li. Unwilling to see such a scene, he had, therefore, resorted to use such a method to do his utmost to keep Luo Li out of harm's way. Thus, he was willing to assume those so-called 'dangers' and the so-called 'fighting' all by himself.

"I just...want to spend more time with you. Therefore, please don't blame for my selfish protection of you." Mu Chen continued speaking as he slowly grasped Luo Li's slender and jade-like hands. The voice ringing out from him slowly seeped into Luo Li's heart, causing ripples to surface within, while completely dissipating the slight bit of anger and resentment that were present.

Luo Li gently nodded her head as a faint smile surfaced on her beautiful and jade-like face, appearing exceptionally soul-stirring.

"Relax. I won't show off and try to be brave. If I'm truly unable to deal with him, you can take action then. What do you say?" said Mu Chen with a faint smile.

"Okay," replied Luo Li and she obediently nodded her head.

"You truly have a way to deal with Mo Longzi?" After giving a sigh, Li Xuantong spoke out.

"I'll try my best to attempt that."

Mu Chen nodded his head as he gave his reply. Staring at Mo Longzi in the far distance, chilling intent erupted from his black pupils as he spoke out, "However, I also need you two to help fight for a little bit of time."

"Okay!" Li Xuantong didn't have any bit of hesitation as he immediately agreed.

“Please do.”

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen didn’t continue talking as his eyes unexpectedly started to close, bit by bit. This caused countless people to feel shocked. Could this Mu Chen be attempting to prepare a powerful Spiritual Array once again? However, why don’t we feel any fluctuations of a Spiritual Array?

“Hmph! Still with those deceitful acts!”

Upon seeing this scene, the eyes of the distant Mo Longzi had also contracted. After being faced against Mu Chen’s methods on innumerable occasions, it had to be said that even he felt some fear and dread surfacing within his heart. Naturally, he wouldn’t give his enemies a chance to flip the situation around, since the current him also had the strength to overturn the situation, after all. However, even if he was to win, he already had to pay an extremely high price. Therefore, he would absolutely not let such a chance to reappear for his enemies.

Whoosh!

Clenching his hands, boundless Spiritual Energy swept of from Mo Longzi before sweeping throughout the horizon. In the next instant, a shiver shook throughout his body as he explosively shot forward.

Seeing the reaction of the latter, Li Xuantong immediately rushed up. Spiritual Energy revolved to his maximum capability as it proceeded to envelop over the incoming Mo Longzi.

“Scram off!”

Faced against Li Xuantong’s obstruction, Mo Longzi gave a cold sneer as he sent a fist rumbling out. No fanciful moves were used, with only boundless and overbearing Spiritual Energy to his maximum capability, they were sweeping out along his fist.

Bang!

Two boundless Spiritual Energies smashed head-on against each

other, causing a loud bang to resound out. Li Xuantong's body furiously shook as he was sent flying back seemingly in an instant. Blood surfaced and dripped down from the corners of his mouth. Only after personally crossing hands with Mo Longzi did he understand how tyrannical the latter was.

Bang!

Just as Li Xuantong was sent flying back, a swift and fierce stream of Sword Aura descended once again from the sky, smashing heavily against Mo Longzi's body.

Hoisting her longsword, Luo Li swiftly shot out, while displaying her swift and fierce attacks.

Using all of their methods, the two tried their utmost to tangle and hold Mo Longzi back. This spectacle caused countless people to hold their breaths, since the two fighting sides had already become rather desperate.

As Li Xuantong and Luo Li were trying their best to delay Mo Longzi, the Divine Soul sitting with Mu Chen's aurasea opened its eyes. In the next instant, with a move, it flew straight towards the centre position of the aurasea.

Within was a dark purplish Mandala flower. A jet-black demonic pillar stood erect within the centre of the flower, while purple-coloured chains wrapped around its body, sealing it within.

This was the "Great Meru Demonic Pillar" that Mu Chen had previously obtained within the Spiritual Treasury of the White Dragon Sovereign. However, due to this pillar being too ominous, if not for the suppression by the mysterious black paper within Mu Chen's body, his mind and reason might have already been corroded by the ominous and demonic energies radiating from it. Therefore, ever since obtaining it, Mu Chen did not dare to recklessly move and use it.

However, the current situation before him, he had to activate

and use it. If not, it was simply too difficult for them to deal with Mo Longzi in his current state.

Raising his head, Mu Chen fiercely gazed at the “Great Meru Demonic Pillar” in front of him, before speaking out in a low and deep voice, “If you’re not willing to be sealed forever in this place, you better collaborate with me for a bit!”

Humm! Humm!

As Mu Chen’s voice rang out, black rays of brilliance unexpectedly erupted from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Fiendish and demonic energies started to radiate, appearing as if they wanted to sweep towards Mu Chen.

Chi! Chi!

However, before the demonic aura could scatter out, purple rays of brilliance erupted from the dark purplish Mandala flower. Upon coming into contact with the purple light, the demonic aura was akin to remnant snow coming into contact with lava, rapidly dissolving away.

This Great Meru Demonic Pillar truly was worthy of being called a lethal weapon. It’s so hard to subdue and tame it.

“Let’s see if you have the ability to corrode me!”

A low and deep roar rang out of Mu Chen as his Divine Soul took a step forward. Heading straight for the Mandala flower, it extended its small hands, and came in direct contact with the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

Bang!

At the very instant when the hands of Mu Chen’s Divine Soul made contact with the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, an indescribable demonic energy suddenly pervaded out. Staining the hands of Mu Chen’s Divine Soul, it started to crazily corrode away. Within a short span of a few breath, Mu Chen’s Divine Soul had unexpected turned into a blood-red colour. Appearing akin to a

child covered in blood, one would feel intimidated upon seeing it.

Mu Chen's eyes started to continuously fluctuate between a blood-red and a jet-black colour. As the incomparably overbearing demonic energy rushed within his body, it furiously started to sweep outwards.

That was an extremely powerful energy!

However, it was able to corrode the mind and reasoning of people, and transform them into murderous wild beasts!

Tightly clenching his teeth, Mu Chen resisted this corrosion. He knew that if he wanted to control this demonic energy, he needed to resist this corrosion!

Murderous intent to slaughter and murder rushed erraticly towards Mu Chen's mind and spirit, causing a brutal and tyrannical killing intent to erupt from his heart.

His eyes were nearing a scarlet-red colour.

Humm! Humm!

However, at that moment, the mysterious black paper beneath the Mandala flower started to sparkled with a strange and peculiar luster. In the next instant, the beautiful petals of the Mandala flower started to extend out, before wrapping up Mu Chen's Divine Soul within it.

A clear and refreshing feeling transmitted over, causing the brutal killing intent within Mu Chen's heart to be slowly suppressed.

Mu Chen's eyes suddenly snapped wide open. The outer rim of his eyes appeared in a blood-red colour, while his pupils still remained jet-black with clarity!

As Mu Chen slowly spread open his fists, blood-red energies that blotted the skies hid the skies and covered the earth as they swept out of him akin to a tsunami, before gushing towards Mu Chen's

limbs and bones.

Within the skies of the Western Desolated City, Mu Chen's tightly shut eyes abruptly sprung open at this moment.

At this moment, everyone was able to feel that the temperature of the world had seemingly dropped down in an instant.

# Chapter 378 – Whos More Ferocious?

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energy rippled out from Li Xuantong's body as fists of wind howled about. Bringing along surging Spiritual Energy, they violently rumbled towards the incoming Mo Longzi.

However, facing the former's attacks, Mo Longzi seemingly smashed straight through them. The blood-coloured scales on his body sparkled with a sinisterly cold luster. Sending a palm patting out, Spiritual Energy gushed out, smashing and shattering the numerous Spiritual Energy waves apart.

"Stupid fool!"

After smashing and shattering the Spiritual Energy rushing towards him, killing intent blossomed within Mo Longzi's eyes. Li Xuantong's entanglement caused unbearable irritation to him. Proceeding to take a step forward, his figure appeared right behind the latter akin to a spectre, before sending a palm patting towards the vital part of the latter's back.

Sensing the Spiritual Energy fluctuations radiating from his back, Li Xuantong's face immediately changed. However, he was no ordinary person. A chilling glint flashed within his eyes as a longsword appeared within his hand. Without the slightest intent to evade, swift and fierce Sword Aura was carried along with his longsword as it chopped straight towards Mo Longzi's throat.

He had unexpectedly wanted to trade his life for Mo Longzi's!

"Hmph!"

With a cold snort, Mo Longzi extended his other palm, making a grab towards the sword tip that was being thrust straight at him. Sharp Sword Aura slashed across the blood-coloured scales, causing ear-piercing screeches to ring out. Although it left a wound on Mo Longzi's palm, the sword was finally stopped by him.

Whoosh!

Just as Mo Longzi had stopped Li Xuantong's Sword Aura, and was about to take the latter's life, extremely swift and fierce whooshing sounds furiously rang out behind him as a sword ray was thrust straight towards Mo Longzi's back like a falling star.

That ray caused the scales across Mo Longzi's body to tighten, as he could feel some threat from it. This threat was far from something Li Xuantong could create.

A flash appeared in Mo Longzi's eyes as he instantly proceeded to ignore Li Xuantong. After all, the attack heading towards his back possessed more threat than the latter.

However, as he was about to turn his body over, Li Xuantong took the opportunity to advance. Extending his hand, he locked up Mo Longzi's other hand, completely ignoring the extreme danger of his actions.

"You!"

A cold glint flashed within Mo Longzi's eyes.This Li Xuantong truly is very ruthless and thorny. He actually intends to risk himself to allow her attack to land on me!

With a sneer, Mo Longzi's body suddenly shook as the blood-coloured scales around his entire body erupted with dazzling brilliance. In the next instant, a powerful energy erupted from him, appearing akin to waves of blood.

Bang!

Li Xuantong was immediately sent flying back, spurting a mouthful of blood in the process. As for the sword ray that had launched at sneak attack on his back, it was also shattered by the blood waves. A shiver shook through Luo Li's body as she hastily retreated dozens of steps. The blood and Aura within her body churned and surged around, while paleness flashed across her beautiful face.

Across the horizon, Mo Longzi arrogantly stood in the sky. Looking towards the miserable-looking Li Xuantong and Luo Li, the expression radiating out from his eyes grew increasingly malevolent. Clenching his hands, the scales across his body turned dim, while the baleful aura radiating from him grew increasingly thick and dense.

“You two don’t even possess the qualifications to fight with me to a draw!”

Li Xuantong’s face was deathly pale, while the Spiritual Energy around his body was in total chaos. He had already suffered injuries from his previous life-or-death struggle against Gui Xiong. After engaging in another all-out fight, he had piled more injuries on his existing ones.

Compared to him, Luo Li was slightly better off, but not far away. Mu Chen was not willing for her to use some of her trump cards. Therefore, she could only rely on the swiftness and fierceness of her Luo Shen Sword to create a threat for Mo Longzi.

However, anyone could tell that if this continued, the two of them wouldn’t be able to endure for much longer.

“Looks like I’ll have to kill one of you for you all to get it!” Mo Longzi roared with a malevolent sneer, before locking on towards the wounded Li Xuantong. Taking a step forward, he headed straight towards the latter to take his life.

Bang!

However, just as Mo Longzi was prepared to kill one of his enemies, a demonic Aura that blotted the skies rushed towards the heavens. Seemingly in an instant, it had pervaded across the entire stretch of the world.

This fiendishness was much, much more overbearing than the baleful aura radiating from Mo Longzi’s body!

Frightened and terrified expressions appeared on the faces of

countless people.

Even the expression of the green-robed male within the large hall faintly changed as he turned his gaze around. In the next instant, what they saw was Mu Chen standing tall in the distant sky.

At this moment, the youth opened his tightly shut eyes, showing off blood-red pupils, which had changed from their original black colour, and were now pervaded by murderous intent. However, within the depths of those eyes, clarity was still present. This showed that he had still retained his mind and reason, and was not being corroded by the frightening demonic energies radiating from him.

“Such overbearing demonic energies... it's actually more formidable than the baleful aura radiating from Mo Longzi. Exactly where did this Mu Chen come from?” The green-robed male muttered as his expression turned grave. The demonic energies radiating from Mu Chen had caused even him to feel shocked and astonishment.

Mo Longzi’s expression had also violently contorted at this moment. Looking at Mu Chen, whose entire body was radiating with blood-red demonic energies, a thick feeling of inconceivability erupted from his eyes

That was due to the little bit of familiar flavor within the demonic energies radiating out from Mu Chen. This was the demonic Aura that was cultivated by the people of their Demonic Dragon Palace. However, it was even more fierce and overbearing than what they could cultivate.

“Exactly what kind of person is this bastard?!” Huge waves of shock shook through Mo Longzi’s heart. This demonic energy was absolutely not cultivated by that Mu Chen!

“Before you kill him, I’ll finished you off first!”

The blood-red demonic energy wrapped around Mu Chen’s body,

causing his originally handsome face to appear rather terrifying, almost as if he would turn into a god of slaughter and carnage seemingly in the next instant, and unleash a bout of massacre.

“You talk big!” Mo Longzi growled as he gnashed his teeth. Mu Chen’s change had caused him to feel great unease. However, he still hung a sneer on his mouth.

As Mu Chen stared at Mo Longzi with his blood-red eyes, demonic energy travelled back and forth under the skin of his entire body, flooding his limbs and bones. This completely different power caused his entire body to feel uncomfortable. Fortunately, being much, much stronger than he previously was when he had entered the grave of the White Dragon Sovereign, he wasn’t being tortured by the same demonic energy to the point of wishing he was dead.

Mo Longzi had also tightly stared at Mu Chen. Their glares crossed paths in the air, while unconcealable cold and sinister killing intent erupted from their eyes.

“I’ll slaughter you first!”

Mo Longzi’s gazed finally turned into one of exception malevolence. Taking a step forward, the air in front of him exploded as he disappeared in an instant. Upon reappearing, he was already at Mu Chen’s back. A sharp palm with fingers akin to dragon’s claws violently patted down on Mu Chen’s crown without the slightest bit of mercy.

Bang!

Incomparably overbearing demonic energies erupted from Mu Chen’s body. Clenching his five fingers tightly to form a fist, he sent a punch rumbling out. A wave of blood surged out, appearing as if a sea of blood was brought forth by it. Snatching the initiative from Mo Longzi, his fists of wind smashed straight against the latter’s chest.

Frightening energies exploded under Mu Chen's fist, exploding under Mu Chen's punch, as visible fluctuations consisting of waves of blood extended from the point of impact.

Boom!

A deep sound rang out. In the next instant, everyone's eyes shrunk as they saw Mo Longzi, who was seemingly unstoppable, unexpectedly being sent flying back hundreds of feet due to Mu Chen's punch. The blood-coloured scales on his chest were smashed and shattered apart, causing blood to flow out, dripping down along his scales.

Whoosh!

Astonished clamoring noises instantly erupted throughout the entire city. The changes in the spectacle before them had really changed too quickly. Who would have thought that Mu Chen, who was suppressed by Mo Longzi to the point of not having a single ounce of contention left, would actually send Mo Longzi flying back in such an overwhelming fashion!

That was an expert at the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase!

Looking at the spectacle before them in a daze, Su Xuan and the rest were unexpectedly unable to regain their minds for a moment. All of them didn't understand what they saw. Why would Mu Chen's strength suddenly rise to such a dramatic degree? Was it due to the demonic energies radiating from him?

Floating within the sky, Li Xuantong and Luo Li were gawking in shock. The latter was somewhat in a better condition, as she was filled with various kinds of confidence for Mu Chen that was unrelated to any reason. As for Li Xuantong, a slightly spectacular expression was currently displayed on his face, while the gaze he sent out towards Mu Chen appeared exceedingly complicated. This Freshman, who was previously someone that didn't even matter, had unknowingly grown to a step that had exceeded even him within a short span of a year...

In the distant sky, Mo Longzi's face turned extremely ugly as he stabilised his body. Looking towards the shattered scales on his chest, he instantly turned absentminded for a moment. I was actually injured by that Mu Chen?

I was injured to such a degree by a brat at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase?

Mo Longzi's face started to uncontrollably contort. In the next instant, with a raged-filled roar, the blood-coloured scales covering his body instantaneously erupted with a bloody light once again. Akin to a bolt of lightning, he explosively shot out, launching frightening attacks that instantly attempted to envelope Mu Chen.

He didn't believe that he would actually suffer defeat by the hands of a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Freshman after activating the Dragon Transformation Blood Art!

Bang! Bang!

As the two of them smashed into each other, astonishing demonic energies swept out akin to tidal waves, while incomparably frightening Spiritual Energy shock waves continued to radiate out. The aftermath created by those Spiritual Energy shock waves caused the scalps of quite a few people to turn numb.

A cold and detached expression was hung on Mu Chen's face, while his eyes remained scarlet-red. As the two of them crossed paths, furious punches rumbled out akin to bolt of lightning striking out. Bringing along boundless demonic energies, they smashed head-on against Mo Longzi's fists of wind.

Boom!

A gigantic wave of blood hundreds of feet wide rushed across the horizon, its momentum and power was shockingly dreadful and terrifying.

The bodies of the two them shook, before flying back over a thousand metres away. However, Mo Longzi's face grew

increasingly ugly as his hands continuously trembled. The layers of scales on his hands were already shattered, while blood continued to flow out and drip down.

His baleful aura had fallen completely short of Mu Chen' fiendishness. In a head-on collision, his baleful aura was, instead, corroded by Mu Chen's demonic energy. Furthermore, when it had pour into his body, it caused his blood and Aura to churn and surge around.

Furthermore, he could faintly sense the energy within his body was gradually declining. This was the after effects of the Dragon Transformation Blood Art. If he didn't end the fight quickly, he might truly be killed by Mu Chen.

"I don't believe that I can't kill a Freshman of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Layer upon layer of rampaging emotions folded within Mo Longzi's eyes. In the next instant, a rage-filled roar rang out from his mouth as he clapped his hands together to form a seal. A ray of brilliance shot from his crown and rushed towards the sky. Transforming into a black heavy sword, it hummed and howled as Spiritual Energy swept out of it. As the heavy sword drastically expanded, it instantly grew to a size that was a hundred feet long. In the next instant, an extremely frightening Sword Aura swept from it.

The blood-coloured scales on Mo Longzi's body unexpectedly shot out explosively. Akin to waves of blood, they encased the heavy sword, transforming it into something akin to a blood-coloured demonic dragon, radiating with frightening fluctuations.

"Demonic Dragon Divine Art, Slash of the Broken Dragon!"

Mo Longzi gave a furious roar as he took a step forward as the black heavy sword explosively shot out. A long roar rang out of the blood-red dragon. As the sword flew out, it seemingly shattered the confines of the universe, enveloping directly over Mu Chen.

The might of that one sword could slash the heavens and earth apart!

This Mo Longzi was using his life to launch his attack!

“You’re betting your life? Let me accompany you!”

“Let’s see who will destroy who!”

Raising his head, Mu Chen stared at the frightening attack that was coming his way with scarlet-red eyes. A low and deep roar rang out from his throat, resounding across the world. At the same time, the dark purplish Mandala flower within his aurasea started to slowly blossom. As the petals started to blossom, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar that was sealed erupted with astonishing demonic energies as they explosively rushed out.

Bang!

The fiendishness rushed from Mu Chen’s crown towards the heavens, before transforming into a black demonic pillar that was approximately a thousand feet long that stood arrogantly in the sky!

At this instant, the heavens seemed to have turned dark and dim.

A Demonic Aura surged up as fiendish energies blotted the skies!

# Chapter 379 – Might of the Demonic Pillar

The demonic energies that blotted the skies swept out across the sky at this moment. Hiding the skies and covering the earth, even the scorching sun in the sky was completely covered by them. In an instant, this entire stretch of the world was submerged in a dusky shadow.

Countless people looked in shock towards the gigantic demonic pillar that had appeared behind Mu Chen. That was a demonic pillar approximately a thousand feet long. It appeared akin to a pillar that stood tall, hoisting up the heavens, while radiating with frightening fluctuations.

Faced against this gigantic demonic pillar, even the face of the green-robed male within the large hall had started to uncontrollably contort, while shock and terror flashed within his eyes.

Exactly where did that demonic pillar come from?! It's actually terrifying to such a degree!

Across the horizon, Mu Chen had completely disregarded the countless shocked and terrified gazes directed at him. Fiendish energies were accumulating crazily within his scarlet eyes. Since Mo Longzi had bet his all, why couldn't he do the same?

If he were to lose, not only would it cause everyone from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy present here to fall into a dire predicament, it would also cause the academy to suffer a blow to her face in the Northern Heavens Continent. Obviously, this was a situation that he was not willing to see.

As a scarlet shadow erupted within Mu Chen's eyes, a low roar rang out from his mouth. Doing a empty hug in front of him, the gigantic thousand foot long demonic pillar unexpectedly trembled, before starting to swing forward.

Bang! Bang!

Unexpectedly, the Spiritual Aura within the heavens and earth turned into a gigantic Spiritual Aura vortex due the the swing of the demonic pillar. Tens of thousands of Spiritual Energies between the heavens and earth started to crazily condense together into the vortex.

Although this demonic pillar wasn't the actual body of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and was merely a projection. The might and intimidation it possessed had clearly exceeded Mu Chen's expectations by a large, large margin.

This immemorial weapon truly lived up to its name. Although Mu Chen had yet to truly see the might of this divine weapon, he was certainly positive that this Great Meru Demonic Pillar would not be weaker than the so-called 'Divine Weapons'. The only downside was that thing was too fearful. If he were to lose control of it, it would devour him instead, before being corroded by the fiendish energies within it.

If not for the mysterious black paper within Mu Chen's body, he might have been affected by this Great Meru Demonic Pillar to a situation that was worse than death.

Bang!

The Spiritual Aura vortex continued to crazily revolve as the scarlet shadow in Mu Chen's eyes increased in great density. With an explosive cry, countless people stared in shock at him, who was still hugging air. At this instant, the thousand foot long demonic pillar had shot out, heavily smashing against the heavy sword encased by a blood-red giant dragon.

The sky seemed to explode apart under the wave of the demonic pillar. In the city beneath, all structures within a thousand foot radius had completely collapsed, with even the ground having sunken down. Those few people who were unable to evade in time spurted blood from their mouths as they were sent flying back.

Boom!

Appearing akin to an irresistible force, the black demonic pillar violently swung down, before smashing head-on against the black heavy sword.

Ding!

A metallic sound resounded out akin to a clap of thunder, while the blood-red giant dragon wrapping around the heavy sword started to erupt with mournful cries. Cracks started to extend from its surface, and with a bang, it exploded apart.

As the blood-red dragon exploded, boundless Spiritual Energies erupted from the heavy sword in a defensive attempt. However, when the demonic pillar came pressing down, the heavy sword instantly started to intensely vibrate. The Spiritual light coming from the body of the sword seemingly turned dim in an instant and with a bang, it rapidly descended from the sky before shooting to the earth below.

That all-out strike of Mo Longzi's. Under the demonic pillar, he was closed to being squashed by it.

In the far distance, upon seeing this, a cold and chilling sensation instantly swept across within his body. My strongest attack was broken with such ease. Exactly what is that damnable black pillar?!

He was unable to answer this question of his. While he was still stunned in shock, he quickly saw, in terror, that the black demonic pillar had, unexpectedly, not shown any signs of dissipation after smashing and sending his heavy sword flying back. Instead, while bringing along a gigantic Spiritual Energy vortex, it had enveloped over him.

The space in his surroundings had seemingly froze up at this instant.

Terror finally erupted out from Mo Longzi's eyes. With a hasty shake of his sleeve, a palm-sized black scale flew out. Rapidly

expanding in size upon appearing, it transformed into a scaled shield, standing guard in front of him. This was the strongest defense he was able to muster.

Whoosh!

The gigantic shadow came enveloping over. Upon making contact with the demonic pillar, the black-scaled shield was smashed by the irresistible fiendish energies that overflowed from it till cracks started appearing. With a muffled sound ringing out, it shattered and exploded right before Mo Longzi's terrified and despairing eyes.

Unable to be blocked, the demonic pillar descended, before finally landing against Mo Longzi's body.

Bang!

A deep muffled sound that caused people's skin to turn numb reverberated seemingly through the gigantic city. At this moment, everyone could see a black figure shooting down from the sky, before violently piercing straight towards the ground.

The ground shook and trembled as ripples visible to the naked-eye radiated from the epicentre of the crash site. A thousand foot long radius of earth was shattered apart and had collapsed...

Dust plumes rose into the sky.

About a thousand metres from the city, the black demonic pillar in the sky finally came to a stop, before slowly turning illusionary and dissipating away completely.

The demonic energies that blotted the sky had also dissipated, allowing warm sunlight to illuminate down once again. However, it was still unable to disperse the chilling cold everyone felt within their bodies. Staring blankly at the thin figure floating in the sky, cold sweat had covered their entire backs. If the black demonic pillar had continued its descent, how many people in this city would have been killed by it...?

In the sky, the scarlet shadow within Mu Chen's eyes rapidly subsided. Proceeding to cover his mouth, an intense bout of coughs shook through him as blood spewed out between the gaps of his hand. At this moment, his face had appeared exceedingly pale.

The demonic energies were truly extremely powerful. Although he had borrowed them and turned the entire situation around, it had clearly caused extremely serious injuries to him. If not for him having cultivated his Lightning God's Physique, allowing his fleshly body to become much stronger, he might have already perished due to his heavy injuries.

Wiping off the bloodstains at the corners of his mouth, his eyes continued their cold stare towards the place that was pervaded by dust plumes below. With a wave of his sleeve, a hurricane blew out, blowing away and scattering all the dust clouds present there.

As the dust clouds scattered, an incomparably large and deep pit appeared in the ground. Within the centre of the deep pit was Mo Longzi, his body was covered in blood while he was lying within. The bones throughout his entire body seemed to have been shattered, causing him to be unable to move.

The current Mo Longzi wasn't the domineering and flamboyant guy from before. His miserable appearance gave people a flavor of a stray dog.

Looking at the scene in the distance, the faces of Teng Long and the rest of his group were overwhelmed with shock and horror, while shivers ran throughout their bodies. This ending was clearly out of their expectations. Who would have thought that Mo Longzi, with his torrential baleful aura, would actually be defeated in the end?

Furthermore, he had suffered defeat in the hands of a Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy Freshman!

Mu Chen turned his gaze towards them, causing a wave of coldness to sweep through the bodies of Teng Long and the rest.

Although they knew that the current condition of the former was extremely poor, the terror and dread within their hearts resulted in them not even daring to attempt any sort of confrontation against Mu Chen.

Giving no regards to them, Mu Chen waved his hands towards Su Xuan and the rest. The latter few people immediately rushed forward, heading straight towards the Eastern Desolated Terrace. Splitting apart the iron bars, they immediately rescued Lin Zheng and the other two from within.

Faced against their rescue, Teng Long and his group didn't dare to obstruct them anymore. The only thought running through their minds was the hope that the god of slaughter in front of them wouldn't come and find trouble with them. As of now, they clearly didn't have the guts and courage to have another confrontation with Mu Chen.

Seeing that Lin Zheng and the other two had been saved, Mu Chen breathed a sigh of relief, before sending a glare brimming with killing intent towards Mo Longzi. Although the latter was completely covered in serious injuries, this kind of enemy had to be completely eliminated, and cannot be allowed to stay alive!

A chilling glint sparkled in Mu Chen's eyes as he extended his finger. Tapping the space before him, Spiritual Energy burning with black flames instantly swept out. Akin to a bolt of lightning, it shot straight towards Mo Longzi's head.

He wanted kill Mo Longzi here!

Woosh!

Seeing Mu Chen launch such a vicious attack, people started to cry out in shock. This Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy Freshman truly wasn't merciful. At this moment, he still didn't have the intent to show any mercy.

Looking at the ray of Spiritual Energy shooting towards him, Mo

Longzi's face instantly contorted. If he was at his prime condition, an attack of this degree would naturally not faze him at all. However, at this very moment, all the bones in his body had been broken and shattered, resulting in him being unable to dodge the incoming attack. If he was to get struck by it, he would definitely be hard pressed to escape death!

Mo Longzi tried to struggle, but was unable to even move an inch. At this moment, the only thing he could do was see the ray of Spiritual Energy shoot straight towards him as the terror of death erupted within the depths of his eyes.

The ray of Spiritual Energy shot instantly across the horizon. However, just as it was able to kill and destroy Mo Longzi, the space in his surroundings started to warp and distort. Turning to something akin to a spatial screen, it protected Mo Longzi within it.

Sssssshhhhhh!

As the ray of Spiritual Energy struck the spatial screen, there was not the slightest bit of movement on it, before it was completely annihilated.

Seeing this Mu Chen's expression immediately changed, before roaring out with a fierce cry, "Who?!"

The faces of Luo Li and Li Xuantong had also sank down, while vigilance appeared within their eyes. A person that was able to distort space at will was absolutely not someone that they could deal with.

"Haha. A pretty good seedling has sprouted out from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time." An indifferent laughing voice suddenly resounded across this stretch of the world. Although it wasn't resonant, it caused the entire city to turn deathly silent.

The expression of the green-robed male in the large hall had also

changed, before shooting into the air. Looking gravely at the distorted space, fluctuations started radiating out from there, before a figure slowly condensed out from it akin to a liquid.

The figure was dressed in a black robe, with an approximate middle-aged appearance. His hair was partially white, while his eyes were akin to a pair of black holes, unable to see their depths. At this moment, his hands were crossed behind his back, while a faint smile hung on his face as he looked towards Mu Chen floating in the sky.

“Black Dragon Sovereign?!”

Upon seeing the figure, Li Xuantong’s face violently contorted as he cried out in overwhelming shock.

Shock ran through Mu Chen’s mind and heart. Black Dragon Sovereign? Exactly what does this Demonic Dragon Palace want to do? Even a Sovereign level existence has appeared!

The entire Western Desolated City was completely stirred up at this instant as they looked with shocked eyes at the black-robed figure. Although there wasn’t any Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from his body, one could faintly feel a pressure radiating from him, causing all the people in the city to not dare to make a single gasp.

That’s a Sovereign, a terrifying existence that could erase this city from the face of the earth with a flip of his hand!

That was a super expert that could be considered at the peak of this entire Northern Heavens Continent!

“Indeed, I sense a faint flavor of an old friend from your body…”

The Black Dragon Sovereign smiled. From his appearance till now, he had yet to take a look at the heavily injured Mo Longzi, and only continued to stare at Mu Chen. Although his expression appeared rather warm and gentle, it caused people to feel a chill coming from their bones.

Mu Chen's face turned dark and sunken. Faced against an existence at the Sovereign Stage, he was simply unable to put up a shred of resistance.

"Haha. Looks like the Great Meru Demonic Pillar has landed in your hands from the White Dragon Sovereign, huh?" The Black Dragon Sovereign spoke out with a sigh. Extending his palm, he said in a warm and gentle voice, "That's the item of our Demonic Dragon Palace. If you hand it to me, I can let you all return safely."

Mu Chen's expression immediately changed. He hadn't used the true Great Meru Demonic Pillar. However, he never imagined that it would be discovered by the Black Dragon Sovereign.

"In your dreams!"

Mu Chen gnashed his teeth. Although the other party was a Sovereign Stage expert, it was not an easy matter to make him obediently hand over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!

"Although taking action against a younger generation would be slightly overboard, I think people will understand that it's for the sake of retrieving the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace," said the Black Dragon Sovereign with a warm and gentle smile. In the next instant, with a clench of his hand, Mu Chen discovered that the space surrounding him had frozen up. So much so that he couldn't even move a single inch of his body.

Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly. Is this the strength of a Sovereign? Such disparity! Regardless of the number of methods or trump cards he possessed, he was still unable to truly meet such a confrontation!

As the Black Demon Sovereign gave a tap towards the space before him, Mu Chen instantly felt the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body faintly tremble. It even started to show signs of wanting to leave his body. However, it was at this moment that the Mandala Flower started to radiate its mysterious purple light, fortunately locking it in place.

“Oh?”

A shocked expression flashed across the face of the Black Dragon Sovereign, before shooting a deep look at Mu Chen and saying, “So, you have some treasures within you, huh? That’s why you’re able to endure the fiendish energies from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar…However, that’s the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace, and I’ll definitely take it back today.”

As his voice rang out, black patterns seemed to extend out from his palm. Achieving something akin to a resonance to the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within Mu Chen’s body, the trembling of the latter grew increasingly intense.

Mu Chen’s face grew increasingly pale, since he could feel that he was quickly reaching the point of being unable to suppress the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body.

“It should come out now!”

The Black Dragon Sovereign gave a faint smile as he said that. At that instant, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within Mu Chen’s body violently shook. However, just as the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was about to break free from its seal, the space in front of Mu Chen started to violently warp and distort. An imposing figure surfaced from thin air, a broad hand landed on Mu Chen’s shoulder. A boundless and expansive power radiated out from it, completely suppressing the shock and turmoil within Mu Chen’s body.

With a wave of his sleeve, the frozen space around Mu Chen shattered. Turning his eyes that were as deep and abstruse as a starry sky, which were previously covered in indifference, he looked straight at the Black Demon Sovereign as the warm and gentle expression was slowly dissipating away.

“Black Dragon Sovereign, you’re breaking the rules.”

A monotone voice resounded across the sky as a terrifying

pressure pervaded out. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura of the heavens and earth seemed to have stopped in their tracks.

The hearts of countless people started shivering and trembling. That kind of frightening strength yet again?

Staring at the majestic and imposing figure in the sky, the gaze coming from the Black Dragon Sovereign started to gradually turn cold and icy.

“Haha. I never imagined that Dean Tai Cang would actually show up personally…you truly caught me by surprise.”

# Chapter 380 – Three Great Sovereigns

“Dean Tai Cang?!”

“That’s the Dean of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Tai Cang?”

“I never imagined that even this person would appear…”

When the words of indifference rang out from the Black Dragon Sovereign and resounded across this stretch of the world, a shock went through the hearts of countless experts within the Western Desolated City.

The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was like a leviathan within the Northern Heavens Continent. Being its Dean, Tai Cang was a peak-level expert standing at the extreme top of this continent. No one ever imagined that there would actually be two Sovereign Stage existences appearing within the Western Desolated City. This was a rather inconceivable matter.

After all, Sovereign Stage experts possessed the qualifications to be an overlord of a region, and were usually extremely rare to be spotted. Ordinary people would be difficult to catch a glimpse of them, let alone the leaders of the gigantic powers like the Black Dragon Sovereign and Dean Tai Cang…

The turmoil happening within Mu Chen’s body gradually returned to normalcy due to the large and board hand on his shoulder. Exhaling deeply, he raised his head to look at the imposing figure in front of him, while happiness uncontrollably erupted from his mind. Since Dean Tai Cang had revealed himself, it looked like he wouldn’t need to worry about today’s matters anymore.

“Thank’s a lot Dean Tai Cang.” Mu Chen spoke out in gratitude. If not for Dean Tai Cang taking action, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within his body would be snatched away by the Black Dragon

Sovereign. As of now, he had a headache dealing with the cruel and untamed nature of it. However, he knew that when the day came that he was truly able to tame this Great Meru Demonic Pillar, it would definitely provide an extremely powerful strength to him. Therefore, he wasn't willing to hand it over.

Dean Tai Cang wave his hand in reply. Turning his head over, he cast his deep and wise gaze towards Mu Chen and said with a smile, "I truly never expected that you, little fellow, would concealed it so deeply."

Mu Chen gave an awkward laugh in reply. Looks like Dean Tai Cang knew about the matter of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within my body.

"Let it be. Since you're able to obtain it, you have a predestined affinity with it. However, that thing's too ominous. If you continue leaving it within you, I'm not exactly sure if it will be a greatness or a disaster."

Dean Tai Cang didn't say much about this, before shooting a look at Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest in the distance and said, "However, for this matter, I really have to thank you. If not, the face of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would not be too good right now."

"You're making it sound too serious, Dean. I'm also a student of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Helping the academy is also something I should do." Mu Chen replied with a smile.

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang nodded his head, before turning his gaze towards the cold and dark-looking Black Dragon Sovereign below. Stars seemed to appear within his deep and abstruse eyes as he spoke out, "Black Dragon Sovereign, your actions here seem somewhat overboard."

Staring at Dean Tai Cang, the Spiritual Qi flowing within the world seemed to have frozen solid under the interlocking gazes between the two, while a pressure that was hard to discribe started

to permeate throughout the world.

Under this pressure, countless experts felt their bodies becoming seemingly heavy, while the Spiritual Energy within their bodies showed signs of freezing up. Instantly, shock and terror filled their hearts. Sovereign Stage experts were actually that frightening? They were able to create a pressure that was more terrifying that what was generated by Mu Chen's fight before even taking action!

With a wave of his sleeve, the Black Dragon Sovereign gave a faint smile, finally breaking the frightening pressure and heaviness permeating in the air, before replying, "You're making this sound too serious, Dean Tai Cang. For that item, our Demonic Dragon Palace will use all methods and ways to get it back. Therefore, I hope that Dean Tai Cang will be able to let that little friend follow me back to the Demonic Dragon Palace. In that way, our Demonic Dragon Palace will remember this favor from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Hearing those words, countless people quietly grinned. The Demonic Dragon Palace seemingly had an irreconcilable hatred with the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. How was this favor of any use?

Within the sky, Dean Tai Cang gave a smile, before shaking his head and replying, "It's Mu Chen's predestined affinity to obtain it. I've no right to let him hand it over."

He had also heard of the prestige of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar before. If not for the White Dragon Sovereign betraying the Demonic Dragon Palace and bringing it away from them, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy might have had to fight with the Demonic Dragon Palace for a much longer time before they achieved victory. Therefore, he was extremely clear of the formidability of that ancient, ominous weapon. As of now, since it had landed in Mu Chen's hands, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would obviously not let it fall in the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace.

Vortexes seemed to surface within the black hole-like eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign, before speaking out with a deeper voice, “Does that mean that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy really plans to start a war with our Demonic Dragon Palace?”

The entire city turned deathly silent, while shock surfaced within the heart of the green-robed male floating in the distant sky. If the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were to start a battle with the Demonic Dragon Palace, it would definitely become an astonishing war that would shake the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

“Black Dragon Sovereign, are you threatening our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?” However, facing the Black Sovereign's words, which seemed to be filled with the flames of war, a sharp and incisive glare erupted from Dean Tai Cang’s eyes as he gave a slow reply.

“Dean Tai Cang, do you really think that we’re truly afraid of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy after defeating us that year?!”

Not backing down any one bit, the Black Dragon Sovereign took a step forward, immediately appearing in the sky. In the next instant, a gigantic thousand foot wide Spiritual Energy vortex condensed behind his back. The Spiritual Energy of the world crazily surged and erupted, before forming a black figure thousands of feet tall that seemingly towered across the world.

Standing tall within the world, a giant dragon seemed to sit within each of the eyes of the black figure. In a breath of time, storms started howling out, while clouded layers filled the sky as an indescribable power of frightening proportions radiated from it, causing the world to mourn and shudder.

Hiss!

Looking at the black figure thousands of feet long, Mu Chen could not help sucking in a breath of cold air, while shock and

terror filled his heart. Before the black figure, he was akin to an ant facing a human. Without the slightest bit of doubt, if the black figure was to send a hand patting out, he would be hard pressed to escape with his life intact.

This was the power of a Sovereign Stage expert? No wonder they could be considered as the standard of a regional overlord. Compared to the Heavenly Completion Stage, they were as seemingly different as the mud on the ground to the clouds in the sky!

“Sovereign Celestial Body? Black Dragon Sovereign, are you really going to fight with me today?” Dean Tai Cang’s deep and abstruse eyes gazed towards the thousand plus foot long black figure towering over the world. An indifference was still present within his gaze, without any fluctuations as an indifferent sounding voice resounded out.

Standing before his Sovereign Celestial Body, chilling intent erupted from within the eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign. However, he didn’t immediately take action, as he was extremely clear of how tyrannical Dean Tai Cang was. Even he wasn’t able to guarantee a victory against the latter.

Furthermore, once he took action, it might lead to a great war between the two sides. As of now, their Demonic Dragon Palace still wasn’t completely prepared to tear off all the faces against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

However, retreating without obtain a single thing and letting the Great Meru Demonic Pillar fall in the hands of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was something that he was extremely unwilling to do.

Therefore, the Black Dragon Sovereign remained quiet for a moment, with his Sovereign Celestial body yet to dissipate away. Its gigantic shadow shrouded the city, causing countless people to feel a chill running through their bodies. All of them knew their

city was completely unable to endure a fight between two people of their level.

“Haha, these two sirs, our Western Extreme Palace is small, and can’t endure the turmoil of you two.”

Just as the Black Dragon Sovereign was hesitating on whether to take action, a laughing voice resounded across the world. In the next instant, everyone noticed spatial distortions forming across the horizon. Turning into a pathway, a figure stepped out from within.

The figure that appeared was a middle-aged man in green robes. The attitude of this male was extraordinary, capable of causing an overbearing aura to appear with every single move he took. With a glance, anyone could tell that he was an absolutely extraordinary being.

As this person appeared, astonishment and shock was present in the clamoring that immediately broke out within the Western Desolated City.

“That’s the Palace Master of the Western Extreme Palace, the Western Extreme Sovereign?!”

Countless people felt shocked as they thought, Today’s truly lively! Ordinarily, towering over others in lofty positions, commanding and directing over the Northern Heavens Continent, there was, unexpected, three of those Sovereign Stage experts that have appeared before them.

Upon seeing this person, the green-robed male in the distance felt extremely elated. Rushing over, he greeted in a respectful voice, “Father.”

This green-robed male was impressively the Young Palace Master of the Western Extreme Palace, Xi Qinghai. At the same time, he was one of the outstanding people within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Waving his hand towards Xi Qinghai, the Western Extreme Sovereign looked towards the Black Dragon Sovereign and Dean Tai Cang, who were in a confrontation with each other. He had immediately sensed it when the latter two had shown themselves, causing him to immediately rush over. This was, after all, the domain of their Western Extreme Palace. If he was to allow the two of them to duke it out here, it would result in losses for their Western Extreme Palace, something that he was not willing to see.

He was not willing to offend either of the two. Regardless of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy or the Demonic Dragon Palace, both were genuine leviathans of the Northern Heavens Continent. Offending either of them would result in an unhappy matter.

“Haha, so it's the Western Extreme Sovereign.” Looking at the Western Extreme Sovereign that had appeared, Dean Tai Cang gave a laugh, before saying, “Thanks for the hospitality shown towards us for coming here without any invitation.”

With a smile, the Western Extreme Sovereign cupped his hands in reply, appearing rather courteous. Although they were both Sovereigns, he knew that he, being a 3rd Grade Sovereign, was much weaker that Dean Tai Cang.

“These two sirs, please look on the face of our Western Extreme Palace and not fight at this place,” said the Western Extreme Sovereign whist cupping his hands. If it was anyone else that dared to fight here, they might be immediately sent flying with a pat of his hand. However, the two people in front of him, were figures at the peak of the Northern Heavens Continent.

A faint glow flashed within the eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign. In the end, he didn’t say anything with regards to this. With a wave of his sleeve, the thousand plus foot glowing figure behind him started to slowly dissipate, causing the terrifying pressure that radiated from it to follow suit.

He knew that with Dean Tai Cang protecting Mu Chen, he was absolutely unable to retreive the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The only way for that to happen would be for him to summon all the other Sovereigns from their Demonic Dragon Palace. However, if that were to happen, it would mean that they had completely gone to war against the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. On the aspect of strength, they were truly not afraid of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, they had extreme dread for the old smelly bird bastard within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Before their plans were completely perfect, they could only patiently wait and bide their time.

“Tai Cang, your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be proud of ourselves! Very soon, when our Demonic Dragon Palace has completed our preparations, we’ll definitely flatten and decimate your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!” Dark and chilling intent flashed within the eyes of the Black Dragon Sovereign, with a smirk ringing out within his heart. In the next moment, with a wave of his sleeve, a ray of light enveloped the heavily injured Mo Longzi below.

“Tai Cang, the fight of the younger generations below can’t be considered your victory. If your students are truly capable, you should send them to participate in the ‘Divine Spiritual Mountain’ this time and let them test it out. That’s the greatest occasion for the younger generation of our Northern Heavens Continent. Your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was absent for many many years already. This doesn’t suit the fame and reputation of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, right? Or is that you’re afraid to lose face over there?” said the Black Dragon Sovereign with a faint laugh, while amusement and mockery brimmed within his voice.

Not a single fluctuation was present within Dean Tai Cang’s expression as he replied in an indifferent tone. “There’s no need for you to get worried over this. If our Northern Heavens Spiritual

Academy wishes to, we will naturally participate in it."

"Haha, I'll have to look forward to the grand arrival of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, then. I hope that you'll not disappoint us. That's the greatest occasion for the younger generations of our Northern Heavens Continent. Without the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it would be much less spectacular and wonderful, you know?"

The Black Dragon Sovereign gave a hearty laugh, while delight blossomed within his heart. He knew about the heart pains of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. This was caused when their strongest students on their Heavenly Rankings were killed by the peak geniuses of their Demonic Dragon Palace during the Divine Spiritual Mountain that year, resulting in them no longer participating in such an occasion again. If they dared to participate in this occasion again, it would be the best chance for their Demonic Dragon Palace to demonstrate their prestige.

As his laughter resounded out, he grabbed the heavily-injured Mo Longzi in his hand. In the next instant, spatial ripples started to fluctuated around his body as his figure slowly assimilated into it, before completely disappearing from this stretch of the world.

# Chapter 381 – The Three Sovereign Disaster

Following the departure of the Black Dragon Sovereign from the sky of the Western Desolated City, the originally tense atmosphere completely vanished into thin air. The sunlight that fell from the sky seemed to have regained some of its warmth.

Looking at the space where the Black Dragon Sovereign had disappeared, the forehead of Dean Tai Cang's started to slightly wrinkle up, while chilling intent flashed within his abstruse eyes. Over these last few years, there were countless students training in the Northern Heavens Continent that had been buried under the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace. This caused the grudges and grievances of the two sides to turn into a level of hatred that was seemingly irreconcilable.

However, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy couldn't bear to completely wipe the Demonic Dragon Palace off the face of the world, this wasn't an easy task to accomplish. The hidden cards of the Demonic Dragon Palace within the Northern Heavens Continent was, in some words, even more ancient than their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. They were once the Overlords of this continent, all till the appearance of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

In their previous war, although the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had achieved victory, they weren't truly able to destroy the Demonic Dragon Palace into oblivion. The core of their strength still remained, causing the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to maintain constant vigilance, as well as dread, against them. Although they wished to deal with this looming danger once and for all, they would have to be prepared to pay a great price for that. In fact, it might even result in Sovereigns falling from the sky.

This kind of price was something that even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was somewhat unwilling to shoulder.

This was due to the fact that the opponents they had to contend against weren't just merely restricted to the Demonic Dragon Palace in the Northern Heavens Continent. There were still various strong and powerful Spiritual Academies from other continents. The title of being one of the five Great Academies had given fame and reputation to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, while similarly casting them into the limelight. They didn't know how many spiritual academies possessing similarly powerful strength as them were staring at them from the darkness. Once the might of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy weakened, they would take action, snatching away the title of one of the five Great Academies...

This battle would similarly be extremely cruel and bitter.

"What's the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Dean?" asked Mu Chen with slight curiosity.

Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang replied, "That's a sacred ground within the Northern Heavens Continent. It's said to be inherited from the ancient antiquity. It will open once every three years. If one was able to successfully enter the Divine Spiritual Mountain, one would obtain enormous blessings, which is know as the 'Divine Spiritual Baptism'."

"Divine Spiritual Baptism? Is it similar to the Spiritual Light Empowerment of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?" Feeling startled, Mu Chen asked out doubtfully.

Unable to hold it in, Dean Tai Cang gave a laugh, before answering, "If the Spiritual Light Empowerment is able to be compared to the Divine Spiritual Baptism, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would have far exceeded the title of the Five Great Academies..."

"The Divine Spiritual Baptism doesn't have an obvious effect of raising one's strength. However, it's still a place that would cause countless youths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to

turn crazy because of what it is. That's because, the Divine Spiritual Baptism is able to help construct a foundation…"

"Construct a foundation?" Mu Chen repeated while frowning. That didn't seem like a formidable ability. There were many heavenly treasures that were also able to achieve such an effect.

"It's not just any ordinary foundation. It's the foundation of a Sovereign stage…" With a smile, Dean Tai Cang replied to Mu Chen while shaking his head. Looking at the latter, he continued with his explanation. "Looks like you have yet to know the process to promote to Sovereign Stage, and exactly how much frightening tribulations are needed to be experienced."

Mu Chen gave an awkward laugh in response. As of now, he hadn't even broken through to Heavenly Completion Stage. Thinking about promoting to Sovereign Stage was too far fetched from him now. Although, it was the realm that he ultimately yearned for in his dreams.

"Only when your strength reaches the peak of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase will you understand. It isn't just another step that you have to take to properly promote into the Sovereign Stage…"

At this moment, Dean Tai Cang's gaze turned solemn as he continued, "This is a true hole that everyone will face. Countless talents that shocked the world have stopped at this step, with some even falling from the sky."

"Why's that so?" Mu Chen asked.

"That's because what comes after the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase… is the 'Three Sovereign Disasters' that will make the faces of countless geniuses change upon hearing them. Only when one successfully passes through these three disasters would one be able to shape their Sovereign bodies, and truly promote and step into the Sovereign Stage!"

“The Three Sovereign Disasters…” Mu Chen muttered. Although it sounded somewhat foreign to him, for some unknown reason, a chilling intent radiated out from the depths of his bones.

“There are countless geniuses within this world, before these ‘three disasters’ there are quite a few of them who would have rapid progress in their cultivation stages, and display their astonishing talents. However, they had turned into ashes by these three disasters in the end, dissipating from the world.”

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang said, “Therefore, you should know by now why Sovereign Stage experts are able to possess such a status, am I right?”

Mu Chen swallowed his saliva, while his face turned slightly pale as he nodded his head. This was the first time that he had heard about the extreme difficulty and dangers one would actually face when promoting to Sovereign Stage.

“Does this have a relation with the so-called ‘Sovereign foundation’?” asked Mu Chen as he thought about what Dean Tai Cang had said.

“You’re very smart,” replied Dean Tai Cang with a faint smile as he nodded his head. “The three disasters are too frightening, If one isn’t careful, one would be turned into ashes. Even one’s Divine Soul would be hard pressed to escape. As for that Spiritual Baptism, it can help build a foundation for one’s Divine Soul, strengthening one’s resistance against the three disasters. At the same time, if the most dire situations were to occur, it can protect one’s Divine Soul during the three disasters, allowing one to have another chance of making a comeback.”

Faintly opening his mouth, Mu Chen exclaimed in astonishment, “That awesome?”

Although he had yet to make contact with the so-called “Three Sovereign Disasters”, he could feel that the absolute despair it would bring to people of they were to fail in them. However, this

“Divine Spiritual Baptism” was able to allow people to preserve their lives during these “Three Sovereign Disasters”. This was absolutely too important to have. There might be countless experts with the qualifications to rush into the “Three Sovereign Disasters” that would pay any price just to obtain such protection.

At this moment, he finally understood why the so-called “Divine Spiritual Mountain” would become the greatest occasion within the Northern Heavens Continent. Compared to that, the Spiritual Light Empowerment of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was truly not worth a second look.

At the same time, it had made his heart feel slightly itchy. This Divine Spiritual Mountain was too enticing. If he and Luo Li were able to get baptised by it, they would possess slightly more insurance for when they planned to rush into the Sovereign Stage in the future.

“Are we able to participate in it, Dean?” asked Mu Chen in a soft voice.

Hearing Mu Chen’s words, Dean Tai Cang gave a soft sigh, before replying, “The people participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain are mostly the core geniuses of peak influences in the Northern Heavens Continent that have been painstakingly nurtured with their utmost resources. Our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is unable to gain any advantage on this aspect. That year, we had participated once, with the participating student being the first rank on our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Heavenly Rankings. However, in the end, he didn’t return. Therefore, after that, we have basically given up on this occasion.”

Mu Chen was slightly startled, before nodding his head. This didn’t mean that the students from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had talents that were weaker than those people. It was just the way the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy works. All of those core geniuses were seemingly raised and nurtured by the various sects and families. Compared to them, the

students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy came from all sort of places and directions. Although they had trained and cultivated for a number of years, this time was too short when compared to those outstanding youths at the peak within the Northern Heavens Continent. It's to the point of being able to lead to a great threat to the students.

This created a situation where students with strength would leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy upon becoming fully-fledged towards places at higher levels, seeking stronger Dao paths. As for the new students that had just entered, they would temporarily be unable to compare with those peak geniuses that had stayed in the Northern Heavens Continent for a long time. Therefore, this had created the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which seemed to be a leviathan, but rarely produced any characters that were able to truly stand at the highest peak within the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent.

That's because, the people that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy receives were students, and not sect disciples or clan disciples that had to contribute their all for their clans or sects...

"As of now, the strongest student within our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy rankings is Shen Cangsheng. His talent is extremely good. If he's given a couple more years, wanting to exceed the peak talents within the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent isn't a difficult matter. However, that won't be happening now," replied Dean Tai Cang.

Mu Chen faintly nodded his head. This time they had been forced to such a stage just to deal with Mo Longzi. What more could they achieve against the true elites within the peak of the younger generations? An example would be Mo Xingtian, who was an even stronger character than Mo Longzi.

However, he still had a slight feeling of not wanting to give up on that alluring "Divine Spiritual Baptism". It was extremely important for him and Luo Li. After hesitating a moment, he

gathered his courage and asked Dean Tai Cang, “Dean, would it be possible for me to give it a try?”

Dean Tai Cang’s eyes immediately narrowed as his stared at Mu Chen. After a while, shaking his head, he replied, “Your training and cultivating time is too short. Although I admit your capabilities, it's still too early for you to participate at the Divine Spiritual Mountain.”

Tilting his head, Mu Chen appeared wanting to say something. However, with a wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking, “Gather them all and prepare to return to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Every student back at the academy is still waiting for news about you guys.”

After completing his statement, a laugh rang out of him as he looked towards Mu Chen and said, “This time, I’m afraid that you’ve become a hero for our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even Mo Longzi was beaten down by you.”

Mu Chen gave an embarrassed smile, before turning around and shooting of towards Shen Cangsheng and the rest.

Looking at the back figure of Mu Chen, a expression of deep pondering flashed within Dean Tai Cang’s eyes, appearing as if he was thinking of something.

Under the Spiritual Energy nourishment from everyone, Lin Zheng and the other two had successfully woken up gradually from their stupors. Embarrassed and guilty expressions were present on their faces. Although they were in a stupor earlier, that didn’t mean that they were totally unclear of what had happened.

“Haha, Senior Brother Lin Zheng. That Mo Longzi had long reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. We truly weren’t his match. Even I had lost.” Shen Cangsheng spoke out while sending a candid smile. “However, we’re fortunate to have that fellow, Mu Chen, fight and beat that fellow, Mo Longzi, up for us. Even I don’t know if he will be able to live after that beating.”

“Mu Chen defeated Mo Longzi?”

Lin Zheng and the other two were slightly dumbfounded as they looked towards Mu Chen with inconceivable expressions within their eyes. Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase against Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. They were simply unable to imagine how this disparity was bridged by the latter.

Shrugging his shoulders, Mu Chen spoke out. “I was just lucky this time... Our mission’s complete. Let’s go back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy first, alright?”

Nodding their heads, everyone started to support their injured compatriots, before shooting into the sky.

Mu Chen fell to the back and headed off together with Luo Li. Looking at the sparkling jade-like face of the young girl that was exquisite to the point of perfection, he quietly extended his hand, and grasped the slender and chilling jade-like hands of the young girl.

Luo Li’s lovable face turned slightly red as she shot a coquettish glare at Mu Chen. The latter, however, sent a grin back over while saying, “Ain’t I awesome?”

Luo Li rolled her eyes unhappily towards him, her coquettish looks were extremely alluring, while an amusing laugh rang out within her heart. This fellow always maintained a humble and modest appearance in front of others, and yet he always acted so proud of himself in front of her, making her really want to give him a bite.

However, when Luo Li noticed the remnants of the wounds still present on his body, her clear and limpid eyes turned much more gentle. Her small hand gently grasped Mu Chen’s hand, and her angled loveable and snow-white chin gave a gentle nod. A soft and gentle “Mhm” sound rang out, satisfying the little bit of vanity present in Mu Chen’s heart.

Floating in the sky, Dean Tai Cang looked towards everyone from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy before nodding his head. Turning around to cup his fist and smile towards the Western Extreme Sovereign, he spoke out, “Sorry for the trouble this time, Old Brother Western Extreme.”

“It’s alright, it’s alright,” replied the Western Extreme Sovereign with a smile and a wave.

Without continuing to waste time talking, spatial fluctuations instantly enveloped everyone with a wave of his sleeve. As space started to distort, everyone disappeared into thin air.

Looking at the place where the people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had disappeared into, the eyes of the Western Extreme Sovereign faintly narrowed before speaking out with a faint smile, “Never imagined that the Demonic Dragon Palace’s Mo Longzi would actually get beaten up. Looks like they will have one less participant in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time.”

“In the first place, Mo Longzi’s not sufficient to be feared.” Beside him, Xi Qinghai spoke out with a smile. From his tone and words, he didn’t place Mo Longzi much within his eyes.

“I don’t know of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will participate this time…after this matter, that Shen Cangsheng might breakthrough into the Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase,” said the Western Extreme Sovereign.

Shaking his head, Xi Qinghai spoke out in a soft voice, “Even if Shen Cangsheng breaks through, the threat he poses isn’t great. Although he’s quite talented, his cultivating time is much shorter than us…”

Speaking until here, there was a small pause in his words as he muttered to himself.

“That Freshman by the name of Mu Chen…truly is somewhat

unfathomable.”

# Chapter 382 – Demonic Dragon Brand

When Mu Chen and the group returned back to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had undoubtedly attracted countless stares from everywhere. This was especially true when news of the astonishing fight between Mu Chen and Mo Longzi was disseminated out, causing the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to go into shock.

Any student that heard about this matter would have their jaws drop wide open in shock, turning into a seemingly petrified state. Obviously, this news was somewhat of a fantasy story to them.

That number two on the Bounty Board, the super fierce character that even Senior Brother Lin Zheng and the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings, Shen Cangsheng, had lost to had, unexpectedly, suffered a defeat in Mu Chen's hands?

The atmosphere within the entire academy was in a fiery state as countless people endlessly sought out the news about the astonishing battles that happened within the Western Desolated City. Within this fiery state, Mu Chen's fame and prestige had seemingly rose up in a vertical line, with signs of even surpassing Li Xuantong.

This kind of growth rate caused quite a few students to sigh in admiration. After all, Mu Chen had just entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for only a year. However, an achievement of such a degree caused countless students to feel ashamed and respect for him.

At this stage, there wouldn't be one that would doubt Mu Chen's strength anymore. Everyone knew that it wouldn't take long for Shen Cangsheng's title as the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings to change hands...

Facing such a fiery atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the lead character, Mu Chen, didn't show too

much care about it. Upon reaching the academy, he had quietly holed himself up in the Freshman region to recover and rest from the injuries he had suffered in this life-risking clash with Mo Longzi.

He wasn't the slightest bit interested in the title of the so-called 'Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings'. Strength was something that only belonged to oneself, and not something that could be changed by a title. Furthermore, the finally risk-filled victory in the battle at the Western Desolated City didn't make Mu Chen feel any arrogance. On the contrary, he had even felt some pressure due to it.

After all, from the news that he had obtained, although Mo Longzi was the number two on their Bounty Board, he wasn't considered the genuine peak of the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Within this vast and expansive continent, there were still some people that represented the true strength at the peak of the younger generation of this continent.

If he wanted to chase after that group of people, he would clearly need to work even harder. Although those fellows had cultivated longer than him, and were also older than him, Mu Chen didn't wish to use these as excuses.

True strength wasn't separated by age.

...

On the third day after Mu Chen had returned to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he could be considered to have completely recovered from his injuries. Although he had relied on the demonic energies of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, it had caused injuries within his body. It was fortunate that his fleshly body was exceedingly tyrannical, possessing quite a bit of resistance against the corrosion of the fiendish and demonic energies. Therefore, he wasn't left in a condition as miserable as

last time.

After recovering from his injuries, he received a transmitted message from Dean Tai Cang.

Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Conference Hall

Looking at the six figures within the large hall, shock and astonishment clearly filled Mu Chen's heart. Not only did he see Dean Tai Cang here, the other five Heavenly Seated Elders were actually present within. Such an impressive lineup could be considered as the highest level within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

"Haha. You've done a pretty good job this time, Mu Chen. Firstly, I have to express the gratitude of the Punishment Hall to you. If not for you, our Punishment Hall would suffer a huge loss of face this time." Upon seeing Mu Chen, the Punishment Hall Hall Master, Mo You, took the initiative and spoke out with a smile.

Next to Mo You was Zhu Tian, as well as the other three Heavenly Seated Elders. Other than the youthful appearance of Zhu Tian, the other three Elders appeared white-haired and ancient, with deep and abstruse eyes akin to being shrouded by starry skies. Not a single trace of Spiritual Energy fluctuations were present around their bodies. However, one would feel the frightening sensations of them being about to shatter the heavens and rend the earth with a single move.

"Five Sovereigns...with Dean Tai Cang, that should be six Sovereigns."

Shock shook through Mu Chen's mind. Obviously, this was the most powerful strength of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The reason why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was a leviathan in the Northern Heavens Continent was due to their existences, causing the academy to be unshakable.

Only after an instant did Mu Chen gradually regain his clarity.

Giving a respectful bow towards the five Heavenly Seated Elders, he turned towards Dean Tai Cang and said, “Is there any instructions for me, Dean?”

With a faint smile, Dean Tai Cang replied, “The main reason I’ve summoned you here is due to the matter of that ‘Great Meru Demonic Pillar’ within your body.”

The five Heavenly Seated Elders immediately cast weird gazes towards Mu Chen’s body. They were clearly familiar towards the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. During that year when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was in a great war with the Demonic Dragon Palace, if not for the White Dragon Sovereign suddenly betraying the Demonic Dragon Palace and taking away the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, their victory would be more hard pressed.

They understood the ominous fame of the “Great Meru Demonic Pillar”. It was a strong weapon that would shake even the hearts of Sovereign Stage experts. Although it was ominous and fiendish, once one was able to control it, one would be able to display its terrifying strength.

However, as of now, such an ominous object had unexpectedly landed in the hands of such a young and weak Freshman. This truly caused people to feel surprised.

Mu Chen was also startled as his heart skipped a beat. Could it be that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy wants me to hand over the Great Meru Demonic Pillar?

“Hoho. Relax. If our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy does such a thing, how are we different from the Demonic Dragon Palace?” Seemingly able to see the worry within Mu Chen’s heart, Dean Tai Cang spoke out to quell the unease Mu Chen was feeling.

Having his inner thoughts exposed, Mu Chen felt awkward. However, he wasn’t to blame for having such thoughts. Who allowed the “Great Meru Demonic Pillar” to be so tyrannical to the point where it would tug at the hearts of even Sovereign Stage

experts?

“As of now, although the Great Meru Demonic Pillar has landed in your hands, it still isn’t considered totally yours…” Mo You spoke out with a smile as he continued explaining. “Do you think that the treasure of the Demonic Dragon Palace will get snatched away by other people in such an easy fashion?”

Immediately, Mu Chen gawked. Starting to frown, he asked, “Hall master’s meaning is that…the Demonic Dragon Palace is able to retrieve it?”

Speaking until here, his expression turned slightly grave as he thought about the actions that the Black Dragon Sovereign had taken. At that time, if not for Dean Tai Cang, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar might have truly broken out of his body…

“The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was in the hands of the Demonic Dragon Palace for many years. According to what I know, there should be a Demonic Dragon Brand from the Demonic Dragon Palace. With your strength, it's clear that you’re unable to discover it,” explained Dean Tai Cang.

“Demonic Dragon Brand?” Mu Chen was stunned as he blankly stared back at Dean Tai Cang. Indeed, he didn’t discover the so-called ‘Demonic Dragon Brand’ within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

“This is the special method of the Demonic Dragon Palace, and it was personally arranged by a Sovereign Stage existence. It hides within the depths of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar and won’t show any activity on any ordinary occasion. However, once the Demonic Dragon Palace activates it, you’ll immediately lose control of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Furthermore, if they have slightly more killing intent then, your little life will be under their control. With just a single thought from them, they’ll be able to cause the Great Meru Demonic Pillar to erupt from your body.” The person taking this time was the youthful-looking Elder Zhu

Tian. Rubbing his chin, he grinned as he stared at Mu Chen.

Hearing those words cold sweat erupted from Mu Chen's entire body. If this was true, that would mean that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar had became an explosive? As long as the Demonic Dragon Palace activated the Demonic Dragon Brand, he would definitely be decimated by the energy that was unleashed.

"In the past, you didn't expose the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Therefore, there's no danger of that. However, as of now, as long as you're in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they won't recklessly activate it. However, once you leave the academy... perhaps that explosive hidden within your body might explode."

Mu Chen wiped the cold sweat off his forehead as he felt a chill seemingly spread throughout his aurasea. He was afraid that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar would completely explode. With his current strength, he was completely unable to endure it.

"I don't think that you've called me over just to give me a scare, right, Dean?" Although his heart had skipped a beat, Mu Chen quickly calmed down. Raising his head to look to Dean Tai Cang, he spoke out with a smile.

"Truly a smart fellow."

Unable to resist it, Dean Tai Cang gave a laugh before answering, "You've completed your mission this time without a hitch, so a reward should be given to you. After discussing, we've decided to help you remove the Demonic Dragon Brand within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. This way, it will completely break its connection with the Demonic Dragon Palace. In the future, when you're able to completely tame and control it, it'll truly be yours."

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen was immediately elated. The Demonic Dragon Brand was planted by a Sovereign of the Demonic Dragon Palace, and Mu Chen clearly didn't possess the ability to remove it. The only one that could help him in this matter would only be Dean Tai Cang and the Elders.

“Thank you very much, Dean!” Mu Chen showed his heartfelt gratitude.

Replying with a wave, Dean Tai Cang nodded towards the other five Heavenly Seated Elders, before the five scattered in different directions.

“Summon the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.”

Upon hearing that, Mu Chen hesitated awhile. At this moment, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was suppressed by the mysterious black paper. However, once it was released, it might creat a great commotion...However, after seeming the faint smile on Dean Tai Cang’s face, Mu Chen’s felt much more at ease. With six Sovereign Stage existences guarding him over him, he didn’t believe that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar could create an upheaval!

Thinking till here, Mu Chen no longer hesitated. Faintly narrowing his eyes, with a thought, the mysterious Mandala flower in his aurasea slowly blossomed. As this happened, the purple-coloured chains that were wrapped around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar started to slowly retract.

Bang!

Just as the purple-coloured chains retracted, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar started to crazily vibrate. With a bang, it transformed into a scarlet-red streak of light, rushing straight out of Mu Chen’s aurasea.

Whoosh!

As the scarlet-red streak of light rushed straight out of Mu Chen’s crown, a black demonic pillar followed along the streak of light and rushed out. Demonic energies originating from the ancient antiquity swept out, filling the entire large hall in an instant.

Humm!

The entire large hall vibrated as storms whipped up with the arrival of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Instantly piercing

towards the sky of the large hall, it tried to escape and flee this place.

Hmph!

Looking at the gigantic pillar, Dean Tai Cang gave a cold snort. With a wave of his hand, a dazzling brilliance furiously erupted from the ceiling of the large hall. Countless gigantic rays of brilliance formed into chains that explosively shot out. Piercing through space, they immediately wrapped around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar.

“Suppress it!”

A deep cry rang out from Mo You, Zhu Tian and the three other Heavenly Seated Elders. Five boundless Spiritual Energies flowed out, akin to liquid streams, while howling from their palms. Wrapping around the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, the demonic energies radiating from it were completely suppressed.

Humm! Humm!

The Great Meru Demonic Pillar crazily struggled as it attempted to escape its restraints. As it did so, shattering patterns appeared in the surrounding space.

A slightly grave expression appeared on the faces of Mo You and the other four Heavenly Seated Elders as slight shock appeared within their hearts. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar was undoubtedly an ominous weapon from the ancient antiquity.

However, although the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was powerful, the lineup it faced was overly luxurious. As time elapsed, the shock created by the Great Meru Demonic Pillar gradually turned quiet.

Whoosh!

Upon seeing this, Dean Tai Cang brought his hands together to form a hand seal. In the next instant, a ray of boundless Spiritual Energy shot out. Akin to a liquid, it enveloped the entire Great Meru Demonic Pillar within it.

This liquid-like Spiritual Energy slowly seeped into the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As it seeped in, Mu Chen noticed some dark and abstruse black light appearing on the surface of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. From afar, it appeared akin to a pattern of an entrenched demonic dragon!

Obviously, this was the Demonic Dragon Brand that Dean Tai Cang had talked about!

“Dispel it!” Chilling intent erupted from Dean Tai Cang’s eyes. Looking towards the Demonic Dragon Brand that appeared akin to a living thing, he gave a shout.

Bang!

Boundless Spiritual Energies howled from the six people, sweeping towards the Demonic Dragon Brand.

As Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders were attempting to dispel the Demonic Dragon Brand, within a giant black hall in a far place, the Black Dragon Sovereign, who was cultivating in a sitting position, furiously opened his eyes, while a chilling glow flashed within them.

“Tai Cang, you really dare to dispel our Demonic Dragon Brand! Okay! Since you want to fight, our Demonic Dragon Palace will have a fight with you first! Let’s see if you have the capability to dispel our Demonic Dragon Brand!”

Quickly standing up, a low dragon-like roar resounded as spatial fluctuations radiated to far distances.

As his low roar rang out, a number of furious dragon roars rang out within the deepest depths of the black, giant imperial tomb-like hall. In the next instant, the space in front of the Black Dragon Sovereign distorted as five figures immediately step out of it, appearing within the large hall.

Following their appearance, a terrifying pressure started to radiate out.

These five people had impressively possessed Sovereign Stage strength!

# Chapter 383 – Battle of the Sovereigns

Boundless Spiritual Energy flooded the large hall. The Spiritual Energy present here was extremely pure, with faint signs of being liquid-like. With the level of Spiritual Energy within each clump being comparable to the maximum amount a Heavenly Completion Stage expert could condense within one's body…

Within the centre of all that boundless Spiritual Energy, the Great Meru Demonic Pillar continued to endlessly emit humming noises. However, the frightening demonic energies were unwaveringly suppressed by the Spiritual Energy, unable to spew out as previously.

The Demonic Dragon pattern squirmed about on the surface of the demonic pillar, as if the Demonic Dragon Brand had seemingly sensed the impending danger. Low and deep roars rang out from it as a dark and sinister black brilliance radiated from it, defending against the corrosion brought by the boundless Spiritual Energies.

Humm. Humm.

However, faced against the collaboration of six Sovereign Stage existences, the Demonic Dragon Brand was by itself and appeared clearly weaker. Even though it had taken root within the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, and was unable to borrow some of its demonic energies, with signs of it starting to dissipate under the corrosion of the boundless Spiritual Energies.

At this moment, Mu Chen was standing at the furthest position possible, while he was unable to move a single inch of his body. That was due to the immense pressure created by six Sovereigns unleashing their Spiritual Energies.

With nothing he could do about it, he could only bitterly laugh in helplessness. With his strength only at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, he was not even at the level of an ant in front of a Sovereign Stage expert. Just the Spiritual

Energy pressure created by them was enough to make him incapable of budging.

However, the only thing that could make Mu Chen feel comfort was that the Demonic Dragon Brand was being dispelled. That was undeniably removing an extreme danger hidden within.

Bang!

However, just as Mu Chen had exhaled a breath of relief, extremely terrifying energies furiously gushed out from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. The Demonic Dragon Brand, which was gradually being corroded by the boundless Spiritual Energies gushing from Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders, radiated with intense black rays of light at this moment. Dragon roars howled out as storms were whipped up by the Demonic Dragon Brand. Separating itself from the demonic pillar, it had unexpectedly transformed into a rather frightening demonic dragon.

As the demonic dragon coiled up in the air, frightening fluctuations radiated from its jet-black body. Being somewhat unable to endure them, the surrounding space even started showing signs of shattering.

“Tai Cang, are you planning to take the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace for your own? It isn’t that easy!” In a seated position, the gigantic eyes of the demonic dragon roared with incomparable rage and ferocity towards the people present in the large hall.

“Black Dragon Sovereign?!”

Upon hearing that familiar voice, Mu Chen’s heart was instantly overwhelmed with shock and dread.

“Look’s like you’re unable to endure it after all, huh, Black Dragon Sovereign?” Upon seeing this, Tai Cang gave a faint smile as if he didn’t feel the slightest bit of surprise. Obviously, he had long expected the outcome of this situation.

“Hmph! The guts of your Demonic Dragon Palace ain’t small! You’re really asking for trouble by daring to send a remnant shadow to charge into our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!” A cold snort rang out from Hall Master Mo You as his expression turned dark.

“Hmph! In this Northern Heavens Continent, our Demonic Dragon Palace can go wherever we want! Do you think you can stop us?!” Another cold voice rang out from within the demonic dragon. This voice was different from the Black Dragon Sovereign. However, it appeared similarly cold and frightening.

“Haha. If not for you guys activating the Demonic Dragon Brand, we wouldn’t have been able to cast our projections over. Today’s a good day. Relying on the power of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, we’ll completely butcher all of you!” A laughing voice brimming with cruel tyranny rang out from within the demonic dragon.

“So, it's not just a single projection. Can it be that the Six Great Hall Masters of the Demonic Dragon Palace have arrived?” Elder Zhu Tian spoke out with a sneer.

“Six Great Hall Masters?”

Mu Chen was startled as he heard those words. Looking towards the gigantic eyes of demonic dragon, a black brilliance erupted from within as six blurry figures were faintly discernable from within. Those six figures were akin to figures of demon gods, causing people to feel extreme pressure and oppression.

“All of you guys have finally gathered together. However, it’ll not change the result one single bit.” Chilling intent flashed within the abstruse eyes of Dean Tai Cang. With a wave of his sleeve, the boundless Spiritual Energy gushing out of him transformed into a sea of Spiritual Energy. As the waves surged out, they shattered space, sweeping straight towards the sitting demonic dragon.

At the same time, Hall Master Mo You and the other four Heavenly Seated Elders launched their attacks, causing boundless

Spiritual Energies to sweep out.

Roar!

Upon seeing this, the demonic dragon gave a roar. Extending its claws, it grabbed onto the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Violently fanning it out, it smashed the incoming Spiritual Energy sea apart.

Bang!

At this moment, frightening demonic energies erupted from the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As the demonic pillar was waved around, the surrounding space was split and shattered apart, completely blocking against the boundless Spiritual Energies heading towards the demonic dragon.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

As a frightening fight erupted within the large hall, the startled Mu chen hastily shot out of the large hall. In the next instant, cracks started to appear and split apart on the surface of the Spiritual Array-reinforced large hall.

Bang!

As the cracks extended to their extremities, unable to endure the frightening shock waves forming within, the large hall exploded apart. As the frightening Spiritual Energy shock waves rushed out, storms were whipped up in the air above the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, attracting the shocked and horrified gazes of countless students.

Bang!

As countless shocked and terrified gazes looked over, the large hall exploded apart. In the next instant, a gigantic dragon with a demonic pillar grasped within its hands rushed towards the sky. Six streams of light rushed towards the horizon from the surroundings as boundless Spiritual Energy seas enveloped over, continuously sweeping towards the demonic dragon. As the Spiritual Energy seas came pressuring over, space started to

shatter, piece by piece, showing their extremely terrifying destructive powers.

Such a terrifying exchange appearing out of nowhere caused all the students to stare in dumbfounded shock. Did they ever see a fight of such degree?

Alarm cries quickly resounded across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, causing numerous higher levels of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to swiftly shoot over. Looking gravely at the fight taking place in the sky, shock and astonishment appeared within their eyes.

At a secluded peak far away, a big and small figure could be seen observing the battle up in the sky. It was Ling Xi and Sun'er.

"Such frightening Spiritual Energy fluctuations... even the Dean and the other Elders have actually taken action." Sun'er cried out in shock.

"That's...the people of the Demonic Dragon Palace." Ling Xi's crescent moon-shaped eyebrows slightly bunched up. Staring at the demonic dragon, she spoke out in response.

"Aren't you going to take action, Elder Sister Ling Xi? That demonic dragon seems extremely formidable!" Sun'er replied in worry. This was, after all, the inner region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If students were to be swept up in the collateral energies radiating out from the fight, this would be too grave and serious for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Gently shaking her small head, Ling Xi replied in a faint voice, "There's only the projections of those fellows from the Demonic Dragon Palace within that demonic dragon. How can they contend against Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders? Therefore, there's no need for me to take action."

Speaking until here, her gaze turned slightly towards the mountain peak located below of the fighting radius. There was a

thin figure faintly discernable over there, which was precisely Mu Chen.

Upon seeing Mu Chen's figure, faint fluctuations appeared for an instant within her eyes.

At this moment, Mu Chen didn't notice the gaze coming from Ling Xi in the far distance as his head pointed towards the sky. Although the commotion coming from the sky was extremely huge, he wasn't overly worried about that. The fight happening there was clearly in the control of Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders. After all, the Six Great Hall Masters of the Demonic Dragon Palace had only sent their projections over. Although they were relying on the might of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar, they were still unable to truly contend with Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders.

If this continued, it would be no surprise to anyone that Dean Tai Cang would obtain victory.

"Is there any point in doing such useless actions, Black Dragon Sovereign?! Today, none of you will be able to bring it out of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!" Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a cold and detached expression.

"Hmph! Is that right?!"

Black Dragon Sovereign's sneering voice rang out, while sinister and chilling intent seemed to surface within the eyes of the demonic dragon. In the next instant, its body suddenly started to crazily inflate. At this moment, the six blurry figures within the giant eyes of the demonic dragon had unexpected exploded.

"Careful! They want to self-destruct their projections!" Dean Tai Cang's eyes instantly contracted as he cried out.

Bang!

At the instant when his cry rang out, the demonic dragon had already inflated to a size nearing ten thousand feet. Hiding the sky

and covering the earth, it completely exploded in the next instant. Seemingly destructive fluctuations swept out, enveloping the academy below.

Upon seeing this, Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders instantly retreated. Sending a palm patting out, boundless Spiritual Energy seas expanded out underneath, enveloping the academy below them.

Bang! Bang!

As the destructive fluctuations smashed against the Spiritual Energy seas, deep and low sounds erupted out. However, they were unable to pierce through them in the end, causing the pale faces of the countless students below to regain some colour.

Whoosh!

After Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders had successfully blocked the destructive fluctuations, a bloody light rushed towards the sky. The Great Meru Demonic Pillar swiftly followed suit as the space before it violently distorted, transforming into a pathway.

“Don’t let it escape!” Dean Tai Cang’s expression sank. Those Demonic Dragon fellows were really decisive and ruthless. They had actually wanted to let the Great Meru Demonic Pillar escape by itself.

However, relying on the explosive force due to the explosion of the projections, the speed of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar drastically increased. In a flash, it had already rushed into the spatial pathway, and was just about to disappear within.

Bang!

However, just at the instant when it was about to shuttle through the spatial pathway, the entire stretch of the world suddenly turned dim. Overwhelmed with shock, countless people raised their heads, only to see a ten thousand foot long feathery wing unfurling across the horizon. This entire stretch of the world was

shrouded by the shadow it created.

Bang!

Under the feathery wing, sharp black claws were thrust out, causing the spatial pathway to completely shatter apart. Piercing deep within the spatial path, it grabbed onto the Great Meru Demonic Pillar within.

As the feathery wing that hid the skies and covered the earth rapidly disappeared, sunlight came enveloping back. As the strange scene suddenly disappeared, countless students looked at each other, slightly confused over what had just happened.

“Just now, that’s…”

“It looked like a wing…”

“Such a big wing! Could it…could this be the Divine Beast Protector of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Lord Northern Sea Dragon?”

“…so formidable! Even space was captured!’

“……”

A Clamoring of emotional voices erupted across the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

On the mountain peak, Mu Chen’s face was filled with shock and astonishment. However, before he could regain his clarity from it, a black streak of light shot over the horizon, shooting straight into his body.

It’s the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!

With a thought, the Mandala flower within his aurasea immediately bloomed. Countless purple-coloured chains shot out, rapidly wrapping around the demonic pillar, before pulling it back into the centre of the flower. In the next instant, purplish light radiated, before suppressing and sealing it up once again!

Hu.

Seeing that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar was sealed once again, Mu Chen breathed a sigh of relief akin to having a heavy weight lifted off his shoulders. For the sake of dealing with the Demonic Dragon Brand, the peak existences of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had all taken action...

Dean Tai Cang and the five Elders shot down, appearing beside Mu Chen.

“Haha. We’re fortunate to have lord Northern Sea take action. If not, we’d have really lost it,” said Mo You with a smile.

“Those fellows are really decisive. Exploding their own projections. That will definitely cause damage to their true bodies.” Elder Zhu Tian added with a frown.

With a smile also present on his face, Dean Tai Cang looked towards Mu Chen and said, “However, it's good that we didn’t lose it. From today onwards, the Demonic Dragon Palace will no longer be able to control the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. As long as you’re able to control it, it will be yours.”

“Thank you very much, Dean!” Mu Chen was unable to express how much gratitude he had from them. They had helped settle a gargantuan hidden danger for him. He would absolutely have been unable to achieve it by himself. After all, he didn’t have the strength to face against the projections of six Sovereign Stage experts.

With a wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang didn’t continue speaking anything as he turned around, planning to leave.

“Dean...”

Upon seeing him leave, Mu Chen hastily called out to him. When Dean Tai Cang had turned around and faced him, Mu Chen hesitated for a moment. Summoning his courage, he spoke out, “I’ve some interest towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain...”

“Divine Spiritual Mountain?” Hall Master Mo You and the other

four Elders were all startled, before starting to slightly frown. This matter was, in fact, a thorn in the heart of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. After all, they were a leviathan and the Overlords of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, they had always been unable to participate in the biggest occasion of the Northern Heavens Continent, causing quite a few tongues wagging outside for the past few years.

"It's too dangerous." Shooting a look at Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang shook his head, before turning around and walking away.

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh, shrugging his shoulders in disappointment. Looks like I've no affinity with this Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Dean Tai Cang's footsteps suddenly paused, before he entered the large hall. Placing his hands behind his back, he pondered deeply for a moment, before a faint voice rang out from him.

"If you really want to go, there's a possibility. Make a breakthrough to Heavenly Completion Stage in a month."

Upon hearing those words, Mu Chen immediately felt elated, before becoming dejected the next moment. Make a breakthrough to Heavenly Completion Stage in one month...this level of difficulty was too high...

# Chapter 384 – Idea

Freshman Area

Mu Chen lazily laid on the small building with his hands resting behind his head. Looking blanking at the fluttering clouds in the sky, an expression of helplessness was present on his handsome face.

At this moment, Mu Chen was having a headache. The reason was naturally due to the goal of reaching Heavenly Completion Stage within a month given to him by Dean Tai Cang.

As of now, his strength was at the Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. Although it seemed as if he was only one step away from it, he was extremely clear how hard it was to take that step forward. According to his estimates, even if he were to do his utmost and cultivate, while using all of the methods he could use, it would take him three months or even longer time before being able to take this step.

As for one month, it was clearly too short.

Sitting up, Mu Chen grabbed at his hair in frustration. He knew that Dean Tai Cang was doing this for his safety in mind. After all, those people with the qualifications to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain were seemingly all peak-level existences of the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. There were some people that were even stronger than Mo Longzi. If he were to participate with his strength at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase, even with all the various methods he possessed, it would still lead to disaster for him.

I've no other way but to find someone to help me. thought Mu Chen as he shrugged his shoulders in helplessness. Raising his head, he looked towards a quiet and secluded mountain peak within the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. That was the place where Ling Xi lived.

Within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the number of Elders Mu Chen were on familiar terms with weren't many, with Ling Xi being one of them. The time they knew about each other wasn't considered too long. However, for some unknown reason, Mu Chen always had an extremely indescribable feeling of trust towards Ling Xi. It was as if Ling Xi would never ever do anything that would harm him, no matter what.

This feeling made Mu Chen even feel at a loss during certain times. However, faintly, he had a certain feeling that this was seemingly related to his mother.

Ling Xi had a painting of his mother with her. This was sufficient proof that she should have some relationship with his mother. However, he was still unable to guess exactly what kind of relationship that was.

Although Mu Chen didn't know if Ling Xi had any way of helping him. In such desperate times, the only thing he could do was to try everything possible.

Thinking till this point, Mu Chen no longer continued to hesitate. Shooting towards the sky, he headed straight towards the quiet and secluded mountain peak in the depths of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. For the past few days, Luo Li had started her dedicated cultivation regimen once again, giving the cold shoulder to Mu Chen, causing him to harbour a hidden bitterness for her.

Mu Chen's figure descended on the quiet and secluded mountain peak. Upon him landing down, the tightly shut the clean doors of the courtyard that had already started to quietly open, no longer being tightly shut as they were before.

With a smile, Mu Chen walked into the courtyard, before seeing a beautiful lady in a snow-white dress sitting on the platform before the bamboo house At this time, Ling Xi's jade-like hand was resting on her cheek, while a slender finger was playing with a lock of

black hair. Upon Mu Chen entering, those pair of quick-witted eyes rested on his body.

At this moment, there wasn't any of the cold and detached chilling aura radiating from her lustrous and white face. Her beautiful face that displayed a gentler expression had undoubtedly possessed much more allure and soul-stirring emotions to be born upon seeing her.

"You've not come here for many days since your return to the academy. Suddenly coming here to find me, is there a problem?" Ling Xi said out softly. Her voice was clear and melodious, akin to the voice coming from the deep valley, sounding extremely pleasing to one's ears.

With an awkward smile, Mu Chen walked forward and replied, "I was injured during the mission; therefore, I've spent all this time recovering and recuperating..."

With a gentle nod, Ling Xi didn't continue speaking again.

Not too used to such silence, Mu Chen gave a laugh to break the quiet atmosphere before saying, " Oh, yes. I've to thank you for giving me that array drawing the previous time. It had really helped me a lot this time."

"Okay."

Ling Xi nodded her head, while her slender fingers were still twirling with a lock of her black hair. After allowing it to fall down and cover her voluptuous chest, she quietly cast her beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen.

The latter obviously had some matters in his mind to be seeking for her this time.

Being stared at by her, Mu Chen was a little too unused to such an action from her. Tilting his head from side-to-side, he spoke out after drumming his courage up, "Would you be able to help me on something?"

“Speak,” replied Ling Xi with a blink of her long and slender eyelashes.

“Is there any way that can allow me to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month?” Mu Chen spoke out the trouble he faced while shrugging his shoulder, before continuing, “Naturally, I’m talking about ways that don’t have any after effects or repercussions.”

“Breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month?”

Ling Xi was startled by his words, before slightly knitting her eyebrows together. “Other people are unable to step into this stage even after cultivating for one or even two years. And here you are, wanting to accomplish that within a month. Aren’t you too naive?”

Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh. This wasn’t him demanding for instant success. However, Dean Tai Cang had only given him this amount of time. Regardless of whether he could accomplish it or not, he wanted to give it a try. Furthermore, it wasn’t him trying to arrogant about his capabilities. He truly had the confidence in himself that he would be able to handle the power requirement of promoting into Heavenly Completion Stage.

Ling Xi stared at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes. If anyone else were to beg her in such a way, she might not even care and think about it. However, faced with the current Mu Chen, she was unable to have any thoughts of rejecting him.

These feelings caused Ling Xi to feel somewhat inconceivable. After all, she had only know Mu Chen for no more than two months. However could she treat him so differently?

Could it be due to him having cultivated the Great Pagoda Art? Or perhaps that the lady within the painting that was extremely important to her, was actually his mother?

Ling Xi's beautiful eyes faintly sparkled, as confusion and disorder was momentarily present within her heart and mind.

"It's alright if there isn't any way to go about this...I'll head back first." Looking at the silent Ling Xi in front of him and assuming that she didn't have any way to help him, Mu Chen could only speak and say such words.

After speaking out, he planned to turn around and leave. Ling Xi was the only person staying here. Him remaining here seemed to not be too good of an idea.

"Wait." Ling Xi's clear and melodious voice suddenly rang out.

Turning around, Mu Chen immediately noticed Ling Xi extending her slender and jade-like hand towards him. Under the illumination of the sunlight, it appeared as if her hand was sparkling with a white luster.

"Show me your hand," said Ling Xi as she slightly curled her lips.

Immediately, Mu Chen gawked, hesitating for a moment, before walking over. Extending his hand, he placed it on Ling Xi's jade-like palm. The extremely wonderful feeling he felt on contact was as if he had touched a piece of top-quality white jade, causing people to not want to part with it.

However, Mu Chen didn't have too many other thoughts at this moment as he stared with a strange gaze at Ling Xi. With the latter's disposition, she seemed to be the type of person that wouldn't do such senseless actions.

"Export one strand of your Spiritual Energy," said Ling Xi in a soft voice.

Mu Chen had some doubts present in his mind. Nevertheless, he had followed her words and pressed a strand of Spiritual Energy out. As the jet-black Spiritual Energy erupted from his palm, black flames were present, burning around it.

Shooting a look at it, a strand of Spiritual Energy erupted from

her palm. Her Spiritual Energy was also, unexpectedly, a jet-black colour, with the only thing different being the absence of black flames burning on it.

Mu Chen was startled and astonished. It was exceedingly similar to the Spiritual Energy that he had built up after cultivating the Great Pagoda Art. It looked like Ling Xi had truly cultivated in the Great Pagoda Art before.

As the Spiritual Energies erupted from their palms and came into contact, the two different energies unexpectedly started to slowly fuse, bit by bit.

Whoosh!

With the fusion of the two Spiritual Energies, the two of them could clearly feel that their Spiritual Energies had started to miraculously expand by many times. Furthermore, this fused Spiritual Energy had become exceedingly stronger than each the previously combined strength of the Spiritual Energy strands.

Looking at the fused Spiritual Energy, Ling Xi didn't retract her portion back. With a light tap of her slender finger, the clump of Spiritual Energy was flicked straight into Mu Chen's body.

A faint shudder shook through Mu Chen's body as the greatly expanded Spiritual Energy started to automatically revolve along the same pathways he used when cultivating the Great Pagoda Art. Finally, drilling into his aurasea, it was devoured by his Divine Spirit in a single breath.

However, when his Divine Spirit absorbed this clump of Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen immediately felt that the Spiritual Energy within his body had instantly increased by a portion.

"This..." Shock and astonishment filled Mu Chen's face as he immediately turned to look at Ling Xi with a weird expression in his eyes. Why would such a change happen to their Spiritual Energy when they came into contact with each other? It was able

to treat his wounds, and was also able to act like a sacrificial offering, letting his Spiritual Energy expand and become much more dense and strong.

“I, too, don’t know what enables this.” Seemingly able to understand his doubts, Ling Xi learnt from him and shrugged her little shoulders.

“Looks like there truly is something special between the two of us.”

As Ling Xi stood up, her snow-white dress made her beautiful figure appear slender and full, showing off her alluring curves. With a sudden smile, she spoke out, “If the lady in the painting that’s extremely important to me is truly your mother, do you think that I’m the child bride that she has found for you?”

Overwhelmed by shock and horror, Mu Chen retreated a step back. He had almost been scared to death by Ling Xi’s words. Only after quite a long while did he manage to regain his clarity, replying her with his forehead dripping with sweat, “That joke’s not one bit funny.”

“I hope so.”

Ling Xi replied while nodding her head. Turning around and walking towards the depths of her courtyard, she spoke out, “Follow me. Due to the unique situation between us, it seems that you promoting to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month isn’t absolutely impossible.”

Looking at the alluring and beautiful figure of Ling Xi, Mu Chen exhaled a long breath of air, before following her in quick steps. Ling Xi’s previous words had given him quite a heavy freight.

As they headed into the depths of the courtyard, layers of cloth and mist obscured their vision.

Stopping in her tracks, Ling Xi panned her head over, looking towards Mu Chen before saying, “You’ll come in when I call for

you.”

Mu Chen didn’t know exactly what she was doing. Thus, he could only nod his head in doubt.

After walking through the hanging cloths, a clear pond was present before Ling Xi. Biting her lip, she lowered her head to look at the beautiful snow-white reflection present on the water’s surface. In the next instant, she gave a smile, appearing exceedingly soul-stirring.

Slowly walking into the pond, the pond water turned her white dress wet, causing it to tightly adhere against her proud and lovable body, extending her astonishingly heart-stopping curves.

After entering the pond, Ling Xi sat within it. Boundless Spiritual Energy proceeded to erupt from her, assimilating within the water at that point. Instantly, the water started to gradually turn jet-black, while sparkling with a beautiful luster.

“Come in.”

Mu Chen, who was waiting behind the layers of cloth, finally heard Ling Xi’s voice. Extending his head over, he walked pass them, before finally seeing Ling Xi, who was sitting in the water.

Although the majority of her lovable figure was covered by the jet-black water, her upper body was still above the water line. Being drenched by the water, her slender and fair neck was shown through her white dress, before showing the voluptuous curves present below.

Upon seeing such an alluring and erotic scene, Mu Chen was completely dumbstruck and stupefied.

# Chapter 385 – Aunt Jing

Faint puffs of steam rose from the pond. However, they were unable to mask the alluring and erotic scene before Mu Chen.

Hua!

Discovering the gaze coming straight from Mu Chen, a crimson shadow surfaced on her white, lustrous face. With a wave of her jade-like hand, a pillar of water rushed out, spraying towards Mu Chen.

As the icy-cold water drenched his body, Mu Chen finally regained his clarity. Hastily turning his gaze away, he felt awkward and embarrassed, while not knowing what Ling Xi was planning to do.

“Enter the pond and absorb all the Spiritual Energy within.”

Ling Xi tried her best to submerge all of her body within the pond. However, due to the water level being quite shallow, it was unable to cover the entirety of her body. Puffs of steam rose into the air, causing her cold and indifferent-looking face to appear a pinkish-red. Gently biting her lip, she said, “Also, please mind your eyes. If you dare to look at me, I’ll expel you from here.”

Immediately, Mu Chen nodded his head in succession, before proceeding to jump straight into the water. Upon feeling the water in the pond, amazement erupted within his eyes. He clearly felt the pure Spiritual Energy contained within the water.

These fluctuations were clearly the Spiritual Energy from Ling Xi. She had actually assimilated her Spiritual Energy into the pond for me to cultivate!

Mu Chen was baffled for a moment, while a slightly complicated expression appeared within his eyes. Looking at the beautiful figure that still appeared exquisite and lovable within the thick clouds of mist, the rather spectacular curves on her body

continued to extend out.

“Why did you do this?” asked Mu Chen in a soft voice. What Ling Xi had done was simply using her Spiritual Energy and giving it to him. Although it would increase his cultivation speed, her cultivation would temporarily come to a standstill. Although it was just for a short period of time, was there anyone in the world that would do such a thing for a stranger?

Sitting within the pond, upon hearing Mu Chen’s words, a blank expression appeared within Ling Xi’s eyes. That’s right. Why would I help Mu Chen to such a degree? And yet, why wasn’t there the slightest bit of rejection to such a thought within the depths of her heart…?

“I also don’t know… Perhaps, this is something that I ought to do.”

In a soft voice, Ling Xi replied, “Although I’ve lost my memories, the feelings within the depths of my heart didn’t disappear. With them, I can feel that it's quite good for me to do such a thing.”

After remaining silent awhile, Mu Chen started to sit down within the pond, while mist sprayed across his face. After quite a while later, a faint smile appeared on his face as he said, “Elder… Sister Ling Xi. Can I address you this way?”

A tremble shook through Ling Xi’s lovable body. Raising her beautiful eyes, she looked towards the handsome youth smiling radiantly across the pond. For a while, she was unable to say anything. Within her heart, surging feelings seemed to impact her spirit. This caused a warm and gentle feeling to surface within her quiet and cold heart.

Therefore, a faint smile surfaced on her beautiful face as she gave a gentle nod.

“Relax, Elder Sister Ling Xi. Although I don’t know exactly what relation you have with my mum, you have to believe in me that I’ll

definitely help you regain your lost memories! Regardless of who it was who did that to you, I'll definitely help you!" Mu Chen spoke out resolutely and decisively, while a firm and bright light flashed within his eyes.

Looking blankly at the firm and resolute eyes of the youth in front of her, the warmness Ling Xi felt in her heart caused a sliver of warmth to appear within that frost-covered heart of hers. That was a feeling that had seemingly not appeared for a very, very long time, causing even her eyes to turn slightly red. Slightly tilting her head around and wiping her eyes with her hand, a gentle smile appeared on her face as she said, "That's good. I've now have a little brother. However, just firing off words isn't useful. As of now, you're too weak."

With a cheeky laugh, Mu Chen replied, "I'll try my best."

"Okay. You should start cultivating first," said Ling Xi with a faint smile.

Although he didn't know what this pond was, Mu Chen wasn't one bit affected. There were times when knowing such feelings within one's heart was enough. Speaking from one's mouth would instead make one appear hypocritical.

Therefore, gently nodding his head, he started to slowly close his eyes. The Great Pagoda Art within his body started to revolve, while black rays of brilliance extended from the surface of his body.

Crash!

The water in the pond surged as if it possessed a conscious, and was rapidly gushing towards Mu Chen. As this happened, the black colour within the water endlessly continued to drill into Mu Chen's body.

All of this was the Spiritual Energy coming from Ling Xi.

This Spiritual Energy drilled straight into Mu Chen's body,

instantly fusing within the Spiritual Energy within his body. At the instant when they fused together, abstruse black rays of brilliance erupted within his body. These black rays of brilliance irrigated throughout his body, flooding through every corner within.

The Spiritual Energy within his body started to increase at a furious rate!

Boundless Spiritual Energy rapidly revolved within his meridians. Continuing to pour endlessly into his aurasea, it was completely devoured by his Divine Soul sitting within with a single gulp. Black rays of light radiated from its entire body, appearing exceedingly abnormal and mysterious.

A feeling of his Spiritual Energy gradually growing more tyrannical rippled through Mu Chen's limbs and bones.

As Mu Chen sunk into the miraculous feeling of his Spiritual Energy growing stronger, the revolving speed of the Great Pagoda Art seemed to grow increasingly faster, greedily devouring the endless Spiritual Energy gushing into his body.

...

Within the pond, Ling Xi looked towards Mu Chen, who had entered a state of cultivation. Faintly curling up her slender legs and resting her snow-white chin on her knees, Spiritual Energy continued to erupt from her body. After assimilating into the water, it replenished that which had already been absorbed by Mu Chen.

As Spiritual Energy continued to flow out of her, Ling Xi could feel a faint feeling of weakness starting to erupt from the depths of her body. However, instead of stopping, wrapping her jade-like arms around her knees, a slightly vacant expression appeared within her beautiful eyes as she started to slowly close them.

A feeling of dizziness started to spread within Ling Xi's mind, Unknowingly, her consciousness started to gradually grow dark

and dim.

Ling Xi's consciousness fluttered within the darkness, the feelings of helplessness caused her to feel afraid and frightened.

Within the darkness, there seemed to be fluctuations present, rippling out as they undulated. Faintly, there seemed to be some blurry pictures surfacing within her mind.

It was a stretch of bloody ruins, filled with the flames of war. A little girl, completely covered in dirt and grime, shivering as she curled up within the rubble within. Trembling and shivering, the neverending rain continued to pour down, causing her already weak and frail body to appear even more pitiful.

A stretch of dull-gray was already present within her eyes, while she was able to feel the encroachment of death. However, there wasn't much fear or dread within her. Although she was young, she had seen too much of the cruelty and indifference within the secular world. There was no one that cared, no one that liked her. Even if she was to disappear, it would not attract anyone's attention.

Ever since her birth till now, she had seemingly not felt a single sliver of warmth.

Her consciousness started to grow increasingly blurry. It seems that I'm about to die like this...

Unknowingly, the rain drops falling on her body had stopped. A figure seemed to appear before their eyes. Raising her head, she could faintly discern a gentle figure right in front of her.

The gentle figure extended her palms, rubbing Ling Xi's head. Under this gentle caressing, her originally cold and icy body unexpectedly started to warm up.

Within her blurry eyesight, she could feel this gentle figure giving her incomparable warmth, something that she had never felt before.

In the next moment, the gentle figure before her gently placed some food beside her. After rubbing her head once more, the figure rose up and walked off.

Looking at the figure gradually disappearing in the distance, a breath of courage that sprouted out from an unknown place erupted forth. Grabbing the food left for her, she stumbled and staggered, walking towards the direction the figure had walked to.

She continued walking, and walking. Time was not a concept to her now, continuing till all the energy within her body was drained. In the end, finally seeing the gentle figure that she couldn't seem to catch up to, her petite body finally collapsed.

Nevertheless, her body didn't hit the hard ground below, instead she landed within a warm and gentle embrace.

"Planning to follow me, little thing?" The gentle figure rubbed her head, while the voice ringing out was similarly warm and gentle.

"Em." Within her weakness, she tightly grabbed the sleeve of the lady, wanting to grab onto the last remnant of warm within her life.

"However, the place I'm going to is extremely dangerous. It's hard to predict whether it'll be fortunate or disastrous if you follow me..." After giving a gentle sigh, the gentle lady spoke out.

She drilled herself into the lady's bosom, greedily seeking the warmth within. For the sake of that warmth, she was willing to pay any price.

In the end, she followed the gentle lady and left.

"What's your name?"

"Ling...Ling Xi..."

"A really nice-sounding name."

"Really?...How should I call you...?"

“Okay, call me Aunt Jing.” The gentle lady replied with a faint smile.

“Okay…Aunt Jing…”

…

“Come Ling Xi, I’ll teach you how to cultivate… Firstly, you’ll have to chose a Spiritual Art. Come, take a pick. These few are very formidable…”

“Okay. Let me see…is this alright?” Looking at the glowing scrolls before her eyes, radiating with astonishing brilliance, Ling Xi hesitated for quite a while. In the end, she looked towards the unassuming black scroll that was floating at a corner.

“Oh?”

“Is there a problem? I can’t choose it, Aunt Jing?”

“No…This martial art is split into two scrolls, Yin and Yang. The scroll before you is the Yin Scroll. I’ve left the Yang Scroll for my Little Mu’er. If you cultivate it, you’ll suffer a lot in the future.”

“Little Mu’er? Is that Aunt Jing’s child?”

“Haha. That’s right. He’s a very cute little fellow, and is a little smaller than Ling Xi…”

Looking at the happy smile that had radiated from Aunt Jing’s heart, a sour feeling erupted within her heart as she spoke out, “Then, why did Aunt Jing split up with him?”

Rubbing Ling Xi’s head, Aunt Jing’s expression turned into one of grief and dejection as she replied, “That’s because I want to protect him…therefore, I can only leave him…”

Half-understanding Aunt Jing’s words, Ling Xi nodded her head, and said, “Then, I’ll cultivate in it.”

“If you cultivate it, it’ll bring a lot of trouble and danger for you…”

“I’m not afraid. Since Aunt Jing misses Little Mu’er that much, I’ll cultivate in the same martial art. In the future, if I manage to find him, I’ll bring him to see you.” Ling Xi replied. As long as Aunt Jing became happy, she was willing to do anything.

Looking at the young and childish face of the little girl before her, the gentle lady gave a faint sigh. Raising her head to look towards a distant place in the endless horizon, that was a place she needed to returned to. A place that possessed strong power, and yet was extremely cold and heartless. Compared to that, she truly prefered staying in the small Northern Spiritual Realm. Her husband was there, with a little fellow that she was willing to give her all to...

Therefore, there were times that she had to make a choice. Due to that, for the sake of protecting that little fellow, even though she couldn’t bear it, the only thing she could do was to leave.

...

Within the pond, Ling Xi’s long eyelashes faintly trembled, Her eyes started to open, bit by bit, revealing the sparkling gem-like tears brimming within them. Gently wiping away the slashes of water on her face, she started muttering.

“Aunt Jing...”

# Chapter 386 – Memories

When Mu Chen had exited from his cultivation state, he could feel that the boundless Spiritual Energy circulating within his body was undeniably much more vigorous and dense than before.

Cultivating for a short span of half a day, in accordance to Mu Chen's feelings, he might have already reached the same benefits as cultivating normally for ten days. Such an efficiency truly made him gasp in amazement.

According to this speed, Mu Chen could tell that it was extremely possible for him to complete his breaththrough and genuinely promote into the Heavenly Completion Stage within a month.

Lifting his hands to do a stretch, sharp and clear cracking sounds seemed to ring out from all the bones within his body. At the same time, a feeling brimming with happiness radiated from his entire body.

Lowering his head to shoot a look at the pond, he noticed that the jet black water had already turned clear and transparent once again. Obviously, the Spiritual Energy within it had already been completely sucked dry by him.

Raising his head, to look towards the other side of the pond, the scene that he saw instantly caused him to feel startled, since he saw Ling Xi currently hugging her knees. At this moment, her beautiful teardrop-shaped face appeared exceeding calm, while her weak and lovable figure seemed to be shivering.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi!" Shock filled Mu Chen as he hastily stood up and rushed over. Hugging Ling Xi up by the waist, he carried her out. The clear water dripped down from her lovable body, while the already translucent dress stuck tightly on her exquisite and voluptuous figure, accentuating those astonishing and soul-stirring curves.

However, at this moment, Mu Chen didn't have the heart or attention left to admire such a beautiful scene. Carrying Ling Xi over the grass patch beside the pond, he retrieved an enormous set of robes and wrapped them around her.

"I'm alright. I've just exhausted all of my Spiritual Energy, that's all," replied Ling Xi as she tightened the robes that were wrapped around her. At this moment, her beautiful eyes were staring unblinkingly at Mu Chen, as if she had wanted to burn the face of the youth in front her into the depths of her mind.

"What's the matter?" Being stared at with such a gaze, Mu Chen felt somewhat unnatural, causing him to ask out.

"Now, after looking at you again...indeed, you're look slightly like Aunt Jing," replied Ling Xi with a gentle smile.

"Aunt Jing?" Mu Chen was immediately startled. In the next moment, after regaining his clarity, he asked out in shock and astonishment, "Are you talking about my mum?"

Gently nodding her head, Ling Xi replied, "In the previous moment, I have faintly remembered some stuff..."

Upon speaking until here, a grin appeared on her face. Looking at Mu Chen, she spoke out, "So you're the little Mu'er that Aunt Jing was talking about...looks like my luck's really good, huh? I'm even able to meet up with you just by waiting at this place."

"Come, call me Elder Sister." Extending her jade-like hand, Ling Xi gently twisted Mu Chen's ears, while happiness brimmed within her beautiful eyes. At this moment, with every word and action, she truly appeared to be exceeding close and intimate to Mu Chen. Furthermore, it also appeared much more naturally and smooth.

Immediately, embarrassment filled Mu Chen. However, he didn't have any rejections towards the natural intimacy Ling Xi was showing towards him. In addition, faint feelings of warmth appeared within his heart. However, feeling helpless, he tilted his

head and evaded her incoming hands. Surprise, happiness and an urgent feeling appeared within his eyes as he hastily shot a question out to her. “You’ve remembered, Elder Sister Ling Xi? Do you remember where my mum is now?”

When he had left the Northern Spirit Realm, he had promised his old man that he would definitely bring his mum back to the Northern Spirit Realm. Being alone by himself in the Northern Spirit Realm, his old man was too lonely.

However, at this moment, he was still extremely weak, and didn’t have any way of travelling around the Great Thousand World to seek for the trail of his mum. However, if he was able to get some information beforehand, it would undoubtedly be an extremely heart-inspiring matter for him.

Faintly shaking her head, Ling Xi replied, “It’s just some fragments of a memory. Furthermore, it was from an extremely long time ago…However, the place that Aunt Jing was headed to should be extremely dangerous…”

Speaking until this point, her forehead started to knit up before continuing to speak. “I might have gone to that place before… there’s even a possibility that my memories were lost in that place. Somebody should have done something to me at that place!”

Speaking until here, her voice had already become exceedingly cold and frosty. Tightly clenching her jade-like hands, hatred and bitterness flooded her eyes.

At this moment, Mu Chen had also started to frown. From the information that he had gotten from his old man, his mum should be from a place that was ancient and extremely powerful. Furthermore, during the time when she had chosen to leave, it seemed as if she was worried that the people at that place would find them.

The extremely dangerous place that Elder Sister Ling Xi had mentioned might be the mysterious place that his mother had

come from.

However, what exactly happened? Why would Ling Xi, who was always following his mum, separate from her? Furthermore, why would her memories disappear?

Tightly clenching his hands, Mu Chen thought, Exactly what had happened to my mum?

“There’s no need to be worried. Aunt Jing’s extremely powerful. Even if she’s met with some trouble, it won’t be too big of a problem.”

Ling Xi’s icy jade-like hands covered Mu Chen’s hand as she spoke out in a soft voice, “As of now, what you need to do is to work hard and increase your strength. If not, even if you managed to find the location that Aunt Jing is in, you’ll be completely helpless to do anything. If you’re go there with a hot-headed and reckless approach, you might even bring unnecessary trouble for Aunt Jing.”

Hearing her words, Mu Chen’s expression turned solemn, If his mum was truly trapped in that mysterious place, the current him truly would not be one bit useful. After all, if what Ling Xi said was correct, that even her memories of that place were wiped clean… his current strength was really too miniscule.

“Elder Sister Ling Xi, how strong are you?” asked Mu Chen cautiously.

“I should have no problem dealing with the Heavenly Seated Elders of your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy,” replied Ling Xi in a played-down manner.

“So strong…” Mu Chen was shocked. Look’s like she’s a true genius with monstrous talent! Even within younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent, compared to her, none of them could be worth a single look.

“The five Heavenly Seated Elders of your Northern Heavens

Spiritual Academy should be at the level of First grade Sovereign, and are not particularly strong. Compared to them, Dean Tai Cang is much more formidable, and should be around Fifth grade Sovereign…"

Sweeping the lock of black hair that had fallen in front of her forehead, Ling Xi pursed her lips before continuing her words, "The Divine Beast Protector of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, the Northern Sea Dragon truly is extremely formidable. As of now, he should be a Ninth grade Sovereign, and might be attempting to break through to the realm of an Earth Sovereign…"

"However, even with that strength, he's still far from being able to compare to Aunt Jing."

Mu Chen's mouth twitched as he heard her words. Although he had guessed that his mum wasn't simple, he never imagined that she would actually be that strong, to the point where even the Northern Sea Dragon was unable to compare to her. This truly was hard to imagine.

"Therefore, there's no need for you to feel shocked or amazed. After all, I was personally taught by Aunt Jing." Ling Xi said with a sweet smile on her face. "If you were brought up by Aunt Jing from young, you'd be even stronger than me."

Letting a bitter laugh out, Mu Chen replied, "I didn't have such luck. From birth till now, I've never seen my mum before, let alone getting any pointers…"

Extending her jade like-hand to pinch Mu Chen's cheek, Ling Xi's beautiful eyes stared straight at Mu Chen, before speaking out in a stern look, "Aunt Jing left you behind to protect you. I can feel that she cares a lot about you…therefore, you can't throw childish tantrums about her not always being by your side."

With a smile, Mu Chen nodded his head. Just as he was about to say something, his senses picked up on something, causing him to turn his gaze towards his back. Turning around, he noticed Su'er

hugging a broom the size of her staring in shock at them with wide open eyes.

Cough

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen made a dry cough, while hastily removing Ling Xi's hands from his cheeks. Standing up, he walked straight towards Su'er.

"Ah, Big Brother Mu Chen! I didn't see anything! I won't tell Elder Sister Luo Li! Please don't kill me!" Upon seeing Mu Chen walking over to her, Su'er immediately spoke out in panic.

Feeling amused by her, Mu Chen flicked the little girl's bright forehead before replying, "What are you talking about? Elder Sister Ling Xi's helping me cultivate."

Opening her eyes wide, Su'er stared at Mu Chen, before turning to look at Ling Xi, whose entire body was wet, with Mu Chen's robes even draped over her. Instantly, her small mouth twitched. Is this called cultivation? Are they still treating me like a kid?

With a faint smile, Ling Xi removed the robes that were draped over her, before folding them in two. However, she didn't return them to Mu Chen, instead she held onto them. Spiritual Energy sparkled across her entire body, evaporating all the water present on her into steam. Clearly, Ling Xi had recovered some of her spiritual energy.

Standing up, she walked over to Mu Chen, before saying, "Our training ends here for today. Come again tomorrow to continue. This should allow you to breakthrough within a month."

"We're continuing this tomorrow?" Feeling startled, Mu Chen hesitated before replying, "Would that be too rushed? Just take a rest for tomorrow."

This method of dispersing one's Spiritual Energy would result in quite a bit of injury towards the person doing it. Although Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy was strong and intrepid, Mu Chen didn't want to

see anything happen to her by helping him.

“You truly are gentle. Nevertheless, don’t worry. I can endure this little bit,” replied Ling Xi with a smile. This was an extremely natural smile, causing Su’er to stare at her with slight inconceivability. In her memory, the previous Ling Xi was extremely cold and indifferent, let alone doing something extremely extravagant like revealing a smile.

“Okay then.”

Upon seeing and hearing her reply, Mu Chen could only tilt his head. After waving to the two, he didn’t continue saying anything else, before turning around and walking out of the courtyard.

Looking at the back figure in the distance, Ling Xi gave a gentle smile. Aunt Jing, I’ve finally found him. Relax, before finding you, I’ll protect him, and not let him suffer one bit of pain...

“This is over.”

Noticing the smiling Ling Xi as she stared at the back figure of Mu Chen, Su’er seemed to understand something. Unable to hold it in, the little girl started to cry out, “Elder Sister Ling Xi, could it be that you like Big Brother Mu Chen?”

Tilting her head over, Ling Xi replied with some amusement, “What’s the matter? Is there a problem?”

Summoning her courage, Su’er replied, “This isn’t good. Big Brother Mu Chen and Big Sis Luo Li are a pair.”

“You sneaky little brat. Are you actually not on my side?” Extending her jade-like hands, she gave a pitch on Su’er’s little cheeks while speaking out with a grin.

“Wu...Elder Sister Ling Xi, forcing the issue will not lead to happiness.”

“Su’er, do you want to clean up the Spiritual Array House today?”

“Ah, no, I don’t want to! I’m sorry! Elder Sister Ling Xi and Big Brother Mu Chen are the best match possible!”

“……”

# Chapter 387 – At a Loss

For the next half a month, Mu Chen had seemingly spent every single day in Ling Xi's mountain peak residence, undergoing the same special and erotic method to cultivate.

However, it had to be said that this method of cultivation truly had extremely awesome benefits for Mu Chen. He never expected that the fusion of his and Ling Xi's Spiritual Energy would have such an enormous effect on him.

However, as this special method of cultivation continued, Mu Chen started to get slightly apprehensive with such a rapid increase of his strength. Every time he had cultivated this way, Ling Xi would become weak and frail. Obviously, although this method was beneficial for him, there wasn't any of that for Ling Xi.

This situation made him feel slightly regretful. If he had known about the consequences earlier, he wouldn't have gone to seek help from Ling Xi.

Therefore, as approximately half a month went by, finally, Mu Chen couldn't endure the guilt building up within his heart. The efficacy of this cultivating method with Ling Xi had also dropped. Being a resolute and decisive person, he didn't have any way to continue seeing Ling Xi's beautiful face grow weaker and paler as time went by, while remaining indifferent and unconcerned.

...

Within a little building in the Freshman region, Mu Chen sat on the roof. As he blankly stared at the sky, a somewhat absent-minded expression appeared within his eyes.

Sha. Sha.

Faint and gentle footsteps rang behind him as a familiar fragrance that caused his heart to relax followed suit.

Nevertheless, this time, Mu Chen continued staring at the sky, lost in his thoughts.

Arriving beside Mu Chen, Luo Li took a seat. Staring at him with her clear and tranquil eyes, she asked in a soft voice, “What’s the matter?”

For the past two days, she had noticed that Mu Chen was feeling uneasy about something, with his gaze turning blank and lost in thought at times. This caused her to feel slightly worried about this youth.

Hearing her voice, Mu Chen turned to look at Luo Li. This was the young girl who had weathered life-or-death moments time after time during the Spiritual Road with him, and was also the young girl that was firmly imprinted in his heart and mind. Tilting his body to the side, he placed his head on her long and slender legs, before muttering, “There’s some stuff, and I don’t know if I’m doing the right thing or not…”

Lowering her head, her big, clear eyes casted a doubtful look towards Mu Chen.

Turning silent awhile, Mu Chen finally took a deep breath, before starting to tell Luo Li the detailed happenings about the need for him to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month and the matter with Ling Xi. In fact, he had even talked about the relationship between the latter and his mother, not wanting to hide anything from Luo Li.

In return, Luo Li continued to attentively listen to him in silence.

“Do I need such easily-obtained power?” Mu Chen muttered. If that was the case, breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage truly would be a piece of cake for him.

Lightly blinking her beautiful eyes, Luo Li continued to stare at Mu Chen. After a moment, she spoke out in a soft voice, “Mu Chen, do you know why I started liking you?”

Mu Chen gawked, before looking at the absolutely beautiful face above him.

“I like you, not because of your appearance, not because of your skills and methods, and more so your talent. Instead, I like the boy that would face any difficulty he encountered within the Spiritual Road. Regardless of how life-threatening the situation was, or perhaps being encircled by various ways, he would always show a smile brimming with confidence and tell me, ‘Don’t be afraid, I’ll bring you out of here’…”

“I love the self-believing smile of yours… In the past, due to the changes that happened in the Luo God Clan, I had no choice by to passively bear the responsibility of carrying on the inheritance for the sake of hundreds and thousands of people. Due to that, I was forced to cultivate. I tried to make myself capable of enduring it. However, within my heart, there wasn’t any hope present. That was because, I was unable to believe that I am able to endure such a heavy responsibility…”

“However…after meeting you in the Spiritual Road, you’ve taught me that I need to believe in myself.”

Luo Li’s clear and limpid eyes stared at Mu Chen, with her soft and gentle voice akin to an alarm clock. Seeping, bit by bit, into the heart and mind of Mu Chen, it causing the confusion present within his eyes to dissipate, sliver by sliver. Within the depths of those black eyes, brilliance seemed to start condensing once again.

“Now…the person that had taught me to believe in myself, had started to stop believing in himself. What do you think I should do to remind him?” Luo Li’s warm and delicate hands caressed Mu Chen’s face as she spoke with a faint smile.

Hu.

A clump of white smoke left Mu Chen’s mouth as he exhaled a long breath of air. At this moment, the pressure within his heart had completely dissipated, while the corners of his mouth started

to slowly curl up.

Within the Spiritual Road, the number of times where he was placed within a life-or-death situation was uncountable. At that time, he was even incapable of using any Spiritual Energy. Nevertheless, there was not the slightest bit of tremble within his heart. That's because, he believed in himself, that in any situation, regardless of the difficulty, he would be able to overcome all obstacles and pass through!

In those situations, he was already able to rely on himself to overcome them. Why was a mere Heavenly Completion Stage able to force his self-confidence to such a low point now? In fact, why did he have the need to rely on a method that would cause harm to others to increase his own strength?!

His path towards supremacy didn't require all of that!

Slowly clenching his hands, the smile hanging at the corner of his mouth became haughty and brimming with confidence. Heavenly Completion Stage? I'll use my own strength and break through!

Looking at the familiar smile reappearing on Mu Chen's face, Luo Li started to faintly smile with him. This was the Mu Chen that she loved. Forever filled with confidence, with no difficulty able to obstruct his way.

"Luo Li."

Raising his head up, Mu Chen looked towards the figure dressed in a long black dress, with golden flower patterns outlining the frills. Her outfit had caused her to appear like a noble and respectable young girl of absolute beauty. This was the future Empress of the Luo God Clan.

He was loving her more and more.

"Yes?" Raising her clear and sparklingly big eyes, Luo Li looked towards Mu Chen.

“Thank you, but I really can’t endure any longer.”

With a smile, Mu Chen pressed his hands straight down on Luo Li’s delicate shoulders. Lunging forward, a panicked cry rang out from the young girl as Mu Chen pushed her down.

As her bright and luxuriant hair spread out across the ground, akin to a silver river, Luo Li was a little startled as she looked towards Mu Chen, who had lunged onto her. At this moment, the latter was looking down at her, with his tall body pressing tightly on hers. The scorching-hot situation she was currently in caused her face to turn burning hot.

“Hehe.” Looking at the face that was inches away from him, unable to hold it in, Mu Chen started to laugh evilly.

Feeling slightly peeved, Luo Li rolled her eyes, before showing a stern expression on her beautiful face while saying, “Don’t think about asking me to console you again.”

“Then, let me console you.”

Lowering his head, under Luo Li’s big eyes, which were slightly wide-open, he stuffed those rosy lips that were sufficient to cause people to melt within his mouth.

A smear of confusion immediately flashed within Luo Li’s beautiful eyes. In the end, extending her slim and slender jade-like arms, she embraced Mu Chen’s neck, giving in to Mu Chen for the picking.

After enjoying this little bit of warmth from her, Mu Chen was unwilling to relinquish it that quickly. Quietly slipping his hand within the young girl’s dress, he took a grab at that perky lump of warm jade fat within his palm.

“Mu Chen! Mu Chen!”

However, just as Mu Chen’s loins had started raging with intense fire, hurried cries rang out from below the building.

The cries immediately broke the fiery and intoxicating atmosphere, with Luo Li being the first to snap out of it. That absolutely beautiful and calm face of hers instantly turned scorching hot. Hastily shoving Mu Chen away, she stood up and arranged her dress. Filled with resentment, her beautiful eyes stared at Mu Chen as she thought, This fellow truly is such a bad guy.

Seeing her glare at him, Mu Chen gave a dry laugh, before looking down at Zhou Ling below him. Gnashing his teeth unhappily, he asked, “What’s the matter?”

Luckily this fellow knew the rules, and never rushed up to the building. If he saw the scene of Luo Li being as soft as water just now, Mu Chen could guarantee that fellow’s extermination.

“Su’er brought an Elder to find you…” Spotting the unhappy expression hanging on Mu Chen’s face, Zhou Ling could only reply in the most straightforward and innocent manner.

Upon hearing this, Mu Chen instantly gawked. Elder? Look’s like it’s Elder Sister Ling Xi. Why did she come here for?

“Is that your Elder Sister Ling Xi?” Luo Li’s charming face gradually recovered to normalcy. Moving closer to him, her beautiful eyes shot a look at Mu Chen, while an indescribable expression appeared within.

Feeling embarrassed, Mu Chen nodded his head.

“Let’s go take a look. In any case, she’s already here,” said Luo Li with a faint smile.

Making a bitter laugh, Mu Chen held her hand, before shooting out of the building, descending towards the public square in the Freshman region. Within the centre of the public square, the familiar beautiful figure of Ling Xi was currently standing there.

In the surroundings of the public square, the crowds of the Goddess Luo Association were sneaking peeks as whispering

sounds rang out.

“She’s really an Elder of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Is that possible? How can she be that young?!”

“I’ve heard that she’s a Spiritual Array Grandmaster, possessing extremely terrifying strength.”

“Her age seems to not be that much older than us…can she be like Elder Zhu Tian?”

“I don’t think so, the feeling’s different…”

“Why’s she finding Big Brother Mu Chen? Could it be…hehe…”

“Are you seeking your death? If Big Sis hear’s that, won’t she chop you up!?”

“……”

Upon hearing those whispers ringing within the public square, Mu Chen could only shake his head in helplessness. With a move, he appeared before Ling Xi and Su’er as he asked with a smile, “Elder Sister Ling Xi, is there something wrong, for you to suddenly come to the Freshman region?”

Raising her charming eyes, Ling Xi shot a look towards Mu Chen, before taking a look at Luo Li, who was standing beside him. Gently nodding her head, her eyebrows started to slightly knit up as she spoke out, “Why didn’t you head to my place to cultivate?”

With a smile, Mu Chen replied, “Elder Sister Ling Xi. Let me handle my cultivate from this point onwards. I’m truly grateful for your help during the past half-month.”

Ling Xi’s eyebrows knitted more tightly as she asked, “If you rely on yourself, it’ll be extremely difficult to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within the next half-month. Why do you reject my offer? If you’re afraid of me suffering a loss, you truly don’t need to. My cultivation is just stopping for only a month.”

Giving a slow shake of his head, Mu Chen replied with a soft voice, “Elder Sister Ling Xi, the only thing I’m doing is believing in myself.”

Startled, Ling Xi looked towards Mu Chen. At this moment, the youth’s eyes were sparkling with brightness, brimming with genuine self-confidence. Compared to the day when he had come to find her, this was clearly an entirely different expression.

“Elder Sister Ling Xi, I’m really grateful for your help. I know… that you helping me is really due to your relationship with my mum. You’re only wishing to divert the feelings of gratitude to my mum towards me…”

Ling Xi had a cold and detached personality, and took deep precautions to isolate herself from others. Mu Chen wasn’t being narcissistic when he said those words, since he knew about the true reason for her actions. If not for her relationship with his mum, the current Ling Xi might still be treating him with the icy and cold manner she had done during their first encounter; what’s more, using such a method of self-hurt herself to help him.

Mu Chen continued speaking with earnesty, “However, don’t spoil me too much, Elder Sister Ling Xi. I believe that if my mum knew that I had used such a method to gain strength, she might be extremely disappointed in me.”

“Furthermore…”

Flinging his mouth aside, Mu Chen said in helplessness, “I also really don’t want to see your weak appearance. That look isn’t beautiful.”

As Ling Xi gawked, she appeared startled as she looked towards the handsome youth in front of her. The latter’s smile was as radiant as the sun, causing even her cold and frosted-over heart to faintly tremble.

After remaining silent for a long time, a gentle smile finally

appeared on her face. This smile caused quite a few students to fixedly stare at her. Compared to Luo Li, Ling Xi clearly had a graceful bearing that was unique to her.

Slowly walking up, her jade-like hand extended out, touching Mu Chen's face. Within her eyes, genuine feelings of love and pampering radiated out, before she spoke out with a sigh, "You really are Aunt Jing's child. Those previous words might be due to Aunt Jing, however..."

A smile crept on her face as she continue, "Your Elder Sister really likes the current you."

Immediately, an embarrassed expression appeared on Mu Chen's face.

"Okay. I won't force you. I believe that you're able to succeed. However, it's best that you come to my place to cultivate. I'll try my best to help you, but I'll not use that method again."

This time, Mu Chen didn't continue rejecting her help, then smiled as he nodded his head.

...

As this incident took place within the Freshman region, Dean Tai Cang and the five Heavenly Seated Elders were sitting within a large hall in the central region of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. In front of them was a glowing Spiritual Energy screen, with the scene happening within the Freshman region displayed on it.

# Chapter 388 – Stealing Spirituality

Within the large hall, all was quiet as Dean Tai Cang and the Elders looked at the glowing Spiritual Energy screen, where the scene happening in the Freshman region was displayed. Obviously, the commotion that happened there had caught their eyes.

“That little fella…”

Focusing on the figure of Mu Chen displayed within the glowing Spiritual Energy screen, Dean Tai Cang finally gave a soft laugh with the feeling of a heavy weight having been lifted off his shoulders.

Ever since he gave Mu Chen the condition of breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month, he had been secretly observing the former. With Mu Chen’s strength then, breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month was a rather difficult task to accomplish.

This would also make him feel extremely pressed.

Dean Tai Cang wanted to see the decisions that Mu Chen would make when he was forced into such a pressing situation. When Mu Chen had sought Ling Xi’s help, he and the other Elders were slightly astonished. However, the cultivation method that he had used afterwards had caused their hearts to sink down a little.

The path that led to one becoming a true expert was filled with too many thorns and torments. However, of the people that were able to finally walk out of this path, every single one of them were tenacious in spirit. Regardless of any situation they were in, they weren’t people that would give up so easily.

The the Dao of cultivation, practising by oneself was the righteous path. As for those that were similar to how Mu Chen was relying on Ling Xi’s Spiritual Energy to cultivate, they had diverged to the wrong fork in the road. Perhaps, it was able to

allow for his strength to rapidly increase in a short period of time. However, in the distant future, this malpractice would become a heart demon in Mu Chen's path towards becoming a true expert.

If he continued cultivating using such a method, it would have an extremely huge impact on his future accomplishments.

During the past few days, even Hall Master Mo You and the other Heavenly Seated Elders were unable to endure Mu Chen's continuation with this cultivation method so much so that they thought of forcefully intervening. However, they were restrained by Dean Tai Cang. In such a matter, if Mu Chen was able to comprehend the consequences by himself, it would have a beneficial effect of greatly increasing his mental state. If others were to butt in and interfere, it would not lead to such a perfect ending.

However, even Dean Tai Cang was unsure if Mu Chen was capable of giving up on the lure of drastically increasing his strength that this way of cultivation provided.

As they quietly watched, time went on, continuing for half a month. However, during the half a month, as Mu Chen's strength rapidly increased, the disappointment within their eyes slowly piled up and up.

If Mu Chen was any other ordinary student, they might not have cared so much about him. However, the current Mu Chen could be considered to have exceeded Shen Cangsheng and become the most outstanding student in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. There were only an extreme few in the earlier batches that were able to compare to him. In fact, he might have even walked much farther than them on the path towards becoming an expert.

Therefore, they had extremely high anticipation and expectations towards Mu Chen. Nevertheless, those expectations started to dissipate, little by little...

All of these feelings lasted till Mu Chen suddenly stopped that

cultivation method two days ago...

"That's a hard decision to make. I've even assumed that he would sink deeper and deeper..." Hall Master Mo You exhaled a breath, before sighing in admiration as he spoke out. In accordance to the rate Mu Chen was progressing in that cultivation technique, he might've been able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage in a few more days. However, who would have expected that Mu Chen would actually put it to a halt at the most critical moment.

"However, Ling Xi is really reckless...she had actually used such a method. Exactly what relationship does she have with Mu Chen?" Frowning, Elder Zhu Tian asked.

Ling Xi's method had eliminated some of the negative influences that might affect Mu Chen on his walk along the path of cultivation, and was completely on the level of hurting herself to benefit others. Such a thing was obviously exceedingly inconceivable to the Heavenly Seated Elders. Furthermore, with Ling Xi and her famous cold and detached personality, she had never once interfered with any matter of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Only when the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy needed to construct Spiritual Arrays and under the behest of Dean Tai Cang would she give a little bit of face and take action. However, now...

With regards to this, Dean Tai Cang could only shake his head. Ling Xi's history was already extremely mysterious. However, all in all, this was of no harm to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Speaking out, he said, "Ling Xi's too young. Although she's extremely strong, she's lacking in experience, compared to you guys. She's not to blame for this matter. As of now, let's allow Mu Chen to continue cultivating at her place. I think that the previous matter should not happen again."

"Then, if Mu Chen really breaks through to Heavenly Completion Stage, would you still allow him to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain?" asked Hall Master Mo You.

“Compared to the most elite of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent, a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase still has quite a bit of disparity. Although Mu Chen cannot be judged by the book, this is still an extremely important and yet dangerous occasion to participate in,” added Elder Zhu Tian in a deep voice.

“There’s still half a year left before the start of the Great Academy Competition…If something happens to Mu Chen before that, it would be too great of a loss for us.”

With a bitter laugh, Elder Zhu Tian continued speaking, “Furthermore, the elimination rate of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past two Great Academy Competitions had exceeded 80%. According to the rules, this doesn’t meet the standards. If this was to happen again in this upcoming one, there might be people that would take advantage of this to snatch away our title as one of the Five Great Academies. After all, the Saint Spirit Academy has always disliked us. Furthermore, there’re quite a few strong and powerful academies that are eying us covetously…”

This caused a few Elders to turn quiet. Within the Five Great Academies, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was ranked last, and had comparatively weaker backgrounds than the other four. The absolute majority of the reason why the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was able to become one of the Five Great Academies was due to the strength of Lord Northern Sea Dragon. However, if they weren’t able to produce adequate results, their title would be stripped. Even Lord Northern Sea Dragon wasn’t able to do anything about that. Furthermore, they didn’t have the face to use that as a point to threaten others…

With a single statement of saying that their students were being deficient and that their academy was being incapable, it was already enough to stuff their mouths full.

“Hmph! For the sake of recruiting students with special and

distinguished talent, the Saint Spiritual Academy had relied on some unscrupulous methods. They have even interfered with the Spiritual Road. At that time, when they had settled on Ji Xuan, they had secretly provided help, letting Luo Li face some life-threatening situations. They had also forced Mu Chen to turn into that Blood Calamity of the Spiritual Road, causing a massacre which resulted in him being kicked of out there…" said Hall Master Mo You with a cold snort, appearing exceedingly discontent with the Saint Spiritual Academy.

"There's still…Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest of those on the Heavenly Rankings. They are good seedlings, and the matter with Mo Longzi this time had quite a big impact on them…"

Slightly narrowing his eyes, Dean Tai Cang gentle dispelled that thought with his hands as he said, "The matter of the Divine Spiritual Mountain would have to see if Mu Chen is able to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within the remaining time. As for Shen Cangsheng and the rest, I've my own plans for them. For those children, if we give them some time, what would the most elite in the younger generation of the Saint Spiritual Academy be compared to them?"

Upon hearing Dean Tai Cang's words, Mo You, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elder didn't continue speaking and nodded their heads in approval.

…

The next day, Mu Chen appeared once again on the quiet and secluded mountain peak where Ling Xi lived. At that place, Ling Xi was already waiting for him. Upon seeing his figure, a smile surfaced on Ling Xi's beautiful face.

"I assumed that you'd not come."

Mu Chen tilted his head in slight displeasure.

"I'm sorry. I've not considered much for this matter." Looking at

Mu Chen, Ling Xi spoke out in a soft voice. Although her experience and wisdom truly was not comparable the Heavenly Seated Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, whom have cultivated for many, many years, being a person on the same level as them, she had sensed the malpractice her method would bring to Mu Chen after calming down and thinking it over after the scene that happened yesterday.

"I'm the one who put forth the request, so I'm the one that needs to apologize," said Mu Chen while shaking his head. Although this matter had narrowly caused a great deal of trouble for him, it was still a good matter, all in all. His cultivation since coming to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had increased too quickly, with his mental state of mind having some fluctuations after achieving victory. This time could be considered as a method to temper his mental state, and allowed him to control his true heart.

A faint smile appeared on Ling Xi's face as she replied, "For the sake of compensation, I'll do my best to help you. Naturally, I'll not use that method again."

Looking at Ling Xi's beautiful smile, Mu Chen's finally relaxed his heart. With a smile, he said, "As long as it's not the fusion of Spiritual Energy, I quite like any other method similar to that."

Ling Xi immediately gawked, before a faint shade of red appeared on her beautiful face. Gently pursing her lips, she replied him with a smile, "Are you trying to take liberties with your Elder Sister?"

"My mistake, my mistake. Let's start." Giving a dry cough, Mu Chen hastily changed the topic.

Ling Xi shot a displeased glare at Mu Chen, before walking towards the back of the mountain, with Mu Chen rapidly in tow. After nearly ten minutes, they stopped at a spacious clearing behind the mountain.

Upon arriving here, Mu Chen shot an astonished look at the sky, noticing the faint feelings of distortion happening there. Faintly,

he was seemingly able to see the complicated intertwinement of countless glowing threads, as well as the presence of Spiritual Array fluctuations.

Furthermore, Mu Chen was able to feel that the Spiritual Aura of the world seemed to be exceedingly thick and dense in this place. In fact, there were condensations of Spiritual Energy found on the tree leaves in the vicinity, while a dense fog covered their surroundings.

“The Spiritual Aura here...” Mu Chen spoke out as he looked towards Ling Xi in astonishment.

“You should know that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has an 8th grade Congregation Spiritual Array, right?” replied Ling Xi with a faint smile.

Knowing about that, Mu Chen nodded his head. 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array. That was an extremely frightening thing. Within the entire Northern Heavens Continent, it might be the only one of its kind. However, since entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen had yet to see that Spiritual Array. It’s said that the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array wasn’t open to students, and was hidden within the deepest part of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Could it be that the 8th grade Spiritual Array was at this place?

“The Spiritual Aura of the world present in the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy is supplied by the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array. Therefore, it can be said that it is the lifeblood of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, and can be considered as the academy’s most important thing. Other than special circumstances, it will absolutely not be opened up.” Ling Xi started her explanation.

Mu Chen got a flash of understand. That’s why he had never heard of anyone truly being able to enter the rumoured 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array.

“This place is…” said Mu Chen as he looked doubtfully at Ling Xi. Since the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array won’t open up, why did Ling Xi explain all this to him?

“Indeed, the 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array cannot be opened. However…I’m able to use some methods to steal some of the Spiritual Aura from inside it,” replied Ling Xi with a sweet smile.

“Steal some?” Now Mu Chen’s eyes had sprung wide open. How was she able to do that?

“After staying in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for so long, the only thing that has some interest to me is that 8th grade Spirit Convergence Array. After researching for some time, although I’m unable to completely control it, I can feel and tweak some of its principles and functions. Therefore, stealing some Spiritual Aura from it isn’t considered too difficult for me.”

Placing her hands behind her back, Ling Xi tilted her head as she looked at Mu Chen. As she did so, her black hair slipped off her shoulder like a waterfall, accentuating her beauty to soul-stirring levels. At this moment, while looking at Mu Chen with her beautiful eyes, a sweet smile appeared on her face.

“This way, can it be considered as genuine cultivation? You won’t reject this, right?”

# Chapter 389 – Pride of the Upperclassman

Looking towards the sky, he saw an extremely complicated glowing pattern made of the intertwinement of countless glowing threads. The degree of complication present caused even his eyes turn spirally, while a dizzy feeling erupted within his mind. In the next instant, he quickly turned his vision away as shock and amazement filled his heart. As of now, with his accomplishments in the area of Spiritual Arrays, he was still unable to completely see the rotation of this Spiritual Array! Exactly how strong and complicated was this Spiritual Array?!

Indeed, Ling Xi was undoubtedly a Spiritual Array Grandmaster. On the accomplishments of Spiritual Arrays, he had quite a big disparity when compared to her.

“I naturally have no qualms about this method,” said Mu Chen while rubbing his temples and giving a smile. Regardless of the density and power of the Spiritual Energy, those were just external factors. However, if he was able to absorb and refine them, he would be completely relying on himself. This was completely different from the previous method, where he was able to obtain a rapidly increasing strength without doing any work.

“Let’s begin today. You’ll enter it and start cultivating, while I activate the Spiritual Array. After tearing a hole into the 8th grade Spiritual Array, I’ll siphon some Spiritual Aura out from there.”

Faintly nodding her head, Ling Xi turned her beautiful eyes towards Mu Chen while saying, “However, whether or not you can break through to Heavenly Completion Stage in the remaining time would have to depend on your hard work.”

“Yes. I’ll have to trouble you then, Elder Sister Ling Xi.”

Nodding his head, Mu Chen’s eyes were brimming with resolution and firmness. If he was unable to even force his way into the Heavenly Completion Stage, how could he say to Luo Li

that he would be an unrivaled expert, overcoming all obstacles and protecting her with all his might?

“Let’s begin.”

Not continuing to delay with any words, Ling Xi extended her jade-like hands, clapping them together. Activating her hand seal, streaks of light shot from within, rushing towards the countless intertwined glowing threads in the sky.

Bang!

As a low and deep rumbling sound seemed to ring out across the horizon, dazzling rays of brilliance erupted from the countless glowing threads. In the next instant, the glowing threads converged, transforming into an approximately hundred foot wide glowing vortex in the sky.

The centre of the vortex headed straight towards nihility, connecting to an unknown place. Extremely vast and boundless Spiritual Energy seemed to be faintly discernable as it spewed out from within like an erupting volcano.

Taking a deep breath, Mu Chen shot straight towards the mountain peak situated below the vortex before taking a seat.

With a wave of her jade-like hand, the glowing vortex started to furiously revolve about. Amidst the howl resounding about, the worldly Spiritual Aura present within the boundaries of the mountain peak suddenly increased drastically as a spiritual mist rose into the air.

Bang!

Gorgeous-looking boundless Spiritual Energy appeared within the vortex, pouring down in torrents like a tsunami. Worldly Spiritual Aura fluctuations covered the entire mountain peak, completely shrouding Mu Chen’s body within it.

Looking at this scene unfurl before her eyes, Ling Xi nodded her head in satisfaction. Turning her lovable face around, she shot a

vigilant glance towards the distance. After sensing nothing present there, she gracefully turned around and headed away.

On a mountain peak in the far distance, Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders could only give a bitter laugh as they observed the commotion happening in their view.

“This Ling Xi is actually able to siphon some of the Spiritual Aura from within that 8th grade Spiritual Array…” said Hall Master Mo You in shock and astonishment as he smacked his lips. This 8th grade Spiritual Array was the lifeblood of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. During the creation of the academy, their Lord Northern Sea Dragon had paid an enormous price to hire an extremely powerful and mysterious influence from the Great Thousand World to create it. However, he never imagined that a Spiritual Array of such a degree would have a slit ripped open by Ling Xi. She’s truly formidable.

“It’s alright.”

Dean Tai Cang said with a hearty chuckle. Not caring that Ling Xi had her attention set on their most important 8th grade Spiritual Array of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he stared at the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar pouring down like a waterfall with his hands crossed behind his back. “Next up, let me truly see, exactly, if Mu Chen’s able to rely on himself to completely break through in the last half a month…” he muttered.

If Mu Chen was truly able to accomplish that, then their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had truly produced a rarely seen monstrous talent.

The commotion that Ling Xi caused wasn’t small, since the boundless glowing Spiritual Energy pillar descending from the sky appeared was exceedingly eye-catching within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, for the next few periods of time, there were quite a few students who paid attention to this strange phenomena, causing unavoidable shock and amazement

within the student body.

However, their shock and astonishment didn't last long, since the reason behind this matter gradually surfaced. As that news was spread around, amazed and astonishment filled the eyes of many as they thought, Mu Chen actually wanted to rely on this to rush to Heavenly Completion Stage?

That fellow was truly abnormal!

Countless students exclaimed in astonishment as they heard the news. Mu Chen had arrived in their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy only a year ago. However, his progress was sufficient to cause those senior students to feel inferior and ashamed at their own progress. Nevertheless, after recapping that even a vicious person like Mo Longzi had suffered a beating in Mu Chen's hands, they knew that this fellow simply couldn't be seen through a normal perspective. Why would they need to compare with such an abnormal human? Thinking along this path, they felt much more relieved within their hearts.

In this world, there's always some people that were out of the ordinary.

At a mountain peak within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Li Xuantong was staring at the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance. After a long while, he turned his vision towards the Freshman region. At that area was a girl that he was completely unable to remove from his mind. Nevertheless, he knew that he might never, ever be able to see the lovable appearance that naturally came out of her heart that she revealed in front of Mu Chen, for his sake...

A sliver of complicated emotions flashed across Li Xuantong's handsome face. The youth that he had doubted and questioned at the beginning had progressed at such a rapid pace, even exceeding him now. All of this proved the keenness and accuracy of the girl's vision. No matter how extraordinary and outstanding she was,

even after everyone had doubted and questioned her choice of liking that person, she still stuck to her beliefs.

Li Xuantong was undeniably arrogant and proud of himself. There was no need to question his talent. On a certain perspective, Mu Chen could be considered his love rival. However, this didn't stop Li Xuantong from denying the recognition Mu Chen had achieved from his accomplishments. Indeed, this youth possessed the potential to make Luo Li fall in love with him. Nevertheless, the feeling of being surpassed and overtaken was truly hard to stomach.

"Haha, looks like we, the two Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy brothers of the same boat, are about to be overtaken." A laughing voice suddenly rang out from behind him. Turning around, Li Xuantong noticed Shen Cangsheng sitting on a large cliff behind his back. On the sole aspect of appearance, Shen Cangsheng might not be as dashing as Li Xuantong, and not as handsome as Mu Chen. However, he possessed a bearing that was solely his. That tall and straight posture appeared akin to a divine spear that could pierce through the confines of heavens, forever unable to be bent. The disdainful look present on his face wasn't brash or insolent, making people feel an enchanting and imposing aura radiating from him.

Shen Cangsheng possessed extremely strong prestige and popularity within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even with Mu Chen's strong awe and fame rushing throughout the entire academy due him defeating Mo Longzi, it wasn't able to suppress the prestige of the Heavenly Rankings' Overlord. This wasn't due to the reason of people, but that Shen Cangsheng was an extremely charismatic person.

Heading towards the stone cliff and sitting down, Li Xuantong faintly spoke out, "What's the matter? Is the Overlord of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's Heavenly Rankings feeling dispirited? That's not like you."

“Mu Chen truly is an extremely formidable fellow.”

Looking at the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance, Shen Cangsheng replied, “From the establishment of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy till now, people who were able to achieve such accomplishments within the first year of entering the academy would not exceed more than the number of our fingers. After thinking, the most recent person seemed to exist a hundred years ago. I still remember his name, Qin Zhantian. During the Great Spiritual Academy Competition that year, countless geniuses from various great spiritual academies were overshadowed under his feet. Even the Divine Sons of the Saint Spiritual Academy that year had suffered defeat in his hands. Under his spear, he swept away anyone in his path, being undefeatable and invincible!”

“That time can be considered as the most uplifting and proud moment within the past hundred years of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s history!”

“Senior Brother Qin Zhantian, huh?” Li Xuantong said in a soft voice, “I’ve heard that he seems to be a regional Overlord in the Great Thousand Worlds, possessing heaven-transcending power.”

Fanaticism was faintly present within Shen Cangsheng’s eyes as he spoke out with a smile, “He’s my goal. When I’ve entered the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I’ve already said that I want to be the same as him!”

“Therefore,” looking towards Li Xuantong, a grin cracked open from Shen Cangsheng’s mouth, while a disdainful and haughty look erupted from his eyes once again.

“I’ll send my application to the Dean to let me enter the Door of the Northern Depths to train and cultivate!”

Faint shock immediately shook through Li Xuantong’s heart. Looking towards Shen Cangsheng, he spoke out, “The Door of the Northern Depths? Isn’t that the place that turned students crazy due to being unable to handle the pressure from within?”

That place could be considered as a terrifying place that would cause the faces of the people in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to change when mentioned. That year, there were outstanding students who had entered it. However, in the end, due to being unable to handle the pressure within that place, they suffered mental damage, resulting in them turning crazy, leading to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to shut it down. After that, it was rarely ever opened again. However, seemingly due to this reason, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was hard pressed to achieve any good results in the following Great Spiritual Academy Competitions.

Now, Shen Cangsheng actually wanted to go in there to train and cultivate?

With a smile, Shen Cangsheng smiled and continued talking. “If I’m scared and afraid by just this, how can I even talk about something like surpassing Senior Brother Qin Zhantian? Li Xuantong, I really want to participate in the Great Spiritual Academy Competition, and compete with those geniuses and monstrous talents from the various great spiritual academies. What about you? Are you going to continue in this lukewarm state, and wait for Mu Chen to overtake you?”

Instantly, Li Xuantong turned quiet. After a while, placing his hand behind his head, he looked towards the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance, while the gaze within his eyes slowly grew swift and fierce.

“Door of the Northern Depths? Very well! I also really want to see exactly how frightening that place is! Since you dare to enter that place, why can’t I do the same? You still don’t have the ability to force me to be your number two for eternity, Shen Cangsheng! What’s more, how can I let Mu Chen show his might alone at the Great Spiritual Academy Competition?”

“Haha! Well said!”

Standing up, Shen Cangsheng gave a heroic and hearty laugh.

“When we leave the Door of the Northern Depths, let’s dish a beating out to that little brat Mu Chen. Although he had saved us, we’ve to let him know that surpassing your Seniors isn’t an easy task!”

# Chapter 390 – The Realm of Heavenly Completion

Dazzlingly bright and resplendent Spiritual Energy appeared akin to a pillar that supported the heavens, piercing through the skies from the mountain depths. As it connected with the gigantic vortex, the dense boundless Spiritual Energy turned into thick clouds of mist, obscuring everyone's vision of the scene present over there.

The area had clearly become the place that attracted the most attention within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy during this period of time.

Every day, there would be countless students that would look towards that direction with curiosity and anticipation present within their eyes. Over these last ten days, the deal struck between Mu Chen and Dean Tai Cang had already propagated throughout the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Everyone knew that once Mu Chen breaks through to Heavenly Completion Stage within this month, he might be permitted to participate in the opening of the Northern Heavens Continent's "Divine Spiritual Mountain". However, this event for the elites at the peak of the younger generation was something that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was unable to participate in. There were even some rumors flying about in the outside world due to this, causing dissatisfaction and indignance to surface within the hearts of the students. Why did they only accept those geniuses nurtured with unlimited resources from sects, or clans? If they truly wanted to compare, why didn't they compete with those outstanding leviathans that have gained fame and popularity after leaving the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

How many Sovereigns have walked out from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy? Of them, how many have dazzled and

shone within the Great Thousand Worlds? Compared to that, how many did those powers and influences managed to nurture?

If those Sovereigns that have walked out from Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were to be counted in, the entire Northern Heavens Continent would tremble in fear from their might.

Therefore, the absolute majority of the students had a supportive stance towards Mu Chen's wish to participate in this "Divine Spiritual Mountain". Naturally, there were a minority of intellectually-sound people that had some doubts about Mu Chen being overly reckless. After all, even if he was to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage, compared to elites at the peak of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent, there was still quite a large disparity present.

Those elites were even more difficult to deal with than Mo Longzi.

Naturally, regardless of that, the attention of seemingly the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was focused on the mountains in the academy's depths. Everyone wanted to know exactly if this youth, which had pierced his way and rushed straight ahead within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy without a single stop, would actually be able to reach the heavens once again.

Under this anticipation, yet another three days past by.

Of the one month duration, already the last two days remained!

Freshman region

The vast public square present before the lake was the usual training grounds for the Goddess Luo Association members. However, at this moment, it was packed full of people, with the large majority not having any intent to train or cultivate. Instead, raising their heads, they gazed towards the direction where the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar had met with the heavens.

During the last two days of the given one month, there was still not a single movement detected from Mu Chen, with no signs of any breakthroughs present from him.

This made quite a few Goddess Luo Association members to secretly pespire in anxiousness. As of now, all the students within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were paying attention to this matter. Although Mu Chen being unable to break through to Heavenly Completion Stage within a month wouldn't cause his fame and prestige to suffer, it would still cause a slight bit of disappointment within some people. After all, they held too much anticipation towards his success.

"Luo Li, it's down to the last two days...can Mu Chen succeed?" In the middle of the public square, Ye Qingling looked towards the black-dressed young girl who always had a calm expression present on her face. Finally, unable to hold it in, her jade-like hands clenched uncontrollably as she asked out.

With a faint smile, Luo Li replied, "It's the same if he succeeds or not. Cultivation can't be forced or rushed."

Indeed, Luo Li had some dissatisfaction towards the criteria of one month that Dean Tai Cang put forth to Mu Chen. The wavering Mu Chen was experiencing previously was due to him being forced to the point of being slightly anxious and rushed. Added with his rapid progress in cultivation upon entering the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, it had caused his mental state to become unstable, which almost lead to a disaster to his mental realm. Regardless of anything, from her point of view, Dean Tai Cang had to take some responsibility for this matter.

Although Luo Li knew that the realm of Mu Chen's mental state would be even more firm and stable from the experience of this matter, she was just a young girl in her teens. Furthermore, she was a girl that was worried for her loved one. As if she would maintain an absolutely neutral point of view to judge this entire situation. Therefore, her emotional state was still that of a girl

trying to protect the person she loved.

“However, other people aren’t thinking like that…” replied Ye Qingling in a helpless tone.

“Training and cultivation are personal matters. One doesn’t need to care about the perceptions of others,” said Luo Li with a faint smile. “Furthermore, isn’t there still two more days? Before the final moment has past, one shouldn’t make such a hasty verdict.”

“That’s the only thing we can do,” replied Ye Qingling with a gentle sigh.

Under the attention of the masses within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, time elapsed slowly and quietly, as yet another day went by. Everyone felt as if the atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had turned somewhat pressing and stifling. Even when training and cultivating, people would turn their gazes towards the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar shooting out from the ground, appearing as if it was hoisting up the heavens.

As scheduled, the final day arrived under the anticipation of everyone.

As the scorching sun’s rays illuminated the horizon, gentle sunlight irradiated every corner of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Today, the greater half of the students in the entire academy had seemingly stopped their training and cultivation. All of them wanted to see if a miracle would appear on the final day of the deal. On the quiet and secluded mountain peak, Ling Xi sat on the porch before her bamboo house. Her jade-like hands propping up her cheeks, while her black hair scattered about, her beautiful eyes focused on the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar in the far distance.

Sitting by Ling Xi’s side was Su’er, whose ponytails were wagging about. A worried expression hung on her small face as she asked, “Will Big Brother Mu Chen succeed, Elder Sis Ling Xi?”

Gently rubbing her little face, Ling Xi gave a faint smile. Shaking her head, she replied, “I don’t know.”

Due to the overpowering amount of Spiritual Energy present there, it had completely masked any fluctuations that might have radiated from Mu Chen. At this moment, even she was unable to understand the slightest bit of the latter’s current situation.

As Su’er’s jet-black eyes opened wide as she stared at the scorching sun slowly descending from the horizon, her little hands came together, praying for the sun to slow down in its descent below the mountain.

However, such a naïve wish obviously wouldn’t have any result. Without any change in speed, the sun traveled across the sky, quietly moving from noon to dusk. Under the twilight from the sunset, a faint red glow was casted across the enter Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Nevertheless, there still wasn’t any movement beneath the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar.

As countless students looked towards the setting sun descending across the horizon, a gentle sigh rang through their hearts. Looks like their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still unable to participate in the most important occasion for the elites at the peak of the Northern Heavens Continent’s younger generation...

The setting sun was gradually concealed by the ends of the earth. As it completely disappeared below the earth, the entire sky turned dark and dim.

Sigh

Within the dark and dim world, sounds of people sighing rang out. Countless students shrugged their shoulders in slight disappointment, before preparing to scatter their ten days worth of attention.

Bang!

However, just at this instant, a low and deep sound suddenly resounded across the world. A gigantic Spiritual Energy wave seemed to surge and spread out across all directions in the sky akin to a tidal wave.

Whoosh!

Countless people furiously raised their heads, looking towards the depths of the mountains with shock present in their eyes. Violent and intense fluctuations were unexpectedly surfacing from the gigantic glowing Spiritual Energy pillar. As wave after wave of Spiritual Energy radiated out, it grew increasingly boundless and rampant.

“There’s movement!”

Astonishing sounds of cheering erupted within the Freshman region as emotional expressions filled the faces of the Goddess Luo Association members.

Raising her clear and limpid eyes, Luo Li quietly looked at the glowing pillar, where strong and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations were currently surfacing from it. At this moment, her jade-like hands within her sleeves started to quietly tense up.

On the mountain peak, shock was present in the eyes of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong as they took in the scene unfurling before them.

On the small island on the lake, the two sisters, Su Xuan and Su Ling’er, stood quietly, fluctuations present within their beautiful eyes as they looked at the glowing Spiritual Energy pillar fluctuating in the distance.

In other places around the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, those extremely famous and influential characters like He Yao, Xu Huang and Zhao Qingshan had also casted their gazes over as shock was similarly present within their eyes.

Bang! Bang!

The gigantic Spiritual Energy waves were getting increasingly rampant as each wave went by. At the end, they appeared akin to rumbling tsunamis, blanketing the sky. The dazzling brilliance radiating from them caused the dim and dark sky to regain its brightness once again.

As the rampaging Spiritual Energy waves were violent, a clear roar suddenly filled the sky. Akin to the howl of a tiger and the roar of a dragon, it resounded abruptly from the depths of the mountain!

As the howling sound radiated out, one could feel the extremely powerful Spiritual Energy contained within it.

Whoosh!

The glowing Spiritual Energy pillar suddenly started to intensely vibrate. In the next moment, eye-piercing brilliance erupted in front of everyone's eyes from the base of the glowing pillar, shooting straight towards the sky.

Boom!

The glowing Spiritual Energy pillar exploded apart, transforming into glowing dots that blotted the skies. Within the myriad of glowing dots, a foot long clump of brilliance surfaced, with a little person radiating with brilliance sitting within. The little person was vivid and lifelike, appearing identical to Mu Chen. Clearly, this was his Spirit.

However, at this moment, his Spirit appeared extremely corporeal, as if it was an exact copy of his actual body. A strong and powerful feeling could be felt pervading throughout its entire body.

At this moment, the sitting Spirit started to slowly open its eyes. An abstruse feeling akin to starry skies appeared within its pair of eyes. As rays of brilliance erupted from within, they looked like the sparkling dots of stars in the night sky, appearing abnormally

mysterious.

Raising its little hands, it opened its mouth. At this moment, the glowing Spiritual Energy dots that blotted the sky started to flow together, before finally being sucked cleanly up by the little Spirit.

The rays of brilliance radiating around the Spirit grew increasingly corporeal, while bits of golden brilliance even started to surface around it. Undoubtedly, it had turned much, much more corporeal than before.

Whoosh!

As the Spirit rushed towards the sky, it transformed into a streak of light. Piercing straight through the top of the heavens, huge gales swept out from it. However, it was unable to cause much damage to it, as if it possessed the great ability to travel anywhere within the heavens.

At the sight of this, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy burst out with cheers. They're clear that once a person's Spirit could leave his body and roam around the heavens and earth without being extinguished, it was the Heavenly Completion!

Clearly, Mu Chen had truly broken through to the last realm of the three Heavenly Stages, the Heavenly Completion Stage!

# Chapter 391 – Punishment Spiritual Combat Doll

Disorder and liveliness was inevitable within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Even after the complete scattering of the brilliant rays in the sky, the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was still in an excited and frenzied state. Buzzing about from the chattering of countless people, all of the discussion topics were about the strange phenomena that sprung out from Mu Chen.

All of them had assumed that Mu Chen had still failed in the given one month span. However, who would have expected that Mu Chen would pull such a spectacular reversal at the final moment. Thinking about the spectacle that had unfurled before them, one wouldn't be able to count how many people had their eyes opened wide, brimming with amazement and astonishment.

As the atmosphere of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy flared up, in a large hall within the central region of the academy, Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders had their gazes converged on the light screen before them. The scene shown within it was precisely the phenomena created from Mu Chen's breakthrough.

"That little fella...he actually broke through successfully. Formidable." Hall Master Mo You couldn't help smacking his lips as he sighed in admiration. That Mu Chen stayed silent for the later half of the month. They never imagined that he would show them such a counterattack at the night of the final day. This spectacle had caused even them to become secretly stupefied.

Hearing his words, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders nodded their heads in agreement. That Mu Chen was truly worthy of his reputation of being able to contend for supremacy with a heavenly-blessed child like Ji Xuan. His talent truly was rather astonishing.

"Dean, since Mu Chen has broken through to Heavenly

Completion Stage, what about the ‘Divine Spiritual Mountain’?” asked Mo You as he looked towards Dean Tai Cang, who was sitting in the headmost position.

Gently patting the armrest, a solemn expression appeared on Dean Tai Cang’s face. Faced with Mu Chen’s successful breakthrough, even he was slightly surprised. However, while feeling admiration and happiness for Mu Chen’s talent, he was also starting to get slightly hesitant of his previous commitment to him. Being such an outstanding student, if Mu Chen was properly guided and nurtured for the next half a year, he might be able to gain some honor for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the upcoming Great Spiritual Academy Competition. However, if anything was to occur during the “Divine Spiritual Mountain”, it would truly be an enormous loss for their academy.

Seeing the expression present on Dean Tai Cang’s face, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders didn’t chime in their thoughts and questions. From the looks of it, they understood the apprehension Dean Tai Cang was feeling. It truly would be too unfortunate to lose such an outstanding student.

“Why don’t we make this point clear to Mu Chen? He should understand that the current him isn’t too suitable to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain,” said a white-haired Elder in a deep voice.

“This way will cause the morale of the students to suffer too huge of a blow. For the past few days, the deal between Mu Chen and the Dean has propagated throughout the academy. If we are to renege on this, it might not be too good.” After thinking awhile, Mo You added in while shaking his head.

“However, it’s still better than to lose such an extraordinary student...”

“This is indeed troublesome...”

“.....”

As the Heavenly Seated Elders started to openly discuss on this matter, a decision wasn't made even after an hour. Naturally, all of them wanted their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to participate in the "Divine Spiritual Mountain". After all, this truly was the greatest occasion that occurred within their Northern Heavens Continent. Due to their academy's absence in this occasion for the past few years, it had caused many rumours and tongues to wag about. Being unable to refute them, their academy had always kept their silence on this matter. Nevertheless, thinking about this always made them feel sullen.

If Mu Chen really wanted to participate, and could even achieve an outstanding performance at the Divine Spiritual Mountain, they would be able to refute those slanderous rumors. This would truly bring quite a good benefit for their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

However, it would simultaneously bring about the danger of losing an extraordinary student as Mu Chen.

Should they take the risk for such danger?

Sitting in the main seat, Dean Tai Cang silently looked at the five Heavenly Seated Elders undergoing their bantering and discussion. After a long while, with a wave of his hand, he silenced their voices, before slowly speaking out, "Since I've made this deal with Mu Chen, and he has successfully achieved this goal, we truly don't have any reason to continue to obstruct him."

"That's..." Tthe five Heavenly Seated Elders looked towards Dean Tai Cang. Did this indicate his approval for Mu Chen's participation?

"However..."

After hesitating awhile, Dean Tai Cang continued speaking out in a deep tone, "Truly, this matter is filled with danger. Therefore, we can't be careless, and need full confidence before approving his participation. Mo You, inform Mu Chen to come to the

punishment platform tomorrow. If he's able to pass the final test, I'll approve of his participation for this upcoming Divine Spiritual Mountain!"

...

The next day

When the news about Mu Chen's final test was spread around the academy, the atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, which had rose to a frenzy yesterday, instantly turned explosive.

Freshman Region

After resting for the night, Mu Chen appeared in the public square under Luo Li's accompaniment, leading to the crowd of emotion-filled Goddess Luo Association members to gather around them. Chirping and chattering rang out, causing them to appear exceedingly lively and noisy.

Waving her hands to scatter the emotional crowd, Ye Qingling frowned as she spoke out, " "Why is there still a test for you? Haven't you successfully broken through to Heavenly Completion Stage? Could it be that the Dean and the Elders are regretting their deal?"

"The Dean and the Elders are taking my safety into consideration. After all, the people participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain are the true elites at the peak of the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent. Even Mo Longzi's not considered the strongest in that group," replied Mu Chen with a smile. There wasn't any resentment in his tone, as he was extremely clear on the origin of the Dean and Elder's hesitation.

"Today's test might not be that simple. Be careful." Luo Li said softly.

"Okay. It's time for some action. I really want to see what difficult problem the Dean and the Elders have prepared for me,"

said Mu Chen with a smile, before grabbing ahold of Luo Li and shooting into the sky. Heading straight towards the direction of the punishment platform, with seemingly all of the Goddess Luo Association members following behind them. Clearly, with the current situation, it was clear that no one had a clear mind to train and cultivate now.

As Mu Chen and the rest headed out of the Freshman region, they noticed countless students from other regions immediately focusing their attention on them. Nevertheless, being rather habitualised to such attentive gazes, not a change happened to Mu Chen as he shot across the sky.

Countless students started taking to the air from other areas, following suit, attempting to join in the liveliness.

As Mu Chen headed towards the punishment platform, he was amazed to see the numerous figures that filled the surroundings skies. It was unknown how many students were already waiting for them. At the front of the lot stood a few familiar figures. Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, Su Xuan, He Yao and those other elite students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy were unexpectedly present here.

“Good Luck, Mu Chen! We support you!” Standing beside Su Xuan, Su Linger waved her little hands around while shouting out in her cute voice.

“Big Brother Mu Chen.” A cute and lovable voice rang out, causing Mu Chen to turn about, only to see Su’er standing not too far away from him. Dressed in a snow-white dress, with a cold and detached expression on her beautiful face, Ling Xi had unexpectedly appeared beside her.

Crossing gazes with Ling Xi, a sliver of a faint smile surfaced on her icy-cold and beautiful face. As the beautiful flower-like smile appeared, quite a few of the surrounding students were stupefied by this breathtaking scene, while some feelings of resentment and

indignation surfaced in them. This Mu Chen's truly too evil! All of these Top-Class beautiful ladies of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy actually have connections with him!

Sending a smile towards them, Mu Chen didn't say a word, before focusing his gaze towards the gigantic punishment platform. The ones present there were Dean Tai Cang and some of the Elders of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy standing on the platform.

In a flash, under the countless attentive gazes from the surroundings, Mu Chen descended on the stone platform. Cupping his hands, he respectfully spoke out, "Mu Chen greets the Dean and the other Elders."

Faintly nodding his head, Dean Tai Cang looked towards Mu Chen, before speaking out with a faint smile, "Mu Chen, congratulations for successfully breaking through to Heavenly Completion Stage. Although I've said that I'd let you participate in the "Divine Spiritual Mountain", I wish for you to understand how formidable your opponents will be. We really don't want to lose any more outstanding students anymore."

A solemn expression appeared on Mu Chen's face as he slowly replied, "I understand all of that. Therefore, if you've any test for me, I'll accept all of them, Dean."

Feeling satisfied, Dean Tai Cang said, "This will be your final test. It's a very simple one, an appraisal of your combat capabilities."

Upon completing his statement, with a wave of his sleeve, three dark golden rays of light shot out from within. Landing on the stone platform, a shiver instantly shook throughout, before a deep voice caused the hearts of countless students to tremble.

As the dark golden brilliance slowly scattered, everyone casted their gazes over. Instantly, all of their eyes furiously contracted as the whooshing of people sucking in breaths of cold air rang out

across the sky.

Three dark golden giants of approximately ten feet stood there. Their unadorned bodies were fully covered with spirit patterns. The motley dents across their bodies embodied the many combats they have been through, the battle scars left from fight after fight. Quietly standing on the platform, overbearingly chilling fluctuations quietly radiated from them.

“These are…”

Upon seeing them, a subtle change occurred on the faces of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and the rest. “Punishment Spiritual Combat Dolls?”

Astonished shrieks erupted within the dense crowds, with even some Seniors showing faces filled with shock. Those Punishment Spiritual Combat Dolls were said to be a special combat spiritual doll made by the Punishment Hall. In the entire hall, there were only eighteen of them, with all of them possessing strength comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Furthermore, they won’t feel any pain, having resilient bodies that were difficult to move or shake. When it came to combat, even experts of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase would be extremely hard-pressed when faced against them.

However, Dean Tai Cang had actually brought out three of them out! What was this for?

The faces of Ye Qingling and those members of the Goddess Luo Association turned slightly ugly, with the beautiful eyes of Luo Li even starting to faintly contract.

Three Spiritual Combat Dolls. That was comparable to three experts at the same realm as Mo Longzi.

“Mu Chen.”

Ignoring the clamoring that filled the skies, Dean Tai Cang extended his hand out. Pointing towards the Spiritual Combat

Doll, a deep voice rang out from him, “Defeat them, and you’ll have the qualifications to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. If not, even if you lose trust in me, I’ll not accept your participation in that occasion. That’s because, I don’t want our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to lose another outstanding student again.”

“This is the final test. Mu Chen, do you dare to take it up?!”

The mountainous gazes coming from the surroundings had converged on the body of the thin and handsome youth, while countless people clenched their fists. This test was too vicious...

Under the attentive gazes from countless people, not a single fluctuation appeared on Mu Chen’s face. Without speaking a word, he slowly took a step forward.

Hua!

Shock flooded through the hearts of all the students. Mu Chen had already made his move, and made his decision.

He had... taken up this challenge!

# Chapter 392 – Demonic Pillar Reappears

Under everyone's attentive gazes, Mu Chen took a step forward. However, this small, small step caused the surrounding atmosphere to tighten and tense up, with shock running through the eyes of countless students. Clearly, Mu Chen's action was one that had exceeded their expectations.

Those were three Punishment Spiritual Combat Dolls of strength comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Even a person like Mo Longzi would only have the option to scuttle and flee like a rat when faced with those three combat dolls. Although Mu Chen had successfully broken through, he shouldn't be capable of defeating three combat dolls that were specially built for fighting, right? Furthermore, those combat dolls didn't know fear and didn't shrink. Mu Chen wanting to defeat them was a nigh impossible task for a good deal of students to believe.

In the far distance, solemn expressions were also present on the faces of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong. Those three combat dolls had also caused them to feel shock running through their hearts. Dean Tai Cang truly didn't leave any stones unturned in his final test.

"Can that fellow, Mu Chen, pass through this test?"

Shooting a look at each other, both of them could see the doubt and uncertainty present within each other's eyes.

On the punishment platform, Hall Master Mo You and the other Elders watched with peculiar gazes towards Mu Chen, who had walked forward. Looks like that brat had quite some confidence in himself to actually dare to take such a test.

Faintly nodding his head, Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a smile, "Since you've made your decision, there's nothing more to say. Everything will be decided from your results."

“Yes.” replied Mu Chen respectfully.

“Then,” with a wave of his sleeve, an invisible fluctuation radiated out from Dean Tai Cang. In the next instant, a deep and low voice resounded out, “let’s begin!”

Bang!

As Dean Tai Cang’s final words rang out, the three combat dolls furiously opened their eyes, dark golden rays of brilliance sparkling within them. Spiritual patterns started surfacing one after another on their icy-cold and tough bodies, while powerful fluctuations gushed and radiated out.

Boom!

The eyes of the three combat dolls radiating with golden light locked straight onto Mu Chen, before they started to take huge strides forward. The entire stone platform trembled as they moved, rumbling as they rushed explosively towards him.

Although possessing pretty large physiques akin to that of giants, their speed was absolutely not slow, appearing right before Mu Chen in a short span of a few breaths. As their fists erupted with golden light, they shattered the air apart, brimming with power that caused people’s scalps to crawl as they violently rumbled forward.

Roar!

A dragon roar rang out from within Mu Chen, before a dragon’s shadow appeared, coiling around his body. In the next instant like a spectre, Mu Chen’s figure retreated back in a flash.

Bang!

Three strong and sturdy golden metallic fists violently smashed apart the ground where Mu Chen had just stood, causing cracks to instantly appear on the extraordinarily built surface. After missing their first attacks, without the slightest bit of hesitation, the three combat dolls explosively shot forward, sending frightening attacks

sweeping continuously out towards Mu Chen.

Facing those terrifying attacks heading towards him, Mu Chen continuously retreated, dodging and weaving about them with razor thin distances. As the dragon shadow sparkled, his speed dramatically increased, allowing him to evade those frightening metal fists that could easily send him flying.

Due to his promotion of strength, Mu Chen's speed fortunately had similar advancements. If not, he would long be pounded into pulp by the three combat dolls. Nevertheless, continuing to dodge and evade like that would not be helpful, since he was totally unable to pass this test like this.

Countless gazes converged on the pursuit happening in the sky that caused people's hearts to tremble and palpitate as everyone clenched their fists tightly, palms completely covered in sweat.

However, facing the obstructive encirclement of the three combat dolls, such evasion and dodging wasn't the best way to go about defeating them.

Bang!

Just as this thought flashed within the minds of a few students, an unforeseen change happened. Dazzling golden light suddenly blossomed from the body of a combat doll, as the spiritual patterns covering its body became extremely conspicuous. At the same time, its speed drastically increased, arriving before Mu Chen, who was displaying his Dragon Soaring Technique to evade, in a single step.

As its gigantic body appeared right before Mu Chen, its shadow immediately enveloped the latter, bringing about a powerful pressure that instantly pressed down on Mu Chen.

Whoosh!

Not the slightest shred of mercy was present in that pair of sparkling golden eyes as golden light blossomed from its golden fist

like a scorching sun. Bringing about frightening power that was sufficient to level a mountain, it travelled akin to a bolt of lightning, violently hammering down towards Mu Chen's chest.

Hua!

Clamoring noises instantly erupted throughout the surroundings, while slight changes appeared on the lovable faces of Ye Qingling, Su'er, and Su Linger as their eyes were filled with nervousness. Being smashed by such a fist from the combat doll wasn't any laughable matter.

Amidst the clamoring, Mu Chen's figure fleetingly appeared in a flash. Looking at the golden glowing fist about to envelop him, a swift and fierce glint appeared within his eyes.

Bang!

Black lightning arcs furiously danced about the surface of Mu Chen's body, shrouding his entire figure within. At this instant, his body seemed to have expanded by a inch.

Thunder God's Physique!

Clenching his hands, without the slightest bit of hesitation, Mu Chen sent his fist rumbling out. Covered in black arcing and dancing lightning, astonishingly powerful energy fluctuations radiated out from it.

The two fists, one big and one small, howled out, shattering space apart before violently smashing against one another in front of the shocked gazes of everyone in the surroundings.

Boom!

Metallic grating noises rang out at the instant of impact as violent energy ripples visible to the naked-eye swept out from the centre of the two fists! Immediately, the ground beneath the point of impact had collapsed. Mu Chen was forced back dozens of steps, while the combat doll was similarly sent back, its giant feet digging two enormous gulches in the ground. Finally, falling down on its

back, it smashed the ground beneath it.

Seeing this aftermath of the exchange of fists, the jaws of countless people were left agape while shock and astonishment filled their eyes. Mu Chen had unexpected sent a combat doll back and down in a straight up contest of strength. How frightening was the power contained in that fist?

Stabilising his body, Mu Chen gently rotated his arm, stretching it as a solemn expression appeared within his eyes. That combat doll sure was formidable. If he hadn't broken through, he would be injured by that single punch from it. However, it was a pity for the combat doll, as the current Mu Chen had became much, much stronger compared to one month ago, when he had fought with Mo Longzi.

"I won't be able to deal with the three combat dolls if this continues."

Mu Chen casted his gaze towards the three combat dolls. They didn't feel any pain and fear, and once combat starts, they will never stop or feel tired. Therefore, he couldn't rely on the so-called imposing Aura to press down on them, with the only thing he could do was to fight them head-on. However, although Mu Chen was happy and fearless to engage in a heads-up contest, faced with the abnormal built of the combat dolls, he might not be able properly deal with them.

A spark flashed within Mu Chen's eyes as he decided, Since it's like this, let's be vicious once and for all!

Whoosh!

The three combat dolls shot forward once again as fists came howling out, all containing strength that could topple mountains.

Stomping on the ground, Mu Chen rushed straight up to the sky. Clapping his hands together, a deep and fierce roar suddenly rang out from his throat. In the next instant, a glowing scarlet-red pillar

shot straight towards the clouds from his crown, within it appeared a gigantic, jet black demonic pillar towering over the skies.

At the instant when the demonic pillar appeared, waves of fiendish Aura billowed and swept out. If one were to listen carefully, one would be able to faintly discern humming and trembling noises as the demonic pillar attempted to resist Mu Chen's control. However, as it struggled, the dark purplish flower patterns that covered the pillar started to sparkle with dim radiance, finally suppressing the resistance down.

"Is that the Great Meru Demonic Pillar?!"

The expressions of Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders instantly changed upon seeing the demonic pillar. Flashes of radiance sparkled within their eyes, while their minds trembled in shock. At their level of vision, they were naturally able to see that the demonic pillar before them wasn't any other projection, but the actual body of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar!

However, with Mu Chen's current strength, how was he able to control the Great Meru Demonic Pillar?

"The Great Meru Demonic Pillar seems to be suppressed and sealed by something!" Being the strongest person present, Dean Tai Cang was able to notice the dark purplish flowery patterns on the surface of the demonic pillar, which were radiating with fluctuations that were different from those of the demonic pillar. Those flowery patterns were suppressing the amount of fiendish Aura billowing out from the demonic pillar, forcing it to come under the control of Mu Chen.

Upon this discovery, amazement flashed within Dean Tai Cang's eyes, before gradually regaining his clarity. Looking deeply at Mu Chen in the sky, he was certain that there should be some secrets hidden within the latter's body. Being about to seal and suppress an ominous weapon from the ancient antiquity like that Great

Meru Demonic Pillar, exactly what thing could do that?

Bang!

Nevertheless, the three combat dolls didn't show the slightest bit of fear and dread towards the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. With a stomp of their feet, they rushed across the horizon, sending violent attacks towards Mu Chen.

Looking down at the three golden rays of light shooting towards him, a smile started to curl up from the corner of his mouth. This was the first time that he had unveiled the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Although it was in its repressed state, how could the strength of this ominous weapon of the ancient antiquity be compared to ordinary people? Having possessed such a powerful weapon, Mu Chen was sufficiently capable of suppressing any opponent of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase.

Raising his hands in a hugging position, he violently swung his hands down. As he did so, the gigantic Demonic Pillar furiously swept down. Akin to a mountain, it brought about its billowing fiendish Qi, seemingly shattering through space as it traveled across the sky. In a manner that seemed impossible to block, it heavily pounded down on the three golden combat dolls under the dumbfounded gazes coming from the surroundings.

Bang!

An astonishingly enormous bang resounded. Under the hammering of the gigantic jet-black demonic pillar, the three combat dolls had raised their golden hands, pressing up against the descending pillar in their attempts to hold it up. However, this ominous weapon of ancient antiquity wasn't something that could be handled by them! In the next instant, with a final bang, the black demonic pillar violently descended on the vast stone platform below. As the platform shattered and collapsed, the three combat doll were smashed straight into the depths of the earth!

The demonic pillar stood proudly in the punishment platform,

gigantic cracks extended from it, while the three combat dolls were suppressed beneath it. At this moment, not a single movement could be detected from the demonic pillar as it radiated with fiendish Aura that blotted the skies.

Countless people had their eyes wide open as they observed this spectacle before them.

Mu Chen started to descend from the sky, subsequently landing on the top of the Great Meru Demonic Pillar. Looking towards the three combat dolls that were suppressed beneath by the demonic pillar to the point of not being able to move, he turned his gaze towards Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders, who had slightly spectacular expressions displayed on their faces. Cupping his hands, he spoke out with a smile, “Do you think I’ve passed this test, Dean?”

# Chapter 393 – Words of the Dean

Deathly silence hung in the surroundings.

Around the punishment platform, countless students had their mouths agape as they continued to stare at the spectacle before them—the gigantic demonic pillar quietly standing proudly on the ground, fiendish Qi that blotted the skies as it radiated with frightening fluctuations, while the three combat dolls were suppressed to the point of being unable to move, no longer displaying the ferocity that was present before.

This fight had ended at the speed that had clearly exceeded everyone's expectations.

Originally, everyone had expected an intense fight. However, who would have thought that Mu Chen would brandish a demonic pillar, suppressing the three combat dolls in such a direct fashion.

Looking at the ground being suppressed by the demonic pillar, a vacant expression appeared in the eyes of everyone as they thought, Those were three combat dolls that were comparable to Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase experts!

However, they were actually dealt with in such a manner…

"Too formidable…" Some people cried out. Looking at the top of the demonic pillar, there stood a thin figure, arrogantly facing the world. The imposing aura radiating from him caused the beautiful eyes of quite a few pretty girls to sparkle in splendor.

"Big Brother Mu's so awesome!"

After regaining their clarity from the astonishing fight that happened before their eyes, numerous members of the Goddess Luo Association couldn't help crying out in amazement as emotions flooded their expressions. The imposing manner in which Mu Chen instantly suppressed the three combat dolls was truly too breathtaking.

Looking at the figure standing proudly on the demonic pillar with her beautiful eyes, a faint and gentle smile surfaced on the corner of Luo Li's mouth.

Looking at the youth standing quietly on the demonic pillar amidst the countless cheering noises from the surroundings, shades of red uncontrollably surfaced on the loveable face of Su Ling'er. To this young girl, who had had a first awakening towards love, this spectacle clearly possessed extremely strong killing power.

"What's the matter? Smitten by him?" said Su Xuan teasingly.

Instantly, the shades of red on Su Ling'er's lovable face grew deeper, before looking at Luo Li, who was standing not far from her, causing a faint pout to appear on her face. She truly didn't possess any confidence to face-off against an opponent of Luo Li's caliber.

"That fellow truly is formidable. During the time when he had joined us to complete the mission, even Bai Xuan was able to force him into a dangerous peril. However, now, even three combat dolls with strength of Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase are easily suppressed by him," said Su Xuan, unable to hold her thoughts in. Faced with the rapid increase of Mu Chen's strength, she truly had to exclaim in admiration.

"At this moment, I'm afraid that Mu Chen has the capabilities to vie for the leader of the Heavenly Rankings," said Su Linger softly. "However, why doesn't he do that? If he did so, he would truly become the person with the most fame and reputation in our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

With a gentle smile, Su Xuan replied, "That's because he doesn't care about being the leader of the Heavenly Rankings. Furthermore, he might not want to obtain Shen Cangsheng's position. There's always some tacit understanding between men, especially extremely outstanding ones like them."

Nodding her small head, Su Linger didn't continue to speak anymore.

At a slightly further position, compared to the astonished exclamations and cheering coming from the surroundings, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong appeared rather quiet. Looking vacantly at the figure standing on the demonic pillar in the distance, a complicated expression surfaced on their faces after a while.

"Looks like I've truly been surpassed this time." In the end, exhaling deeply, Shen Cangsheng shrugged his shoulders before sighing with a smile.

Hearing those words, Li Xuantong slightly nodded his head. Both of them knew that if they were the ones that were faced against those three combat dolls, they might have already been forced to miserably retreat. This was absolutely heavens apart from the breathtaking manner in which Mu Chen had achieved victory. That Freshman truly had already surpassed both of them.

Perhaps, this former Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings might have to concede his position.

Li Xuantong had been fighting with Shen Cangsheng in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for so long. However, he never once imagined that a Freshman would successively overtake both of them.

Although both of them had previously forecasted such an occurrence, when it truly arrived, complicated feelings still surfaced within them. After all, both of them were prideful men.

"Nevertheless, I'll not give up just due to this," said Shen Cangsheng with a faint smile. Looking at the thin figure standing in the distance, his gaze grew increasingly resolute. Giving up that easily wasn't his, Shen Cangsheng's, style!

Hearing those words, a faint smile similarly appeared on Li

Xuantong's face. Crossing his fingers together, there wasn't any dejection present within his eyes.

Above the punishment platform, Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders gradually regained their clarity, while slightly strange expressions appeared within their eyes. None of them had expected that the final test would be passed by Mu Chen in such a breathtaking fashion.

Staring deeply at Mu Chen, a laugh finally rang out from Dean Tai Cang as he spoke out with a smile, " Congratulations on passing the final test. As I've promised, you'll represent our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and participate in this year's "Divine Spiritual Mountain", vying for supremacy against the true geniuses at the peak of the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent."

"Hurray!"

As Dean Tai Cang's words rang out, astonishing cheering voices instantly erupted in the surrounding sky, the faces of countless students were filled with emotions. After so many years, their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was finally going to participate in the grandest occasion for the younger generation in the Northern Heavens Continent!

"Good luck, Brother Mu! Get rid of all those so-called geniuses! Let them know that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was just not willing to play with them in the past! Once we play, we'll be able to stride across them like it's a game!"

"Mu Chen, your Senior Sisters are all rooting for you!"

"You have to strive for the glory of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy!"

Voices continued to ring out from the surroundings as all the students were clearly extremely emotional about this matter.

Looking at the emotion-filled students in the surroundings, Dean

Tai Cang gave a helpless smile. With a faint shift of his gaze, he looked towards the group of somewhat silent people within the crowd of students, being Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong, He Yao and those elite students who were formerly at the top of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Once the most influential figures within the academy, they had gradually been outshone and concealed by Mu Chen's increasing splendor.

Other than Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, who appeared rather fine, seemingly all of them had slightly dim expressions. Clearly, this fight had given them quite a blow to their spirits and minds.

Giving a gentle wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang slowly started to silence the cheering voices that blotted the skies. Crossing his hands behind his back, he spoke out slowly, "Students, do all of you know about the current circumstances of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?"

Hearing the sudden question posed by Dean Tai Cang, every student gawked, as vacant looks appeared on their faces.

"In the past few Great Spiritual Academy Competitions, not only was our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy ranked last amongst the five Great Academies, there were even some elite spiritual academies that achieved results that triumphed ours. This year, in this Great Spiritual Academy Competition, if we, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to continue achieving the same result, there's a high possibility of us being ousted from the ranks of the five Great Academies."

Hearing the deep voice of Dean Tai Cang, countless students had faces filled with shock, before feeling deep shame and embarrassment rising from their hearts. When they were enjoying the satisfaction granted by being in one of the five great academies, they had forgotten about the dangerous situation that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was enduring.

“Speaking about this point, it isn’t that our student’s are lacking in talent. The key factor is that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy isn’t utilising the extreme methods that other spiritual academies are using. In our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, regardless of what background you are, you only have an identity, which is the student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. We won’t give out enormous benefits just for the sake of roping in an elite genius, letting he or she stand above all other students. Therefore, there are times that our results would naturally fall behind.”

With his hands crossed behind his back, Dean Tai Cang’s figure appeared exceedingly imposing in the eyes of countless students, while his deep and firm voice resonated in everyone’s hearts.

“I know that our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy isn’t the final place for you all. After training and cultivating here, you will leave one day, heading towards greater places to struggle, temper and journey about. However, I hope that every single Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy student will still retain the pride of being a student of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. As long as you never forget that you’re a member of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, regardless of what you experience in the future, as long as you come back here, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be your final shelter, and the entire academy, will be your shield!”

Silence filled the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as every student, and even the teachers and Elders looked towards the imposing figure standing in the distant sky, emotions surging within their hearts. To all of them, he was the spiritual pillar of the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

The eyes of a few students, especially those sentimental young girls, had already turned slightly red as pride and arrogance of being a member of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy rose within their hearts. Regardless of fame and reputation of the

academy, the awe-inspiring figure standing tall and this academy had caused a warm and gentle feeling to surface within them.

Mu Chen vacantly stared at Dean Tai Cang as he faintly pursed his lips. In the next moment, a smile curled up from the corner of his mouth. He felt rejoiceful that he had chosen the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to train and cultivate. A Dean that dared to proclaim that the entire academy would be one's shield wasn't a person that one can casually find in any spiritual academy.

Looking at the youths and young girls present around him, a rarely seen gentle expression appeared within Dean Tai Cang's eyes as he slowly said, "Naturally, I hope that everyone can remember what the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy has given you. It isn't strength, or power. What it is, is regardless of what we face, we won't easily give up or surrender! Even if we aren't one of the five Great Academies after this Great Spiritual Academy Competition, we—still—won't—give—up!"

A faint tremble instantly shook through the bodies of He Yao, Xu Huan, Zhao Qingshan and the other elite students of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. At this moment, their faintly dim gazes seemingly erupted with splendor, their gazes turned sharp once again.

Clap! Clap! Clap!

Ear-shattering clapping noises resounded like thunder as countless students had faces brimming with emotions. This was the first time that they've seen their usually stern and conscientious Dean actually speaking such motivational and awe-inspiring words.

Within the sea of students, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had faint smiles present on their faces. Stepping forward under the ear-shattering claps, countless gazes immediately converged onto them.

“Dean…”

Looking towards Dean Tai Cang, Shen Cangsheng gave a smile, before saying out, “We, naturally, aren’t going to give up that easily. However, similarly, I wish that you would trust us for once, Dean. We love the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Therefore, we’re willing to fight for it. However, we do need some help.”

“For example?” asked Dean Tai Cang in surprise.

“For example, opening the Door of the Northern Depths once again.”

Standing upright in the air, his already straight figure appeared increasingly straight, like a ramrod, akin to a spear piercing through the heavens.

# Chapter 394 – Door of the Northern Depths

“Opening the Door of the Northern Depths…”

When those words from Shen Cangsheng fluttered across the sky, the surrounding air seemed to freeze up, while the expressions of Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders faintly changed, with dark and gloomy shadows appearing within their eyes. Clearly, all of them didn’t imagine that Shen Cangsheng would actually raise such a request.

The Door of the Northern Depths could be considered as the final tempering grounds for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. However, due to the probability of death being too high, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had finally chose to close it after weighing the pros and cons. Due to lacking the most important area for tempering, the results of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy in the past years had slid down the rankings, with imminent danger of losing its title of being one of the Five Great Academies.

If the special methods that the other spiritual academies were using to poach elite geniuses were considered as external factors, the closure of the Door of the Northern Depths could be considered an internal factor for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Many strong and powerful spiritual academies possessed final tempering grounds, as this was a rather important factor in allowing those elite students to have a fierce leap in strength. However, compared to the other Five Great Academies, the existence of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was considered the youngest. Therefore, some of its underlying aspects were lacking when compared to the other four academies.

Mu Chen went into a daze due to the solidification of the atmosphere. Only being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a year, he naturally wasn’t as clear about the Door of

the Northern Depths as the other students. However, from the expressions present on Dean Tai Cang and the other Elders, he could faintly discern how special the so-called ‘Door of the Northern Depths’ was.

“The Door of the Northern Depths, is too dangerous…” After pondering for quite a while, Dean Tai Cang finally replied in a slow voice.

“Dean, let me ask a question…”

After hearing Dean Tai Cang’s deep words, Shen Cangsheng gave a faint smile as she spoke slowly, one word at a time, “Is there any leveled road, in an expert’s path?”

Silence filled the skies once again as Shen Cangsheng’s deep voice slowly resounded across the horizon. Splendid expressions appeared on the faces of countless students as they looked at the figure in the sky, ramrod straight like a spear piercing through the heavens, while unconcealable respect and worship erupted from their eyes. This was Shen Cangsheng, the Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings. Even though he was gradually being surpassed by Mu Chen, he still possessed an immovable position in the hearts of many students.

Gently exhaling a clump of white air, Mu Chen gave a thumbs-up towards Shen Cangsheng.

Turning silent for a short while, Dean Tai Cang finally gave a helpless laugh before replying, “I’ve actually been lectured by a smelly brat that’s still wet behind his ears…”

Beside him, Elder Zhu Tian and the other Elders started laughing as a result of his reply.

“The Door of the Northern Depths wasn’t completely closed in the past. We’re also doing our best to repair and fill in the defects and flaws. Over these last few years, it can be considered that we’ve made a little progress in this. However, it's still extremely

dangerous."

Looking towards Shen Cangsheng, Dean Tai Cang smiled, before waving his hand and said, "However, since you've already said those words, if I was to find more excuses, I might be inviting misfortune to myself. Hmph, alright. The Door of the Northern Depths will reopen once again. However, there's a restriction to entry, which is that only the students in the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings have the qualifications to enter, and is totally up to them to enter of their own free will."

Hearing Dean Tai Cang's reply, a smile that felt as if a heavy burden has been lifted off his shoulders appeared on Shen Cangsheng's face. With a hearty chuckle and a wide grin, he replied, "Then, please allow me entry to the Door of the Northern Depths."

"Count me in," said Li Xuantong with a faint smile.

Not far away, looking at the awe-inspiring pose of Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong, before casting his gaze towards Su Xuan, who was standing in another direction, a dark shadow flashed within He Yao's eyes. Clenching his teeth, he stood up and shouted, "Count me in, too!"

He Yao's reply clearly caused lots of people to feel shocked, with even Su Xuan was shooting a peculiar look at him. Nevertheless, her beautiful eyes still showed dimness in them, without too much fluctuations present. He Yao's previous actions during the hunt had clearly aroused ire and disgust in her. Although she didn't always quite like He Yao, she was able to communicate with him just like normal friends, but that event had caused her to stop all contact with him, estranging him from her.

As He Yao's gaze remained on Su Xuan and spotting the dim gaze present within her eyes, his expression grew increasingly dim and sad. Indeed, he had too much blood rushing towards his brain during the previous incident with her. He had only wanted to

defeat Mu Chen to wipe the humiliation he received clean from the latter. Naturally, he never thought of truly hurting Su Xuan...after all, she was the girl he liked.

“Dean, what you’ve said earlier was too touching. Therefore, I wish to do my utmost and fight for our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. If we don’t enter the Door of the Northern Depths, I’m afraid that we might be overtaken by the geniuses from other top academies.” said He Yao with a bitter and astringent smile. Indeed, he had a rather handsome appearance, with only an extra feeling that tilted towards coldness and gloominess. However, within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, there were quite a few young girls that were smitten by him.

“Boss is the best!”

After hearing his words, even those members of the Demon Gate’s were looking at He Yao with slightly surprised expressions. Clearly, this was somewhat different from the usual gloomy shadow that was present on him, causing those Demon’s Gate members to feel emotional. He Yao’s decision had caused them to feel glory and honor for being under his lead.

“It’s truly difficult for that fellow to get hot-blooded, for once.” Su Ling’er also felt surprised as she leaned towards Su Xuan and whispered.

Su Xuan cast a look towards He Yao with her beautiful eyes. Seeing her looking over, He Yao’s body started to quietly grow straighter. This time, he did not see the cold and detached expression that was usually present within her eyes. It even had faint traces of reverting to the normal gaze she had used in the past, causing him secretly feel slightly emotional.

The entire atmosphere within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy seemed to be roused by the awe-inspiring display of Shen Cangsheng, Li Xuantong and He Yao. Quite a few students rubbed their hands together, itching to step into the top ten ranks and

truly fight bravely for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Feeling this roused atmosphere, a smile appeared on Xu Huang's face as he felt as though the blood within his body had started to boil. Being a member of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, he should not be backing down at this moment.

Therefore, under the proud and admiration-filled beautiful eyes of Xu Qingqing standing beside him, Xu Huang had also taken a step forward.

At another corner of the crowd, Zhao Qingshan and Mu Fengyang shot a look at each other, noticing the helpless smiles on each other's faces. At this time, if they were to back down, they might truly be looked down upon by everyone. Their pride and arrogance weren't weaker than any other person's. Therefore, at the moment when Xu Huang had stepped forward, they too had done the same.

Following this, with great emotions swirling within them, countless students noticed that of the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings, other than Mu Chen, Luo Li and Su Xuan, all of the rest had actually stood up. This awe-inspiring spectacle caused the blood of the crowd to boil and surge. Regardless of the usual conflicts and battles between cliques within the academy, at this critical moment, the unity present within the academy truly made all of them feel proud and honored for being in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

As Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders looked at the awe-inspiring spectacle unfurling before their eyes, all of them gawked, before looking at each other and the bitter smiles present on their faces. However, what came with those bitter smiles were gratification and pride. When their students were truly able to stand up and fight for the honor and glory of the academy, who dared to say that this wasn't the success of their spiritual academy?

Waving his hand to silence the flared voices that blotted the

skies, Dean Tai Cang announced with a gentle smile, “Three days from now, I’ll bring Mu Chen towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain. After that matter, our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will reopen the Door of the Northern Depths!”

Hearing his proclamation, countless students were loudly cheering. This time, for the sake of protecting the title of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy as one of the Five Great Academies, everyone was willing to do their utmost, with no expense spared.

Looking at the spiritual academy that was filled with boiling emotions, Mu Chen gave a faint smile, before slowly clenching his fists. Since everyone was going to give their all, he, of all people, couldn’t slack behind. At the very least, he had to fight for the face of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy at the Divine Spiritual Mountain...

In a giant jet-black hall, the cold and dark atmosphere suppressed everything within it.

Within the centremost position of the giant hall, the Black Dragon Sovereign suddenly opened his eyes, with a cold and dark glow surfaced within them. Raising his head, he looked towards a dark corner of the giant hall before saying in an indifferent voice, “I’ve confirmed the news. The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time. As for the participant, it’s the person that has obtained our Great Meru Demonic Pillar, Mu Chen.”

“Haha! The Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy truly has some guts. Those brats of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that are still wet behind their ears actually dares to participate in such an occasion...” A chilling and dark radiance surfaced in the dark, as a human figure faintly appeared, bringing along an overcast laughter resounding throughout the giant hall.

“It’s also good for them to come...however, how do we go about

implementing our plan? Over the years, we've been patiently enduring for too long," asked the Black Dragon Sovereign with a faint smile.

"Has everything been appropriately prepared? That old mixed hair bird of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy's big trouble." A deep and dark voice rang out from another corner of the giant hall.

"Yes, rest assured. There will be people that will naturally deal with that old mixed hair bird," replied the Black Dragon Sovereign as he nodded his head. As dark hatred bloomed to their extreme limit within his eyes, he slowly spoke out, "This time, we'll let the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy know that we, the Demonic Dragon Palace, are still the strongest in the Northern Heavens Continent!"

"Also, we must get back our Great Meru Demonic Pillar...that's the treasure of our Demonic Dragon Palace."

With a faint smile, the Black Dragon Sovereign spoke out once again, "Since that brat dares to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, that will be all too good..."

As his voice rang out, he waved his sleeve, only for the space within the giant hall to violently warp and distort. In the next moment, it turned into a spatial pathway, within which intense ear-piercing shrieks and screeches continuously rang out, akin to the howling of thousands of demons. As it took form, a thin and frail black figure slowly walked out from the jet-black pathway.

Covered in ordinary hemp clothing, the figure had a rather common look. His pair of eyes appeared with a greyish-black tint, akin to a pool of stagnant water, with not a single emotional fluctuation present within. A long black spear was carried on his back, encased in howling black figures that emitted ear-piercing ghostly wails and wolf howls.

After leaving the spatial pathway, not a single movement was

seen from him as he stood there, just like a cold and frosty piece of rock.

“Xingtian, three days from now, be prepared to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Your mission this time is to kill the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Mu Chen, and retrieve the Great Meru Demonic Pillar from his hands!” Looking at the stone-like figure that seemed to not possess much vitality, the Black Dragon Sovereign gave his orders in a slow voice.

Slightly raising his seemingly dead eyes, the cold and frosty figure gently nodded his head, before turning around, not uttering a single word since his appearance.

However, this strangeness brought a chill to anyone who would see this spectacle.

# Chapter 395 – Get Moving

The flared-up emotions within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy lasted for three entire days before gradually dissipating away. However, every single person was able to sense the changes to the atmosphere within the academy. In the past, one would continue to notice internal conflicts between cliques and factions happening within the academy. However, as the Great Spiritual Academy Competition half a year later drew closer, those conflicts quietly decreased and toned down. This was especially pronounced since the current situation of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was brought to light by Dean Tai Cang, causing the emotions of quite a few students to rise and soar. Since they were members of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they would naturally work hard and fight for its honor and glory.

Therefore, as the critical moment drew closer, everyone conscientiously trained and cultivated. Some of the elite students ranked near the top ten ranks on the Heavenly Rankings tried to endlessly pierce through into the top ten rankings in their attempt to obtain the qualifications to enter the “Door of the Northern Depths”. Although they knew the dangers brimming within it, at such a critical moment, there was no one backing down without a fight.

After three days had past since the day of the test, it was time for Mu Chen to leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy to participate in the most prestigious occasion for the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent.

Within the little building in the Freshman region, having completed his preparations, Mu Chen turned and gave a smile towards Luo Li, who was standing beside him, and said, “Let’s go.”

Although there’s only one participation quota for the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy this time, Luo had planned to follow Mu Chen, which wasn’t met with any rejection from him. After all,

being able to spend more time together with Luo Li was exactly what he was looking forward to.

With a smile, Luo Li gave a faint smile while gently nodding her head. In the next moment, the two of them shot out, transforming into two streaks of light, rushing across the horizon. As they headed towards a majestic giant hall within the centremost location of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, Dean Tai Cang and the various other Elders were already there waiting for them.

Descending down from the air, Mu Chen's gaze swept past Dean Tai Cang, before faintly gawking as it landed on side of the latter. There stood a slender and beautiful girl dressed elegantly in a white dress, radiating with a cold and detached demeanour, which was precisely Ling Xi.

Mu Chen clearly felt slightly peculiar as to why Ling Xi was present here. After all, although Ling Xi had a status as an Elder within the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she participated extremely little in the affairs of the academy.

As though sensing the doubtful gaze coming from Mu Chen, a faint smile appeared on Ling Xi's face. At this moment, her cold and detached expression quietly disappeared cleanly from her face, causing some of the white-haired Elders to feel shocked and amazed. After all, they knew all too well about Ling Xi's detached and distant behavior. Within the entire Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, they had never seen her show a smiling face to anyone.

However, before their very eyes, she had actually given a faint gentle smile towards Mu Chen, which completely caused them to lurch forward in shock.

"This time, I'll follow you two towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain," said Ling Xi with a faint smile.

"Haha. Elder Ling Xi's strength is extraordinary. With her

joining, it would be much safer for you two," said Dean Tai Cang with a smile. He was also extremely astonished by Ling Xi's request to tag along with the two. Nevertheless, this was something that he wouldn't reject, as having one more person would increase the safety of their group. Although there shouldn't be dumb influences in the Northern Heavens Continent that dared to blatantly attack their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, being a little more safe was always better.

While he said those words, Dean Tai Cang shot a deep and profound look towards Mu Chen. The Ling Xi who usually didn't give a damn about anything that happened within the academy had suddenly requested to tag along. No matter how one looked at it, she definitely had some connection with Mu Chen. Furthermore, this tagging along clearly showed her intention to protect him.

Ling Xi had actually taken the initiative to protect Mu Chen?

This was an extremely inconceivable matter within Dean Tai Cang's eyes. After all, he had a rather good understanding towards the cold and detached personality that Ling Xi had. From his view, even if the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was to be destroyed, Ling Xi might not get too emotional about it. Therefore, he had a slight feeling of it being something akin of The Arabian Nights towards Ling Xi's consideration to follow along and protect Mu Chen.

However, regardless of his astonishment, Dean Tai Cang didn't plan to investigate the connection between Mu Chen and Ling Xi. Nevertheless, from what he could see, the relationship between the two might not be that simple after all...

Upon seeing the gaze coming from Dean Tai Cang, Mu Chen secretly cursed within his heart, before panning his head to look at Luo Li. At this moment, the latter's exquisite porcelain face was still calm and tranquil. In fact, upon seeing Ling Xi's beautiful eyes looking over towards her, a faint smile appeared on Luo Li's face.

However, as Mu Chen was panning around, the young girl's lips slightly trembled, before some soft whispers rang within Mu Chen's ears.

"You're rather attractive, huh?"

Instantly feeling slightly embarrassed, Mu Chen could only give a dry cough while replying, "Please don't get mistaken. Elder Sister Ling Xi's doesn't feel that relieved about the two of us heading there by ourselves."

Although Luo Li declined to comment, the expression hanging within her eyes made Mu Chen feel as if no explanation would suffice for her.

"Since everyone has arrived, let's make a move."

With a wave of his hand, Dean Tai Cang broke the quiet exchange between the two young lovers. Shooting into the sky, he was followed by Hall Master Mo You, as well as Elder Zhu Tian. Clearly, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had attached extremely high importance towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain this year. With the Dean and two Heavenly Seated Elders, this lineup was rather formidable.

"Follow along with me, if not, your speed won't be adequate," said Ling Xi as she walked towards Mu Chen and Luo Li, while a sweet smile appeared on her face. Opening her palm, a glowing halo akin to a compass shot out from within her sleeve, before floating in mid-air.

"I'll have to burden Elder Ling, then," replied Luo Li with a gentle nod.

"If you don't mind, you can call me as Elder Sister Ling Xi like Mu Chen. In the future, if I were to bump into Aunt Ling, I might even be able to talk to her about you," said Ling Xi as her beautiful eyes started to gently size up Luo Li. Even with her judgemental gaze, she was unable to see the slightest bit of flaw from the body

of the young girl in front of her. What a girl, no wonder why Mu Chen is smitten by her.

Faint shades of pink surfaced on Luo Li's lovable face upon hearing Ling Xi's words. She had already heard of some matters about the latter, and naturally knew that the Aunt Jing she had mentioned should be Mu Chen's mother.

"Elder Sister Ling Xi," replied Luo Li with a faint smile. Although she didn't like other people getting too close to her, she was able to feel the protective feelings Ling Xi had for Mu Chen. Therefore, she wasn't too stingy to reject the favorable impression she had on the latter.

With a smile on her face, Ling Xi grasped onto Luo Li's little hand, before shooting towards the top of the glowing compass-like halo. Seeing this, Mu Chen hastily followed on.

As they appeared in the air, countless students were attentively looking at them from the far surroundings. Clearly, everyone knew that today's the day that Mu Chen would leave the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and head towards the Northern Heavens Continent, representing their spiritual academy in the most prestigious occasion within the younger generation in this continent.

From a mountain peak, Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong had shot into the air, before sending a smile towards Mu Chen as they said, "Mu Chen, this time, we've to rely on you to uphold the face of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Solemnly nodding his head, Mu Chen replied, "Rest assured. Regardless of whom, I won't easily give up fighting."

Hearing that, both Shen Cangsheng and Li Xuantong smiled. Once the most outstanding students of the academy, this matter should be left to them to handle. However, as a matter of fact, this current situation was somewhat cruel to them. Due to their age and the duration that they've trained and cultivated, some

disparity was present between them and the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Therefore, they had no choice but to hand over this responsibility and place it on Mu Chen's shoulders. Although complicated emotions were still present within their hearts, both of them had heartfelt hopes for Mu Chen to create another miracle at the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

After all, being members of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, all of them shared the same honor and glory, and any losses, as one body.

Sending a smile towards Mu Chen, Dean Tai Cang said, "Just try your best, when the time comes. There will be a live broadcast of this occasion within the academy. At that time, everyone will be able to see your performance, as well as cheer and support you."

After slightly gawking, Mu Chen returned a helpless smile. This time, he truly felt the pressure on his shoulders. At that time, every single move and choice he made would be seen by everyone within the academy. Looks like I'll have to do my best, if not it'll truly be bad for me if I appear miserable compared to everyone there.

"Let's go."

With a wave of his sleeve, Dean Tai Cang didn't continue talking. In the next moment, boundless Spiritual Energy gushed out from the air before them, while the space itself started to pull and distort, forming a gigantic spatial pathway. Taking the lead, Dean Tai Cang strode forward, walking straight into the spatial vortex.

As he did so, Mu Chen and the rest of the group closely followed behind. As the space continued to distort, it completely devoured their figures, before dissipating away. While the air regained normalcy once again, those figures had already disappeared from view.

"I don't know exactly what results Mu Chen will be able to

achieve in this Divine Spiritual Mountain."

Looking at the place where Mu Chen and the group had disappeared in, Shen Cangsheng gave a smile, before saying, "I've heard that there might be people within the elites of the Northern Heavens Continent that have reached the 'Three Sovereign Disasters'..."

Nodding his head, Li Xuantong muttered, "The Three Sovereign Disasters, huh... That truly is very troublesome."

People who possessed that kind of strength were already clawing at the path of a Sovereign, and were much, much stronger than a Heavenly Completion Stage.

"However, I don't think that this fella's gonna lose." A smile suddenly appeared on Li Xuantong's face as he said, "After all, in just this year alone, I've already grown numb to the matters that he had caused. The fellow that had to risk his all just to block three moves from me has already arrived at a realm that even I'm unable to reach now."

Hearing those words, Shen Cangsheng gave a smile, before raising his head to look at the vast and expansive sky above, while quietly muttering some words within his heart.

Mu Chen, everyone from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy will be watching you this time! Let us see exactly how far you'll go!

When you return, the title of 'Overlord of the Heavenly Rankings', will truly be yours.

# Chapter 396 – Divine Spiritual City

The Divine Spiritual Mountain was situated close the the centre of the Northern Heavens Continent. The place it was situated in was named as the Divine Spiritual Region, and possessed extreme fame and reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent.

It's said that the Divine Spiritual Mountain was passed down from the ancient antiquity to now. Originally, there wasn't anything special about this mountain. However, due to a Heavenly Sovereign sitting and passing away on the mountain, the originally normal mountain turned into something extraordinary. As if being sealed off by a unique and powerful energy, frightening Spiritual Energy from the world flooded and enveloped the mountain's surroundings, causing no one to carelessly intrude upon it.

This isolation would weaken once every few years. When that happened, the most prestigious occasion for the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent would start.

All of this was due to an enormous destiny-changing event known as the "Divine Spiritual Baptism" that occurred within the Divine Spiritual Mountain. For those people who were trying their best along the path to becoming a Sovereign, this possessed life-threatening enticement. At the same time, it was sufficiently enticing to move the hearts of many strong powers and influences. After all, within this endless Great Thousand World, only genuine Sovereigns could be said to have started on their paths of becoming experts. As long as a power or influence had a Sovereign-level existence, the progression of strength and the shock from others would reach a rather frightening degree.

Therefore, the numerous powers and influences of the Northern Heavens Continent had their eyes turned bloodshot for the sake of obtaining this "Divine Spiritual Baptism", doing their utmost to contend for it. All of this was to help their own geniuses to obtain this opportunity to ensure a strong foundation on their paths

towards being a Sovereign.

Therefore, the entire Northern Heavens Continent would be lit abuzz every time the “Divine Spiritual Mountain” had opened up. All of those young geniuses nurtured wholeheartedly by the various powers and influences would fight and struggle for this baptism.

Therefore, this occasion could be said to represent the highest caliber of exchange between the younger generations within the Northern Heavens Continent.

It took Mu Chen and the group only half a day’s worth of time to reach the Divine Spiritual Region from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. The speed at which they did so caused Mu Chen to uncontrollably sigh in admiration. Truly worthy of a Sovereign-level existence. If it was him alone, even if he was to give his all to rush here, it would take him a minimum of a day to reach this place.

Upon their arrival, they immediately headed towards the main area of the Divine Spiritual Region under Dean Tai Cang’s lead, where a city known as the Divine Spiritual City stood.

This Divine Spiritual City was erected at the base of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, and was extremely ancient. Due to the uniqueness of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, this city had already remained in a neutral footing, with not a single power or influence daring to recklessly occupy it. After all, such actions could attract the ire and unhappiness from the other powers and influences. With a lure such as the “Divine Spiritual Baptism”, a single breeze might be able to incite an Extermination-level disaster on the initiator.

As of now, it was clearly the most liveliest period within a span of a few years for the Divine Spiritual City. Countless powers and experts have gathered here from all corners of the Northern Heavens Continent, with even some solitary experts rushing over.

Even though they knew that all those strong powers would not give into reason for the sake of struggling for the “Divine Spiritual Baptism”, the enticement it had was sufficient to cause reason and rationale to diminish.

All of this was due to the extreme fear and terror the “Three Sovereign Disasters” have on everyone. Human Body Disaster, Spiritual Energy Disaster and Spirit Disaster, with each one more terrifying that the previous one. With just a single mistake or error, one would turn into ashes, with even one’s Divine Soul being unable to flee, completely disappearing from the world.

Countless experts have fallen from those three disasters, forever unable to climb back up again.

Therefore, within the eyes of many, the “Three Sovereign Disasters” were clearly more frightening than those strong powers and influences.

When the two terrors were compared side-by-side, it was naturally easy to weigh the disparity of terror between them.

Before arriving at the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Mu Chen shot a look at the far distance towards the back of the city. There stood the majestic silhouette of a mountain, faintly discernable within the spiritual mist that blotted the skies. The boundless degree of Spiritual Energy present there was sufficient to cause fright and dread in people’s hearts. As the Spiritual Energy churned and surged around, sounds akin to peals of thunder could be heard, resounding across the world.

Looking at this scene before him, Mu Chen’s eyes uncontrollably contracted.

“That’s the Divine Spiritual Mountain.”

Dean Tai Cang spoke out with a faint smile. “Look at the area over there. As long as one’s a Sovereign-level expert, one would be unable to get close to there. That’s because of the remnant

pressure within that area, which should be left behind by the Heavenly Sovereign that had sat there and passed away. However, as long as one hasn't stepped into the realm of a Sovereign, one would be unable to sense that pressure. Therefore, while we are unable to get close to it, you are able to enter it. Haha. This might be due to the status that a Heavenly Sovereign has within the realm of Sovereigns."

Admiration and lamentation was present in Dean Tai Cang's voice as he explained to Mu Chen. Although being a Sovereign would mean that one had stepped onto the path of being an expert, a Heavenly Sovereign might be considered as the Emperor of Sovereigns. Faced against such an existence, with their strength, they didn't even possess the simplest of qualifications to resist.

After hearing Dean Tai Cang's explanation, Mu Chen quietly clicked his tongue while thinking, So Heavenly Sovereign are actually that strong? Just the remnant pressure in that area was more than enough to force an expert of a level like Dean Tai Cang to not dare to recklessly intrude upon it!

"Although this Divine Spiritual Mountain appears to not be far from here, it's being locked up in an isolated space. Only when a specific date has arrived will you be able to rely on the cracks that will appear to enter within."

Dean Tai Cang continued his explanations. "If you count the dates, three days from now should be the moment when the Divine Spiritual Mountain opens. As of now, the only thing we can do is to quietly wait for the moment to come."

Hearing those words, Mu Chen nodded his head.

"Let's head to the Divine Spiritual Pavilion. That's the place where the top powers and influences within Northern Heavens Continent will converge. Perhaps, you might be able to see those people that genuinely stand at the apex of the younger generations in this continent," said Dean Tai Cang as he waved his hand,

before proceeding to head towards the grandest-looking pavillion within the city, with Mu Chen and the rest rapidly following suit.

At this moment, the entire Divine Spiritual City was in a fiery and explosive state. Within the air, countless rays of light streaked past, akin to swarms of locusts, appearing extremely spectacular. Furthermore, the absolute majority of the people present here were rather strong, causing shock and astonishment to surface within Mu Chen's heart. Indeed, there were crouching tigers and hidden dragons within this Northern Heavens Continent. Regardless of the people that he had seen in the White Dragon City or the Western Desolated City, compared to here, all of them were not even worth a mention.

Finally, Dean Tai Cang came to a stop in front of the pavilion. Raising his head to look at the top floor, he proceeded to faintly narrow his eyes. Clearly, he had felt some familiar fluctuations radiating from within. Looks like those old fellows of the Northern Heavens Continent have also come here.

"Mu Chen, you three can take a rest around here. I've to go visit some acquaintances." After bringing Mu Chen and the rest into the Divine Spiritual Pavilion, Dean Tai Cang gave a smile before speaking out to Mu Chen. The people present at the top floor were the regional Overlords within the Northern Heavens Continent. As such, the atmosphere present there was clearly not suitable for youths like Mu Chen.

After Mu Chen nodded his head in response, Dean Tai Cang, along with Hall Master Mo You and Elder Zhu Tian, headed towards the top floor. Present at the stairwell were excellent-looking guards. However, when those pretty strong guards noticed Dean Tai Cang and the two Elders, they didn't dare to create any obstruction, faintly bowing their bodies forward, and let the three head towards the top floor.

"Let's go and take a seat."

Shooting a smile towards Luo Li and Ling Xi, Mu Chen proceeded to find a place close to a window of the pavilion. As of now, this place had a good mix of scumbags and dragons, with uncountable numbers of powers and experts converged within. This was a rather good opportunity for him to observe exactly how many thorny characters were going to participate in this Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Just as Mu Chen was surveying his surroundings, there were quite few gazes that had converged on the three of them. After all, disregarding Mu Chen, Luo Li and Ling Xi were both absolutely beautiful girls that were rarely seen. To them, Luo Li appeared calm and collected, akin to a flower in the deep abyss, standing solitary and independently. As for Ling Xi, she appeared extraordinarily cold and detached, showing her personality of flinging people far, far away, causing people to not dare to recklessly approach her.

No matter where one was, beautiful girls would attract the most attention.

Therefore, the appearance of the two girls had caused the hearts of quite a few people to itch. However, those that were able to enter such a place were definitely not nobodies. Although they didn’t have the guts to casually take liberties with the two, they had cast their gazes around the three, seemingly trying to guess the identities of Mu Chen, Luo Li and Ling Xi.

Both Luo Li and Ling Xi held those gazes shooting towards them from the surroundings in total disregard as they whispered in low voices with Mu Chen. The occasional faint smiles present on their faces possessed extremely strong allure, causing quite a few people in the surroundings to feel jealous and envy.

At this time, Mu Chen had discovered the feelings present in the surroundings gazes, causing his mouth to twitch in helplessness. However, just as he was about to speak out, he suddenly cast his eyes towards a direction. At this moment, there seemed to be

somewhat of an uproar suddenly ringing out from within the pavilion, as gaze after gaze all converged towards the pavilion's big doors.

Seeing this spectacle, Mu Chen followed those curious gazes, before seeing a beautiful figure slowly striding past those big doors.

There stood a young girl with a tall and voluptuous figure. Red-coloured soft armor was present on her body, appearing extraordinarily exquisite and form-fitting. Due to the exceedingly alluring figure, under the tight-fitting soft armor, her voluptuous chest appeared even more curvaceous. Below that was a willowy and slim-looking waist, with a long and slender pair of legs revealed under the short leather skirt, appearing extremely alluring.

A beauty akin to fire.

Not only did the atmosphere within the pavilion turn quiet, even Mu Chen could not bear shooting a second look at the extremely alluring figure of that fiery and beautiful girl. In the next moment, upon noticing Luo Li shooting a faint glare at him, he hastily turned his gaze away, causing Luo Li to shake her head in slight helplessness and laughter.

Upon seeing that girl, Ling Xi became faintly startled.

At this moment, the lively atmosphere was restored once again as some people appeared to have recognized this fiery beauty, smacking their lips on the spot. Nevertheless, no one dared to take longer glances at her, as they were clear as to how formidable and thorny this girl was. Similarly, her background was also rather tyrannical.

As the young girl walked into the pavilion, she started to look indifferently at her surroundings. However, just as she was about to turn around and leave, her gaze suddenly came to a halt, while a shadow of surprise and happiness instantly erupted from her

lovable face.

Sensing the gaze coming from the young girl towards them, before noticing her surprised and happy expression, Mu Chen was instantly startled.

As he was dwelling in his doubts, the fiery and alluring girl had already hopped over, while a clear and melodious voice filled with surprise and happiness rang out from her sexy lips.

“Why are you here, Elder Sister Ling Xi?!”

# Chapter 397 – Mess

"Elder Sister Ling Xi?"

As he looked towards the alluring girl before their eyes, shock ran through Mu Chen's mind, especially upon hearing the way the girl had called Ling Xi, which further increased the astonishment. This girl had actually recognised Ling Xi?

As Mu Chen cast a doubtful look at Ling Xi, the latter gave a faint smile. Nodding her head gently towards the girl, Ling Xi explained, "She's the big mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, Xia Youran."

Now, Mu Chen was really startled, sending a peculiar glare towards the alluring girl before him. Xia Youran? It's said that she one of the most famous figures within the younger generation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Furthermore, her strength wasn't any weaker than Mo Longzi, and might even stronger than him.

"It truly has been a long time, Elder Sister Ling Xi. I've never imagined that I'd actually meet up with you here. Is the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time?" This Xia Youran seemed to appear extremely happy and surprised at Ling Xi's appearance here, with the smile on her beautiful face appearing exceedingly soul-stirring.

Gently nodding her head, Ling Xi pointed towards Mu Chen as she replied, "This time, he's the one that's participating."

"Eh?!" Exclaimed Xia Youran as she looked towards Mu Chen in astonishment. After sensing the strength of Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase radiating from within him, she was instantly startled. With this level of strength, how would he be able to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain...?

Nevertheless, her astonishment within her heart wasn't shown

on her face. On the contrary, sending a smile towards Mu Chen, she spoke out, “Nice to meet you. My name’s Xia Youran, and speaking of which, I can be considered as your Senior Sister.”

“Senior Sister?” Mu Chen was stunned once again. Could this Xia Youran be a student of their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

“A few years back, she had trained and cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy for a year, before being summoned back for matters pertaining to her chamber of commerce. Strictly speaking, she can still be considered as your Senior Sister.” Ling Xi explained.

Only after the explanation from Ling Xi did Mu Chen snap out from his astonishment, before replying with a smile, “Nice to meet you, Senior Sister Xia. My name’s Mu Chen.”

“Luo Li,” replied Luo Li with a faint smile.

“Mu Chen?” Xia Youran suddenly blinked her bright beautiful large eyes. Sizing Mu Chen up in a look, she spoke out with some astonishment, “Could you be the Mu Chen that defeated Mo Longzi at the Eastern Desolated City?”

Mu Chen never imagined that this matter would actually be circulated around. Nevertheless, he gently nodded his head.

“No wonder.” At this moment, Xia Youran had a flash of insight. Being one of the powers at the apex of the Northern Heavens Continent, the information gathering capabilities of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce was extraordinary. Therefore, Xia Youran had every single piece of information pertaining to the matter that happened at the Eastern Desolated City during that day. At that time, Mu Chen’s strength seemed to only be at Heavenly Transformation Stage Late Phase. However, he was able to defeat Mo Longzi, who was at Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase. Even the various Elders of their Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce felt inconceivable to the final result of this matter. After all, the degree of strength between the two was truly too

large. However, regardless of her doubts, the news and information about that were unable to be falsified.

From the looks of it, the Mu Chen before her right now seemed to have become even stronger than the time when he had defeated Mo Longzi, having truly stepped into Heavenly Completion Stage. Coupled with his combat prowess, which couldn't be classified on ordinary levels, this Mu Chen truly couldn't be lightly regarded.

Nevertheless, Xia Youran was happy knowing that it was Mu Chen participating in this Divine Spiritual Mountain. Having previously trained and cultivated in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, she had favorable impressions of the academy. Therefore, being able to see the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy participating in the grandest occasion for the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent was something of a happy matter for her.

"I've been looking forward to meeting you for a long time."

Extending a slender and petite, snow-white hand towards Mu Chen, Xia Youran spoke out with a grin, "Relax. If you've any problems during this Divine Spiritual Mountain, just come and find me, and I'll protect you within there."

With a smile, Mu Chen grasped and shook her hand, having favorable impressions of this heroic "Senior Sister" that he had just met.

"Never imagined that even you would come out here, Elder Sister Ling Xi. In the past, you didn't even care the slightest bit about the matters of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy." With Xia Youran's carefree and cheerful character, it wasn't too long after their introductions before getting familiar with everyone, before taking a seat together. From the looks of it, she appeared exceedingly close to Ling Xi, with Ling Xi treating her much more amiable than others, completely withdrawing her cold and detached persona that caused people to run a thousand miles away

from her.

With the three girls seated beside each other, they created an exceedingly bright and beautiful scene. Their location had undoubtedly become the most paid attention place within the dragon and scumbag-filled pavilion. Nevertheless, with the acuteness of the people present within here, they quickly recognized the identify of Xia Youran, instantly causing some fear and dread to surface within their eyes. After all, within the younger generation of the Northern Heavens Continent, Xia Youran's fame and reputation was rather high.

Coupled with her status as the big mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce, there truly weren't many people that dared to provoke her.

Due to Xia Youran's presence, some people had started to take notice of Mu Chen. Information passed around extremely quickly in a place like this, as people gradually came to know his identity from the whisperings that sprouted out in their surroundings. Even his name had been dug out by them. After all, due to the battle at the Eastern Desolated City a while ago, Mu Chen could be considered to possess some fame and reputation within the Northern Heavens Continent. Although it wasn't on the level of peak figures in the younger generations like Xia Youran, he couldn't be considered as a nobody or obscure figure.

"They're the people from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

"Haha. I never would have imagined that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that has been absent for the past few years would actually participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain this time. Could it be that they aren't afraid to be killed here by those geniuses of the Ivory Tower?"

"That youth doesn't seem simple. He should be that Mu Chen. I've heard about him from the time when he had defeated the

Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Longzi at the Eastern Desolated City."

"That can't be true, right? He doesn't appear to be that strong, and Mo Longzi should have already reached Heavenly Completion Stage Late Phase, right?"

"That's why I've said that he isn't simple... The person participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy should be him. Think about it. If he didn't even have any ability, would the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy allow him to come here?"

"Hmm, at that time, let's take a good look at exactly what ability he has, then."

Voices continued to ring about around the pavilion, with favourable impressions and ill intent present within them.

As whispers continued to travel within the pavilion, within some areas that were covered by the screen of darkness, gazes had also shot out from within, converging on the area where Mu Chen and the three girls were.

The owners of these gazes were obviously not people of ordinary backgrounds. Therefore, upon noticing Xia Youran, no fear or dread was present within them, with amusement present within their eyes instead.

"That's the brat that defeated Mo Longzi?" Behind a screen, a male dressed in grey robes spoke out with a faint smile, while playing with the teacup in his hand. His fingers appeared exceedingly slender. As they gently moved about, they seemed to look like shadows wriggling on the table top, appearing exceedingly strange and weird.

"That's what I've heard," said a male dressed in yellow robes sitting beside him. With a faint smile, the former continued speaking, "What's the matter? Does Young Master Liu feel that

he's irksome? Eh, it seems that Xia Youran's your nominal fiancée, and that brat actually dares to get that close to her. With you, Young Master Liu's character, you appear to feel slightly unhappy."

"Haha, there's some unhappiness," replied the grey-robed male with an indifferent smile, while the expression within his eyes had turned somewhat dark and gloomy. He was the Young Master of one of the three large chambers of commerce in the Northern Heavens Continent, the Umbra Chamber of Commerce. Speaking of which, although he had a verbal marriage agreement with Xia Youran, the latter seemed to not have the slightest intent to follow along with it. Being a male with extremely high desires, upon seeing how Xia Youran was actually smiling so care freely and happily in front of a youth, dark and overcast feelings naturally surfaced within his heart.

"Young Master Liu can take action to dish out a lesson to him. That's just a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase brat," said the yellow-robed male with a grin.

"Dong Yuan, don't play this game with me."

With a smile, the grey-robed male continued speaking. "I'm not stupid. Although this brat isn't much, he's, after all, a person from the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy. Although we, the Umbra Chamber of Commerce is considered one of the peak powers in the Northern Heavens Continent, we're still not comparable to the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy."

Although they were able use their absence from the Divine Spiritual Mountain for the past years to mock the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, everyone knew deep within their hearts that the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy was a gigantic leviathan, and a peak power within the Northern Heavens Continent. The only one that could contend with them would be the Demonic Dragon Palace. He, Liu Ying, wouldn't have a mental short circuit and take action against a person from the Northern

Heavens Spiritual Academy in such a place. If he really wanted to, he would wait till they entered the Divine Spiritual Mountain, at the very least. When they were in there, even if he was to kill that brat by the name of Mu Chen, the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy could do nothing but endure their own sufferings.

"I'm still pondering on exactly how I can get my hands on that Divine Spiritual Baptism. It appears that the number of people that had turned up this time isn't small..."

Shrugging his shoulders in helplessness, Liu Ying said, "The Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Xingtian, the Eastern Extreme Palace's Xi Qinghai, the Mysterious Yin Mountain's Zhou Xuan, the Heavenly Cauldron Divine Sect's Su Buxiu. There's also Xia Youran and you, the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce. There truly is some difficulty to achieve any advantage over them."

"I'll not give way for the Divine Spiritual Baptism."

Hearing that, the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, Dong Yuan, gave a smile. In the next moment, a shadow of fear flashed within the depths of his eyes as he muttered, "That's how terrifying the Human Body Disaster is. If I have no fallback during the Spiritual Energy Disaster, I really don't dare to touch it. Therefore, there's no one that can obstruct me in this Divine Spiritual Mountain."

Hearing those words, Liu Xing gave a smile. However, just as he was about to speak out, a faint change suddenly happened to his expression. In the next instant, he felt a fluctuation that caused people's hearts to suddenly palpitate radiating out from somewhere.

"Oh?" Dong Yuan's eyes had also contracted. Turning his head around, he looked towards the giant doors, while speaking out in a soft voice, "That fellow has arrived."

Indescribable dark sensations radiated out like ripples, causing

the clamouring noises in this area to slowly dim down, while the expressions on quite a few people changed as they looked towards the giant doors. At this moment, the light present at that area seemed to have turned dim, before a figure appeared within like a spectre.

Seemingly no one had discovered how he had appeared in such a fashion.

That was a male dressed in ordinary hemp clothing. His appearance wasn't anything out of the ordinary, with the only peculiar thing being his eyes, which appeared like a pool of stagnant water, with not even the slightest emotional fluctuation present, causing people's hearts to freeze up.

However, just an ordinary figure had caused the entire place to turn deathly silent as fear and terror surfaced in the eyes of quite a few young experts from various places.

The dead water-like eyes of the male slowly swept out, before suddenly coming to a stop. In the next moment, everyone noticed he was walking out, causing the crowd to split apart like a crack, before reaching the area where Mu Chen and the other three girls were.

# Chapter 398 – Mo Xingtian

The ordinary-looking male dressed in hemp robes stood right in front of Mu Chen and the group. His deadpan-eyes showing not a single fluctuation within them, causing people to feel a chill up their spines.

Mu Chen's gaze locked straight on towards the male before him, while his entire body entered into a tense state, Spiritual Energy started to vigorously circulate within his body. He had sensed an extremely dangerous flavor from the man before him. That feeling had already far exceeded the feeling he got from Mo Longzi!

Staring coldly at the man harboring ill-intent towards him, a faint guess of the man's identity started to appear within Mu Chen's mind.

Beside Mu Chen, Luo Li's slender hands were already placed on the hilt of her sword. Once the man made a single move, she would take action without the slightest bit of hesitation.

"What the hell do you think you're doing, Mo Xingtian?!" The one that took the lead to speak out was Xia Youran, who roared towards the male, while looking at him with a vigilant gaze.

Mo Xingtian.

Even though that person's name had already rang out within the pavilion upon his appearance, the mention of him by Xia Youran still caused shocked expressions to appear on the faces of some people. People like Xia Youran and Liu Ying were capable of being placed within the top-most level of elites within the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent. However, everyone knew that the person that caused people to feel the most dread and terror would be the Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Xingtian.

Although the times that Mo Xingtian had shown his face in the

Northern Heavens Continent were far less than Mo Longzi, his existence still caused the hearts of many young geniuses to sink. That's due to the well-known fact that there was not the slightest rumor of Mo Xingtian ever losing in a fight for the past few years. Naturally, the prerequisite was that the fight was between people of similar cultivation realms.

Therefore, when looked from a certain perspective, Mo Xingtian could be well-considered as the number one figure within the younger generations in the Northern Heavens Continent. Although such a rumor wasn't spread around, yardsticks were present within everyone's minds, since there were things that one could weigh and measure with one's own judgement.

Although the geniuses from various places, like Xia Youran, Liu Ying and Su Buxiu, also possessed extremely outstanding talent, if one was to ask who they feared and dreaded the most within the younger generations, their unanimous answer might as well be Mo Xingtian.

Faced against Xia Youran's roar, not the slightest bit of fluctuation appeared within Mo Xingtian's gaze. Continuing to stare at Mu Chen with those deadpan-eyes that contained not one bit of movement, he spoke out, "My current mission is to kill you."

Hearing those words, chilling intent abruptly flashed across Luo Li's beautiful eyes. With a tremble of her jade-like hand, a sword roar howled out, while a slash of Sword Aura shot ruthlessly straight towards Mo Xingtian.

Just as the slash of Sword Aura appeared before Mo Xingtian, a glowing halo of Spiritual Energy surfaced around him, instantly blocking the incoming Sword Aura. Shaking his head, he proceeded to say, "That's a bit weak."

"Oh, really?" A chilling glint flashed within Luo Li's beautiful eyes. Clenching her sword with her jade-like hands, she was just about to launch another attack, before her hands were grasped by

Mu Chen. Tilting her head over, the latter shook his head towards her, before raising his head to look at the male, who had caused everyone's hearts to palpitate. With a smile, Mu Chen spoke out, "If you're trying to killing me here, I really feel that your brain's gone wacko."

As he said those words, Mu Chen's gaze turned cold and fierce in an instant, before words as sharp as a blade's edge rang out from his mouth. "Scram off."

Humm.

Low clamoring voices instantly rang out within the pavilion, since quite a few people looked towards Mu Chen with inconceivable emotions present within their gazes. Clearly, none of them had expected Mu Chen to actually use such a tone against Mo Xingtian.

A faint sparkle immediately appeared in some of the gazes shooting out from the darkness, with whispers of interest ringing out from them.

As he heard Mu Chen's reply, Mo Xingtian's deadpanned gaze fluctuated for a bit, while he considered about the percentage of success if he toook action now to kill Mu Chen.

Creak.

Finally, Mo Xingtian took a step forward. However, just as his foot was about to touch the ground, his eye faintly contracted as a dangerous fluctuation suddenly erupted from the beautiful girl radiating with a cold and detached aura standing beside Mu Chen.

Halting his foot, a serious expression appeared on his emotionless face.

"He told you to scram off. Are you deaf?" The beautiful girl in the snow-white dress slowly raised her lovable face, only to show an icy-cold frostiness permeating throughout her beautiful eyes.

Mo Xingtian's pupils instantly contracted, before a shiver shook

through his face. At this very moment, the beautiful girl had already taken action.

It wasn't any gorgeous or magnificent move. Extending her slender and jade-like hand, the beautiful girl gave a sudden clench of her hand.

As she did so, the space around Mo Xingtian started to furiously collapse. Rays of light shot out from space, forming a glowing net, enveloping all over Mo Xingtian's body. As the rays of light shot around, black scars started to appear in the surrounding space.

An incomparable feeling of danger gushed out from Mo Xingtian's heart and mind as his body started to make a furious retreat. In that moment, his body appeared to have turned illusionary for an instant. In the next second, before those rays of light that were shattering space apart could encase his entire body, he had already appeared in a location a dozen metres from where he once stood.

Seeing the scene that had unfolded before his eyes, Mu Chen's eyes faintly narrowed as he thought, That movement skill of Mo Xingtian's is rather strange and peculiar. In the previous instant, his body appeared to have turned illusionary, truly a formidable fellow. He's actually able to avoid a strike from Elder Sis Ling Xi! Although Ling Xi had yet to unleash her true strength, she had undoubtedly possessed more than sufficient strength to suppress Mo Xingtian with ease.

"Hmph!"

Seeing that her attack wasn't able to deal with Mo Xingtian, a faint wrinkle appeared on Ling Xi's lovable face as a bout of dissatisfaction surfaced within her. In the next instant, patting her jade-like hand on the table's surface, everyone immediately felt the Spiritual Energy in their surroundings starting to fluctuate and rampage about. The space surrounding Mo Xingtian proceeded to turn abnormally warped and distorted, appearing akin to a spatial

prison, completely sealing Mo Xingtian within it.

“Spatial Prison? Sovereign Realm expert?!”

Furious roars of astonishment rang out within the pavilion as everyone looked towards Ling Xi with dread and terror gushing out of their eyes, while inconceivable expressions surfaced on their faces. Clearly, none of them was able to believe that such a young girl actually possessed the strength of a Sovereign. When did such a terrifying student appear in the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy?

Ignoring the cries of astonishment ringing around her, Ling Xi gave a flick, sending a ray of jade-like brilliance shooting out of her finger. Piercing through space, it shot straight towards the forehead of Mo Xingtian, clearly aiming to directly take away his life.

Shock and astonishment filled the hearts of everyone yet again, while everyone was utterly intimidated by the ruthlessness of Ling Xi’s action.

Being locked within the warped space and unable to free his body, a frown appeared on Mo Xingtian’s face as he looked towards the frightening ray of brilliance shooting explosively towards him. However, despite the impending threat of death, not a single trace of terror or dread appeared on his face.

“Hmph! You’ve such nerve to actually dare to send an act towards the people of our Demonic Dragon Palace?!”

Just as the glowing crystal-like pillar was about to strike Mo Xingtian, a faint, cold snort suddenly rang out. In the next instant, the surrounding space shattered, while an ancient and withered palm patted out from within. With a single pat, it shattered the warped space surrounding Mo Xingtian, while sending a flick out, striking and shattering the glowing crystal-like pillar apart.

In the next moment, fluctuations started to ripple out in the

surrounding space, while a black-robed male appeared beside Mo Xingtian. That was the Demonic Dragon Palace's Black Dragon Sovereign. At this moment, a chilling expression hung on his face as he glared at Ling Xi, sending the frightening pressure of a Sovereign radiating outwards. This caused the expressions of quite a few of the young experts present in this pavilion to change as they hastily retreated away.

Taking a step forward, Ling Xi blocked the incoming pressure from reaching Mu Chen and the group. A frosty shadow started to fluctuate within her beautiful eyes, while rays of spiritual brilliance sparkled under her slender fingers. At this moment, the surrounding air appeared to turn frozen solid, while exceedingly powerful fluctuations started to faintly converge within the pavilion.

"So, you're that Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy that specializes in Spiritual Arrays?" Looking towards the air flaring up around Ling Xi, the unique fluctuations radiating out of her caused his eyes to narrow as he spoke out in a cold and detached tone.

"So she's an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy…"

"However, she doesn't seem to be much older than us…"

"It shouldn't be hard for an expert with that level of strength to change their outer appearance."

'Hmm, I still feel that something's not right…"

The words coming from the Black Dragon Sovereign caused quite a few people within the pavilion to quietly breathe a sigh of relief. However, all of them could faintly feel that something was not quite right. Did such a young Sovereign cause too much of an impact to us?

"If you're an Elder of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy, I'm afraid that you've broken the rules today!" said the Black

Dragon Sovereign with a dark expression.

“Haha. I’ve already warned that guy over there. However, he still chose to attack us…” replied Mu Chen with a gentle smile, though a shadow of pity hung on his face. He had warned Mo Xingtian earlier that if he was to take action, they would similarly have an open reason to retaliate. If that was to happen, it wouldn’t break any rules if Mo Xingtian was to instantly die. However, that Mo Xingtian truly was hard to be dealt with. The previous step forward by him was similarly his way of testing their capabilities.

However, the only thing that had exceeded his expectation would be the actual strength of Ling Xi.

“As if this is the place for you to talk, brat!” The Black Dragon Sovereign replied in a frosty voice. He clearly possessed extreme loathing and dislike towards Mu Chen, since the latter still controlled the treasure of their Demonic Dragon Palace!

“Haha! The Black Dragon Sovereign truly is very impressive to the point of even being able to fight with the students of our Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.” Faint laughter rang out as a voice suddenly resounded in the pavilion. Spatial fluctuations rippled around Mu Chen’s body as Dean Tai Cang appeared out from within, looking towards the Black Dragon Sovereign with a faint smile on his face.

Staring coldly towards Dean Tai Cang, the Black Dragon Sovereign sneered, “I’ve never imagined that your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy would actually dare to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Tai Cang. What’s the matter? Weren’t the deaths of those elite students that year sufficient of a lesson for you guys?”

Shooting an apathetic look at the Black Dragon Sovereign, Dean Tai Cang replied, “This year’s Divine Spiritual Mountain has yet to start. If you’re too proud of yourself now, you’ll not be able to retract your words in the future.”

“Oh really? I truly anticipate that day to come.”

The Black Dragon Sovereign replied in a ridiculing tone. Sweeping his gaze towards Mu Chen, he shook his head and said, “Do you truly think that you’re some sort of rare genius just because you’ve defeated Mo Longzi? Looks like your Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy have been getting more and more useless during the recent years. Don’t worry. Since you’ve come here, our Demonic Dragon Palace will let you taste the same feeling that you’ve felt in that year once again.”

As his voice rang out, he shot out a sneer, before turning around and walking away, with no one daring to block his path.

As Mo Xingtian turned around, he shot a look over towards Mu Chen, before giving something akin to a smile, accept that the smile contained not one tiny bit of warmth. Those deadpan-eyes of his appeared to be looking at a corpse, before turning around and walking away.

Looking at the back figure of Mo Xingtian, a chilling shadow flashed with Mu Chen’s eyes as he thought, That Mo Xingtian is truly worthy of being the number of super ruthless figure on the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy’s Bounty List. The feeling of danger that he gave to Mu Chen was far more ruthless that Mo Longzi.

Looks like there would be twists and turns in this Divine Spiritual Mountain.

# Chapter 399 – Preparations

During the next three days, the Divine Spiritual City grew increasingly lively and noisy, since more and more people were streaming in from all directions, before congregating in the somewhat ancient city in the middle. Within a moment's time, like rising clouds and scudding clouds, this place had truly become the most eye-catching place within the entire Northern Heavens Continent.

Within the tall pavilion located in the city, Mu Chen looking at the figures hiding the skies and covering the earth as they streaked across the city skies akin to rays of light. Unable to help it, he started to smack his lips. During the span of these three days, he had finally recognized the lure and enticement of the "Divine Spiritual Mountain". According his estimates, all of the small and and big influences within the Northern Heavens Continent should have rushed over to get their share of this liveliness.

"There's really a great amount of people here!" said Mu Chen with a smile. Compared to the events he had experienced in the White Dragon City, Western Desolated City and others, they were truly dwarfed by the scale of the occasion caused by the Divine Spiritual Mountain. As for the Northern Spiritual Realm, there simply wasn't any possibility of such things happening. Within that place, even a person with the strength of an ordinary Heavenly Fusion would already be deemed as an Overlord. However, at this place, a person of that strength would only be considered as an 'average' person.

This kind of disparity caused Mu Chen to give a helpless laugh in response; after all, the Northern Spiritual Realm was just a small place. As for the aspect of cultivation, the requirement for recourse was rather severe and harsh. Therefore, in this small place, where a rank 3 Spiritual Array wasn't even able to be arranged, even if one was to try their utmost, they might not have that many

accomplishments and achievements in it. Naturally, that small place was the birthplace of Mu Chen, with the feelings he had for it were something that couldn't be replicated.

There were times where Mu Chen had thoughts of him returning the the Northern Spiritual Realm with his current strength. If he did, his dad, Uncle Zhou, and the rest might be scared shitless of his Heavenly Completion Stage strength. Let's not talk about the small and tiny Northern Spiritual Realm. Even within the Northern Heavens Continent, he could be considered as a First-class expert. Wanting to be the ruler of a city was something that absolutely couldn't be anymore simpler.

Of course, this was just some of his whimsical thoughts, since he knew that his path to being an unrivalled expert had just started. He had promised his dad to bring his mom home, and, as of now, he was way too far from that step. Nonetheless, regardless of the difficulties he faced along the way, he would always work hard to achieve his goal. He wasn't being conceited about his strength and growth when he said those words when he left. To his dad, this might just be a promise. However, Mu Chen knew that his dad, who had painstakingly brought him up, really missed his mum to the point where his figure appeared somewhat lonely and desolate. This was especially present when he had left his dad. Nevertheless, his dad knew that he, himself, didn't have such strength to bring his wife back. Thus, he had placed all of his hopes and the painstaking effort on his son, someone that he could feel pride from.

Therefore, Mu Chen didn't want his dad to feel any disappointment in him anymore.

Facing the sun, Mu Chen gave a faint smile. Old man, the current me's working hard. Let me help you accomplishment the matter you can't do, alright?

"Tomorrow's the opening day for the Divine Spiritual Mountain."

All of the sudden, a beautiful-sounding girl's voice rang out from behind. Panning his head around, he spotted Luo Li present behind him. Sending a faint smile over, he nodded his head in agreement, before turning to look in the far distance past the city. At that place, the Spiritual Qi of the world was growing increasingly erratic as waves of it started to radiate out. Like waves on a sea, crashing sounds resounded from their movements.

At this moment, the lofty and majestic mountain that was radiating with hair-raisingly rampaging Spiritual Energy seemed to gradually started to become clearer and clearer.

This was the sign of the impending opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

"For the past two days, I've sought out Senior Sister Xia about the Divine Spiritual Mountain happening this time. There might be six people that you'll have to pay attention to. These six can be considered as elites at the highest peak within the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent. All of them are extremely strong, and I'm afraid that even Mo Longzi might not be able to match up to them," said Luo Li with a slight frown.

'Oh? Which six?"

"The first one's, naturally, the Demonic Dragon Palace's Mo Xingtian. He can be said to be your greatest enemy this time. Since the Demonic Dragon Palace's treasure is in your hands, they'll definitely attempt to snatch it back from you. Within the Divine Spiritual Mountain, there's no way to investigate and blame anyone for any injury or death. Therefore, Mo Xingtian will definitely take action towards you in there," said Luo Li with a solemn expression on her face. "Also, according to Senior Sister Xia's reports, it's estimated that Mo Xingtian's strength should be after the First Tribulation of the "Three Sovereign Disasters", the Human Body Disaster."

"He has passed the Human Body Disaster, huh...?"

Faintly nodding his head, Mu Chen's gaze started to grow slightly sharp and astute at this moment.

"The next few ones are the young masters of the Umbra Chamber and Commerce, Liu Ying, Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, Dong Yuan and the Mysterious Yin Mountain's Zhou Xuan. As for the Western Extreme Palace's Xi Qinghai, we've already met that person once, when we were at the Western Desolated City. He was observing us and Mo Longzi for the entire duration of our fight. In addition, there's also the Heavenly Cauldron's Divine Sect's Su Buxiu."

"I'm afraid that all of these people might already possess the strength of one who has passed the First Tribulation. Each of them are top-level geniuses raised painstakingly with unlimited resources and time by those peak influences of the Northern Heavens Continent. You can consider them as future in-charges of Chambers of Commerce and sects. If you are to bump into them in the Divine Spiritual Mountain, you can consider them as your enemies."

With a faint laugh, Luo Li continued talking, "Naturally, Senior Sister Xia's not weaker than them. However, compared to other people, the chances of her targeting you are slim."

°

"All of them are vicious characters, huh?" said Mu Chen while nodding his head. So, these are the strengths of the highest elites in the younger generations of the Northern Heavens Continent, huh? Look's like I can't underestimate them.

"There shouldn't be a problem, right?" asked Luo Li, while shooting a look at Mu Chen. Slightly wrinkling her forehead, Luo Li said, "They should have allowed me to participate, hmph."

Clearly, those earlier little scuffles and conflicts weren't comparable to the fights that were about to happen within the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Furthermore, there wouldn't be any

mercy shown by the participants inside it. If one let's down one's guard for just the slightest moment, there would be a high possibility for one to not walk out from the Divine Spiritual Mountain alive. Luo Li was clearly feeling worried about this, regardless of her trust in Mu Chen.

"There's only one quota! I can't bear to let you face those cruel and vicious fellows by yourself!" replied Mu Chen with a smile. "Rest assured. Although the opponents are very strong, I'm not that weak. Later, let me see exactly what that Divine Spiritual Mountain has. If I'm able to bring it out, I'll make sure to get one for you."

Hearing those words from Mu Chen, Luo Li rolled her eyes towards Mu Chen, before saying, "I've heard from Senior Sister Xia that there's only an extremely small number of people that can receive the Divine Spiritual Baptism every time, due to the handful of people that can enter within the area of baptism. If you still dare to bring it out, I think that you'll get assaulted by the masses then."

A smile surfaced on Mu Chen's face as he heard her reply, with no refute coming from him.

"Oh, that's right."

As though thinking about something, with a wave of her jade-like arm, numerous clumps of fire surfaced around Luo Li, before floating before her. What appeared were five clear palm-sized transparent jade bottles. Within those bottles were burning flames that were filled to the brim. Those flames were scarlet-red in colour, while radiating with high temperatures. Clearly those jade bottles were made of some special material, since no matter how high those flames burnt, they were unable to shatter their containers apart.

"These are the things that you've asked Senior Sister Xia to obtain for you. It's said that the flames within these bottles are the

product of a Raging Flame Sparrow devouring the geocentric lava, and possess quite strong destructive powers. The flames within these five small jade bottles required seemingly hundreds of Raging Flame Sparrows just to fill them up," said Luo Li while shooting a doubtful look at Mu Chen. Clearly, she didn't understand the goal of him suddenly wanting to collect them. Although these things might be able have an effect of catching an opponent off-guard during a fight, they weren't particularly strong.

"I have a wonderful use for them."

Looking at the five jade bottles, a flash of happiness appeared within Mu Chen's eyes. Carefully storing them, he said, "Look's like I owe Senior Sister Xia a favor now."

These things were clearly not cheap, and were extremely difficult to collect. It was all thanks to Xia Youran being the eldest Young Mistress of the Nine Summers Chamber of Commerce. If not, he would really have no way of obtaining them within such a short amount of time.

"It should be due to Elder Sister Ling Xi," said Luo Li with a faint smile. Xia Youran was extremely close to Elder Sister Ling Xi. After seeing the latter's attitude to Mu Chen, she had clearly held Mu Chen with much more regard. Due to that, Mu Chen's request was able to be ranked so highly within her mind.

Mu Chen nodded his head, not caring anymore about the relationship between Xia Youran and Ling Xi. With these things, he had now one more hidden card up his sleeves. When the moment comes, it should be quite a handful for even Mo Xingtian to deal with them.

"Since everything's set, what's next..."

Giving a lazy stretch, Mu Chen gazed towards the mountainous silhouette faintly discernable within the blowing Spiritual Energy in the far distance, before giving a faint smile.

"...Is to wait for the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain."

The next day, as the early morning came, the atmosphere of the Divine Spiritual City had completely erupted, with countless shadows shooting towards the skies like a swarm of locusts. From the mountain peaks and plains surrounding the city, one could see figures endlessly taking for the skies, transforming into streaks of light, howling across the horizon.

The enticement of the Divine Spiritual Baptism was too strong, with countless people already having bloodshot eyes towards it's lure. Therefore, even those peak influences and powers weren't able to dominate over the entirety of the Divine Spiritual Mountain by themselves, since they would truly become the enemy of the masses. This was something that even the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy and the always overbearing Demonic Dragon Palace weren't able to bear, since the price of that would be too high for them to endure.

Therefore, as long as one had the strength and didn't exceed the limits, anyone within the Northern Heavens Continent possessed the qualifications to participate in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Hence, it had led to the spectacular appearance and attendance of this occasion.

Mu Chen's group had also made their move. Under the lead of Dean Tai Cang, they arrived at the front of the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy waves. At this moment, the earth and the skies were already covered by a sea of humans. Nevertheless, only those peak influences of the Northern Heavens Continent possessed the qualifications to vie for the positions right at the very front of the human crowd.

The arrival of the Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy had attracted the attention of the masses. After all, within the Northern Heavens Continent, there was no one that would dare to show contempt for such a true leviathan.

Sending a smile only towards some of the people familiar to him, Dean Tai Cang proceeded to place his hands behind his back, sending a deep gaze towards the lofty and majestic mountainous form present behind those Spiritual Energy waves that isolated in another space.

At this moment, Mu Chen had his eyes towards a place not far away, where those from the Demonic Dragon Palace were. With the Black Dragon Sovereign standing at the front, presently behind him was the hemp-clothed, extremely ordinary-looking Mo Xingtian. If not for that deadpanned gaze that gave everyone a profound impression, it would be extremely hard to recognise him if he was placed within a crowd of people. However, this ordinary-looking fellow was genuinely the most vicious person within the younger generations in the Northern Heavens Continent.

Sensing Mu Chen's gaze, Mo Xingtian panned his head over, sending a cold and detached smile back towards Mu Chen. Although there wasn't any killing intent present within his smile, Mu Chen knew that this Mo Xingtian might have already included him within his 'Must Kill' list.

"The second place on the bounty list has already been dealt with. All that's left is you."

Mu Chen muttered to himself, before raising his head up. Looking towards the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy waves before him, intense fluctuations started to appear within them. At this moment, the lofty and majestic mountainous form hidden in the depths grew increasingly clear and distinct, while ripples started to undulate from the space before everyone's eyes.

Everyone's gaze started to churn and flare up.

The Divine Spiritual Mountain was about to start!

# *Chapter 400 – The Opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain*

Rumble.

Akin to a tsunami, the Spiritual Energy of the world surged and swept out, while the low and deep sounds seemed to be unbearable for even space, while intense spatial warping and distortions appeared. As the surrounding space warped and distorted, the gigantic mountain that seemed to be contained within an isolated space grew increasingly clear to everyone's eyes.

At the same time, a special pressure that appeared to have remained since the Ancient Antiquity quietly radiated out. This pressure was undetectable and invisible to the absolute majority of the people present. Only people like Dean Tai Cang, existences that have stepped into the realm of the Sovereigns, would be able to feel it, causing their eyes to faintly narrow, while fear and dread surfaced within their hearts.

Although this pressure had been weakened by quite a lot under the passage of time, it still possessed a certain level of suppression to them. That's because it was something left behind by a Heavenly Sovereign, whom had sat on the mountain and passed away.

A Heavenly Sovereign was the Emperor amongst Sovereigns. To Dean Tai Cang, and the other Sovereigns present, it was an existence that was far too strong and powerful. Naturally, even when placed within the Great Thousand Worlds, formed from the convergence of hundreds of thousands of planes, a Heavenly Sovereign was still a top-class existence. There would be countless Sovereigns willing to prostrate themselves in worship towards a Heavenly Sovereign.

That was a great figure that was genuinely able to guard a region of a world to the point of controlling an entire plane.

Mu Chen and the rest were, naturally, unable to detect this pressure, with the only feeling they got being a faint uneasy one. However, it didn't pose much of an effect to them.

At this moment, Mu Chen's only focus was to start at the warping and distorting space, waiting for the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

As he quietly waited for that moment, a waft of fragrance fluttered past him. Panning his head around, he noticed that Xia Youran had appeared by his side. At this moment, the latter was still dressed in her alluring and seductive fiery-red soft armor. That snow-white exposed skin and her voluptuous and elegant figure attracted quite a few gazes from the surroundings.

"Mu Chen, make sure to be more careful after entering the Divine Spiritual Mountain. Be especially careful about the spatial currents, as well as the spatial gales." Xia Youran sent a reminder to Mu Chen, after showing a bright and beautiful smile towards him.

"Spatial currents? Spatial gales?" Mu Chen was slightly startled as he repeated those two terms. Having completely zero understanding towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain, he clearly didn't know what those two terms meant.

"The location where the Divine Spiritual Mountain is standing is within a fragmented space. Outside of that fragmented space are extremely frightening spatial currents. Once one gets swept into them, one would definitely die, without a doubt," explained Xia Youran with a serious expression on her lovable face. "The spatial gales occupy the surroundings of the Divine Spiritual Mountains. The closer one gets to the centre, the stronger and more frightening the spatial gales get. When one becomes unable to endure their buffeting, one would be swept by them and into the currents, resulting in being instantly turned into ashes."

"These two are the greatest dangers brought about by the Divine

Spiritual Mountain, with uncountable numbers of experts having already succumbed to them."

"Thank you very much for your reminder, Senior Sister Xia." Mu Chen expressed his gratitude while nodding his head.

With a soft voice, Xia Youran continued speaking, "In addition, please be careful about other people. I don't know how many experts will be participating in the Divine Spiritual Mountain. However, the fact is that only a fixed number of people can undergo the Divine Spiritual Baptism. Therefore, all the people entering in there would be considered as competitors. Once an opportunity arises, there might be people who will take action directly and launch killing blows at you."

"After entering the Divine Spiritual Mountain range, just follow me. I'll bring you to the place of the baptism. With you by my side, even that Mo Xingtian might feel a bit of fear. At the very least, he wouldn't be too overly rampant. However, as for the matter of you being able to obtain the Divine Spiritual Baptism, that would truly have to depend on your genuine ability and skill." Shooting a look towards Mo Xingtian standing not too far from her, a sliver of dread flashed within her beautiful eyes. However, she still spoke those words out in a soft voice.

Hanging a smile on his face, Mu Chen's favorable impression of Xia Youran had been raised by quite a bit. He was extremely clear of how formidable Mo Xingtian was. Although Xia Youran was one of the elite figures in the top of the younger generations within the Northern Heavens Continent, she would still feel extreme dread if she was to truly face-off against Mo Xingtian. However, at this moment, for his sake, she was able to make such a decision, something that was rather hard to make.

After all, no one in their right mind would love to offend such a frightening opponent for no reason.

"Please be at ease, Senior Sister Xia. If I feel that I can't endure

anymore, I'll immediately fall back. I won't hold you back," replied Mu Chen.

Xia Yoran didn't imagine that Mu Chen would reply in such a straightforward manner. Sending a sweet smile to him, she extended her jade-like hands and gave Mu Chen's shoulder a pat while saying, "Relax. Elder Sister Ling Xi has saved me before. Seeing that it's extremely rare for her to show so much care for a male, how could I not protect you?"

Hearing those words, Mu Chen replied with only a smile. Not commenting more about it, he nodded his head to show his gratitude towards her.

As Mu Chen was happily chatting along with Xia Youran, while waiting for the opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain, both of them didn't realise a slightly cold gaze shooting towards them from a distance far away. The owner of such a gaze was the young leader of the Umbra Chamber of Commerce, Liu Ying.

Looking at the intimate manner Xia Youran was displaying towards Mu Chen, shadows of darkness surfaced within his gaze, while the corner of his mouth started to faintly twitch. Seeing this, the Young Master of the Heavenly Yuan Chamber of Commerce, Dong Yuan, gave a faint smile in response. He knew that Liu Ying was a fellow with extreme lust and full of desires. Although he hadn't made any progress in his pursuit of Xia Youran, he had classified her as a 'forbidden territory' for everyone else. Seeing Xia Youran showing such intimacy to Mu Chen caused him to have an unbearable impulsion to rip the latter into shreds.

"Don't be impatient. Let's wait for us to enter the Divine Spiritual Mountain first. At that time, even if he wants to, that brat won't be able to run away," said Dong Yuan with a grin.

"I don't have the skill to waste time on such a brat," replied Liu Ying. Nevertheless, his gaze remained dark and overcast, while a cold and detached smile hung on his face. He wasn't a person that

didn't know how to prioritise. However! He knew that the most important thing for him to do after entering the Divine Spiritual Mountain was to obtain the Divine Spiritual Baptism. How could he waste such precious time on Mu Chen?

"Naturally, if we were to really bump into each other, I truly don't mind conveniently settling him once and for all." Twiddling his fingers, a shadow seemed to appear on the fingertips of Liu Ying, while the smile present at the corner of his mouth appeared cold and cruel.

A radiant smile on the face of Dong Yuan was shown as he heard Liu Ying's words. Although this Mu Chen appeared to possess the strength of a Heavenly Completion Stage Initial Phase, he might not be as simple as he looked. At that time, if Liu Ying had engaged in combat with him, even if Liu Ying did win, he should have to pay some kind of price. This was a situation that he would naturally be extremely satisfied to see.

Rumble!

Just as the dark and overcast shadows appeared within the eyes of Liu Ying, an intense rumbling sound suddenly rang out from the vast and boundless Spiritual Energy ocean. As space started to become increasingly warped and distorted, everyone turned ecstatic as the space around the Divine Spiritual Mountain had actually started to slowly split apart.

As space started to splinter apart, an endless range of lofty and majestic mountains that brought about its gigantic shadows, erupted from within. The enormous body of the mountain extended from the spatial fissure, unveiling itself to the world. Looking from afar, it appeared as if it was a mountain range floating in the sky.

However, such a gigantic mountain range was just an unassuming corner of the Divine Spiritual Mountain.

Hu! Hu!

As a small part of that mountainous body erupted from the spatial fissure, rampaging spatial gales instantly rushed out furiously. As the gales blew out, it brought about rather fierce energies, seemingly causing even the Spiritual Energies of the world to split and shatter apart.

However, not a single person paid attention to this, since everyone had focused their bloodshot-eyes towards the lofty and majestic mountain range present within the spatial fissure. That was the mountain range that was locked in an isolated space. However, from the looks of it, what had appeared before their eyes was only the tip of an iceberg. From this, one could see how frightening the scale of this Divine Spiritual Mountain range was. Perhaps, just from its other appearance, it wasn't any smaller than the gigantic Divine Spiritual City.

The Divine Spiritual Mountain had finally appeared at this moment!

At this moment, the atmosphere of the entire world appeared to freeze and solidify.

Whoosh!

However, this solidification lasted for only an instant, before being immediately broken apart, with figures that hid the skies and covered the earth shooting out from the city. Hasty and hurried whooshing sounds resounded, akin to claps of thunder, roaring across the skies.

"Let's go!"

"The Divine Spiritual Mountain's opened!"

"The Divine Spiritual Baptism is mine for sure!"

"Haha! What the hell do you think you are, to dare to take a piece of the Divine Spiritual Baptism?!"

As roars filled with incomparable excitement resounded out, the entire world started to get completely aroused and thrown into

disorder.

“Let’s make a move too, Mu Chen.” Looking at the locust swarm-like mass of figures rushing towards the Divine Spiritual Mountain, Xia Youran wasn’t able to contain her impatience at the very end as she spoke out towards Mu Chen.

Nodding his head, Mu Chen turned back to look at Luo Li, Ling Xi and Dean Tai Cang, before speaking out with a smile, “It’s time for me to enter.”

“Be careful.” Luo Li and Ling Xi reminded in response.

“If you’re met with an extremely dangerous situation, just break the jade slip I’ve passed to you, and I’ll rescue you from there,” said Dean Tai Cang with a solemn expression present on his face. Although he would have to pay some price for forcing his way into the Divine Spiritual Mountain, he truly wasn’t able to endure the possibility of Mu Chen dying within. If that happened, it would become an extremely huge blow to their Northern Heavens Spiritual Academy.

Mu Chen gently nodded his head in agreement, without replying to anymore words. He knew about the special uniqueness of the Divine Spiritual Mountain; even with Dean Tai Cang’s strength, he wouldn’t be able to enter that place. And yet, the latter was able to speak those words. This went to show the extreme regard the latter had on Mu Chen in his eyes.

With a move of her charming figure, Xia Youran took the lead, turning into a streak of light. Shooting straight towards the spatial fissure in the sky, she headed straight towards the mountain range that had extended from there. Seeing this, Mu Chen immediately followed suit, rapidly heading out behind her.

Mutually, in tandem, the two streaks of light that hid the skies and covered the earth rushed into the spatial fissure. Slowly turning smaller, they finally disappeared within it.

Buzz!

As more and more people rushed into the Divine Spiritual Mountain range, the space surrounding it started to turn increasingly transparent, akin to glass. Within the glass was a vast and boundless ancient-looking mountain range. At this moment, the fringes of the mountain range was filled with countless shadows, the people at the head of the swarm that had rushed into the spatial fissure.

Those figures that hid the skies and covered the earth instantly broke apart the eternal peace and tranquility within the Divine Spiritual Mountain range.

Various elderly figures stood within the sky outside of the spatial fissure, eyes tightly locked at the ancient mountain range that was faintly discernable within the space before them. At this moment, all of them knew that the extremely brutal and cruel combat would erupt within in the later moments.

All of this, was for the “Divine Spiritual Baptism” that only a number of people could enjoy!

# Table of Contents


- The Great Ruler
  - Synopsis
  - Acknowledgement
  - Chapter 301 – Dark Society
  - Chapter 302 – Campgrounds
  - Chapter 303 – Divine Forging Stone
  - Chapter 304 – Mu Fengyang
  - Chapter 305 – Arrival
  - Chapter 306 – Gather
  - Chapter 307 – Spiritual King
  - Chapter 308 – Encircling the Spiritual King
  - Chapter 309 – Underground
  - Chapter 310 – Seizing of the Spirit Crystal
  - Chapter 311 – Pursuit of the Spirit King
  - Chapter 312 – Heart Eye
  - Chapter 313 – The Might of Twin Lotus
  - Chapter 314 – Killing the Spirit King
  - Chapter 315 – Shock
  - Chapter 316 – Breakthrough
  - Chapter 317 – Spiritual Light Mountain
  - Chapter 318 – The Third Spot
  - Chapter 319 – Battling He Yao
  - Chapter 320 – Descent of the Divine Crane
  - Chapter 321 – Kicked out of the Hunting War
  - Chapter 322 – Pressure
  - Chapter 323 – Last Battle
  - Chapter 324 – Three Great General
  - Chapter 325 – Battling Gu Tianyan
  - Chapter 326 – Twin Spiritual Array!
  - Chapter 327 – Using the Black Lightning
  - Chapter 328 – Blood Battle
  - Chapter 329 – Victory
  - Chapter 330 – The End
  - Chapter 331 – Rest
  - Chapter 332 – New Rank 3 of the Heavenly Rankings

Chapter 333 – Punishment Hall
Chapter 334 – Lightning Poison
Chapter 335 – Lightning God Pill
Chapter 336 – Complete Version of the Lightning God Physique
Chapter 337 – Divine Black Lightning Poison Finger
Chapter 338 – Infiltrating the Lightning Sea
Chapter 339 – Got It
Chapter 340 – Accepting the Spiritual Light Empowerment
Chapter 341 – Academy Exchange
Chapter 342 – Liu Zheng
Chapter 343 – The Might of One Sword
Chapter 344 – Xue Shi
Chapter 345 – Appearance
Chapter 346 – Divine Seal of the Vermillion Bird
Chapter 347 – Blood Gods Armor
Chapter 348 – A Fist Shattering the Armor
Chapter 349 – Untitled
Chapter 350 – Ling Xi
Chapter 351 – Guidance
Chapter 352 – Breaking the Array
Chapter 353 – The Mysterious Ling Xi
Chapter 354 – Spiritual Array House
Chapter 355 – Pursuit of Life and Death
Chapter 356 – Painting
Chapter 357 – Relation
Chapter 358 – Blood Toll Bell
Chapter 359 – Rescue Party
Chapter 360 – Western Desolate Territory
Chapter 361 – Chi Yu and Mao Jiang
Chapter 362 – Ferocious Couple
Chapter 363 – Rescue
Chapter 364 – Searching for Fire
Chapter 365 – Curing Poison
Chapter 366 – Gathering
Chapter 367 – Short Exchange
Chapter 368 – Western Desolated City
Chapter 369 – Four-Sided Confrontation
Chapter 370 – Spiritual Array Competition with Wu Jia
Chapter 371 – Nine Heavy Mountain Array

Chapter 372 – Hearts Eye Breaks Spiritual Array
Chapter 373 – The Powerful Mo Longzi
Chapter 374 – Trump Cards Revealing
Chapter 375 – Divine Furnace Heavenly Array
Chapter 376 – Dragon Transformation Blood Art
Chapter 377 – Borrowing the Ominous
Chapter 378 – Whos More Ferocious?
Chapter 379 – Might of the Demonic Pillar
Chapter 380 – Three Great Sovereigns
Chapter 381 – The Three Sovereign Disaster
Chapter 382 – Demonic Dragon Brand
Chapter 383 – Battle of the Sovereigns
Chapter 384 – Idea
Chapter 385 – Aunt Jing
Chapter 386 – Memories
Chapter 387 – At a Loss
Chapter 388 – Stealing Spirituality
Chapter 389 – Pride of the Upperclassman
Chapter 390 – The Realm of Heavenly Completion
Chapter 391 – Punishment Spiritual Combat Doll
Chapter 392 – Demonic Pillar Reappears
Chapter 393 – Words of the Dean
Chapter 394 – Door of the Northern Depths
Chapter 395 – Get Moving
Chapter 396 – Divine Spiritual City
Chapter 397 – Mess
Chapter 398 – Mo Xingtian
Chapter 399 – Preparations
Chapter 400 – The Opening of the Divine Spiritual Mountain